

This is a digital copy of a book that was preserved for generations on library shelves before it was carefully scanned by Google as part of a project to make the world's books discoverable online.

It has survived long enough for the copyright to expire and the book to enter the public domain. A public domain book is one that was never subject to copyright or whose legal copyright term has expired. Whether a book is in the public domain may vary country to country. Public domain books are our gateways to the past, representing a wealth of history, culture and knowledge that's often difficult to discover.

Marks, notations and other marginalia present in the original volume will appear in this file - a reminder of this book's long journey from the publisher to a library and finally to you.

Usage guidelines

Google is proud to partner with libraries to digitize public domain materials and make them widely accessible. Public domain books belong to the public and we are merely their custodians. Nevertheless, this work is expensive, so in order to keep providing this resource, we have taken steps to prevent abuse by commercial parties, including placing technical restrictions on automated querying.

We also ask that you:

+ *Make non-commercial use of the files* We designed Google Book Search for use by individuals, and we request that you use these files for personal, non-commercial purposes.

+ *Refrain from automated querying* Do not send automated queries of any sort to Google's system: If you are conducting research on machine translation, optical character recognition or other areas where access to a large amount of text is helpful, please contact us. We encourage the use of public domain materials for these purposes and may be able to help.

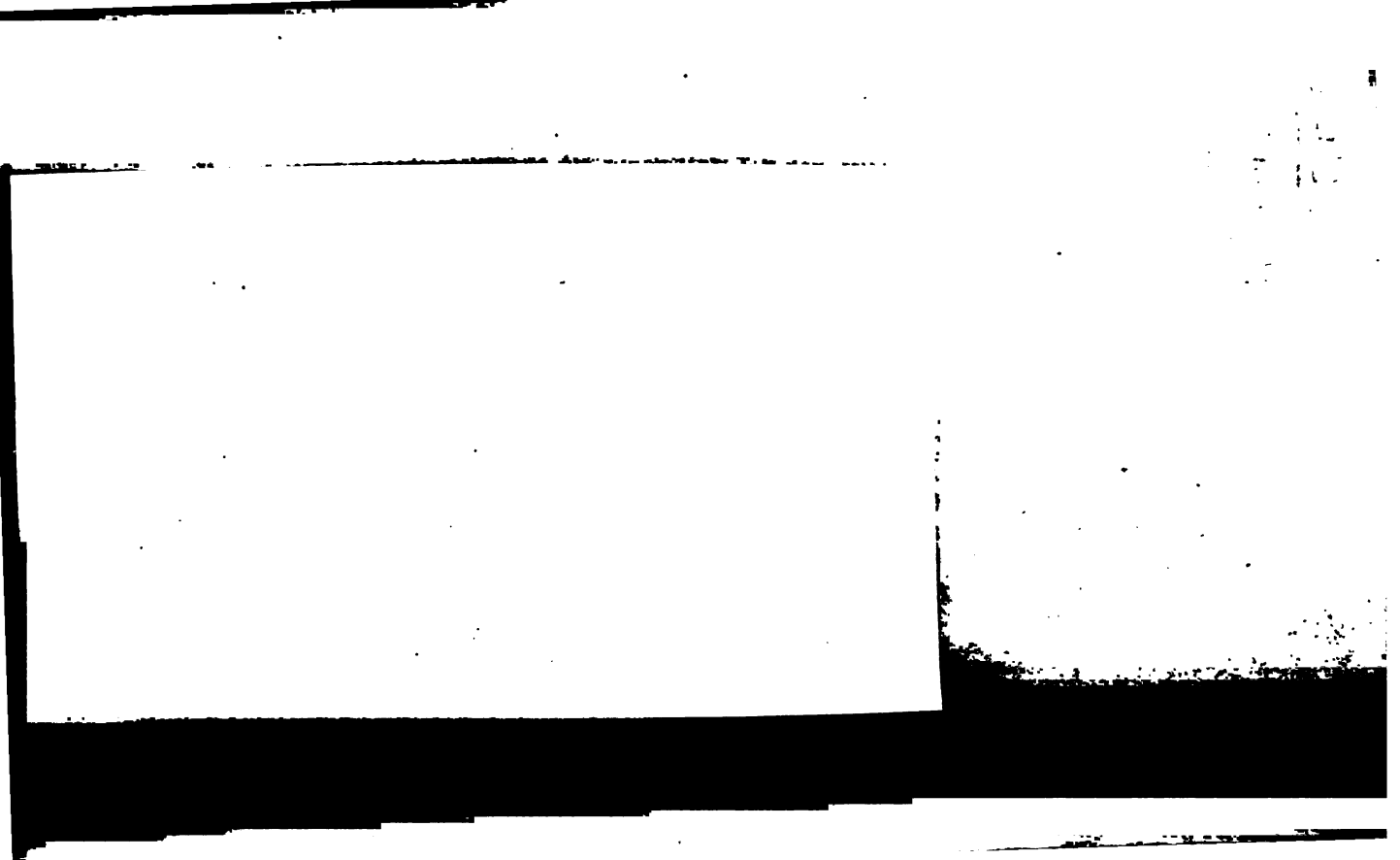
+ *Maintain attribution* The Google "watermark" you see on each file is essential for informing people about this project and helping them find additional materials through Google Book Search. Please do not remove it.

+ *Keep it legal* Whatever your use, remember that you are responsible for ensuring that what you are doing is legal. Do not assume that just because we believe a book is in the public domain for users in the United States, that the work is also in the public domain for users in other countries. Whether a book is still in copyright varies from country to country, and we can't offer guidance on whether any specific use of any specific book is allowed. Please do not assume that a book's appearance in Google Book Search means it can be used in any manner anywhere in the world. Copyright infringement liability can be quite severe.

About Google Book Search

Google's mission is to organize the world's information and to make it universally accessible and useful. Google Book Search helps readers discover the world's books while helping authors and publishers reach new audiences. You can search through the full text of this book on the web at `http://books.google.com/`

NYPL RESEARCH LIBRARIES
3 3433 08231048 7



A

NEW METHOD

OF LEARNING

THE FRENCH LANGUAGE;

EMBRACING BOTH THE

Analytic and Synthetic Modes of Instruction;

BEING

A PLAIN AND PRACTICAL WAY OF ACQUIRING THE ART

OF

READING, SPEAKING, AND COMPOSING FRENCH.

ON THE PLAN OF WOODBURY'S METHOD WITH GERMAN.

By LOUIS FASQUELLE, LL.D.

PROFESSOR OF MODERN LANGUAGES AND LITERATURE IN THE UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN, CORRESPONDING MEMBER OF THE NATIONAL INSTITUTE, AUTHOR OF "JUVENILE FRENCH COURSE," "THE COLLOQUIAL FRENCH READER," "MANUAL OF FRENCH CONVERSATION," ETC.

Autant de langues on parle, autant de fois on est homme.—Charles V.

REVISED AND IMPROVED.

NEW YORK:
IVISON, PHINNEY, BLAKEMAN & CO.,
CHICAGO: S. C. GRIGGS & CO.

1865.

RFR

THE NEW YORK
PUBLIC LIBRARY
157103
ASTOR, LENOX AND
TILDEN FOUNDATIONS.
1899.

We have published for the use of Teachers,

"A KEY TO THE EXERCISES IN FASQUELLE'S NEW FRENCH METHOD, with occasional Notes and References to the Rules, by Louis Fasquelle, LL.D., etc." Price . The "Key" can be sent by mail, by sending the publishers the price in P. O. stamps.

IVISON, PHINNEY & Co., 48 & 50 WALKER ST.

Entered, according to Act of Congress, in the year 1860, by
LOUIS FASQUELLE
In the Clerk's Office of the District Court of the United States for the District of Michigan.

ELECTROTYPED BY
SMITH & McDOUGAL,
82 & 84 BEEKMAN-ST.

TO

The Lovers of the French Language

AND LITERATURE,

THROUGHOUT THE UNITED STATES,

This Volume

IS MOST RESPECTFULLY DEDICATED.

AMERICAN EDUCATIONAL SERIES.

A COURSE OF PRACTICAL AND PROGRESSIVE
SCHOOL AND COLLEGE TEXT BOOKS;

IN WHOLE OR IN PART, OFFICIALLY ADOPTED BY THE

STATE SUPERINTENDENTS OF PUBLIC INSTRUCTION AND BOARDS OF EDUCATION,

IN NEARLY EVERY STATE WHERE ANY OFFICIAL EXAMINATION AND ADOPTION HAS BEEN MADE.

FIFTEEN MILLIONS

have been sold, and the circulation is steadily increasing. They are also officially commended and principally used in the PUBLIC SCHOOLS of New York, Philadelphia, and many other large cities, and in the principal NORMAL SCHOOLS throughout the Union.

They are recommended by TWENTY EDUCATIONAL JOURNALS, and by ONE HUNDRED AND FIFTY other most respectable Journals—Literary, Religious, etc.

From Superintendents of States, Counties, and Cities, from Presidents and Professors of Colleges, and from Teachers and Practical Educators, and the Press throughout the Union, we have

OVER 200 ROYAL OCTAVO PAGES OF TESTIMONIALS

to the superior merit of these Books, selections from which will be sent free, on application.

THE SERIES EMBRACES

SANDERS' NEW READERS, SPELLERS, ETC.
ROBINSON'S COMPLETE SERIES OF MATHEMATICS.
THOMSON'S PRACTICAL ARITHMETICS.
WILLSON'S HISTORICAL SERIES.
WELLS' (D. A.) SCIENTIFIC SERIES.
WELLS' (W. H.) GRAMMARS. Revised.
COLTON & FITCH'S GEOGRAPHIES.
GRAY'S (ASA) BOTANIES. Graded. 2,500 cuts.
BRADBURY'S SCHOOL MUSIC BOOKS. 10 books.
FASQUELLE'S FRENCH SERIES.
WOODBURY'S GERMAN SERIES.
HITCHCOCK'S ANATOMY AND PHYSIOLOGY.
HITCHCOCK'S NEW GEOLOGY.
SPENCERIAN PENMANSHIP. New edition. 9 books.
O'DONNELL'S PENMANSHIP. 8 books.
BRYANT & STRATTON'S BOOKKEEPING.
SCHUSTER'S DRAWING BOOKS—beautifully engraved.
IVISON & PHINNEY'S SCHOOL RECORDS, DIARIES, REGISTERS, ETC., ETC., ETC.

☞ DESCRIPTIVE CATALOGUE and CIRCULARS, with matter interesting to Teachers, descriptions of books, notices, testimonials, prices, etc., sent free, on request.

☞ Liberal Terms for Specimen Copies and first supplies for Schools.

IVISON, PHINNEY & CO., Publishers,
48 & 50 Walker St., New York.

PREFACE.

The universality of the French language furnishes sufficient proof of its utility. Throughout Europe, in many parts of Asia, Africa, and America, no education is complete without a knowledge of that tongue, which in more than one country of Europe is emphatically called "*the language*." Its merits are becoming so well appreciated in this country, that it is almost unnecessary to particularize them, to speak of its unsurpassed precision and clearness, and of its capability of expressing every idea, in the most laconic and in the most ornamental style. The language of France, that happy compound of the Celtic, the Romanic and the Teutonic elements, is equally adapted to the lightest literature and to the most profound diction of science. The rich mines of French literature, too long but imperfectly known here, offer in every department of knowledge treasures equal to those presented by the literature of any other nation.

Many works have been published in this country and in England to facilitate the acquisition of the French language; but during his more than twenty years' practice in teaching the modern languages, the author of this volume has in vain looked for the appearance of a book which, like several of the French grammars published in Germany, should unite in due proportions theory and practice. To the high merits of several of the theoretical grammars he bears his most cheerful testimony; yet, the student might go through them, and know but little of the idiomatic or practical part of the language. Several of the practical works, though well executed according to the plans which their authors had laid, neglect grammatical rules, if not entirely, at least far too much; and the student may, after having devoted a long time to the mere memorizing of sentences,

find himself in possession of a number of set phrases, valuable, it is true, but from which, destitute of landmarks, the slightest deviation must lead him into unknown regions.

A work which, uniting practice with theory, should attempt to avoid the difficulties mentioned above, had been long contemplated by the author of these pages, when "Woodbury's New Method with the German" made its appearance. Finding in that work the two systems, the analytic and the synthetic, beautifully blended and well elaborated, he had no hesitation in adopting the general plan of Mr. Woodbury's Grammar, in preparing his long intended treatise on the French.

The work commences with a comprehensive treatise on pronunciation. The power of the letters, as initials, medials and finals, is fully explained under the different letters. Peculiar care has been taken to render this part sufficiently full, in order to provide the student with a satisfactory guide and adviser, in the principal difficulties of the French pronunciation. The words presenting peculiarities of pronunciation are placed as exceptions to the rules given in this part.

In the commencement of the First Part of this grammar, the rules are given in the most simple form, and the idioms are gradually introduced and explained; copious references to the Second, or more theoretical Part, render further information easily attainable. After the rules of every lesson, comes a RÉSUMÉ OF EXAMPLES in illustration of them, as also of preceding ones, containing often new idioms and conversational phrases. The examples on the rules, the résumés, and the French exercises to be rendered into English and consisting almost entirely of questions and answers, combine, it is thought, all the benefits presented by the practical grammars, while the rules in the lessons, and the ease with which reference may be had to the Second Part, present all the advantages of the theoretical treatises. It will be easily seen that the teacher and student will find here the *practice*, with as little or as much of the *theory* as they may desire.

The grammatical rules and idioms are introduced gradually, so as not to offer too many difficulties at once. Care has been taken not to present the rules as abstract and arbitrary laws;

while the resemblance or difference of construction between the two languages is carefully pointed out.

Exercises to be rendered into French are placed at the end of every lesson. The materials for these are found in the examples to the rules, in the résumés, in the French exercises and in the vocabularies preceding the same. Besides all this, the student is furnished with the means of carrying on, in connection with the regular course already indicated, a series of exercises in French composition, at once easy, interesting, and profitable in the highest degree.

The *grouping* of the tenses of the verbs and the classification of the irregularities, will, it is hoped, simplify this part of grammar. In the former, the student will see that by learning a tense in one conjugation, he often learns it in the others; in the latter, he will perceive that the deviations of the irregular verbs are often very trifling and confined to particular tenses.

An attempt is made in the "*Practical Résumés*," Lessons 98 and 99, to simplify as much as possible the somewhat complex subject of the *past participle*.

The rules of the Second, or theoretical Part, are deduced from the most reliable sources; they are nearly all illustrated by short *extracts from the best French authors*. This will, it is hoped, while giving classical authority to the rules, inspire the student with a desire of becoming more intimately acquainted with the authors from whose works the examples are taken. It will be perceived, also, that the sentiments contained in the extracts have not been overlooked.

In the Second Part, the verbs are given in their fullest form. The irregular, defective, peculiar (See § 49), and unipersonal verbs are placed alphabetically.

The author would here respectfully suggest, not with a view of offering advice to experienced teachers, but as a mode which he has found beneficial in practice, that the student commence to learn the verbs from the paradigms in the Second Part, as soon as he has acquired some little knowledge of the pronunciation, and this simultaneously with his learning the lessons of the First Part. The verbs, in the French, and in the other so called Romanic languages, are more complicated and require more

study than the verbs in the German and other Teutonic languages. Having, in this manner, acquired some knowledge of the verbs, the student will, by the time he, in his progress through the first part, reaches the groupings of the tenses mentioned above, be able to recognize the verbs as old friends, and better to appreciate the classification of the irregularities. This course is advised not as indispensable, but as beneficial.

The reading lessons, in prose and in verse, extracted from the best sources, and containing grammatical references to both parts of the work, will not be unacceptable to the student. A vocabulary for these lessons is placed immediately after them.

Among the numerous works which have been consulted during the preparation of this grammar, the author would mention with gratitude the labors of the French Academy, Laveaux, Lemare, Bescher, Girault-Duvivier, Boniface, Bescherelle, Landais, etc.

With a sincere hope that the present volume may assist the American student in obtaining a knowledge of the beautiful language of France, it is respectfully submitted.

The numerous editions of this grammar which have been issued, having rendered a renewal of the stereotype plates necessary, the Author has taken this opportunity of giving to the work a thorough review, and, without changing the arrangement, of introducing such improvements as the kind suggestions of several experienced Instructors, and its use in his own classes, for nearly ten years, have pointed out to him as desirable.

L. F.

University of Michigan,
Ann Arbor, May, 1860.

GENERAL INDEX.

A (à), PREP. § 142, (2).
Abbreviations, p. 281.
Accents, LESSON 2.
Acheter, *to buy*, § 49, (5); its government, L. 50, 1.
Accorder, s,' *to agree;* said also of watches, L. 92, 3.
Active verb, § 43, (2), (3.)
Active Voice, used in French in cases where the passive is used in English, L. 35, 2; L. 46, 3; § 128, (5.); § 113, (1.)
Adjectives, § 14–1. Qualifying adjectives, § 14–2. Degrees of signification, § 14–2. Gender and number of, § 15. Formation of feminine of, § 16, L. 13. Irregular adjectives, § 16, (8.) Adjectives having no feminine, § 16, (9.) Plural of, § 17, L. 14. Agreement of adjectives with nouns, § 18; § 83; L. 13, L. 14. Relating to several nouns, § 18, (3); L. 14, 1, 2. Determining adjectives, § 19. Demonstrative, L. 9; § 20; § 93. Possessive, L. 9; § 21; § 94; Remarks on, § 95. Agree with object possessed, § 21, (2); L. 9, 3. Numeral adjectives, § 22, L. 19; place of, § 96. Cardinal adjectives, § 22, (1), (2), (4); Variations of, § 23; Observation on, § 24. Ordinal numbers, § 23, (3), (5). Observation on, § 25. Indefinite adjectives, § 30; § 97. Verbal adjectives, syntax of, § 65. Remarks on *feu, nu,* &c., § 84. Adjectives used adverbially, § 67, (3); § 84, (5). Place of adjectives, L. 15; § 85; § 86. Adjectives preceding noun, § 85, (11). Adjectives differing in meaning before and after, § 86. Regimen or government of, § 87; § 88; § 89; § 92; L. 79. Adjectives requiring a different preposition in French and English, § 90.
Adverbs, § 67. Formed from adjectives, § 68. Degrees of signification, § 69. Adverbs forming a comparison of themselves, § 70. Syntax of, § 136. Place of, § 136; L. 34; L. 41. Observation on, § 137. Adverbs of negation, § 138. Adverbs of quantity followed by *de*, L. 18.
A droite, *to the right*, L. 70, 6.
A gauche, *to the left*, L. 70, 6.
A fleur de, *even with*, L. 80, 2.
A force de, *by dint of*, L. 80, 2.
A l'égard de, *with regard to*, L. 80, 2.
A raison de, *at the rate of*, L. 80, 2.
Au dehors, *outside*, L. 80, 2.
Au dedans, *inside*, L. 80, 2.
Au delà, *beyond*, L. 80, 2.
Age, *avoir* used for, L. 20, 6.
A la campagne, *in the country*, L. 34, 8.
A la chasse, *hunting*, L. 34, 8.
A la pêche, *fishing*, L. 34, 8.
A l'anglaise, à la française, *after the English, French fashions*, L. 69, 3.
A l'école, *at school;* à l'église, *at church*, L. 25, 6.
A l'endroit, *right side out;* à l'envers, *wrong side out*, L. 69, 1.
A l'insu, *unknown to*, L. 82.
Alphabet, L. 1.
Aller, *to go*, used for proximate future, L. 26, 1. Aller trouver, *to go to*, L. 26, 3. S'en aller, *to go away*, L. 40; 1, 2; L. 47, 1. Aller, *to fit, to sit*, L. 47, 2. Aller à pied, à cheval, en voiture, *to walk, ride, go in a carriage*, L. 62, Examples.
Amis (un de mes), *a friend of mine*, L. 67, 3.
Amuser, (s',) *to take pleasure in, etc.*, L. 38, 6.
Analogy between many French and English words, § 147.
Answers in French should be explicit, L. 24, 12.
Apporter, amener, *to bring, carry*, L. 44, 6.
Approcher, (s',) *to draw near*, L. 39, 6.
Articles, § 13; L. 4, 1, 2. Elision of, L. 4, 2; § 13, (7); § 146. Contraction of, § 13, (8); L. 5, 1;

L. 25, 6. English article *a* or *an*, § 14, (9). Recapitulation of articles, § 13. Syntax of, § 77. Use of, § 77, (1), (2), (3), etc. Before words used in partitive sense, § 78, (2), (3), (4), (5), (6), (7); § 13, (10); L. 6, 1; L. 7, 5; L. 8, 4; L. 12, 3; L. 29, 8. Article used before words in general sense, and abstract nouns, § 77, (1), (2); L. 8, 2, 3; L. 23, 11; L. 29 and 30. Article omitted before number of a sovereign, L. 30, 3. Article *le* used before parts of the body, L. 63, 5. Use of article instead of possessive adjective, § 77, (9); L. 37, 1; L. 63, 5; L. 66, 3. Repetition of, § 80. Remarks on the use of, § 81. Idioms in which the article is omitted, § 82.

Aspirate H, L. 3, p. 25. H not aspirate in héroïne, etc., L. 3, p. 25, note.

Asseoir, (s',) *to sit down*, L. 36, 4.

Assez. *enough*, its place, L. 34, 3.

Aujourd'hui, *to-day*, its place, L. 41, 5.

Au lieu de, *instead of*, L. 35, 4.

Au revoir, *till I see you again*, L. 89, 4.

Auxiliary verbs, § 43, (8); L. 43, § 46. Use of, § 46. Paradigms of, § 47.

Avancer, *to gain*, said of clocks, etc., L. 92, 1.

Avant, *before*, prep. § 142, (1).

Avoir, *to have*, used idiomatically with *quelque chose, chaud, froid, etc.*, L. 8, 1. With *coutume, besoin, etc.*, L. 21, 4. Used for the day of the month, L. 19, 6; for age, L. 20, 6. Avoir lieu, *to take place*, L. 35, 3. Avoir mal, *to have a pain, etc.*, L. 66, 1. Avoir des douleurs, L. 66, 2. Avoir, *to hold*, L. 66, 3. Avoir chaud aux mains, L. 66, 3. Avoir beau, *to be in vain*, L. 67, 1. Avoir, used for dimension, size, L. 68, 1. Avoir, negatively, § 47, (2). Interrogatively, § 47, (3). Interrogatively and negatively, § 47, (4).

Beau, bel, *handsome, fine*, L. 13, 6.

Capitals, use of, § 145.

Cardinal numbers, § 22, (2); § 24. Variations of, § 23. Use of, after names of sovereigns, L. 30, 3; § 26, (3). For the day of the month, § 26, (1).

Cases, § 2.

Ce, demons. prn. § 37, (6); § 108; § 116; L. 81. Used for *he, she*, before *être*, L. 82, 1. C'est moi, L. 81, 1.

—, demons. adj, § 20, (1); L. 10, 1, 2.

Cedilla, L. 3, 6.

Ce que, *what*, L. 31, 4.

Celui qui, *he who*, L. 81, 4.

Chacun, *each one*, § 41, (2).

Chaque, *each*, § 30, (4).

Changer d'habit, *to change one's coat*; changer de maison, *to move*, L. 58, 1. Changer, *to exchange*, L. 58, 2.

Chez, prep. *at the house of*, § 142, (3); L. 24, 9.

Collective nouns, § 3, (5). (6). Number of verbs after collective nouns, L. 85.

Collocation of words, § 144.

Combien de temps, *how long;* combien de fois? *how often?* L. 44, 1. Combien y a-t-il? *how far? how long since?* L. 57, 4.

Comparison of adjectives and adverbs, L. 16; L. 17.

Composing French, plan of exercises for, p. 103; list of words for, p. 271.

Compound nouns, § 3, (7). § 9; L. 59. Gender of, § 5, (15).

Conditional mode, § 45, 2d, (3). Use of, § 125. Formation and termination of, L. 62, 1, 2. Irregularities of, L. 62, 4. Not used after si, *if*, L. 62, 6; § 125.

Conjugation of verbs. First conjugation, paradigm, § 48. Peculiarities of some verbs, § 49. Second conjugation, paradigm, § 50. Third conjugation, paradigm, § 51. Peculiarities of verbs of third conjugation, § 49; § 52. Fourth conjugation, paradigm, § 53. Passive verbs, paradigm, § 54. Rule, § 55. Reflective verbs, paradigm, § 56. Negative form of, § 57. Interrogative form, § 58. Interrogative and negative form, § 59. Unipersonal verbs, paradigm, § 61, 2. Terminations of regular verbs, § 60. Table of irregular verbs, § 62.

Connaître, *to be acquainted with*, L. 30, 6. Connaître quelqu'un à la voix, *to know some one by the voice*, L. 87, 4. Connaître de vue, *to know by sight, etc.*, L. 87, 5. Se connaître à, *to be a judge of*, L. 87, 6.
Conjunctions, § 73. Lists of, § 73, (2). Syntax of, § 143. Government of, § 127; § 143. Requiring subjunctive, § 143, (2); infinitive, § 143, (1); conditional or indicative, § 143, (3); *si, if*, § 125, (3); L. 62, 6. Examples of conjunctions, L. 100.
Consonants, L. 3.
Convenir, *to be becoming*, L. 49, 2.
Coucher (se), *to retire, to go to bed*, L. 37, 5.

Dans, prep. *in*, § 142, (2).
Davantage, *more*, L. 16, note.
Day of month, week, not preceded by preposition, L. 26, 10.
Degrees of comparison of adjectives, L. 16; L. 17.
Demain, *to-morrow*, its place, L. 41, 5.
Demander, *to ask*, its government, L. 50, 1.
Démettre (se), le bras, etc., *to dislocate one's arm, etc.*, L. 93, 1. To resign a place, L. 93, 2.
Demonstrative adjective, § 20. *See* Adjective.
Demonstrative pronoun, § 36. *See* Pronoun.
Dépêcher (se), *to make haste*, L. 40, 7.
Devant, prep. *before*, § 142, (1).
Devenir, *to become*, L. 85, 5.
Devoir, *to owe*, expressing future, obligation, L. 35, 5.
Dimension, etc., L. 68.
Diphthongs, sounds of, L. 2, p. 19.
Dont, prn. *of whom, of which*, L. 31, 8.

Elision, § 146. Of article, L. 4, 2; § 13, (7). Of pronoun *je*, L. 4, 5. Of preposition *de*, L. 6, 3. Of *ne*, L. 7, 3. Of pronouns *le, la*, L. 9, 2.
Éloigner (s'), *to go from, to leave*, L. 39, 6.
Emparer, (s'), *to seize, to lay hold of*, L. 93, 3.
Empêcher, (s'), *to help, to prevent one's self*, L. 93, 4.
Emporter, Emmener, *to take away*, L. 44, 6.
En, pronoun, § 39, (17); § 95, (5); § 110; § 103, (1); § 104; L. 15, 7; L. 22, 3. Before a past participle, § 135, (7); L. 42, 11, 12. Used instead of possessive adjective, § 95, (5); L. 96, 1, 2.
En, prep. § 142, (2); L. 34, 5, 6, 7.
Encore, *more*, etc., L. 17, 3.
Endormir (s'), *to fall asleep*, L. 39, 5.
Ennuyer, *to weary*, L. 38, 4. S'ennuyer, *to become weary*, L. 38, 5.
Entendre parler, *to hear about, of*, L. 35, 7.
Entendre, *to understand*, L. 96, 3. Se faire entendre, *to make one's self understood*, L. 96, 4. Followed by another verb, L. 97, 4.
Envoyer chercher, *to send for*, L. 26, 5.
Épouser, *to marry*, said only of parties, L. 67, 2.
Essayer, *to try on*, L. 47, 4.
Est-ce que, prefixed to the verb, § 98; L. 25.
Être, conjugation of, § 47, (5). Number of être after *ce*, § 116. Used for aller, *to go*, L. 43, 5. For *to belong*, L. 47, 5; L. 91, 2. Être riche de, *to be worth*, L. 49, 5. Être en retard, *to be late*, and other idioms with être, L. 91, 1. Y être, *to be at home, in*, L. 91, 3.
Euphonic *t*, L. 4, 6.
Éveiller (s'), *to awake*, L. 39, 5.
Every day, *tous les jours*, L. 26, 8.
Exercises in composing French, p. 270.

Fâcher (se), *to be* or *become angry*, L. 40, 4.
Faire, before another verb, *to cause, to have*, L. 32, 3, 4; L. 97, 4. Faire faire, *to have made*, L. 32, 4; L. 63, 1. Faire raccommoder, *to have mended*. Faire la cuisine, faire cuire, *to cook*. Faire bouillir, *to boil*, L. 63, 1. Faire peur, *to frighten*; faire attention, *to pay attention*; faire tort, *to injure*; faire du mal, *to hurt*, L. 63, 3.
——, used unipersonally, in speaking of the weather, L. 33, 5.
Falloir, *to be necessary*, L. 48.
Feminine terminations, § 6, (2), (3).
Feu, adj., *late*, § 84, (1).

Future absolute, § 45, (2). Use of, § 124. Formation of, § 61; L. 60, 1, 2, 3. Irregularities of, L. 61, 1, 2, 3, 4. Future anterior, § 45, (2), 8. Use of, § 124. Formation of, L. 60, 4. Future used in French where the present is used in English, L. 61, 5.

GENDER, § 4. By the meaning, § 5. By the termination, § 6.
Gêner, *to incommode, trouble, etc.*, L. 83, 5. Se gêner, *to constrain* or *trouble one's self*, L. 83, 5.
Gens, *people*, L. 95, 2, 3, 4.
Government. *See* Regimen.
Gré, *will.* Bon gré, mal gré, etc. L. 88, 5.
Guère (ne), *but little*, L. 17, 5.

HÂTER (se), *to hasten*, L. 40, 7.
Hier, *yesterday*, its place, L. 41, 5.
Hour of the day, L. 20; L. 92.

IMPERATIVE mode, § 45, 3d, (4). Use of, § 126. Terminations of, L. 70, 1. Irregularities, L. 70, 3, 4. Two imperatives coming together, § 100, (6). Imperative followed by a verb, L. 71, 1.
Imperfect of indicative, § 45, (2), 2d. Use of, § 119; L. 53. Formation and terminations, L. 53. Irregularities, L. 54.
Imperfect of subjunctive, § 45, (5), 2. Use of, L. 75. Terminations of, L. 75, 1, 2, 3. Formation of, L. 75, 4. Irregularities, L. 75, 5.
Importer, n'importe, *no matter*; qu'importe? *what matters it?* L. 94, 1, 2.
In, *dans, en, à*, L. 34, 5, 6.
Indicative mode, § 45, 1st, (2.)
Indicative present, § 45, (2), 1. Use of, § 118. Terminations, L. 23, 5.
Infinitive mode, § 45, 5th, (6). Use of, § 128. Important rules, § 128, (4), (5). Verb preceded by another, put in infinitive, L. 21, 2.
In order to, *pour*, L. 28, 8.
Inquiéter (s'), *to be uneasy*, L. 93, 5.
Interjections, § 74.
Interrogative form of verbs, L. 23, 9; L. 25, 1; § 98, (5), (6).
Interrogative sentences, form of, L. 6, 4; § 76, (4), (5); L. 25, 1; L. 56, 1.
Irregular verbs, L. 24. Table of, § 62.
It, coming before verb *to be* followed by *I*, etc. L. 81. *It* used absolutely before verb *to be*, L. 81, 1.

JUSQU'OÙ, *how far?* L. 44, 3.
Jusqu'à, *until, as far as*, L. 44, 4.

LAISSER, *to leave, to neglect, to forget to bring*, L. 86, 4. Followed by another verb, L. 97, 4.
La plupart, *most.* Number of verb after, L. 85, 3.
Le, meaning *so, it*, etc., L. 46, 4, 5.
Le mien, *mine*, etc., L. 9, 6; L. 12, 6.
Lequel, etc., *which*, L. 18, 6; L. 31, 7.
Lever, (se), *to rise*, L. 37, 6.
L'un, l'autre, *one another*, § 41, (10).
L'un et l'autre, *both*, § 41, (11): L. 19, 3.

MADAME, Mademoiselle, used before names of kindred, L. 24, note. Before titles, L. 29, 6. Plural of, L. 29, 7.
Mal, *sore, pain*, etc., L. 66. Mal de dents, *toothache*, mal de tête, *headache*, L. 66.
Marcher, *to walk*, L. 36, 6.
Marier, *to marry, to perform the ceremony*, L. 67, 2. Se marier, *to get married*, L. 67, 2. Être marié, *to be married*, L. 67, 2. *See* Épouser.
Measure, weight. price by, L. 68, 3.
Même, *same, even, etc.*, § 30, (5); § 97, (2).
Mener, porter, *to take, to carry*, L. 44, 6.
Mettre, *to put on*, L. 32, 1. Mettre le couvert, *to lay the cloth*, L. 32, 1. Mettre à même, *to enable*; mettre pied à terre, *to alight*; mettre à la porte, *to turn out of doors*; mettre au fait, *to acquaint*, etc., L. 69, 1. Se mettre, *to dress one's self, to sit down*, L. 69, 2.
Mettre à l'heure, *to set a watch*, L. 92, 2.
Midi, minuit, *noon, midnight*, L. 20, 2.
Modes, § 45. Indicative, § 45, 1st, (2). Conditional, § 45, 2d, (3). Imperative, § 45, 3d, (4). Subjunctive, § 45, 4th, (5). Infinitive, § 45, 5th, (6). Participle, § 45, 6th, (7).
Moi, toi, etc., used instead of nominative pronouns, L. 17, 6.

Mon, ma, poss. adj., agree with object possessed, L. 9, 3, 4.
Monde, *world, people*, L. 95, 1. Tout le monde, *every body*, L. 95.
Monsieur, used before names of kindred, L. 24, note. Before titles, L. 29, 6. Plural of, L. 29, 7.
Month, day of, L. 19, 6; L. 26, 10.
Must, *falloir*, etc., L. 48; § 62.

NAÎTRE, *to be born*, Je suis né, *I was born*, L. 43, note.
Nasal sounds, p. 21.
Ne, negative, § 138. Place of, L. 7, 1. Ne—que, *only*, L. 19, 2. Ne, idiomatic, § 127, 3; § 138, (4), (5); L. 72, 9. Ne—plus, *no—more*, L. 17, 4. Ne—guère, L. 17, 5.
Ni, *neither, nor*, L. 7, 4. Article used or not after *ni*, L. 8, 3, 4.
Ni l'un, ni l'autre, *neither*, L. 84, 4, 5.
N'importe, *no matter*, L. 94, 1.
Negative sentence, L. 7.
Negative, second, suppressed after certain verbs, § 138, (2).
N'est-ce pas? *Is it not?* L. 94, 3.
Neuter verbs, § 43, (5). Their auxiliary, L. 43; § 46.
Nominative. *See* Subject.
Non, *no*, Je dis que non, *I say no*, L. 82, 3.
Notre, votre, *our, your*, etc., L. 9, 5. Le nôtre, *ours*, L. 9, 6.
Noun, § 3. Proper, § 3,(3). Common, § 3, (4). Collective, § 3, (5), (6). Compound, § 3, (7). Taken in a partitive sense, § 13, (10); § 78, (1), (2); L. 6, 1; L. 29, 8. Taken in a general sense, § 77, (1), (2); L. 8, 2. Gender by the meaning, § 5. By the termination, § 6. Plural of, § 8; L. 11. Plural of compound, § 9; L. 59. Syntax of, § 76. Place of subject in affirmative and negative sentences, § 76, (1), (2). In interjected sentences, § 76, (3). In interrogative sentences, § 76, (4), (5); L. 6, 4; L. 56, 1. Place of regimen, § 76, (6), (7), (8), (9); L. 56, 2, 3. Respective places of possessor and object possessed, § 76, (10); L. 5, 3. Of object and its substance, § 76, (11); L. 5, 4; L. 59, 6. Of object and its use, § 76, (12), (13), (14); L. 59, 7.
Nouveau, nouvel, *new*, L. 13, 6.
Nu, *bare*, adj. § 84, (2).
Nul, *no*, § 30, (7).
Nulle part, *no where*, L. 25, 8.
Number, § 1, (5). *See* Different Parts of Speech.
Number. *See* Numeral Adjectives. Ordinal adverbs of number, § 29.
Numeral collective nouns, § 27.
Numerals, fractions, § 28.

ON, *one, people, they*, § 41, (4), (5) § 113; L. 35, 1, 2.
Onze, *eleven*, etc., article not elided before, L. 19, 7.
Ordinal numbers, § 22, (3), (5). Not used after names of sovereigns or for days of the month, L. 30, 3; § 26, (1), (3).
Ôter, *to take off, to take away*, L. 32, 2.
Ou, *or*, agreement of verb with nouns connected by, L. 84, 2, 3.
Oui, *yes*, Je dis que oui, *I say yes*, L. 82, 3.

PARADIGMS of auxiliary verbs, § 47. For others, *see* Conjugations.
Par où? *which way?* L. 44, 5.
Participle, past, § 45, 6th, (7). Without an auxiliary, § 66, (3); L. 42, 10; L. 98, 1. Accompanied by *être*, § 134, (2); L. 42, 6; L. 98, 3. In reflective verbs, § 135, (1), (2); L. 45, 2; L. 98, 6; L. 99, 4. In neuter verbs, L. 98, 3. Accompanied by *avoir*, § 134, (3); L. 42, 5; L. 98, 4. Never agrees with indirect regimen, L. 42, 9. Neuter verbs with *avoir*, § 135, (6); L. 99, 2. Of unipersonal verbs, L. 45, 6; L. 99, 3. Never agrees with *en*, § 135, (7); L. 42, 11, 12; L. 99, 8. Followed by an infinitive, § 135, (3); L. 98, 7; L. 99, 5. Of passive verbs, L. 46; L. 98, 2. *Fait* always invariable before an infinitive, L. 63, 2; L. 99, 7. After *le peu*, § 135, (8).
——— present § 64; L. 97.
Partitive sense, nouns taken in, L. 6, 1; § 13,(10); § 78,(1), (2); L. 29,8.
Pas, point, *not*, difference, § 138, (1). Place of, L. 7, 1, 2. Omitted when a second negative occurs, § 138, (3); L. 7, 4. Omitted after certain verbs, § 138, (2).

Passer (se), *to do without*, L. 39, 1.
Passive voice, § 113, (1).
Passive verb, § 43, (4); L. 46. Conjugation of, § 54. Rule, § 55. Its participle, L. 46, 2; L. 98, 2.
Past anterior, § 45, (2), 5. Use of § 122; L. 55.
Past definite, § 45, (2), 3. Use of § 120; L. 51. Its terminations and irregularities, L. 52.
Past indefinite, § 45, (2), 4. Use of, § 121; L. 41.
Past of subjunctive, § 45, (5), 3.
Payer, *to pay*, its government, L. 50.
Personne, *no body*, § 41, (6); L. 7, 7.
Persons, § 31, (3.)
Place, of subject, L. 56, 1, respective place of noun, direct and indirect regimen, L. 56, 1, 2, 3; § 76,(7), (8), (9). In interjected sentences, § 76, (3). Of noun in interrogative sentences, § 76, (4), (5); L. 56, 1; L. 6, 4. Of adjective, L. 8, 5; L. 15; § 85; § 86. Of pronoun subject or nominative, § 98. Of regimen pronoun, L. 9, 1; L. 27; L. 28; § 101; § 102. Place of *en* and *y*, § 104; L. 57. Of adverb, § 136; L. 34; L. 41, 4, 5. Of verb, § 144.
Plaire (se), *to take pleasure in*, L. 40. Used unipersonally, comme il vous plaira, *as you please*, L. 89, 3.
Pleuvoir, *to rain*, L. 33, 3.
Pluperfect of indicative, § 45, (2), 6. Use of, § 123; L. 55, 4.
——— of subjunctive, § 45, (5), 4; L. 75, 6.
Plural of nouns, § 8; L. 11. Of compound nouns, § 9; L. 59. Nouns having no plural, § 10. Nouns having no singular, § 11. Plural of adjectives, § 17; L. 14, 3. Moral or physical properties of man, single in the individual, not put in the plural, L. 66, 5.
Plus de, *more than*, before a number, L. 20, 7.
Plusieurs, *several*, § 30, (9); L. 18, 7.
Pour, *in order to*, L. 28, 8.
Porter, *to carry*, *to wear*, L. 23, 10; L. 44, 6. Se porter, *to be*, *to do*, L. 36, 3.
Preposition, § 71. Table of principal, § 72. Regimen or government of, § 130. Governing without another preposition, § 139. By means of *de*, § 139, 2. By *à*, § 139, 3. Rules on goverment of, § 140. Repetition of, § 141. Observations on, § 142.
Present tense, used in French, where past used in English, L. 57, 2.
Promener (se), *to walk*, *ride*, etc., *for pleasure or health*, L. 36, 5.
Prendre, *to take*, its government, L. 50, 1.
Prendre garde, *to take care;* prendre le deuil, *to go into mourning;* prendre la peine, *to take the trouble;* prendre les devants, *to go before;* prendre un parti, *to take a resolution;* prendre du thé, du café, *to take tea, coffee*, L. 71, 3.
Prendre le thé, *to take one's tea*, L. 71, note.
Pronouns, § 31. Personal, § 32. Remarks on, § 33. Use of *moi*, *toi*, instead of subject or nominative pronouns, § 33, (8), etc. Use of reflective, L. 37. Reflective pronoun *se*, § 33, (12), (13). *Soi*, (14). Possessive pronouns, § 34; L. 9. Remarks on, § 35. Demonstrative pronouns, § 36; L. 9. Remarks on, § 37. *Ce*, demonstrative pronoun, § 37, (6); § 108; § 116; L. 81. Used for *he*, *she*, L. 82. *Celui*, *celle*, *celui-ci*, *celle-ci*, § 20; L. 10. *Ceci*, *cela*, L. 10, 6. Relative pronouns, § 38; L. 31. Remarks on, § 39. *En*, § 39, (17); § 95, (5); § 110; § 103, (1). Place of *En*, § 104. *Y*, § 39, (18); § 103. (2); Place of *y*, § 104; § 111. *Dont*, L. 31, 8. Syntax of pronouns, § 98. Place of subject or nominative, § 98. Repetition of, § 99; L. 87. Place of regimen pronouns, § 100; L. 9, 1; L. 27. Respective place of regimen pronouns, § 101; L. 28. Rule on this subject, § 102. Repetition of regimen pronoun, § 105; L. 27, 7. Rules on possessive pronouns, § 106. On demonstrative pronouns, § 107. On relative pronouns, § 109.

Que, rel. prn., § 109. Never suppressed, L. 19, 1; L. 31, 3. *Que*, interrogative, L. 18, 5; L. 31, 5.
Que, conj., never suppressed, L. 19, 1. Que, idiomatic, L. 82, 3.

Quel, *which, what*, § 30, (10); § 109; L. 18, 4.
Quelque, § 30, (12); § 97; L. 18, 7; L. 88.
Quel—que, quelque—que, govern the subjunctive, L. 88, 3.
Quelque chose, *something, anything*, L. 7, 6. Require *de* before an adjective, L. 18, 3. Not used in negative sentences, L. 7, 6.
Quelque part, *somewhere, anywhere*, L. 25, 8.
Quelqu'un, § 41, 7; L. 7, 6.
Qu'est-ce que, used idiomatically for *what?* L. 82, 2.
Quiconque, *whoever*, § 41, (9).
Quitter, *to leave, abandon*, etc., L. 86, 3.
Quoi, *what*, L. 31, 6.
Qui, *who, whom*, used absolutely, § 39, (5).
Rappeler (se), *to remember, recollect*, L. 37, 2.
Reading Lessons, p. 474.
Recevoir des nouvelles, *to hear from*, L. 35, 6.
Reflective verb, § 43, (6). Conjugation of, § 56; L. 36. Often used in French for the English passive, L. 36, 2. Its auxiliary is *être*, L. 45; § 46. Its participle, § 135; L. 45; L. 98, 5; L. 99, 4.
Regarder, *to concern*, L. 94, 5.
Remercier, *to thank*, Je vous remercie, equivalent to a refusal, L. 89, 2.
Résumé of rules on participle past, L. 98; L. 99.
Rien, *nothing*, etc., L. 7, 7; L. 18, 3.
Régime, regimen or object, § 2. Direct, § 2, (2); § 42, (4); L. 56, 2, 3; § 76. Indirect, § 2, (3); § 42, (5); L. 56, 2, 3; § 76.
Regimen or government of adjectives, § 87; L. 79. After *être* unipersonal, § 87, (4); L. 79, 3. Adjective followed by *de*, § 88. By *à*, § 89. By different prepositions in both languages, § 90. Regimen of verbs, § 129; L. 21, 4; L. 50; L. 76, 77, 78. Verbs followed by no preposition, § 130; L. 76, 1. By *à*, § 131. By *de*, § 132; L. 21, 4; L. 77. By a preposition in French and by none in in English, L. 78, 1, 2. By a different prep. in both, L. 78, 3. Regimen of prepositions, § 139; L. 80. Important rules on regimen, § 92; § 133; § 140; L. 80, 5.
Regimen of prendre, *to take;* voler, *to steal;* acheter, *to buy;* demander, *to ask;* payer, *to pay*, L. 50, 1.
Réjouir (se), *to rejoice*, L. 40, 5.
Remettre, *to set a dislocated bone*, etc., L. 93, examples.
Repetition of demonstrative adjectives, § 93. Of possessive adjectives, § 21, (4). Of articles, § 80, L. 6, 5; L. 86. Of subject or nominative pronouns, § 99; L. 87. Of regimen or objective pronouns, § 105; L. 87. Of adverbs, § 137. Of prepositions, § 141.
Rester, used unip., *to remain, to have left*, L. 85, 4.
Reste de, *left*, L. 85, 4.
Retarder, *to lose, to put back*, said of watches, etc., L. 92, 1.

Savoir, *to know*, and connaître, *to be acquainted with*, L. 30, 5.
Seoir, *to suit, become*, L. 47, 3. Used unipersonally, L. 49, 1.
Servir (se), *to use*, L. 39, 2. Servir, *to help at table*, L. 89, 1.
S'il vous plaît, *if you please*. L. 89, 3.
Si, conj., § 125, (3). Should not precede conditional mode, L. 62, 6.
Souvenir (se), *to remember, recollect*, L. 37, 2.
So, rendered by *le*, L. 46, 4.
Speech, parts of, § 1, (1).
Stem of a verb, L. 23.
Subject or nominative, § 2,(1); § 42, (2). Verb having several subjects in different persons, L. 83, 2. Agreement of verbs with subjects, L. 83, 1; L. 84; § 114; § 115.
Subjunctive mode, § 45, 4th, (5). Use of, § 127; § 143; L. 72, 8, 9, 10. Present of, § 45, (5), 1. Terminations of, L. 72. Subjunctive used after verbs expressing consent, command, etc., followed by *que*, L. 72, 8. After several unipersonal verbs followed by *que*, L. 73, 1. After certain conjunctions, § 143; L. 73, 4. After *croire, espérer*, etc., interrogative or negative, L. 74, 2. After another verb, uncertain, and preceded by relative pronoun or a superlative, L. 74, 3, 4. Past of subjunctive, L. 72, 7.
Substantive. *See* Noun.

Superlative absolute, § 14, (11); L. 17, 1. Superlative relative, § 14, (9); L. 17, 2.
Syntax, § 75. Of noun, § 76. Article, § 77. Adjective, § 83. Pronoun, § 98. Verb, § 114. Participle, § 134. Adverb, § 136. Preposition, § 139. Conjunction, § 143.

TAIRE, *to conceal*, L. 96, 5. Se taire, *to be silent*, L. 96, 5.
Tarder, *to tarry, to long*, L. 58, 3.
Tel, *such*, § 41, (12), (13). Monsieur un tel, *Mr. such a one*, § 41, 13.
Tenir, *to hold*, used in the sense of *to keep*. Tenir sa parole, *to keep one's word*, tenir la porte ouverte, *to keep the door open*, etc., etc., L. 90, 1. Tenir un langage, *to make use of language, expressions*, etc., L. 90, 2. Tenir, *to be attached*, etc., L. 90, 3. Faire tenir, *to forward*, L. 90, 5. Se tenir, *to remain, to abide by*, etc., L. 90, 6.
Tenses of verbs, § 45. Formation of, (§ 61). *See* Different Tenses.
Terminations of regular verbs, § 60. Of indicative, L. 23, 5. Of imperfect of indicative, L. 53, 5. Of past definite, L. 51. Of future, L. 60. Of conditional, L. 62. Of imperative, L. 70. Of subjunctive, L. 72. Of imperfect of subjunctive, L. 75. Of infinitive, L. 21, 1. Of present participle, L. 23, 3. Of past participle, L. 23, 4.
Time of day, L. 20.
Times, number of, in a given space, L. 68, 4.
Tout, *all*, etc., § 30, (15), (16); § 97, (4), (5), (6). Tout, *every*, L. 26, 8. Tout, *the whole*, L. 26, 9. Tout, *entirely, quite*, variable by euphony, L. 88, 4.
Tromper, *to deceive*, L. 38, 1. So tromper, *to be mistaken*, etc., L. 38, 2.

UN, une, *a, an, one*, § 13, (4), (11); L. 6, 2. Not used before nouns placed in apposition, L. 30, 4.
Unipersonal verbs, L. 33; § 43, (7). Paradigm of, § 61–2. Auxil. and partic of unipers. verbs, L. 45, 3, 4.

VALOIR, *to be worth*, L. 49, 3; *to be better*, L. 49, 6.
Venir, *to come*, used to indicate past just elapsed, L. 26, 2. Venir trouver, *to come to*, L. 26, 3.
Verbal adjectives, § 65; L. 97.
Verbs, Four Conjugations of, L. 21; § 42. Subject or nominative of, § 42, (2). Regimen or object of, § 42, (3). Different sorts of verbs, § 43. Active, § 43, (2). (3); L. 43. Passive, § 43, (4); L. 46. Neuter, § 43, (5); L. 43. Reflective, § 43, (6); § 56; L. 36. Unipersonal, L. 33; § 43, 7; § 61–2. Auxiliary verbs, § 43, (8). Use of, § 46; L. 43, L. 45. Modes and tenses of, § 45. *See* Different Modes and Tenses. Irregular verbs, L. 24. Table of, § 62. Syntax of the verb, § 114. Agreement of the verb with subject, § 114; L. 83; L. 84; L. 85. Verb after a collective noun, § 115; L. 85, 1, 2, 3. Number of verb after *ce*, § 116. Verb after several subjects in different persons, § 117. Use of tenses, § 118. *See* Different Tenses. Regimen or government of verbs. *See* Regimen.
Veuillez, *be so kind*, L. 70, 4.
Vocabulary to the Reading Lessons, p. 493.
Voici, *here is*, L. 34, 4.
Voilà, *there is*, L. 34, 4.
Voler, *to rob, steal*, its government, L. 50, 1.
Vouloir dire, *to mean*, L. 32, 5, 6.
——— (en), *to bear a grudge*, etc., L. 94, 6.
Vowels, L. 2.

WHAT, rel. prn., *ce que*, L. 31, 4; *que*, L. 31, 5.
———, interrogative, rendered by, *qu'est-ce que*, L. 82, 2.
Whole (the), *le tout*, L. 26, 9.
Will, used in the sense of *wish*, rendered by *vouloir*, L. 60, 5.
Words, variable, § 1, (3). Invariable, § 1, (4).

Y AVOIR, *to be there*, § 61–2; L. 33, 4. Used for *ago*, L. 41, 6. *Y avoir*, followed by the present, when the action continues, L. 57, 2.
Y, prn. & adv. § 39, (18); § 103, (2). Place of, § 104; § 111; L. 24, 11.

FASQUELLE'S

NEW FRENCH COURSE.

PART FIRST.

LEÇON I. LESSON I.

THE LETTERS.

THE French alphabet contains twenty-five letters:

		Old names.	New names.[1]	Examples.
A	a	ah	ah	amas.
B	b	bay	be[2]	barre.
C	c	say	ke[3]	cas, cil.
D	d	day	de[4]	dard.
E	e	a	a	effet.
F	f	eff	fe	frère.
G	g	jay[5]	ghe	grêle.
H	h	ash	he	haie.
I	i	e	e	idée.
J	j	jee[5]	je	jais.
K	k	kah	ke	kali.
L	l	ell	le	lit.
M	m	emm	me	mât.
N	n	enn	ne	natte.
O	o	o	o	orge.
P	p	pay	pe	père.
Q	q	ku	ke	quadre.
R	r	err[6]	re	rat.
S	s	ess	se	soie.
T	t	tay	te	tort.
U	u	u[7]	u	urne.
V	v	vay	v	vase.
X	x	eeks	xe[8]	rixe.
Y	y	e grec	e grec	yeux.
Z	z	zed	ze[9]	zèle.

W, called in French *double V*, might be added, as many foreign words which have that letter, have been adopted into the French language.

[1] The new names of the French letters are seldom used.
[2] Like *s* in *pleasure*.
[3] Nearly like *err* in *error*.
[4] No corresponding sound in English.
[5] Nearly like *be* in *globe*.
[6] Nearly like *ke* and *de* in *cake* and *grade*. The *e* of the other letters has the same sound.
[7] kse.
[8] *se* in *rose*.

LEÇON II. LESSON II.

THE VOWELS.

VOWELS are rendered long or short by certain marks placed over them. These marks, which are three in number, are called accents.

The *acute* accent (′) is placed over *e*, to give it a sharp or close sound. (See 4. é.)

The *grave* accent (`) is placed over *e*, to give to that vowel a grave or open sound. (See 5. è.) It is also put on *à*, *at*, or *to*, *là*, *there*, and on the *u* of *où*, *there*, to distinguish those words from *a*, *has*, *la*, *the*, and *ou*, *or*. The grave accent, however, does not change the sound of *a* and *u*.

The *circumflex* accent (^) is placed over *a*, *e*, *i*, *o*, *u*, to give to those letters a long and broad sound.[1]

1. a like *a* in *mat*, *rat*. Examples, *face*, *face*; bateau, *boat*; tableau, *picture*; patte, *paw*; malade, *sick*.
2. â like *a* in *bar*, *far*. Ex. âge, *age*; château, *castle*; pâte, *paste*; blâme, *blame*; crâne, *cranium*.
3. e nearly like *u* in *cur*, and frequently silent at the end of polysyllables. Ex. le, *the*; me, *me*; te, *thee*; que, *that*; meuble, *piece of furniture*; peuple, *people*; rime, *rime*.
4. é like *a* in *fate*. Ex. été, *summer*; amitié, *friendship*; élevé, *raised*; épée, *sword*.
5. è like *e* in *met*. Ex. père, *father*; frère, *brother*; mère, *mother*; élève, pupil.
6. ê nearly like *a* in *dare*, *fare*. Ex. rêve, *dream*; extrême, *extreme*; crême, *cream*; crêpe, *crape*; forêt, *forest*.
7. i nearly like *ee* in *reed*, *creed*. Ex. midi, *mid-day*; ici, *here*; fini, *finished*; crédit, *credit*.
8. î like *ee* in *eel*, *feel*. Ex. île, *island*; gîte, *lodging*; épître, *epistle*; dîme, *tithe*; abîme, *abyss*.
9. o between the *o* in *rob* and that in *robe*, or that of *nor* and *no*. Ex. robe, *robe*; globe, *globe*; cachot, *dungeon*; haricot, *bean*.
10. ô like *o* in *bone*, *no*. Ex. dépôt, *deposit*; prévôt, *provost*; bientôt, *soon*; suppôt, *supporter*.
11. u. The exact French sound of this letter is not found in English. The position of the lips in *whistling*, is very nearly tho

[1] This accent indicates the suppression of the letter *s* after the vowel on which it is placed; *fête*, *tête*, *bête*, were formerly written, *feste*, *teste*, *beste*; the *s* was not sounded, but gave to the preceding vowel that prolonged sound, now represented by the circumflex accent.

position which they should have in emitting the French *u*. Ex. *urne, urn;* lune, *moon;* but, *aim;* tribu, *tribe;* tribut, *tribute;* élu, elected.

12. û is the u with a prolonged sound. Ex. mûre, *mulberry;* dû, *due;* crû, *growth;* brûler, *to burn.*

13. y. See 29, y, page 20.

Exercise 1.

1. (a) Table, *table;* fable, *fable;* chat, *cat;* éclat, *splendor;* arbre, *tree;* tard, *late;* balle, *ball.*
2. (â) âme, *soul;* blâme, *blame;* bâtir, *to build:* pâte, *paste;* âge, *age;* mât, *mast.*
3. (e) me, *me;* de, *of;* que, *that;* elle, *she;* malle, *mail;* parle, *speak;* fourche, *fork;* salle, *hall.*
4. (é) pré, *meadow;* allé, *gone;* donné, *given;* passé, passée, *past;* élevé, *raised;* armée, *army.*
5. (è) très, *very;* après, *after;* achète, *buy;* mère, *mother;* espère, *hope;* lève, *raise;* chère, *fare;* chèvre, *goat.*
6. (ê) même, *same;* carême, *Lent;* arrêt, *arrest;* tempête, *tempest;* tête, *head;* bête, *beast.*
7. (i) lit, *bed;* dit, *said;* dire, *to say;* lire, *to read;* lime, *file;* cire, *wax;* rite, *rite.*
8. (î) dîner, *to dine;* île, *isle;* dîme, *tithe;* abîme, *abyss;* épître, *epistle;* gîte, *lodging.*
9. (o) mot, *word;* cachot, *dungeon;* repos, *rest;* trot, *trot;* globe, *globe;* carrosse, *coach.*
10. (ô) tôt, *soon;* plutôt, *rather;* rôti, *roast meat;* dépôt, *deposit;* prévôt, *provost.*
11. (u) bu, *drank;* cru, *believed;* du, *of the;* élu, *elected;* menu, *minute;* prévu, *foreseen;* écu, *crown.*
12. (û) chûte, *fall;* brûlot, *fireship;* mûr, *ripe;* dûment, *duly;* il fût, *he might be;* nous fûmes, *we were.*

THE DIPHTHONGS AND COMBINED VOWELS.

14. A vowel surmounted by a diæresis (¨) cannot form a diphthong with another vowel; it is pronounced separately. Ex., haïr—Exception: *e* at the end of a few words, such as cigue, *hemlock,* is silent, the *u* being pronounced like *ú.*
15. E accented (é) and followed by a vowel, is pronounced separately. Ex. obéir, *to obey;* géant, *giant.*
16. ai, ei, preceding a liquid *l* (see Consonants, 13) do not form a

diphthong; *a* is then pronounced as in *mat*, and *e* as *ai* in *pair*. The *i* seems merely to indicate the liquid sound of the *l*. Ex. paille, *straw*; oreille, *ear*.

17. ai is like *a* in *fate*. Ex. j'*ai*, *I have*; je fer*ai*, *I will make*; b*ai*e, *bay*; m*ai*, *May*; bal*ai*, *broom*.
When the diphthong *ai* is followed by a final *s*, *d*, or *t*, it assumes a broader sound, resembling the French *è*, or *e* in the English word *met*. Ex. j'av*ais*, *I had*; je f*ai*s, *I should make*; l*ait*, *milk*; l*aid*, *ugly*.

18. au nearly like *oh!* in English. Ex. t*aux*, *rate*; ch*aud*, *warm*. *E* preceding *au* is blended with that diphthong without changing its sound. Ex. b*eau*, *handsome*; ch*âteau*, *castle*; table*au*, *picture*; *eau*, *water*.

19. ei nearly like *a* in *fate*. Ex. b*ei*ge, *serge*; n*ei*ge, *snow*; s*ei*gle, *rye*; r*ei*ne, *queen*; p*ei*gne, *comb*.

20. eu approaches the sound of *u* in *muff*. Ex. j*eu*, *play*; l*ieu*, *place*; p*eu*, *little*; p*eur*, *fear*; chal*eur*, *heat*. Exceptions, in *eu*, *had*; j'*eus*, &c., *I had*; j'*eusse*, etc., *I might have*; *eu* is pronounced like *u* alone.

21. ia nearly like *ia* in *medial*. Ex. il l*ia*, *he bound*; il cr*ia*, *he cried*; d*ia*logue, *dialogue*.

22. ie like *ee* in *bee*. Ex. il l*ie*, *he binds*; il étud*ie*, *he studies*; harp*ie*, *harpy*; m*ie*, *the soft part of bread*.

23. oi nearly like *wa* in *was*. Ex. cro*ix*, *cross*; il bo*it*, *he drinks*; r*oi*, *king*.

24. ou like *oo* in *cool*. Ex. d*oux*, *soft*; c*oup*, *blow*; n*ous*, *we*; v*ous*, *you*; c*ou*, *neck*.

25. ua
26. ue
27. ui
28. uo

(have no corresponding sound in English. — Examples of the French sounds.)

Il sal*ua*, *he saluted*; il rem*ua*, *he moved*; il contrib*ua*, *he contributed*.
Il sal*ue*, *he salutes*; il rem*ue*, *he moves*; il contrib*ue*, *he contributes*.
prod*uit*, *produce*; cond*uite*, *conduct*; l*ui*, *him*; br*uit*, *noise*; il réd*uit*, *he reduces*.
d*uo*, *duet*.

29. y when initial, when coming between two consonants, or when forming a syllable of itself, has the sound of the French *i*. Ex. style, *style*; type, *type*; y*eux*, *eyes*; *Y*pres, *Ypres*; *y*, *there*. Between two vowels *y* has the power of two *i*'s, one of which forms a diphthong with the preceding, and the other with the following vowel; the syllabic division taking place between the *i*'s. Ex. moy*en*, *means*; essay*er*, *to try*; nettoy*er*, *to clean*; citoy*en*, *citizen*; abbay*e*, *abbey*; these words are pronounced

as if they were written *moi-ien*, *essai-ier*, *nettoi-ier*, *citoi-ien*, *abbai-ie*. The words, pays, *country*; paysage, *landscape*; paysan, *peasant*, are pronounced *pé-is*, *pé-isage*, *pé-isan*.

Exercise 2.

17. (ai) je donnai, *I gave*; je parlerai, *I will speak*; j'allai, *I went*; je cherchai, *I sought*; je menai, *I led*; j'irai, *I will go*.
 (ais) je donnais, *I was giving*; je parlerais, *I would speak*; j'allais, *I was going*; je cherchais, *I was seeking*; je menais, *I was leading*; j'irais, *I would go*.
18. (au, eau) maux, *evils*; chameau, *camel*; chevaux, *horses*; beau, *handsome*; nouveau, *new*; troupeau, *flock*.
19. (ei) neige, *snow*; veine, *vein*; reine, *queen*; Seine, *Seine*; je peigne, *I comb*; sein, *bosom*.
20. (eu) peu, *little*; peur, *fear*; leur, *their*; il meurt, *he dies*; sœur, *sister*; œuf, *egg*; lueur, *light*.
 (eu) like *u*. J'eus, *I had*; tu eus, *thou hadst*; il eut, *he had*; eu, *had*.
21. (ia) liant, *binding*; il lia, *he bound*; partial, *partial*; il cria, *he cried*; il nia, *he denied*; il pria, *he prayed*.
22. (ie) garantie, *guarantee*; il prie, *he prays*; il lie, *he binds*; il rie, *he may laugh*; il nie, *he denies*.
23. (oi) loi, *law*; moi, *me*; il voit, *he sees*; il boit, *he drinks*; roi, *king*; droit, *right*; il croit, *he believes*.
24. (ou) bout, *end*; il coud, *he sews*; il moud, *he grinds*; coupe, *cup*; loup, *wolf*; coup, *blow*; croute, *crust*.
25. (ua) nuage, *cloud*; nuance, *shade*; il salua, *he saluted*; il remua, *he moved*; il contribua, *he contributed*.
26. (ue) nue, *cloud*; lue, f. *read*; reçue, f. *received*; il salue, *he salutes*; il remue, *he moves*.
27. (ui) lui, *him*; luisant, *shining*; cuire, *to bake*; cuit, *baked*; nuire, *to injure*; produire, *to produce*.
29. (y) thyrse, *thyrsus*; type, *type*; style, *style*; yeux, *eyes*; Yvetot, *Yvetot*; payer, *to pay*; envoyer, *to send*; abbaye, *abbey*; essayer, *to try*; pays, *country*; paysage, *landscape*; paysan, *peasant*.

THE NASAL SOUNDS.

30. The combination of the vowels with the consonant *m* or *n* produces what the French call *le son nasal*, the nasal sound.
31. When the consonant *m* or *n* is doubled, or is immediately fol-

lowed by a vowel,[1] the nasal sound does not take place. Ex. *in*nocent, *innocent*; *im*mobile, *immovable*; *in*utile, *useless*; *in*oui, *unheard of*. The syllables *in* and *im* in the words innocent and immobile, are pronounced nearly as in English; the syllabic division[2] of i-nu-ti-le and i-nou-ï, will explain the reason of the absence of the nasal sound in those words.

32. am, an, ean, em, en — pronounced nearly like *an* in *pant, want*. Examples: *am*ple, *ample*; cha*m*bre, *chamber*; la*m*pe, *lamp*. *an, year*; ba*n*c, *bench*; da*n*s, *in*; man*t*eau, *cloak*. me*m*bre, *limb*; e*m*porter, *to carry away*; tre*m*bler, *to tremble*. *en, in*; d*en*t, *tooth*; pr*en*dre, *to take*; r*en*dre, *to render*.

33. en final is sometimes pronounced like en in *then*. Ex. Ed*en*, *Eden*.

34. en in the third person plural of verbs is silent. Ex. ils lis*ent*, ils port*ent*, ils donn*ent*; pronounce ils *liz*, ils *port*, ils *donn*.

35. en after *i* at the end of a word, is pronounced nearly like *an* in *sank, crank*. Ex. bi*en*, *well*; li*en*, *tie*; ri*en*, *nothing*.

36. im, in — somewhat like *an* in crank, sank. *tim*bre, *stamp*; *im*possible, *impossible*; *im*portant, *important*. l*in*, *flax*; p*in*, *pine*; cr*in*, *horse-hair*; v*in*, *wine*.

37. om, on — pronounced nearly like *on* in song, wrong. t*om*be, *tomb*; c*om*ble, *height*; s*om*bre, *dark*; t*om*ber, *to fall*. m*on*, *my*; t*on*, *thy*; s*on*, *his*; b*on*d, *bound*; p*on*t, *bridge*.

38. um, un — nearly like *un* in hunting, wrung. h*um*ble, *humble*; parf*um*, *perfume*. *un*, *one*; chac*un*, *each one*; import*un*, *importunate*.

EXERCISE 3.

31. Innocent, *innocent*; inutile, *useless*; dîner, *dinner*; immortel, *immortal*; une, *one*; lune, *moon*; dunes, *downs*.

32. am ambre, *amber*; chambre, *chamber*; Adam, *Adam*; ramper, *to creep*; ample, *ample*; lampe, *lamp*.

an tante, *aunt*; manteau, *cloak*; plan, *plan*; plancher, *floor*; rang, *rank*; sang, *blood*; enfant, *child*.

[1] The words *ennui, ennuyer, emmener, enivrer, enorgueillir*, form exceptions to this rule. The first syllable of *ennui, ennuyer, emmener*, is nasal; *enivrer, enorgueillir* are pronounced *en-nivrer, en-orgueillir*.

[2] For the division of words into syllables, see *Reading Lessons*, page 474.

em remplir, *to fill;* temple, *temple;* temps, *weather;* assemblée, *assembly;* trembler, *to tremble;* membre, *limb.*

en sentir, *to feel;* tente, *tent;* pente, *declivity;* je rends, *I render;* je prends, *I take;* je sens, *I feel.*

33. en amen, *amen;* specimen, *specimen.*

34. en ils donnent, *they give;* ils parlent, *they speak;* ils écrivent, *they write;* ils cherchent, *they seek.*

35. ien le mien, *mine;* le tien, *thine;* le sien, *his.*

36. im simple, *simple;* timbre, *stamp;* daim, *deer;* faim, *hunger;* imposteur, *impostor;* important, *important.*

in fin, *fine;* pain, *bread;* demain, *to morrow;* crin, *horse-hair;* vin, *wine;* bain, *bath;* teindre, *to dye;* peindre, *to paint.*

37. om sombre, *dark;* nom, *name;* ombre, *shadow;* tombe, *tomb;* nombre, *number;* comble, *height.*

on pont, *bridge;* honte, *shame;* montre, *watch;* raison, *reason;* maison, *house;* fondre, *to melt;* non, *no.*

38. um humble, *humble;* parfum, *perfume;* humblement, *humbly.*

un lundi, *Monday;* brun, *brown;* alun, *alum;* emprunter, *to borrow;* importun, *importunate;* un, *one.*

LEÇON III. LESSON III.

THE CONSONANTS.

1. At the beginning of words or syllables, most consonants are sounded as in English.

2. A final consonant is *generally* silent. The letters c, f, l, r, however, when final, are *generally* pronounced.

3. The final consonant of a word is *generally* carried to the next word, when that word begins with a vowel or an h mute. (See 10, h.)

4. For illustrations and exceptions, see the several letters.

5. B initial is pronounced as in English. In the middle of words, and at the end of proper names, b is sounded. Ex. ab*d*iquer, *to abdicate*, Jo*b*, Cale*b*, &c. B is also pronounced in radou*b*, *refitting of a vessel*, and rum*b*, (pronounced romb,) *point of the compass.* It is silent in plom*b*, *lead;* aplom*b*, *perpendicularity.* When b is doubled, only one of these letters is pronounced. Ex. a*bb*é, *abbot;* sa*bb*at.

6. C has its proper sound (k) before a, o, u, l, n, r. Ex. cabane, *cottage;* cou, *neck;* écu, *crown;* enclin, *inclined;* Cnéius, *Cneius;* croire, *to believe.*

c before e and i, and with the cedilla (ç) before a, o, or u, has

the sound of *s*; ceci, *this*; cendres, *ashes*; façade, *front*; façon, *fashion*; reçu, *received*.

ch is pronounced like sh in *she*. Ex. *ch*ar, *car*; *ch*arbon, *coal*; *ch*angement, *change*.

c in the words *vermicelle* and *violoncelle*, is pronounced like *sh*.

ch is pronounced like k, in a few words derived from the Greek. Ex. *ch*aos, ana*ch*ronisme, *ch*ronique, patriar*ch*at, or*ch*estre, &c. In patriar*ch*e, ar*ch*evêque, A*ch*éron, ch is pronounced like *sh*. In Mi*ch*el-Ange, *Michael Angelo*, it sounds like *k*.

c final is sounded, except when preceded by n. Ex. avec, *with*; arc, *bow*; sac, *bag*; suc, *juice*; Turc, *Turk*.
Exceptions: it is silent in accroc, *rent*; broc, *jug*; clerc, *clerk*; estomac, *stomach*; lacs, *snares*; marc, *mark*; porc, *pork*; tabac, *tobacco*—ch is silent in almana*ch*.

c is pronounced like g in second, *second*, and fécond, *fruitful*, and their derivatives.

c final is seldom pronounced upon the next word.

7. D has the same sound as in English. Ex. *d*ame, *lady*. D is pronounced in the middle of words. Ex. a*d*verbe, *adverb*; a*d*mirer, *to admire*.

d is silent at the end of words, except in proper names: as in David, *David*; in the word sud, *south*, and in a few foreign words, as le Cid, *the Cid*; le Talmud, *the Talmud*, &c.

d final, coming before a word commencing with a vowel or an h mute, assumes the sound of *t*: grand homme, is pronounced *gran tomme*; coud-il, *does he sew?* vend-il, *does he sell?* are pronounced cou-til, ven-til.

8. F is pronounced as in English. Ex. *f*ièvre, *fever*; *f*iacre, *hackney-coach*.

f final is generally sounded. Ex. soi*f*, *thirst*; chef, *chief*; sui*f*, *tallow*.
Exceptions; cle*f*, *key*; cer*f*, *stag*; che*f*-d'œuvre, *master-piece*; œu*f*-dur, *hard-egg*; œu*f*-frais, *fresh egg*; bœu*f*-frais, *fresh beef*; bœu*f*-salé, *salt beef*. In the plural of the words œu*f* and bœu*f*, *f* is always silent.
The f of neu*f*, *nine*, is silent before a consonant, and sounds like *v* before a vowel or *h* mute; neu*f* livres, pronounce *neu livres*; neu*f* hommes, neu*f* enfants, pronounce *neu-vommes*, *neu-venfants*.

9. G is always hard (that is like *g* in *game*) before a, o, u. Ex. *g*arde, *guard*; *g*ond, *hinge*; ai*g*u, *acute*.

g before e and i has always the soft sound, (that of *s* in *pleasure*). Ex. *g*erbe, *sheaf*; *g*endre, *son-in-law*; *g*ibier, *game*; *g*ilet, *vest*.

gua, guo, gue, gui, are pronounced *gha, gho, ghe, ghi*, i. e., the *u* is silent. Ex. il lé*gua*, *he bequeathed;* lé*guons*, *let us bequeath;* *gue*rre, *war;* *gui*tare, *guitar.*

Exceptions: In ai*gui*lle, *needle*, *Gui*se, &c., the two vowels are sounded. The *ue* of *gue* final is mute, unless a diæresis is on the e, as in ci*guë*, *hemlock.*

gn is pronounced like *ni* in *union.* Ex. règ*ne*, *reign;* peig*ne*, *comb;* daig*ner*, *to deign;* saig*ner*, *to bleed.*

Exceptions: *Gn*ide, Prog*né*, stag*nant*, ig*née*, &c.

g final takes the sound of *k* before a vowel or an *h* mute:—sang humain, *human blood*, is pronounced *san kumain.*

10. H is mute or aspirate. *H* mute (having of itself no sound) is, when preceded by a word subject to elision, (§ 146) treated as a vowel. *H* aspirate is always initial, the breathing or aspiration is very slight, but not entirely absent, as is advanced by some grammarians.

As it is important, on account of elision and of the pronunciation of the last consonant of a word preceding *h*, to know when it is aspirate or not, we will give a list of the words which commence with *h* aspirate, omitting however the derivatives and a few words seldom used.

Hâbleur	Harangue	Have	Horde
Hache	Haras	Havre	Hors
Hagard	Harasser	Havresac	Hotte
Haie	Harceler	Héler	Hottentot
Haillons	Hardes	Hennir	Houblon
Haine	Hardi	Henri	Houille
Haïr	Harem	Héraut	Houlette
Haire	Hareng	Hérisson	Houppe
Hâler	Hargneux	Hérisser	Houri
Halage	Haricot	Héron	Houppelande
Hâle	Haridelle	Héros[1]	Housse
Halle	Harnais	Hêtre	Houx
Hallebarde	Harpe	Herse	Huche
Hallier	Harpie	Heurter	Huée
Halte	Harpon	Hibou	Huguenot
Hamac	Hasard	Hideux	Huit
Hameau	Hâter	Hiérarchie	Humer
Hanche	Hausser	Hoquet	Huppe
Hangar	Haut	Hollande[2]	Hure
Hanneton	Hautbois	Homard	Hurler
Hanter	Hautesse	Honte	Hussard

[1] The *h* of the other words having the same derivation, *héroïne*, *héroïsme*, *héroïque*, &c., is not aspirated.

[2] We say, however, du fromage d'Hollande, *Dutch cheese;* de la toile d'Hollande, *Dutch linen.*

11. J is pronounced like s in pleasure. Ex. *j*our, *day ; j*amais, *never.*
K sounds like k in English. Ex. *k*an, *khan ; k*ilogramme, *a French weight.*

12. L in the combinations il, ill, not initial, but in the middle or at the end of words, has the liquid sound found in the English word *brilliant.* Many of the French, however, give to the liquid *l* the sound of *ye*, in the English word *eye.* This pronunciation is now so common, that it is no longer deemed wrong. Ex. pa*ille*, *straw ;* f*ille*, *daughter ;* ba*il*, *lease ;* trava*il*, *labor.*

Exceptions: f*il*, *thread ;* Brés*il*, *Brazil ;* N*il*, *Nile ;* m*il*, m*ille*, *thousand ;* civ*il*, *civil ;* prof*il*, *profile ;* v*ille*, *town*, and its derivatives ; tranqu*ille*, tranqu*illité*, &c., *quiet*, *quietness*, *&c.*

ll in Su*lly* has the liquid sound.

is silent in bar*il*, *barrel ;* chen*il*, *kennel ;* cout*il*, *ticking ;* fus*il*, *gun ;* f*ils*, *son ;* fourn*il*, *bakehouse ;* gr*il*, *gridiron ;* out*il*, *tool ;* persi*l*, *parsley ;* pou*ls*, *pulse ;* sourci*l*, *eyebrow ;* gentil*s*hommes, *noblemen.*

13. M } initial are pronounced as in English. For these letters in
14. N } combination with the vowels, see Nasal Sounds, (page 21).

Final consonants after m and n are generally silent. Ex. temp*s*, *weather ;* je rom*ps*, je pren*ds*, *I break, I take.*

m is silent in condam*n*er, *to condemn ;* autom*n*e, *autumn.*

n final, and not belonging to a noun, is carried to the next word, when this word begins with a vowel or an h mute, if the two words are closely connected. Ex. un bo*n* enfant, *a good child ;* mo*n* ami, *my friend ;* pronounce *bon nenfant, mon nami.*

15. P is generally sounded as in English. P is however silent in baptême, *baptism ;* baptiser, *to baptize ;* cheptel, *chattel ;* comp*t*e, *account ;* dompter, *to subdue ;* exempt, *exempt ;* sept, *seven ;* septième, *seventh.*

p final is silent. Ex coup, *blow ;* drap, *cloth.*

Exceptions: cap, *cape ;* and proper names generally.

p' final is not carried to the next word.

16. Q qu is pronounced like k. Ex. *qu*estion, *question ; qui*, *who ; qualité*, *quality : ue* final is silent after q. Ex. pratique, *practice.*

Exceptions: qu is pronounced as in English in a*qua*tique, é*qua*teur, é*que*stre, é*qui*tation, é*qua*tion, in-*qua*rto, li*quéfier*, *qua*dragénaire, *qua*druple, *qua*drupède, *Qui*nte-Curce, *Qui*ntilien, *qui*ntuple, *qui*rinal.

q final is sounded. It is however mute in coq-d'Inde, *turkey ;*

and in cinq, *five*, when followed by a word commencing with a consonant.

17. R. The French r is pronounced with greater force than the English.

rr is pronounced like r. Ex. arriver, *to arrive;* arranger, *to arrange.*

Exceptions: in the future and conditional of acquérir, *to acquire;* courir, *to run*, and mourir, *to die*, the two r's are distinctly sounded. Ex. je courrai, je mourrai, je courrais, je mourrais, j'acquerrais, &c.

r final is pronounced when preceded by a, i, o, u. Ex. car, *for;* finir, *to finish;* cor, *hunting horn;* pur, *pure.*

Exception: monsieur, *sir.*

r preceded by e is generally sounded in monosyllables. Ex. fer, *iron;* cher, *dear.*

r preceded by e is silent in words of more than one syllable. Ex. parler, *to speak;* manger, *to eat;* chercher, *to seek.*

Exceptions: r is sounded in amer, belvéder, cancer, cuiller, éther, enfer, hiver, Jupiter, Lucifer, magister.

The final r of an infinitive is not often carried to the next word in conversation. In serious reading it is generally carried to the next word.

18. S has generally the same sound as in English.

s between two vowels is pronounced as in the English words *rose, prose.* Ex. base, *base;* vase, *vase;* pause, *pause;* chose, *thing.*

Exceptions: s in words composed of a particle, or an adjective, and a word commencing with s, preserves the hissing sound. Ex. parasol, *parasol;* vraisemblable, *likely;* désuétude, *desuetude;* presćance, *precedence*, &c.

s is pronounced in Christ, but not in Jésus-Christ.

sc is pronounced as in English. Ex. scandale, *scandal;* science, *science.*

sch is pronounced like *sh*, in the words schisme, schismatique, schiste, scherif, schéik, schelling—It is pronounced *sk* in schème.

s final is generally silent. Ex. pas, *step;* mais, *but;* jus, *juice.*

Exceptions: s is pronounced in aloès, *aloes;* as, *ace;* atlas, *atlas;* blocus, *blockade;* cens, *census;* chorus, *chorus;* en sus, *besides;* gratis, *gratis;* lapis, *lapis;* laps, *lapse;* iris, *iris;* maïs, *maize;* mars, *March;* mœurs, *manners;* ours, *bear;* prospectus, *prospectus;* Rheims, Rubens; vis, *screw;* and in

Latin and Greek names ending in s—Délos, Romulus, &c. In fils, *son*, s may be pronounced or not.

s is carried to the next word when the word commences with a vowel or an h mute; it has then the sound of z—bons amis, *good friends*, is pronounced *bon zami*. In conversation the final s of verbs is not always carried to the next word.

19. T is pronounced like t in table. Ex. tard, *late;* tort, *wrong*.

t has the sound of the English c in *cedar*, in the combinations *tial*, *tiel*, *tion*, final or in the middle of words. The French words in which the above combinations occur, are very much like the English words which have the same meaning, and in which *ti* has the sound of *sh*. Ex. partial, *partial;* essentiel, *essentiel;* observation, *observation*. Words in which those terminations are preceded by s or x, are excepted; the t therefore in bastion, question, mixtion, &c., retains its proper sound.

t has the sound of c in cedar, in words ending in *atie*, derived from the Greek, and having in English the termination *cy*, aristocratie, démocratie, &c.; also in initier *to initiate;* patience, *patience;* inepţie, *absurdity;* minutie, *minutia;* Dalmatie, *Dalmatia;* Dalmatien, *Dalmatian;* Domitien, Gratien, Égyptien, &c.

In other words ending in *tie*, and in those ending in *tié* and *tier*, the t has its proper sound. Ex. garantie, *guarantee;* moitié, *half;* amitié, *friendship;* chantier, *dock-yard;* métier, *trade*.

th sounds always like t alone. Ex. *thé*, *tea;* *thèse*, *thesis*.

t final is generally silent. Ex. but, *aim;* mot, *word;* sort, *fate*. Exceptions: *t* is sounded in brut, chut, correct, dot, direct, déficit, fat, exact, net, prétérit, suspect, strict, Christ, but not in Jésus-Christ, &c.

t in sept, huit, vingt, is sounded except when it comes before a consonant.

t is seldom carried to the next word; t in *et* (and) is always silent.

20. V is a little softer than the English v. Ex. viande, *meat;* voile, *veil*.

21. W which is found only in foreign words, is pronounced like v. Ex. Wurtemberg, Westphalie. In a few other words it has the pronunciation of the English w. Ex. *whig*, *whist*.

22. X initial, which in French is only found in a few words, is pro-

nounced like gz. Ex. *x*ylon, *cotton-plant;* *X*avier, *X*énophon, *X*ante, *X*antippe.

Xerxès is pronounced *gzercess.*

x following an initial e, and preceding a vowel or an h, is also sounded like gz. Ex. exil, *exile;* examiner, *to examine;* exhiber, *to exhibit.*

x not following an initial e, but coming between two vowels, sounds like ks. Ex. axe, *axis;* luxe, *luxury;* Alexandre, *Alexander;* maxime, *maxim;* sexe, *sex.*

x sounds like ss in the following words: six, *six;* dix, *ten;* soixante, *sixty;* Bruxelles, *Brussels;* Auxonne, Auxerre, Aix-en-Provence.

In sixième, dixième, deuxième, dix-sept, dix-huit, dix-neuf, it is pronounced like z in *zone.*

x final is generally silent. Ex. prix, *price;* croix, *cross;* voix, *voice.*

Exceptions: x is sounded like ks at the end of names of Greek and Latin origin. Ex. Ajax, Styx, etc. In Aix-la-Chapelle it has the same sound.

The x of deux, six, dix, coming before a consonant is silent, except in the cases mentioned above; *i. e.*, in dix-sept, dix-huit, dix-neuf.

x when carried to the next word, sounds like z.

23. Z sounds as in the English words zinc, zone. Ex. zèle, *zeal;* zénith, *zenith.*

z final is generally silent. Ex. nez, *nose;* chez, *with, &c.,* allez, *go.*

Exceptions: gaz, *gas.* In Metz, Suez, &c., it sounds like ss.

z final is generally carried to the next word when that word commences with a vowel, or an h mute.

Exercise 4.

5. (b) baume, *balsam;* blessure, *wound;* brun, *brown;* absolution, *absolution;* abstrait, *abstract;* abbaye, *abbey;* Jacob, *Jacob.*

6. (c) cacher, *to conceal;* coin, *corner;* décuple, *decuple;* cire, *wax;* cinq, *five;* chercher, *to seek;* je cache, *I conceal;* patriarche, *patriarch;* patriarchat, *patriarchate;* chambre, *chamber;* arche, *arch;* changer, *to change;* orchestre, *orchestra;* charbon, *coal;* sac, *bag;* suc, *juice;* clerc, *clerk;* banc, *bench;* flanc, *flank;* second, *second;* fécond, *fruitful;* façon, *fashion;* reçu, *received.*

7. (d) daim, *deer;* don, *gift;* admirer, *to admire;* bord, *border;*

nord, *north ;* sud, *south ;* Obed, *Obed ;* Talmud, *Talmud ;* grand âge, *advanced age ;* rend-il, *does he render ?* prend-il, *does he take ?*

8. (f) foin, *hay ;* faim, *hunger ;* froid, *cold ;* bref, *short ;* soif, *thirst ;* suif, *tallow ;* clef, *key ;* chef, *chief ;* chef-d'œuvre, *master-piece ;* œuf, *egg ;* œufs, *eggs ;* œuf frais, *fresh egg ;* bœuf, *ox, beef ;* bœufs, *oxen ;* neuf maisons, *nine houses ;* neuf chevaux, *nine horses ;* neuf amis, *nine friends.*

9. (g) gager, *to bet ;* gosier, *throat ;* gibier, *game ;* guide, *guide ;* ligue, *league ;* il ligua, *he leagued ;* nous liguons, *we league ;* aiguille, *needle ;* aiguillon, *goad ;* ciguë, *hemlock ;* digne, *worthy ;* règne, *reign ;* Espagne, *Spain ;* Pologne, *Poland ;* brugnon, *nectarine ;* soignant, *taking care ;* joignant, *joining ;* stagnant, *stagnant ;* rang honorable, *honorable rank.*

10. (h) hâte, *haste ;* honte, *shame ;* haut, *high ;* herbe, *herbage ;* almanach, *almanac.*

11. (j) jujube, *jujube ;* jeune, *young ;* juger, *to judge ;* jurer, *to swear ;* jonc, *rush ;* joindre, *to join ;* déjeûner, *to breakfast ;* Juif, *Jew ;* jeu, *play.*

12. (l) lame, *blade ;* loi, *law ;* illégal, *illegal ;* illicite, *unlawful ;* paille, *straw ;* soleil, *sun ;* pareil, *similar ;* bail, *lease ;* railler, *to rail ;* souiller, *to soil ;* caille, *quail ;* canaille, *rabble ;* ville, *town ;* village, *village ;* mille, *mile, thousand ;* péril, *peril ;* pointilleux, *punctilious ;* baril, *barrel ;* fusil, *gun ;* gentil-homme, *nobleman ;* gentilshommes, *noblemen ;* bouteille, *bottle.*

13. (m n) mon, *my ;* marge, *margin ;* nom, *name ;* champ, *field ;* moine, *monk ;* prompt, *quick ;* condamner, *to condemn ;* faim, *hunger ;* son argent, *his money ;* bon appétit, *good appetite ;* lien étroit, *close connection.*

15. (p) partir, *to go away ;* coup, *blow ;* temps, *weather ;* drap, *cloth ;* sept, *seven ;* baptême, *baptism ;* cap, *cape ;* Alep, *Aleppo.*

16. (q) quérir, *to fetch ;* quitter, *to leave ;* musique, *music ;* logique, *logic ;* quarante, *forty ;* quoi, *what ;* aquatique, *aquatic ;* Quintilien, *Quintilian ;* cinq, *five ;* cinq livres, *five books.*

17. (r) ranger, *to arrange ;* errer, *to err ;* arriver, *to arrive ;* verser, *to pour ;* je courrai, *I will run ;* je courais, *I was running ;* jouir, *to enjoy ;* car, *for ;* plaisir, *pleasure ;* amer, *bitter ;* parler, *to speak ;* changer, *to change ;* fer, *iron ;* hiver, *winter.*

18. (s) silence, *silence ;* soin, *care ;* sans, *without ;* base, *base ;* rose,

rose; chose, *thing:* observer, *to observe;* rasoir, *razor;* parasol, *parasol;* science, *science;* schisme, *schism;* scie, *saw;* schème, *scheme;* gras, *fat;* pas, *step;* lambris, *wainscot;* Barras, *Barras;* Romulus, Samos; vous avez, *you have;* nous aimons, *we love.*

19. (t) tiers, *third;* tiare, *tiara;* tort, *wrong;* portion, *portion;* sanction, *sanction;* essential, *essential;* partialité, *partiality,* section, *section;* question, *question;* bastion, *bastion;* observation, *observation;* minutie, *minutia;* démocratie, *democracy;* amitié, *friendship;* initiation, *initiation;* mot, *word;* lot, *lot;* sept, *seven;* sept livres, *seven books;* et, *and;* vingt livres, *twenty books.*

20. (v) voir, *to see;* va, *go;* lève, *raise;* lever, *to raise;* visage, *face;* vive, f. *lively.*

21. (w) Westphalie, Weimar, Wurms, Wurtemberg.

22. (x) xylon, *cotton plant;* Xénophon; exiler, *to exile;* excuser, *to excuse;* luxe, *luxury;* Alexandre, *Alexander;* maxime, *maxim;* soixantième, *sixtieth;* six, *six;* sixième, *sixth;* six livres, *six books;* Bruxelles, *Brussels;* Aix-la-Chapelle; dix, *ten;* Phénix; Ajax; deux hommes, *two men;* dix amis, *ten friends.*

23. (z) zèle, *zeal;* zone, *zone;* zoologie, *zoology;* vous lisez, *you read;* nez, *nose;* Metz; allez-y, *go there;* venez ici, *come here.*

☞ For the division of words into syllables, see READING LESSONS, page 474.

LEÇON IV. LESSON IV.

THE ARTICLE *LE, LA.*—GENDER.

1. In French the article [§ 13, (2.)] has, in the singular, a distinct form for each gender.

Le fils, *the son;*	La fille, *the daughter, the girl;*
Le frère, *the brother;*	La sœur, *the sister.*

2. Before a word commencing with a vowel or an h mute, [L. 3, 10,] the article is the same for both genders. [§ 13, (7.)] Ex.

L'aïeul, *the grandfather;*	L'aïeule, *the grandmother;*
L'hôte, *the landlord;*	L'hôtesse, *the landlady.*

3. There are in French only two genders, the masculine and the feminine. [§ 4.] Every noun, whether denoting an animate or an inanimate object, belongs to one of these two genders.

MASC.	L'homme, *the man;*	Le lion, *the lion;*
	Le livre, *the book;*	Le papier, *the paper;*
	L'arbre, *the tree;*	Le bois, *the wood.*
FEM.	La femme, *the woman;*	La lionne, *the lioness;*
	La table, *the table;*	La feuille, *the leaf;*
	La plume, *the pen;*	La porte, *the door.*

4. AVOIR, *to have*, IN THE PRESENT OF THE INDICATIVE.

Affirmatively.		*Interrogatively.*	
J'ai,	*I have;*	Ai-je?	*Have I?*
Tu as, [§ 33. (1.) (2.)]	*Thou hast;*	As-tu?	*Hast thou?*
Il a,	*He has;*	A-t-il?	*Has he?*
Elle a,	*She has;*	A-t-elle?	*Has she?*
Nous avons,	*We have;*	Avons-nous?	*Have we?*
Vous avez,	*You have;*	Avez-vous?	*Have you?*
Ils ont, m.	*They have;*	Ont-ils? m.	*Have they?*
Elles ont, f.	*They have;*	Ont-elles? f.	*Have they?*

5. The *e* of the pronoun *je* is elided, when that pronoun comes before a vowel or an *h* mute. [§ 146.]

6. In interrogative sentences, when the third person singular of a verb ends with a vowel, and is immediately followed by a pronoun, a *t*, called *euphonic*, must be placed between the verb and the pronoun.

A-t-il?	*Has he?*	A-t-elle?	*Has she?*

RÉSUMÉ OF EXAMPLES.

Le père a la viande, vous avez le café, et j'ai l'eau.	*The father has the meat, you have the coffee, and I have the water.*
L'homme a le pain, l'enfant a le sel, et nous avons le poivre.	*The man has the bread, the child has the salt, and we have the pepper.*

EXERCISE 5.

Avoine, f. *oats;*	Frère, m. *brother;*	Plume, f. *pen;*
Blé, m. *wheat;*	Livre, m. *book;*	Qui, *who;*
Boucher, m. *butcher;*	Madame, *madam;*	Sel, m. *salt;*
Boulanger, m. *baker;*	Mademoiselle, *miss;*	Seulement, *only;*
Cheval, m. *horse;*	Meunier, m. *miller;*	Table, f. *table;*
Eau, f. *water;*	Monsieur, *Mr., sir.*	Thé, m. *tea;*
Et, *and;*	Non, *no;*	Viande, f. *meat;*
Farine, f. *flour;*	Oui, *yes;*	Vin, m. *wine;*
Fille, f. *girl, daughter;*	Pain, m. *bread;*	Vinaigre, m. *vinegar.*

1. Qui a le pain? 2. Le boulanger a le pain. 3. A-t-il la farine? 4. Oui, monsieur; il a la farine. 5. Avons-nous la viande? 6. Oui, monsieur;

vous avez la viande et le pain. 7. Le meunier a la farine. 8. Le boulanger a la farine et le blé. 9. Avons-nous le livre et la plume? 10. Oui, mademoiselle; vous avez le livre et la plume. 11. Le boucher a la viande. 12. Le meunier a la viande, et j'ai le café. 13. Avez-vous l'eau et le sel? 14. Oui, monsieur; nous avons l'eau, le sel, et l'avoine. 15. Avons-nous le thé? 16. Non, monsieur; la fille a le thé, le vinaigre et le sel. 17. Ai-je le vin? 18. Non, madame; vous avez seulement le vinaigre et la viande. 19. Avez-vous la table? 20. Oui, madame; j'ai la table.

Exercise 6.

1. Have you the wheat? 2. Yes, sir; I have the wheat. 3. Who has the meat? 4. The butcher has the meat and the salt. 5. Has he the oats? 6. No, madam; the horse has the oats. 7. Have we the wheat? 8. You have the wheat and the flour. 9. Who has the salt? 10. I have the salt and the meat. 11. Have we the vinegar, the tea, and the coffee? 12. No, sir; the brother has the vinegar. 13. Who has the horse? 14. The baker has the horse. 15. Have we the book and the pen? 16. No, miss; the girl has the pen, and the miller has the book. 17. Have you the table, sir? 18. No, sir; I have only the book. 19. Who has the table? 20. We have the table, the pen, and the book.

LEÇON V. LESSON V.

CONTRACTION OF THE ARTICLE, &c.

1. The article *le*, with the preposition *de* preceding, must be contracted into *du*, when it comes before a word in the *masculine* singular, commencing with a consonant or an *h* aspirated. [L. 3, 10; § 13, (8.) (9.)]

Du frère, *of the brother;*	Du château, *of the castle;*
Du héros, *of the hero;*	Du chemin, *of the way.*

2. Before *feminine* words, and before masculine words commencing with a vowel, or an *h* mute, the article *le* is not blended with the preposition.

De la dame, f. *of the lady;*	De l'amie, f. *of the female friend;*
De l'argent, m. *of the money;*	De l'honneur, m. *of the honor.*

3. In French, the name of the possessor follows the name of the object possessed. [§ 76, (10.)]

La maison du médecin,	*The physician's house;*
L'arbre du jardin,	*The tree of the garden;*
La lettre de la sœur,	*The sister's letter.*

4. The name of the material of which an object is composed follows always the name of the object; the two words being connected by the preposition *de* (*d'* before a vowel or an *h* mute). [§ 76, (11.)]

L'habit de drap,	*The cloth coat;*
La robe de soie,	*The silk dress;*
La montre d'or,	*The gold watch.*

Résumé of Examples.

Le tailleur a l'habit de drap du médecin.	*The tailor has the physician's cloth coat.*
Vous avez la lettre de la sœur du boulanger.	*You have the baker's sister's letter, (the letter of the sister of the baker.)*
A-t-il le livre de la dame?	*Has he the lady's book?*

Exercise 7.

Argent, m. *silver, money;*	Couteau, m. *knife;*	Porte-crayon, m. *pencil-case;*
Bas, m. *stocking;*	Cuir, m. *leather.*	
Bois, m. *wood;*	Dame, f. *lady;*	Robe, f. *dress.*
Chapeau, m. *hat;*	Drap, m. *cloth;*	Satin, m. *satin:*
Charpentier, m. *carpenter;*	Foin, m. *hay;*	Sœur, f. *sister;*
	Habit, m. *coat;*	Soie, f. *silk;*
Cordonnier, m. *shoemaker;*	Laine, f. *wool, woollen;*	Soulier, m. *shoe;*
	Mais, *but;*	Table, f. *table;*
Coton, m. *cotton;*	Or, m. *gold;*	Tailleur, m. *tailor.*

1. Avez-vous la montre d'or? 2. Oui, madame; j'ai la montre d'or et le chapeau de soie. 3. Monsieur, avez-vous le livre du tailleur? 4. Non, monsieur; j'ai le livre du médecin. 5. Ont-ils le pain du boulanger? 6. Ils ont le pain du boulanger et la farine du meunier. 7. Avez-vous le porte-crayon d'argent? 8. Oui, monsieur; nous avons le porte-crayon d'argent. 9. Avons-nous l'avoine du cheval? 10. Vous avez l'avoine et le foin du cheval. 11. Qui a l'habit de drap du charpentier? 12. Le cordonnier a le chapeau de soie du tailleur. 13. Le tailleur a le soulier de cuir du cordonnier. 14. Avez-vous la table de bois? 15. Oui, monsieur; j'ai la table de bois du charpentier. 16. Ont-ils le couteau d'argent? 17. Ils ont le couteau d'argent. 18. Le frère du médecin a la montre d'argent. 19. La sœur du cordonnier a la robe de soie. 20. A-t-elle le soulier de cuir? 21. Non, madame; elle a le soulier de satin. 22. Avons-nous le bas de laine? 23. Non, monsieur; vous avez le bas de soie du tailleur. 24. Qui a le bas de coton? 25. Le médecin a le bas de coton. 26. La dame a le soulier de satin de la sœur du boulanger.

Exercise 8.

1. Have you the tailor's book? 2. No, sir; I have the physician's watch. 3. Who has the gold watch? 4. The lady has the gold watch

and the silver pencil-case. 5. Have you the tailor's shoe? 6. I have the tailor's cloth shoe. 7. Have we the wooden table? 8. Yes, sir; you have the wooden table. 9. Have they the silver knife? 10. They have the silver knife. 11. The lady has the silver knife and the gold pencil-case. 12. Has she the satin dress? 13. The physician's sister has the satin dress. 14. Who has the wood? 15. The carpenter's brother has the wood. 16. Have you the woollen stocking? 17. No, sir; but I have the cotton stocking. 18. Who has the baker's bread? 19. We have the baker's bread and the miller's flour. 20. Have we the horse's hay? 21. You have the horse's oats. 22. Have we the tailor's silk hat? 23. Yes, sir; you have the tailor's silk hat and the shoemaker's leather shoe. 24. Have you the cloth shoe of the physician's sister? 25. No, madam; I have the lady's silk dress.

LEÇON VI. LESSON VI.

NOUNS USED IN THE PARTITIVE SENSE.

1. The article, contracted with or preceded by the preposition *de*, according to Rules 1 and 2 of Lesson 5, is placed in French before words used in a partitive sense. Such words may generally be known in English when *some* or *any* is or may be prefixed to them. [§ 13, (10.) § 78, (1.)]

Du pain,	*Bread, or some bread;*
De la viande,	*Meat, or some meat;*
De l'argent,	*Money, or some money.*

2. The French numeral adjective, *un*, m. *une*, f. answers to the English indefinite article, *a* or *an*. [§ 13, (4.) (11.)]

Un homme,	*A man;*
Une femme,	*A woman.*

3. The *e* of the preposition *de* is elided before *un* and *une*. [§ 146.]

D'un livre, m.	*Of or from a book;*
D'une maison, f.	*Of or from a house.*

4. When the nominative or subject of an interrogative sentence is a noun, it should be placed before the verb; and immediately after the verb, in simple tenses, and after the auxiliary in compound tenses, a pronoun must be placed, agreeing with the nominative in gender and number. [§ 76, (4.) (5.)] See also L. 56, R. 1.

Le médecin a-t-il de l'argent?	*Has the physician money?*
Le boucher a-t-il de la viande?	*Has the butcher meat?*
Le libraire a-t-il du papier?	*Has the bookseller paper?*
La dame a-t-elle de la soie?	*Has the lady silk?*

Résumé of Examples.

Avez-vous du pain?	*Have you bread?*
Vous avez du pain, du beurre, et du fromage.	*You have bread, butter, and cheese.*
Votre frère a-t-il une livre de beurre?	*Has your brother a pound of butter?*
Avez-vous le livre d'un libraire?	*Have you a bookseller's book?*
Non, j'ai le livre d'une dame.	*No, I have a lady's book.*
La sœur du médecin a-t-elle du papier et de l'encre?	*Has the physician's sister paper and ink?*

5. It will be seen by some of the above examples, that the article must be repeated before every noun used in a partitive sense.

Exercise 9.

Acajou, m. *mahogany;*	Encre, f. *ink;*	Ma, f. *my;*
Acier, m. *steel;*	Épicier, m. *grocer;*	Morceau, m. *piece;*
Aujourd'hui, *to-day;*	Fils, m. *son;*	Papier, m. *paper;*
Beurre, m. *butter;*	Fourchette, f. *fork;*	Plume, f. *pen;*
Bière, f. *beer;*	Fromage, m. *cheese;*	Sucre, m. *sugar;*
Bœuf, m. *beef;*	Gant, m. *glove;*	Vin, m. *wine;*
Café, m. *coffee;*	Libraire, m. *bookseller;*	Votre, *your;*
Cuiller, f. *spoon;*	Livre, m. *book;*	Thé, m. *tea.*
Dé, m. *thimble;*	Livre, f. *pound;*	

1. Avez-vous de la viande? 2. Qui, monsieur; j'ai une livre de viande. 3. Votre fils a-t-il un morceau de pain? 4. Oui, madame; il a un morceau de pain. 5. Le libraire a-t-il un livre? 6. Il a de l'encre et du papier. 7. Votre sœur a-t-elle une montre d'or? 8. Elle a une montre d'or et un dé d'argent. 9. Le boulanger a-t-il du vin ou de la bière? 10. Le boulanger a du thé et du café. 11. Votre frère a-t-il du fromage? 12. Il a du fromage et du beurre. 13. La dame a-t-elle une cuiller d'argent? 14. La dame a une cuiller et une fourchette d'argent. 15. Le boucher a-t-il de la viande aujourd'hui? 16. Oui, monsieur; il a un morceau de bœuf. 17. Le charpentier a-t-il une table? 18. Oui, monsieur; il a une table d'acajou. 19. Avez-vous le livre du médecin? 20. Non, madame; mais j'ai le livre de votre sœur. 21. Qui a du café et du sucre? 22. L'épicier a du café et du sucre. 23. La sœur du libraire a-t-elle un gant? 24. Non, monsieur; mais elle a un livre. 25. A-t-elle une plume d'acier? 26. Non, monsieur; elle a une plume d'or. 27. Vous avez le porte-crayon du médecin.

Exercise 10.

1. Have you any tea? 2. Yes, madam; I have a pound of tea. 3. Who has bread? 4. The baker, has bread, butter, and cheese. 5. Has the tailor cloth? 6. The tailor has a piece of cloth. 7. Has the physician gold? 8. Yes, sir; the physician has gold and silver. 9. Has the lady a silver watch? 10. Yes, miss (madam); the lady has a silver watch and a gold pen. 11. Has your sister silk? 12. Yes, sir; she has silk and cotton. 13. Have you a knife? 14. Yes, sir; I have a steel knife and a silver fork. 15. Have you meat to-day, sir? 16. Yes, sir; I have a piece of beef. 17. Has your carpenter a mahogany table? 18. Yes, sir; he has a mahogany table. 19. Has your sister a glove? 20. Yes, sir; my sister has a silk glove. 21. Has the bookseller's son a gold pencil case? 22. Yes, sir; he has a gold pencil case and a steel pen. 23. Who has your sister's watch? 24. Your brother has the gold watch and the silk hat. 25. We have gold, silver, and steel. (See Rule 5.)

LEÇON VII. LESSON VII.

THE NEGATIVE SENTENCE, ETC.

1. To render a sentence negative, *ne* is placed before the verb, and *pas* after it.

Je n'ai pas le cheval.	*I have not the horse.*
Vous n'avez pas la maison.	*You have not the house.*

2. When the verb is in a compound tense, [§ 45, (8.)] the first negative *ne* is placed before the auxiliary, and the second between the auxiliary and the participle.

Je n'ai pas eu le cheval.	*I have not had the horse.*
Vous n'avez pas eu la maison.	*You have not had the house.*

3. It will be seen in the above examples that the *e* of *ne* is elided, when the verb begins with a vowel. [§ 146.]

4. When the words ni, *neither;* rien, *nothing;* jamais, *never;* personne, *no one, nobody,* occur, the word *ne* only is used, and those words take the place of *pas.*

Je n'ai ni le livre ni le papier.	*I have neither the book nor the paper.*
Avez-vous quelque chose?	*Have you any thing?*
Nous n'avons rien.	*We have nothing,* or *not any thing.*
Personne n'a le livre. [§ 41, (6.)]	*No one has the book.*
Vous n'avez jamais le couteau.	*You never have the knife.*

5. A noun used in a partitive sense (Lesson 6, Rule 1), and being the object of a verb conjugated negatively, should not be preceded by the article, but by the preposition *de* only.[1] [§ 78, (7.)].

Nous n'avons pas d'argent.	*We have no money.*
Vous n'avez pas de viande.	*You have no meat.*

6. Quelqu'un, *some one, any one;* [§ 41, (7.)] quelque chose, *something, any thing;* should only be used in an affirmative or interrogative sentence, or in a sentence which is negative and interrogative at the same time.

Avons-nous quelqu'un ?	*Have we any one?*
Avez-vous quelque chose ?	*Have you any thing?*
N 'avons-nous pas quelque chose?	*Have we not something?*

7. In a negative sentence, ne—personne, signifies *nobody, not any body;* and ne—rien, *nothing, not any thing.*

Je n'ai personne.	*I have no one, not any one.*
Vous n'avez rien.	*You have nothing*, or *not any thing.*

8. AVOIR, *TO HAVE*, IN THE PRESENT OF THE INDICATIVE.

Negatively.		*Negatively and Interrogatively.*	
Je n'ai pas,	*I have not;*	N'ai-je pas?	*Have I not?*
Tu n'as pas,	*Thou hast not;*	N'as-tu pas?	*Hast thou not?*
Il n'a pas,	*He has not;*	N'a-t-il pas?	*Has he not?*
Elle n'a pas,	*She has not;*	N'a-t-elle pas?	*Has she not?*
Nous n'avons pas,	*We have not;*	N'avons-nous pas?	*Have we not?*
Vous n'avez pas,	*You have not;*	N'avez-vous pas?	*Have you not?*
Ils n'ont pas, m.	*They have not;*	N'ont-ils pas? m.	*Have they not?*
Elles n'ont pas, f.	*They have not.*	N'ont-elles pas? f.	*Have they not?*

RÉSUMÉ OF EXAMPLES.

Le tailleur a-t-il le bouton?	*Has the tailor the button?*
Le tailleur n'a pas le bouton.	*The tailor has not the button.*
Il n'a pas eu le drap.	*He has not had the cloth.*
Il n'a ni le bois ni le fer.	*He has neither the wood nor the iron.*
Ai-je de la viande?	*Have I meat?*
Vous n'avez pas de viande, (R. 5.)	*You have no meat.*
Avons-nous quelque chose?	*Have we any thing?*
Nous n'avons rien.	*We have nothing*, or *not any thing.*
Nous n'avons jamais de café, (R. 5.)	*We never have coffee.*
Vous n'avez pas de livre.	*You have no (not any) book.*

[1] When, however, the sentence is interrogative as well as negative, the article is sometimes used. In those cases, however, *ne* and *pas* are rendered by *not* instead of *no.*

N'avons-nous pas de l'argent?	*Have we* not *money?*
N'avez-vous pas de la viande?	*Have you* not *meat?*

Without the article.

N'avons-nous pas d'argent?	*Have we* no *money?*
N'avez-vous pas de viande?	*Have you* no *meat?*

Exercise 11.

Ami, m. *friend;*
Angleterre, f. *England;*
Aussi, *also;*
Autre, *other;*
Chapelier, m. *hatter;*
Chien, m. *dog;*
Coton, m. *cotton;*
Cousin, m. *cousin;*
Deux, *two;*
Drap, m. *cloth;*
Du tout, *at all;*
France, f. *France;*
Histoire, f. *history;*
Libraire, m. *bookseller;*
Marchand, m. *merchant;*
Mon, m. *my;*
Ni, *neither, nor;*
Personne, m. *nobody;*
Quelque chose, m. *something, any thing;*
Quelqu'un, m. *some one, any one;*
Soie, f. *silk;*
Velours, m. *velvet;*
Voisin, m. *neighbor.*

1. Le chapelier a-t-il de la soie? 2. Le chapelier n'a pas de soie, mais il a du velours. 3. A-t-il du velours de coton? 4. Non, monsieur; il n'a pas de velours de coton, il a du velours de soie. 5. Avez-vous de la viande? 6. Oui, monsieur; j'ai de la viande. 7. Le médecin n'a pas d'argent. 8. Qui a de l'argent? 9. Le marchand n'a pas d'argent, mais il a du drap, du velours et de la soie. 10. Avez-vous quelque chose? 11. Non, monsieur; je n'ai rien du tout. 12. Le tailleur a-t-il deux boutons d'argent? 13. Non, monsieur; il a deux boutons de soie. 14. Qui a votre chien? 15. Le voisin a le chien de mon cousin. 16. N'a-t-il pas votre cheval aussi? 17. Non, monsieur; il a le cheval de votre ami. 18. Avez-vous l'histoire de France? 19. Non, madame; je n'ai ni l'histoire de France ni l'histoire d'Angleterre. 20. N'avez-vous ni le livre ni le papier? 21. Non, mademoiselle; je n'ai ni l'un ni l'autre. 22. Qui a du papier? 23. Le libraire n'a pas de papier. 24. Quelqu'un a-t-il un livre? 25. Personne n'a de livre.

Exercise 12.

1. Has the baker velvet? 2. No, sir; the baker has no velvet. 3. Who has silk velvet? 4. The hatter has silk velvet and a silk hat. 5. Have you two silver buttons? 6. No, sir; I have a cloth coat, a silk hat, and a velvet shoe. 7. Has your neighbor a wooden table? 8. Yes, sir; he has a mahogany table. 9. Has your cousin a history of England? 10. No, sir; he has a history of France. 11. I have neither the cloth nor the velvet. 12. We have neither the meat nor the coffee. 13. Has any one a book? 14. Your cousin has a book, a velvet coat, and a silk hat. 15. Have you the physician's book? 16. Yes, madam; I have the physician's book, and the lady's gold pen. 17. Has the merchant cloth? 18. The merchant has no cloth, but he has money. 19. Who has your neighbor's dog? 20. Nobody has my neighbor's dog. 21. Has any one my book? 22. No one has your book. 23. Has your cousin's brother any thing? 24. No, sir; he has nothing. 25. Who has your friend's book? 26. Your brother has my cousin's book. 27. Has he the tailor's coat? 28. He has not the tailor's coat. 29. We have neither the cloth nor the silk.

LEÇON VIII. LESSON VIII.

IDIOMS FORMED WITH AVOIR, *TO HAVE*, &c.

1. The verb *avoir* is used idiomatically, in French, with the words *quelque chose, chaud, froid, faim, honte, peur, raison, tort, soif, sommeil.*

J'ai quelque chose.	*Something is the matter with me.*
Il a chaud.	*He is warm.*
Elle a faim.	*She is hungry.*
Nous avons honte.	*We are ashamed.*
Vous avez peur.	*You are afraid.*
Ils ont tort.	*They are wrong.*
Avez-vous raison ?	*Are you right ?*
J'ai sommeil.	*I am sleepy.*

2. A noun, whether taken in a general or in a particular sense, is, in French, commonly preceded by the article *le*, in its different forms. [§ 77, (1.) (2.)]

Le pain est nécessaire.	*Bread is necessary.*
Il a le pain.	*He has the bread.*

3. A noun, preceded by the article *le*, retains that article after ni, *nor, neither ;* but a noun taken in a partitive sense, [L. 6, 1,] takes after *ni*, neither article nor preposition.

Je n'ai ni l'arbre ni le jardin.	*I have neither the tree nor the garden.*
Nous n'avons ni arbre ni jardin.	*We have neither tree nor garden.*

4. A noun, taken in a partitive sense, and preceded by an adjective, takes merely the preposition *de.* [§ 78, (3.)]

5. The following adjectives are generally placed before the noun.

Beau, *handsome, fine, beautiful ;*	Brave, *worthy ;* Cher, *dear ;*	Gros, *large, big ;* Jeune, *young ;*	Mauvais, *bad ;* Meilleur, *better ;*
Bon, *good ;*	Grand, *great, large ;*	Joli, *pretty ;*	Petit, *small ;*
	Vieux, *old ;*		Vilain, *ugly.*

RÉSUMÉ OF EXAMPLES.

Avez-vous quelque chose ?	*Is anything the matter with you ?*
Je n'ai rien, (*literally, I have nothing.*)	*Nothing is the matter with me.*
Votre frère a-t-il chaud ?	*Is your brother warm ?*
Il n'a ni froid ni chaud.	*He is neither warm nor cold.*
Votre sœur a-t-elle faim ou soif ?	*Is your sister hungry or thirsty ?*
Elle n'a pas faim, mais honte.	*She is not hungry, but ashamed.*
Votre ami a-t-il sommeil ?	*Is your friend sleepy ?*
Mon ami n'a ni sommeil ni peur.	*My friend is neither sleepy nor afraid.*
Avez-vous raison ou tort ?	*Are you right or wrong ?*
Avez-vous du lait ou du vin ?	*Have you milk or wine ?*
Je n'ai ni lait ni vin, [R. 3.]	*I have neither milk nor wine.*
Avez-vous le lait ou le vin ?	*Have you the milk or the wine ?*
Je n'ai ni le lait ni le vin. [R. 3.]	*I have neither the milk nor the wine.*
Avez-vous de beau drap et de bon café ?	*Have you handsome cloth and good coffee ?*

Exercise 13.

Au contraire, *on the contrary*;
Bouton, m. *button*;
Capitaine, m. *captain*;
Cousin, m. *cousin*;
Chaud, m. *heat, warm*;
Faim, f. *hunger, hungry*;
Fer, m. *iron*.
Ferblantier, m. *tinman*;
Fusil, m. *gun*;
Froid, m. *cold*;
Gros, *large*;
Honte, f. *shame, ashamed*;
Mais, *but*;
Marteau, m. *hammer*;
Menuisier, m. *joiner*;
Poivre, m. *pepper*;
Petit, *small, little*;
Peur, f. *fear, afraid*;
Quel, *what, which*;
Raison, f. *reason, right*;
Rien, *nothing*;
Tort, m. *wrong*;
Sel, m. *salt*;
Sommeil, m. *sleep, sleepy*

1. Qui a sommeil? 2. Mon frère a faim, mais il n'a pas sommeil 3. Avez-vous raison ou tort? 4. J'ai raison, je n'ai pas tort. 5. Avez-vous le bon fusil de mon frère? 6. Je n'ai pas le fusil. 7. Avez-vous froid aujourd'hui? 8. Je n'ai pas froid; au contraire, j'ai chaud. 9. Avez-vous de bon pain? 10. Je n'ai pas de pain. 11. N'avez-vous pas faim? 12. Je n'ai ni faim ni soif. 13. Avez-vous honte? 14. Je n'ai ni honte ni peur. 15. Avons-nous du poivre ou du sel? 16. Vous n'avez ni poivre ni sel. 17. Quel livre avez-vous? 18. J'ai le livre de mon cousin. 19. Avez-vous le marteau de fer ou le marteau d'argent? 20. Je n'ai ni le marteau de fer ni le marteau d'argent, j'ai le marteau de bois du ferblantier. 21. Avez-vous quelque chose? 22. Je n'ai rien. 23. Avez-vous le gros livre du libraire? 24. Je n'ai ni le gros livre du libraire, ni le petit livre du menuisier; j'ai le bon livre du capitaine.

Exercise 14.

1. Are you sleepy, sir? 2. No, sir; I am not sleepy, but I am hungry. 3. Have you pepper or salt? 4. I have neither pepper nor salt; I have cheese. 5. Is your brother thirsty or hungry? 6. My brother is neither thirsty nor hungry. 7. Is your sister right or wrong? 8. She is not wrong, she is right. 9. Is the good joiner afraid? 10. He is not afraid, but ashamed. 11. Have you milk or cheese? 12. I have neither milk nor cheese; I have butter. 13. Have you the fine cloth or the good tea? 14. I have neither the fine cloth nor the good tea. 15. Is any thing the matter with you, my good friend? 16. Nothing is the matter with me, my good sir. 17. Have you no bread? 18. Yes, madam; I have good bread, good butter, and good cheese. 19. Is the carpenter sleepy? 20. The carpenter is not sleepy, but the tinman is hungry. 21. Have you the tinman's wooden hammer? 22. I have not the wooden hammer. 23. Which hammer have you? 24. I have the steel hammer. 25. Have you a good cloth coat? 26. No, sir; but I have a silk dress. 27. Has the tailor the good gold button? 28. Yes, sir; he has the good gold button. 29. Who has my brother's gold watch? 30. Some one has the gold watch.

LEÇON IX. LESSON IX.

THE PRONOUN *LE*.—THE POSSESSIVE ADJECTIVES AND PRONOUNS.

1. The pronouns le, *him, it;* la, *her, it,* are, in French, placed before the verb.[1] These pronouns assume the gender of the nouns which they represent.

Voyez-vous le couteau? *m.*	*Do you see the knife?*
Je le vois.	*I see it.*
Voyons-nous la fourchette? *f.*	*Do we see the fork?*
Nous la voyons.	*We see it.*

2. The vowel of the pronouns *le* and *la*, is elided before a verb commencing with a vowel or an *h* mute. [§ 146.]

Avez-vous le bâton? *m.*	*Have you the stick?*
Je l'ai.	*I have it.*
Avons-nous la canne? *f*	*Have we the cane?*
Nous l'avons.	*We have it.*

3. The possessive adjectives mon, *m.* ma, *f., my;* ton, *m.* ta, *f., thy;* son, *m.* sa, *f., his, her,* agree in gender with the object possessed, that is with the noun following them. [§ 21, (1.) (2.)]

Mon pupître, *m.* —	*My desk.*
Avez-vous ma lettre? *f.*	*Have you my letter?*
Il a son fusil, *m.*	*He has his gun.*
Il a sa cravate, *f.*	*He has his cravat.*

4. Before a feminine noun in the singular, commencing with a vowel or an *h* mute, the masculine form, *mon, ton, son,* is used. [§ 21, (3.)]

J'ai mon épée, *f.*	*I have my sword.*
C'est son habitude, *f.*	*It is his or her habit.*
Le général a son armée, *f.*	*The general has his army.*

5. The adjectives notre, *our;* votre, *your;* leur, *their,* are used without variation, before a noun of either gender, in the singular. [§ 21, (1.)]

Notre argent, *m.*	*Our silver.*
Votre canne, *f.*	*Your cane.*
Leur terre, *f.*	*Their land.*

6. The possessive pronouns le mien, *m.* la mienne, *f. mine;* le tien, *m.* la tienne, *f. thine;* le sien, *m.* la sienne, *f. his* or *hers;* le nôtre, *m.* la nôtre, *f. ours;* le vôtre, *m.* la vôtre, *f. yours;* le leur, *m.* la leur, *f. theirs,* can never be prefixed to nouns. The article prece-

[1] Except in the *second person singular,* and in the *first* and *second persons plural* of the imperative used *affirmatively.*

ding those pronouns, and forming an indispensable part of them, takes the gender of the object possessed;[1] mien, tien, sien, vary for the feminine—nôtre and vôtre, used as pronouns, have the circumflex accent.

J'ai votre livre et le mien.	*I have your book and mine.*
Elle a sa robe et la mienne.	*She has her dress and mine.*
Vous avez votre plume et la nôtre.	*You have your pen and ours.*

Résumé of Examples.

Votre ami a-t-il le mouton?	*Has your friend the sheep* or *mutton?*
Il l'a, elle l'a.	*He has it, she has it.*
Il ne l'a pas.	*He has it not.*
N'avez-vous pas l'encrier d'argent?	*Have you not the silver inkstand?*
Nous ne l'avons pas.	*We have it not.*
Avez-vous votre fusil ou le mien?	*Have you your gun or mine?*
Je n'ai ni le vôtre ni le mien.	*I have neither yours nor mine.*
Son épouse a-t-elle sa robe ou la vôtre?	*Has his wife her dress or yours?*
Elle n'a ni la sienne ni la vôtre.	*She has neither hers nor yours.*
Ne l'avez-vous pas?	*Have you it not?*
Votre frère ne l'a-t-il pas?	*Has not your brother it?*

Exercise 15.

Assiette, f. *plate;*	Crayon, m. *pencil;*	Parent, m. *relation;*
Biscuit, m. *biscuit;*	Cuisinier, m. *cook;*	Plat, m. *dish;*
Bœuf, m. *beef;*	Fourchette, f. *fork;*	Poisson, m. *fish;*
Boucher, m. *butcher;*	Matelot, m. *sailor;*	Porcelaine, f. *china;*
Commode, f. *chest of drawers, bureau;*	Mouton, m. *mutton, sheep;*	Sofa, m. *sofa;*
Couteau, m. *knife;*	Miroir, m. *looking-glass;*	Tout, *all;*
		Veau, m. *veal, calf.*

1. Avez-vous la fourchette d'argent? 2. Oui, monsieur; je l'ai. 3. Le cuisinier a-t-il le bœuf? 4. Non, monsieur; il ne l'a pas. 5. Quel mouton avez-vous? 6. J'ai le bon mouton et le bon veau du boucher. 7. Votre parent a-t-il la commode? 8. Non, monsieur; il ne l'a pas. 9. A-t-il mon poisson? 10. Qui a tout le biscuit du boulanger? 11. Le matelot n'a ni son pain ni son biscuit. 12. A-t-il son couteau et sa fourchette? 13. Il n'a ni son couteau ni sa fourchette, il a son assiette [R. 4]. 14. Quel plat a-t-il? 15. Il a le joli plat de porcelaine. 16. Avez-vous le mien ou le sien? 17. Je n'ai ni le vôtre ni le sien, j'ai le nôtre. 18. Avez-vous peur, monsieur? 19. Non, madame; je n'ai pas peur, j'ai faim. 20. Quelqu'un a-t-il

[1] The article is also contracted with the preposition *de* into *du*, (see L. 5. R. 1); and with the proposition *à* into *au*, when the possessive pronoun refers to a noun in the masculine singular.

De votre père et du mien.	*Of your father and mine.*
À son père et au mien.	*To his father and mine.*

ma montre d'or? 21. Non, monsieur; personne ne l'a. 22. Qu'avez-vous, monsieur? 23. Je n'ai rien. 24. Avez-vous le sofa d'acajou de mon menuisier? 25. Non, monsieur; je ne l'ai pas. 26. J'ai son joli miroir et son bon crayon.

Exercise 16.

1. Have you the silver pencil case? 2. No, sir; I have it not. 3. Have you my brother's plate? 4. Yes, madam; I have it. 5. Has the butcher the good biscuit? 6. He has it not, he has the good beef, the good mutton, and the good veal. 7. Have you my knife and (my) fork?[1] 8. I have neither your knife nor your fork. 9. Who has the good sailor's biscuit? 10. The baker has it, and I have mine. 11. Have you mine also? 12. I have neither yours nor his. 13. Are you hungry? 14. I am not hungry, I am thirsty and sleepy. 15. Are you not ashamed? 16. No, sir; I am not ashamed, but I am cold. 17. Is your relation right or wrong? 18. My relation is right, sir. 19. Has he my china dish or my silver knife? 20. He has neither your china dish nor your silver knife, he has your china plate. 21. Has any one my silver pencil-case? 22. No one has it, but your brother has your cloth coat. 23. Have you mine or his? 24. I have yours. 25. Has the baker the mahogany chest of drawers? 26. He has it not; he has the mahogany sofa. 27. Has the tinman my plate? 28. He has not your plate; he has mine. 29. Which sofa have you? 30. I have my brother's sofa. 31. I have neither his nor yours; I have mine.

LEÇON X. LESSON X.

THE DEMONSTRATIVE ADJECTIVES AND PRONOUNS.

1. The demonstrative adjectives ce, *m.* cette, *f.* *this* or *that*, are always placed before nouns; they agree in gender with these nouns. [§ 20, (1.)]

Avez-vous ce parapluie? *m.*	*Have you this* or *that umbrella?*
Vous n'avez pas cette bouteille, *f.*	*You have not this* or *that bottle.*

2. Before a word masculine singular, commencing with a vowel or an *h* mute, *cet* takes the place of *ce.* [§ 20, (1).]

[1] The possessive adjective must in French be repeated before every noun. [§ 21, (4.)]

N'avez-vous pas cet argent?	*Have you not this* or *that money?*
Vous avez eu cet honneur.	*You have had this* or *that honor*

3. When it is deemed necessary to express, in French, the difference existing in English between the words *this* and *that*, the adverbs *ci* and *là* may be placed after the nouns. [§ 20, (2.)]

Je n'ai pas ce parasol-ci; j'ai ce parasol-là,	*I have not this parasol; I have that parasol.*

4. The demonstrative pronouns, celui, *m.* celle, *f.* *this* or *that*, are used to represent nouns, but are never joined with them like adjectives. [§ 36, § 37, (1.)]

J'ai mon parapluie et celui de votre frère,	*I have my umbrella and your brother's*, i. e., *that of your brother.*
Vous avez ma robe et celle de ma sœur,	*You have my dress and my sister's*, i. e., *that of my sister.*

5. The pronouns celui, celle, with the addition of the words *ci* and *là*, are used in the sense of *this one*, *that one*, *the latter*, *the former*. [§ 37, (4).] They agree in gender with the word which they represent.

Vous avez celui-ci, mais vous n'avez pas celui-là.	*You have this one (the latter), but you have not that one (the former).*

6. The pronouns ceci and cela, are used absolutely, that is, without a noun, in pointing out objects.

Nous n'avons pas ceci, nous avons cela,	*We have not this, we have that.*
Ceci ou cela,	*This or that.*

Résumé of Examples.

Avez-vous le livre de cet homme?	*Have you that man's book?*
Je n'ai pas son livre, j'ai le mien.	*I have not his book, I have mine.*
Le cuisinier a-t-il ce parapluie?	*Has the cook that umbrella?*
Il n'a pas ce parapluie-ci, il a ce parapluie-là, (R. 3.)	*He has not this umbrella, he has that umbrella.*
Avez-vous celui de votre frère?	*Have you your brother's? that of your brother.*
Je n'ai pas celui de mon frère; j'ai celui de ma sœur, (R. 4.)	*I have not my brother's; I have my sister's;* i. e., *that of my brother, that of my sister.*
Avez-vous celui-ci ou celui-là?	*Have you this one or that one?*
Je n'ai ni celui-ci ni celui-là.	*I have neither the latter nor the former.*
Quelle robe avez-vous? *f.*	*Which dress have you?*
J'ai celle-ci.	*I have this (one.)*
Avez-vous ceci ou cela? (R. 6.)	*Have you this or that?*

Exercise 17.

Ardoise, f. *slate;*
Balai, m. *broom;*
Bois, m. *wood;*
Bouteille, f. *bottle;*
Dame, f. *lady;*
Fromage, m. *cheese;*
Jardinier, m. *gardener;*
Lettre, f. *letter;*
Malle, f. *trunk;*
Parasol, m. *parasol;*
Poulet, m. *chicken;*
Plomb, m. *lead;*
Ne–plus, *no longer, not any more;*
Salière, f. *salt stand;*
Encrier, m. *inkstand;*
Étranger, m. *stranger, foreigner;*
Lait, m. *milk;*
Parapluie, m. *umbrella;*
Volaille, f. *poultry.*

1. Votre frère a-t-il son encrier d'argent? 2. Il ne l'a plus, il a un encrier de plomb. 3. Avons-nous la lettre de l'étranger? 4. Oui, monsieur; nous avons celle de l'étranger [R. 4.] 5. Votre sœur n'a pas son ardoise, mais elle a son chapeau de satin. 6. Le menuisier a-t-il votre bois ou le sien? 7. Il n'a ni le mien ni le sien, il a celui du jardinier. 8. Avez-vous mon bon parapluie de soie? 9. J'ai votre parapluie de soie et votre parasol de satin. 10. Avez-vous ma bouteille? 11. Je n'ai pas votre bouteille, j'ai la malle de votre sœur. 12. Le domestique a-t-il cette salière? 13. Il n'a pas cette salière-ci; il a celle-là. 14. Avez-vous le bon ou le mauvais poulet? 15. Je n'ai ni celui-ci ni celui-là. 16. Quel poulet avez-vous? 17. J'ai celui du cuisinier. 18. Le boulanger a-t-il de la volaille? [L. 6, R. 1.] 19. Le boulanger n'a pas de volaille, il a du lait [L. 7, R. 5.] 20. Avez-vous votre fromage ou le mien? 21. Je n'ai ni le vôtre ni le mien, j'ai celui du matelot. 22. Quelqu'un a-t-il faim? 23. Personne n'a faim. 24. Avez-vous quelque chose? 25. Non, monsieur; je n'ai rien.

Exercise 18.

1. Has your brother that lady's umbrella? 2. My brother has that lady's umbrella. 3. Have you this parasol or that one? 4. I have neither this (one) nor that (one). 5. Have you the stranger's gold watch? 6. No, sir; I have the baker's. 7. Who has my slate? 8. I have your slate and your brother's. 9. Has the cook a silver salt stand? 10. The cook has a silver salt stand and a silver dish. 11. Has the cook this poultry or that? 12. He has neither this nor that. 13. Has he this bread or that? 14. He has neither this nor that, he has the baker's good bread. 15. Have you my cotton parasol? 16. I have not your cotton parasol, I have your silk parasol. 17. Has the gardener a leather trunk? 18. The gardener has a leather trunk. 19. Who has my good cheese? 20. Nobody has your cheese, but some one has your brother's. 21. Have you mine or his? 22. I have neither yours nor his, I have the stranger's. 23. Has the cook this bottle or that broom? 24. He has this bottle. 25. Have you a lead inkstand? 26. No, sir; I have a china inkstand. 27. Has

the stranger poultry? 28. The stranger has no poultry, but he has money. 29. Your brother is hungry and thirsty, afraid and sleepy. 30. Is any one ashamed? 31. No, sir; nobody is ashamed. 32. Is your brother right or wrong? 33. My brother is right, and yours is wrong. 34. Your sister has neither her satin hat nor her velvet hat.

LEÇON XI. LESSON XI.

PLURAL OF NOUNS (§ 8).

1. The plural in French, is generally formed, as in English, by the addition of *s* to the singular.

Un homme, une femme,	*A man, a woman;*
Deux hommes, deux femmes,	*Two men, two women.*

The form *le* of the article becomes plural by the addition of *s*, and may be placed before plural nouns of either gender.

Les hommes, les femmes,	*The men, the women.*

2. 1st EXCEPTION TO RULE 1. Nouns ending in *s*, *x*, *z* remain unchanged for the plural.

Le bas, les bas,	*The stocking, the stockings;*
La voix, les voix,	*The voice, the voices;*
Le nez, les nez,	*The nose, the noses.*

3. 2d EXCEPTION. Nouns ending with *au*, and *eu*, take *x* for the plural.

Le bâteau, les bâteaux,	*The boat, the boats;*
Le lieu, les lieux,	*The place, the places.*

4. 3d EXCEPTION. The following nouns ending in *ou*, take *x* for the plural: bijou, *jewel;* caillou, *pebble;* chou, *cabbage;* genou, *knee;* hibou, *owl;* joujou, *plaything.*

Les bijoux, les cailloux, les choux,	*The jewels, the pebbles, the cabbages;*
Les hiboux, les genoux, les joujoux,	*The owls, the knees, the playthings.*

5. 4th EXCEPTION. The following nouns ending in *ail* change that termination into *aux* for the plural: bail, *lease;* corail, *coral;* émail, *enamel;* soupirail, *air-hole;* sous-bail, *under-lease;* travail, *labor.*

Les baux, les coraux, les émaux,	*The leases, the corals, the enamels;*
Les soupiraux, les travaux, les sous-baux,	*The air-holes, the labors, the under-leases.*

6. 5th EXCEPTION. Nouns ending in *al* form their plural in *aux*.

Le cheval, les chevaux,	*The horse, the horses;*
Le général, les généraux,	*The general, the generals.*

Bal, *ball;* carnaval, *carnival;* chacal, *jackal;* régal, *treat,* follow the general rule.

7. 6th EXCEPTION. Ciel, *heaven;* œil, *eye;* and aïeul, *ancestor,* form their plural irregularly.

Les cieux, les yeux, les aïeux,	*The heavens, the eyes, the ancestors.*

For further rules see § 8, § 9, and § 10 of the Second Part.

RÉSUMÉ OF EXAMPLES.

Les Anglais ont-ils les chevaux du général?	*Have the English the general's horses?*
Les généraux n'ont pas les bijoux.	*The generals have not the jewels.*
Les enfants ont-ils les cailloux?	*Have the children the pebbles?*
Les yeux de l'enfant.	*The child's eyes.*
Les tableaux de cette église.	*The pictures of that church.*
Avez-vous les oiseaux de ce bois?	*Have you the birds of that wood?*
Avez-vous les encriers d'argent de ma sœur?	*Have you my sister's silver inkstands?*
J'ai les bijoux d'argent et d'or de l'étranger.	*I have the gold and silver jewels of the foreigner.*
Les rois n'ont-ils pas les palais de marbre?	*Have not the kings the marble palaces?*

EXERCISE 19.

Baril, m. *barrel;*	Général, m. *general;*	Mauvais, *bad;*
Bas, m. *stocking;*	Gilet, m. *waistcoat;*	Meunier, m. *miller;*
Chocolat, m. *chocolate;*	Grand, adj., *large, great;*	Morceau, m. *piece;*
Bijou, m. *jewel;*	Jardin, m. *garden;*	Oiseau, m. *bird;*
Chou, m. *cabbage;*	Joujou, m. *plaything;*	Petit, *small;*
Dans, *in;*	Légume, m. *vegetable;*	Paire, f. *pair;*
Enfant, m. *child;*	Marchand, m. *merchant;*	Poivre, m. *pepper;*
Fer, m. *iron;*	Maréchal, m. *blacksmith;*	Qu', que, *what;*
Fils, m. *son;*	Marteau, m. *hammer;*	Rien, *nothing.*

1. Avez-vous les marteaux du charpentier? 2. Nous avons les marteaux du maréchal. 3. Les maréchaux ont-ils deux marteaux de bois? 4. Ils ont deux marteaux de fer. 5. Les généraux ont-ils les chapeaux de soie de l'enfant? 6. Ils ont les bijoux et les joujoux de l'enfant. 7. Les enfants ont-ils les oiseaux de votre bois? 8. Ils n'ont pas les oiseaux de mon bois, mais ils ont les chevaux de mon général. 9. Le maréchal a-t-il une paire de bas de laine? 10. Le maréchal a deux paires de bas de laine. 11. Monsieur; n'avez-vous pas froid? 12. Non, monsieur; j'ai chaud. 13. Avez-vous du café ou du chocolat? 14. Je n'ai ni café ni chocolat. 15. N'avez-vous

pas les choux de mon grand jardin? 16. J'ai les légumes de votre petit jardin. 17. Votre fils, qu'a-t-il? 18. Mon fils n'a rien. 19. Avez-vous deux morceaux de pain? 20. Le meunier a un morceau de pain, et deux barils de farine. 21. L'épicier a-t-il du café, du thé, du chocolat, et du poivre? 22. Il a du thé et du café, et le chocolat et le poivre de votre marchand. 23. Qui a de l'argent? 24. Je n'ai pas d'argent, mais j'ai du papier. 25. Avez-vous de bon papier? 26. J'ai de mauvais papier.

Exercise 2

1. Have you my brother's horses? 2. I have not your brother's horses, I have your cousin's hats. 3. Have the blacksmiths good iron? 4. The blacksmith has two pieces of iron. 5. Have you two pairs of stockings? 6. I have one pair of stockings, and two pairs of gloves. 7. Has your sister the gold jewels? 8. My sister has the gold jewels, and the paper playthings. 9. Have you the cabbages in your garden? 10. We have two cabbages in our garden. 11. Have you the silk hats? 12. The generals have the silk hats. 13. Have you coffee or sugar? 14. We have neither coffee nor sugar. 15. Is your brother ashamed? 16. My brother is neither ashamed nor afraid. 17. Who has two barrels of flour? 18. The miller has two barrels of flour. 19. Have the birds bread? 20. The birds have no bread. 21. Has the merchant tea, chocolate, sugar and pepper? 22. He has sugar and pepper, but he has neither tea nor chocolate. 23. What has your sister? 24. She has nothing. 25. What is the matter with your brother? 26. Nothing is the matter with him. 27. Is he not cold? 28. He is not cold, he is warm. 29. Is he wrong? 30. He is not wrong, he is right. 31. Have you two cloth coats? 32. I have only one cloth coat, but I have two satin waistcoats. 33. Who has my brother's letter? 34. Your sister has it. 35. Your sister has it not.

LEÇON XII. LESSON XII.

THE PLURAL, CONTINUED.

1. The plural form of the pronouns le, *him* or *it;* la, *her* or *it*, is les, *them*, for both genders. Its place is also before the verb.

Vous les avez. Les avez-vous?	*You have them. Have you them?*
Nous ne les avons pas.	*We have them not.*

2. The plural of the article, preceded by the preposition de, *of*, or *from*, is *des* for both genders.

Des livres, des plumes,	*Of* or *from the books, of the pens;*
Des frères, des sœurs,	*Of* or *from the brothers, of the sisters.*

3. The same form of the article is placed before plural nouns used in a partitive sense. [L. 6, R. 1.]

J'ai des habits.	*I have clothes.*
Vous avez des maisons.	*You have houses.*

4. Rule 5, Lesson 7, and Rule 4, Lesson 8, apply also to plural nouns used partitively. *See also note, page* 38.

Nous n'avons pas de livres.	*We have no books.*
Vous avez de bons crayons.	*You have good pencils.*

5. The plural form of the possessive adjectives, *mon, ton, son, notre, votre, leur*, is mes, *my;* tes, *thy;* ses, *his, her;* nos, *our;* vos, *your;* leurs, *their*, for both genders.

Mes frères, mes sœurs,	*My brothers, my sisters;*
Nos livres, nos plumes,	*Our books, our pens.*

6. The possessive pronouns, *le mien, la mienne*, etc., [L. 9, R. 6,] form their plural as follows:[1]

Mas.	*Fem.*		*Mas.* or *Fem.*
Les miens,	Les miennes,	*mine;*	Les nôtres, *ours,*
Des miens,	Des miennes,	*of mine;*	Des nôtres, *of ours;*
Les tiens,	Les tiennes,	*thine;*	Les vôtres, *yours;*
Des tiens,	Des tiennes,	*of thine;*	Des vôtres, *of yours;*
Les siens,	Les siennes,	*his* or *hers;*	Les leurs, *theirs;*
Des siens,	Des siennes,	*of his* or *hers;*	Des leurs, *of theirs;*

Vos maisons et les miennes,	*Your houses and mine;*
Vos champs et les siens,	*Your fields and his;*
Les siens, les vôtres et les nôtres,	*His, yours and ours;*
Des miens, des vôtres et des leurs,	*Of mine, of yours, and of theirs.*

7. The demonstrative adjectives, *ce, cet, cette*, have *ces* for their plural.

Ces hommes, ces femmes.	*These men, these women.*

8. The demonstrative pronoun, celui, m. *this* or *that*, makes *ceux* in the plural. The feminine form, *celle*, merely takes the *s* in the plural.

Mes chandeliers (m.) et ceux de vos frères.	*My candlesticks and those of your brothers.*
Vos chandelles (f.) et celles de nos voisins.	*Your candles and those of our neighbors.*

[1] Aux miens, *m.*, aux miennes, *f. to mine*, &c. See L. 25, R. 6.

Résumé of Examples.

Votre frère a-t-il mes chevaux ?	*Has your brother my horses ?*
Il n'a ni les vôtres ni les siens.	*He has neither yours nor his.*
A-t-il ceux de nos voisins ?	*Has he those of our neighbors ?*
Il ne les a pas.	*He has them not.*
Ma sœur a-t-elle vos plumes, ou celles de ma cousine ?	*Has my sister your pens, or my cousin's, f. ?* (or *those of my cousin*).
Elle n'a ni les miennes ni celles de ma cousine, elle a les siennes.	*She has neither mine, nor my cousin's, she has her own.*
Avons-nous des marteaux ?	*Have we hammers ?*
Vous n'avez pas de marteaux.	*You have no hammers.*
Vous avez de jolis crayons.	*You have pretty pencils.*
Avez-vous les habits des enfants ?	*Have you the children's clothes ?*
Je n'ai pas les habits des enfants.	*I have not the children's clothes.*
Vous avez les chapeaux des dames.	*You have the ladies' hats.*
Avez vous ceux-ci, ou ceux-là ?	*Have you these or those ?*

Exercise 21.

Acajou, m. *mahogany ;* Aubergiste, m. *innkeeper ;* Blanc -he, *white ;* Chaise, f. *chair ;* Chandelier, m. *candlestick ;* Chandelle, f. *candle ;* Cousine, f. *cousin ;* Crin, m. *horse-hair ;* Ébéniste, m. *cabinet-maker ;* Ferblanc, m. *tin ;* Ferblantier, m. *tinman ;* Fusil, m. *gun ;* Laine, f. *wool ;* Marbre, m. *marble ;* Matelas, m. *mattress ;* Meilleure, *better ;* Ouvrier, m. *workman ;* Voyageur, m. *traveller.*

1. Avez-vous les marteaux des maréchaux ? 2. Oui, monsieur ; je les ai. 3. Ne les avez-vous pas ? 4. Non, monsieur ; nous ne les avons pas. 5. L'ouvrier les a. 6. L'aubergiste a-t-il vos chevaux ? 7. L'aubergiste n'a ni mes chevaux ni les vôtres, il a les siens. 8. Le médecin a-t-il des livres ? 9. Oui, monsieur ; il a de bons livres. 10. N'avez-vous pas mes meilleures plumes ? 11. Oui, monsieur ; j'ai vos meilleures plumes, les miennes, et celles de votre cousine. 12. Le voyageur a-t-il de bons fusils ? 13. Il n'a pas de bons fusils, il a des fusils de fer. 14. Le matelot n'a-t-il pas mes matelas de crin ? 15. Il ne les a pas. 16. Qu'a-t-il ? 17. Il a les matelas de laine de l'ébéniste. 18. L'ébéniste a-t-il des tables d'acajou ? 19. Oui, madame ; il a des tables d'acajou et des tables de marbre blanc. 20. Avez-vous mes chaises ou les vôtres ? 21. Je n'ai ni les vôtres ni les miennes, j'ai celles de l'ébéniste. 22. N'avez-vous pas sommeil ? 23. Non, monsieur ; je n'ai ni sommeil ni faim. 24. Le ferblantier a-t-il vos chandeliers de fer ? 25. Non, monsieur ; il a ceux du maréchal.

Exercise 22.

1. Have you my tables or yours ? 2. I have neither yours nor mine, I have the innkeeper's. 3. Have you them ? 4. No, sir ; I have them not. 5. Has your sister my horses ? 6. Yes, sir ; she has

your two horses, and your brother's. 7. Are you right or wrong? 8. I am right, I am not wrong. 9. Has the tinman my silver candlesticks or yours? 10. He has neither your silver candlesticks nor mine. 11. What has he? 12. He has the cabinet-maker's wooden tables. 13. Has he your mahogany chairs? 14. No, sir; he has my white marble tables. 15. Have you these tables or those? 16. I have neither these nor those, I have the cabinet-maker's. 17. Have you good pencil-cases? 18. No, sir; but I have good pencils. 19. Has the traveller iron guns? 20. Yes, sir; he has mine, yours, and his. 21. Has he not your brother's? 22. He has not my brother's. 23. Has the workman my iron hammers? 24. Yes, sir; he has them. 25. Has my brother your pens or my cousin's? 26. He has mine and yours. 27. Have you the children's clothes? 28. Yes, madam; I have them. 29. Have you your sister's hat? 30. I have my cousin's. *f.* 31. Is any thing the matter with your brother? 32. He is cold and hungry. 33. Have you horses? 34. Yes, sir; I have two horses. 35. I have two horse-hair mattresses and one wool mattress.

LEÇON XIII. LESSON XIII.

AGREEMENT OF ADJECTIVES—FEMININE OF ADJECTIVES.

1. The adjective in French, whatever may be its place,[1] agrees in gender and number with the noun which it qualifies [§ 15, (1.)(2.)].

2. Adjectives ending with *e* mute, *i. e.*, not accented, retain that termination for the feminine.

Un garçon aimable,	*An amiable boy;*
Une fille aimable,	*An amiable girl.*

3. Adjectives not ending in *e* mute, take *e* for the feminine.

Un garçon diligent,	*A diligent boy;*
Une fille diligente,	*A diligent girl.*

4. EXCEPTIONS. Adjectives ending in *el, eil, en, et, on* and *as*, double the last consonant and take *e* for the feminine.

Mas.	Fem.		Mas.	Fem.	
Essentiel,	essentielle,	*essential;*	Sujet,	sujette,	*subject;*
Vermeil,	vermeille,	*vermillion;*	Bon,	bonne,	*good;*
Ancien,	ancienne,	*ancient;*	Bas,	basse,	*low.*

5. Adjectives ending in *f* change the *f* into *ve;* those ending in *x* change that letter into *se* for the feminine.

[1] For the place of adjectives see L. 15, and Rule 5, L. 8.

Un habit neuf,	Une robe neuve,
A new coat;	*A new dress;*
Un homme heureux,	Une femme heureuse
A happy man;	*A happy woman.*

6. The adjectives beau, *handsome;* fou, *foolish;* mou, *soft;* nouveau, *new;* vieux, *old,* become *bel, fol, mol, nouvel,* and *vieil,*[1] before a noun masculine commencing with a vowel or an *h* mute; the last consonant of the latter form is doubled, and *e* added for the feminine, Ex., *belle, folle, nouvelle, vieille.*

7. Additional rules and exceptions will be found, § 16 of the Second Part of this Grammar.

8. CONJUGATION OF THE PRESENT OF THE INDICATIVE OF ÊTRE, *TO BE.*

Affirmatively.		*Interrogatively.*	
Je suis,	*I am;*	Suis-je?	*Am I?*
Tu es,	*Thou art;*	Es-tu?	*Art thou?*
Il est,	*He is;*	Est-il?	*Is he?*
Elle est,	*She is;*	Est-elle?	*Is she?*
Nous sommes,	*We are;*	Sommes-nous?	*Are we?*
Vous êtes,	*You are;*	Êtes-vous?	*Are you?*
Ils sont, m.	*They are;*	Sont-ils? m.	*Are they?*
Elles sont, f.	*They are;*	Sont-elles? f.	*Are they?*

RÉSUMÉ OF EXAMPLES.

Avez-vous un garçon diligent et une fille diligente?	*Have you a diligent boy and a diligent girl?*
Mon garçon est diligent, mais ma fille est paresseuse [R. 5.]	*My boy is diligent, but my daughter is idle.*
Cette coutume est-elle ancienne?	*Is this custom ancient?*
Cette coutume n'est pas ancienne, elle est nouvelle [R. 6.]	*This custom is not ancient, it is new.*
Votre plume est-elle bonne ou mauvaise?	*Is your pen good or bad?*
Ma sœur est très vive [R. 5.]	*My sister is very lively.*
Votre maison est-elle meilleure que la mienne?	*Is your house better than mine?*
La maison de ma sœur est aussi bonne que la vôtre.	*My sister's house is as good as yours.*

EXERCISE 23.

Beau, bel, belle, *handsome;*	Fille, f. *daughter, girl;*	Parasol, m. *parasol;*
	Habit, m. *coat;*	Parent, m. *relation;*
Bon, *good;*	Heureux,-se, *happy;*	Petit, e. *small;*
Content, e, *pleased;*	Ici, *here;*	Paresseux,-se, *idle;*
Cravate, f. *cravat;*	Meilleur, e, *better;*	Porcelaine, f. *china;*
Dame, f. *lady;*	Neuf,-ve, *new;*	Que, *than;*
Encrier, m. *inkstand,*	Paire, f. *pair;*	Vieux, vieille, *old;*
Excellent, e, *excellent;*	Parapluie, m. *umbrella;*	Vif, vive, *quick, lively.*

[1] *Vieux* is also used before a noun commencing with a vowel or a silent *h.*

1. Cette dame est-elle contente? 2. Non, monsieur; cette dame n'est pas contente. 3. Votre fille est-elle vive? 4. Mon fils est très vif, et ma fille est paresseuse. 5. N'a-t-elle pas tort? 6. Elle n'a pas raison. 7. Votre cousine est-elle heureuse? 8. Oui, madame; elle est bonne, belle et heureuse. 9. A-t-elle des amis? 10. Oui, monsieur; elle a des parents et des amis. 11. A-t-elle une robe neuve et de vieux souliers? 12. Elle a de vieux souliers et une vieille robe. 13. Votre frère n'a-t-il pas un bel habit [R. 6.]? 14. Il a un bel habit et une bonne cravate. 15. Avez-vous de bonne viande, monsieur? 16. J'ai de la viande excellente. 17. Cette viande-ci est-elle meilleure que celle-là? 18. Celle-ci est meilleure que celle-là. 19. Votre ami a-t-il le bel encrier de porcelaine? 20. Son encrier est beau, mais il n'est pas de porcelaine. 21. Quelqu'un a-t-il faim? 22. Personne n'a faim. 23. Les généraux sont-ils ici? 24. Les généraux et les maréchaux sont ici. 25. J'ai vos parasols et vos parapluies, et ceux de vos enfants.

Exercise 24.

1. Is your little sister pleased? 2. Yes, madam; she is pleased. 3. Is that little girl handsome? 4. That little girl is not handsome, but she is good. 5. Have you good cloth and good silk? 6. My cloth and[1] silk are here. 7. Is your sister happy? 8. My sister is good and happy. 9. Has that physician's sister friends? 10. No, madam; she has no friends. 11. Is your meat good? 12. My meat is good, but my cheese is better. 13. Has the bookseller a handsome china inkstand? 14. He has a fine silver inkstand and a pair of leather shoes. 15. Have you my silk parasols? 16. I have your cotton umbrellas. 17. Is your brother's coat handsome? 18. My brother has a handsome coat and an old silk cravat. 19. Have you relations and friends? 20. I have no relations, but I have friends. 21. Is that handsome lady wrong? 22. That handsome lady is not wrong. 23. Have you handsome china? 24. Our china is handsome and good. 25. It is better than yours. 26. Is not that little girl hungry? 27. That handsome little girl is neither hungry nor thirsty. 28. What is the matter with her? 29. She has neither relations nor friends. 30. Is this gold watch good? 31. This one is good, but that one is better. 32. Have you it? 33. I have it, but I have not your sister's. 34. I have neither yours nor mine, I have your mother's.

[1] The article, the possessive and the demonstrative adjective, and the prepositions *à* and *de* are repeated before every noun.

Mon frère et ma sœur,	*My brother and sister;*
À votre frère et au mien,	*To your brother and (to) mine;*
De nos livres et des vôtres,	*Of our books and (of) yours.*

LEÇON XIV. LESSON XIV.

AGREEMENT OF ADJECTIVES.—PLURAL OF ADJECTIVES.

1. An adjective qualifying a plural noun, or two or more singular nouns of the same gender, assumes the gender of the noun or nouns and is put in the plural. [§ 18.]

Les arbres et les fruits sont beaux.	*The trees and fruits are fine.*
Les fleurs et les plantes sont belles.	*The flowers and plants are fine.*
Vos jardins sont très beaux.	*Your gardens are very fine.*

2. An adjective qualifying two or more nouns of different genders, is put in the plural masculine.

Mon frère et ma sœur sont contents.	*My brother and sister are pleased.*
Le canif et la plume sont bons.	*The penknife and pen are good.*

3. The plural of the feminine of adjectives is *invariably* formed by the addition of an *s*.

Vous avez de jolies maisons.	*You have pretty houses.*
Ces demoiselles sont attentives.	*Those young ladies are attentive.*

4. The plural of the masculine of adjectives is *generally* formed by the addition of an *s*.

Ces écoliers sont attentifs.	*Those scholars are attentive.*
Vos bois sont magnifiques.	*Your woods are magnificent.*

5. The terminations *s* and *x* are not changed for the plural masculine.

Nos fruits sont mauvais.	*Our fruits are bad.*
Vos oiseaux sont hideux.	*Your birds are hideous.*

6. To the termination *eau*, *x* is added for the plural masculine.

Vos champs sont très beaux.	*Your fields are very fine.*

7. The termination *al* is *generally* changed into *aux* for the plural masculine [§ 17 (3.), *Third Exception*].

Les hommes sont égaux.	*Men are equal.*

8. For more explicit rules and for exceptions, see § 17, Second Part.

9. PRESENT OF THE INDICATIVE OF ÊTRE, *TO BE.*

Negatively.		*Negatively and Interrogatively.*	
Je ne suis pas,	*I am not;*	Ne suis-je pas?	*Am I not?*
Tu n'es pas,	*Thou art not;*	N'es-tu pas?	*Art thou not?*
Il n'est pas,	*He is not;*	N'est-il pas?	*Is he not?*
Elle n'est pas,	*She is not;*	N'est-elle pas?	*Is she not?*
Nous ne sommes pas,	*We are not;*	Ne sommes-nous pas?	*Are we not?*
Vous n'êtes pas,	*You are not;*	N'êtes-vous pas?	*Are you not?*
Ils ne sont pas, m.	*They are not;*	Ne sont-ils pas? m.	*Are they not?*
Elles ne sont pas, f.	*They are not;*	Ne sont-elles pas? f.	*Are they not?*

Résumé of Examples.

Avez-vous des écoliers attentifs?	*Have you attentive scholars?*
Mes écoliers et mes écolières sont très attentifs et très studieux.	*My scholars (male and female) are very attentive and very studious.*
Ces demoiselles sont-elles studieuses?	*Are those young ladies studious?*
Elles ne sont pas très studieuses.	*They are not very studious.*
Ces règles sont-elles générales?	*Are those rules general?*
Ces principes sont généraux.	*Those principles are general.*
Leurs habillements sont superbes.	*Their clothes are superb.*
Avez-vous peur de ces chevaux rétifs?	*Are you afraid of those restive horses?*
Vos montres d'or sont excellentes.	*Your gold watches are excellent.*
Les miennes sont-elles meilleures que les vôtres?	*Are mine better than yours?*
Les vôtres sont meilleures.	*Yours are better*

Exercise 25.

Agréable, *agreeable;*	Mauvais, e, *bad;*	Souvent, *often;*
Aîné, e, *elder;*	Mule, f. *mule;*	Travail, m. *labor;*
Allemande, f. *German;*	Oisif, ve, *idle;*	Très, *very;*
Jamais, *never;*	Pantoufles, f. *slippers;*	Utile, *useful;*
Indulgent, e, *indulgent;*	Personne, m. *nobody;*	Velours, m. *velvet;*
Laine, f. *wool, woollen;*	Rétif, ve, *restive;*	Vif, ve, *quick, lively.*
Maroquin, m. *morocco;*		

1. Les chevaux de notre ami sont-ils rétifs? 2. Ses chevaux ne sont pas rétifs, mais ses mules sont très rétives. 3. Les chevaux et les mules de votre frère sont excellents. 4. Vos sœurs sont-elles très vives? 5. Mes frères et mes sœurs sont très vifs. 6. Sont-ils souvent oisifs? 7. Non, monsieur; mes sœurs ne sont jamais oisives. 8. Avez-vous peur de votre frère? 9. Non, monsieur; je n'ai peur de personne. 10. Ne sommes-nous pas indulgents? 11. Vous êtes indulgents, et vous avez raison. 12. Ai-je vos livres? 13. Vous ne les avez pas, vous avez ceux de mon frère aîné. 14. Ne les avez-vous pas? 15. Je ne les ai pas. 16. Avez-vous une bonne paire de bas de laine? 17. J'ai une belle paire de bas de soie. 18. Avez-vous les bonnes maisons ou les mauvaises? 19. Je n'ai ni les bonnes ni les mauvaises, j'ai celles de ma cousine. 20. Le travail est-il agréable? 21. Le travail est utile et agréable. 22. Avez-vous mes beaux souliers de maroquin? 23. Je n'ai pas vos beaux souliers de maroquin, j'ai vos belles pantoufles de velours. 24. Avez-vous les pantoufles de votre sœur, ou les miennes? 25. Je n'ai ni les vôtres ni celles de votre sœur, j'ai celles de l'Allemande.

Exercise 26.

1. Are your brothers and sisters very (*bien*) quick? (Note, p. 54.) 2. My brothers are quick, but my sisters are not quick. 3. Have you

not two restive horses?[1] 4. No, but I have a restive mule. 5. Have you not two good pairs of silk gloves? 6. I have a good pair of cotton gloves, and two pairs of silk gloves. 7. Are you not afraid of your friends? 8. No, sir; I am never afraid of my friends. 9. I am afraid of nobody. 10. Are you right or wrong? 11. I am right. 12. Have you my beautiful leather slippers, or my old satin slippers? 13. I have your old leather shoes and your velvet slippers. 14. Are those ladies pleased? 15. Those ladies are pleased, and they are right. 16. Has the German lady your father's shoes or mine? 17. She has neither his nor yours, she has my sister's. 18. Has your elder brother good houses? 19. His houses are better than yours and than mine.[2] 20. Are his houses old? 21. His houses are old, but they are good. 22. Have you them? 23. No, sir; I have them not; I have no houses. 24. Have you my brother's or my sister's? 25. Your sister has hers and my mother's. 26. Are your scholars attentive? 27. My scholars are very attentive and very studious. 28. Are those German ladies studious? 29. They are very studious and very attentive. 30. Are you often wrong? 31. Yes, sir; I am often wrong. 32. Is labor agreeable? 33. Yes, sir; labor is agreeable and useful. 34. We have them, and you have them not.

LEÇON XV. LESSON XV.

PLACE OF ADJECTIVES.—RELATIVE PRONOUN *EN*.

1. The adjective, in French, follows the noun much more frequently than it precedes it. [§ 85, (1.)]

Vous avez des amis fidèles.	*You have faithful friends.*
Ma sœur a des livres instructifs.	*My sister has instructive books.*

2. Those adjectives which generally precede the nouns have been mentioned in Lesson 8, Rule 5., and will be also found § 85, (11.)

Nous avons de belles maisons.	*We have beautiful houses.*
Votre jolie petite fille est studieuse.	*Your pretty little girl is studious.*

3. The adjectives which are placed after nouns are:—1st, All participles, present and past, used adjectively.

Nous avons une histoire intéressante.	*We have an interesting history.*
Vous avez des enfants polis.	*You have polite children.*

[1] See Rule 5 of next Lesson.

[2] *Que* meaning *which* and *que* conjunction are never understood in French, they must be repeated before every noun, pronoun, and verb. See L. 19, R. 1.

4. 2d, All such as express form, color, taste; such as relate to hearing and touching; such as denote the matter of which an object is composed; as also such as refer to nationality,[1] or to any defects of the body. [§ 85, (4.) (5.) (6.) (7.)]

Nos parents ont des chapeaux noirs.	*Our relations have black hats.*
Vous avez des pommes douces.	*You have sweet apples.*
Voilà de la cire molle.	*There is soft wax.*
Cette dame espagnole a un enfant boiteux.	*That Spanish lady has a lame child.*

5. 3d, Almost all adjectives ending in *al*, *able*, *ible*, *ique* and *if*

Ces hommes libéraux sont aimés.	*Those liberal men are loved.*
Voilà un esprit raisonnable.	*That is a reasonable mind.*
Voilà un esclave fugitif.	*That is a fugitive slave.*

6. Some adjectives have a different meaning according to their position before or after the noun. [See list, § 86.]

Un brave homme, *a worthy man;* Un homme brave, *a brave man.*

7. *En* is used for the English words *some* or *any*, expressed or understood, but not followed by a noun; *en* has also the sense of *of it, of them, thereof*, generally understood in English sentences, particularly in answers to questions. [§ 39, (17.) § 104, § 110, (2.)(3.)]

Avez-vous des souliers de cuir?	*Have you leather shoes?*
J'en ai.	*I have some, I have (of them).*
Votre fils en a-t-il?	*Has your son any?*

8. An adjective used substantively, and having a partitive signification (in a sentence containing the pronoun *en*), must be preceded by the preposition *de*, in the same manner as if the noun were expressed. [See R. 4, L. 8.]

Avez-vous de bonnes plumes?	*Have you good pens?*
Non, mais j'en ai de mauvaises.	*No, but I have bad ones.*

RÉSUMÉ OF EXAMPLES.

Avez-vous de beaux jardins?	*Have you fine gardens?*
Oui, j'en ai de beaux. [R. 7.]	*Yes, I have fine ones.*
Votre frère n'a-t-il pas des souliers noirs?	*Has not your brother black shoes?*
Il n'en a pas, mais ma sœur en a.	*He has none, but my sister has some.*
N'a-t-elle pas aussi une robe blanche?	*Has she not also a white dress?*
Oui, elle en a une.	*Yes, she has one.*
Non, elle n'en a pas.	*No, she has none.*
Qui en a une?	*Who has one?*
Qui n'en a pas?	*Who has none?*

[1] Such adjectives, in French, do not commence with a capital. See § 145.

Le boucher n'a-t-il pas de la viande fraîche? (See note, page 38.)	*Has not the butcher fresh meat?*
Il en a, il n'en a pas.	*He has some, he has none.*
Il en a beaucoup.	*He has much (of it).*
Il n'en a guère.	*He has but little (of it).*
Il en a deux livres.	*He has two pounds (of it).*

Exercise 27.

Amusant, e, *amusing;*	Bijou, m. *jewel;*	Laine, f. *wool;*
Américain, e, *American;*	Blanc, blanche, *white;*	Mademoiselle, f. *Miss;*
Anglais, e, *English;*	Brave, *brave, worthy;*	Monsieur, m. *sir, Mr., gentleman;*
Arabe, *Arabian;*	Châle, m. *shawl;*	Noir, e, *black;*
Aubergiste, m. *innkeeper;*	Couteau, m. *knife;*	Parent, m. *relation;*
Beaucoup, *much, many;*	Français, e, *French;*	Soldat, m. *soldier;*
Belge, *Belgian;*	Guère, *little, but little;*	Terre, f. *land.*
	Guitare, f. *guitar;*	

1. Avez-vous une bonne guitare? 2. Oui, monsieur; j'ai une guitare excellente. 3. Avez-vous de bons habits? 4. Oui, madame; j'ai de bons habits noirs et de belles robes blanches. 5. Votre mère n'a-t-elle pas un châle de soie? 6. Oui, mademoiselle; elle en a un de soie et un de laine. 7. L'aubergiste a-t-il de bons chevaux anglais? 8. L'aubergiste a des chevaux anglais, français, et arabes. 9. Il en a de superbes. 10. L'ami de votre frère a-t-il des bijoux d'or? 11. Oui, monsieur; il en a. 12. A-t-il aussi des bijoux d'argent? 13. Il en a aussi. 14. En a-t-il beaucoup? 15. Non, monsieur; il n'en a guère. 16. Votre ami a-t-il des parents? 17. Oui, monsieur; il en a. 18. Ce monsieur a-t-il une bonne plume d'acier, ou une belle plume d'or? 19. Il en a une d'acier, et nous en avons une d'or. 20. Le général n'a-t-il pas de bons soldats? 21. Il en a de très braves. 22. Les Américains n'ont-ils pas de bonne terre? 23. Ils en ont d'excellente. 24. Le marchand a-t-il des couteaux anglais ou français? 25. Les couteaux du marchand ne sont ni anglais ni français, ils sont belges.

Exercise 28.

1. Has your brother Arabian horses? 2. Yes, sir; he has some. 3. Has he handsome ones? 4. Yes, sir; he has handsome ones. 5. Are the good Americans wrong? 6. No, miss (madam); they are not wrong, they are right. 7. Have you a French shawl? 8. Yes, sir; I have one, I have a handsome French shawl. 9. Has your innkeeper your silver knife or mine? 10. He has neither yours nor mine, he has his sister's handsome steel knife. 11. Has the Belgian a good guitar? 12. He has an excellent French guitar. 13. He has an excellent one. 14. Has the gentleman amusing books? 15. Yes, sir; he has two. 16. Has the general French or Arabian horses?

17. He has French and Arabian horses, but he has no English horses. 18. Who has Arabian horses? 19. The Arabian has some. 20. Has the Englishman any? 21. The Englishman has some. 22. Has your friend's sister a good steel pen? 23. My friend's sister has one, but my relations have none. 24. Are you not wrong, sir? 25. Yes, madam; I am wrong. 26. Are those knives English? 27. No, sir; they are Belgian. 28. Have you relations? 29. I have two, and they are here (*ici*). 30. Has the English butcher meat? 31. Yes, sir; he has much. 32. Has he much money? 33. He has but little. 34. Has the Belgian general brave soldiers? 35. Yes, sir; he has good ones.

LEÇON XVI. LESSON XVI.

COMPARISON.

1. Adjectives and adverbs are always compared in French, as they often are in English, by means of adverbs.

Plus beau, plus souvent,	*More beautiful, oftener.*

2. The *first* part of the comparison for the degree in *quality* is made by:

Aussi, *as*, or *as much*;
Plus, *more*;
Pas aussi, pas si, *not so*, *not as*;
Moins, *less*;

These adverbs come almost always before an adjective, a participle, or an adverb.

Aussi grand, *as tall.*	Plus grand, *taller.*
Pas aussi grand, *not as tall.*	Moins grand, *less tall*, *not as tall.*

3. For the degree in *quantity* we use:

Autant de, *as much*, *as many*;
Plus de, *more*;
Pas autant de, *not as much* or *as many*;
Moins de, *less*, *fewer*;

Coming almost always before a noun, an adjective used substantively, or a possessive or demonstrative pronoun.

Autant de livres, *as many books.*	Autant de bons, *as many good ones.*
Plus de ceux-ci, *more of these.*	Moins des miens, *less of mine.*

4. The *second* part of the comparison is expressed by:

Que, *as*, *than:* when it does not precede a word expressing a *quantity* compared with the word following the first adverb of the comparison.

Autant de livres que votre frère,	*As many books as your brother.*
Tout autant d'or que sa sœur,	*Quite as much gold as his sister.*
Plus diligent que sa sœur,	*More diligent than his sister.*

Que de, *as, than:* before a word expressing a *quantity* compared with that expressed by the word following the adverb of the first part.

Plus de livres que de maisons,	*More books than houses.*
Autant d'or que d'argent,	*As much gold as silver.*
J'ai tout autant de sucre que de café.	*I have quite* (or *just*) *as much sugar as coffee.*

Résumé of Examples.

Avez-vous autant de livres anglais, que de livres italiens?	*Have you as many English books as Italian books?*
J'en ai tout autant.	*I have just as many.*
J'ai autant de ceux-ci que de ceux-là.	*I have as many of these as of those.*
Il est aussi heureux que vous.	*He is as happy as you.*
Avez-vous plus d'assiettes que de plats?	*Have you more plates than dishes?*
J'ai plus de ceux-ci que de celles-là.	*I have more of these than of those.*
Est-il plus complaisant que ses frères?	*Is he more obliging than his brothers?*
Le Français a-t-il moins de légumes que de fruits?	*Has the Frenchman fewer vegetables than fruits?*
Il a moins de livres que de manuscrits.	*He has fewer books than manuscripts.*
Il n'a pas autant de ceux-ci que de ceux-là.	*He has not as many of these as of those.*
En a-t-il moins que votre frère?	*Has he less* (*of them*) *than your brother?*
Il en a tout autant.	*He has quite as many.*

Exercise 29.

Bleu, e, *blue;*	Fer, m. *iron;*	Manuscrit, m. *manuscript;*
Courage, m. *courage;*	Fromage, m. *cheese;*	Maréchal, m. *blacksmith;*
Davantage,* *more;*	Hollandais, m. *Dutchman;*	Modestie, f *modesty;*
Drap, m. *cloth;*	Italien, ne, *Italian;*	Soie, f. *silk;*
Ennemi, m. *enemy;*	Jardin, m. *garden;*	Très, *very;*
Espagnol, e, *Spaniard;*	Manteau, m. *cloak;*	Verre, m. *glass.*
Estampe, f. *engraving;*		

1. Êtes-vous aussi content que votre frère? 2. Je suis aussi content que votre frère. 3. Votre père a-t-il autant de courage que de modestie? 4. Il a moins de modestie que de courage. 5. Le libraire a-t-il autant de manuscrits que d'estampes? 6. Il a plus de celles-ci que de ceux-là. 7. A-t-il autant d'amis que d'ennemis? 8. Il a plus de ceux-ci que de ceux-là. 9. A-t-il autant de pain que de fromage? 10. Il a tout autant de celui-ci que de celui-là. 11. Le maréchal a-t-il plus de chevaux que votre frère? 12. Il en a plus que mon père, et plus que mon frère. 13. N'avez-vous pas

[1] *Davantage* means *more*. It can never be placed before a noun; it may be used instead of *plus*, at the end of a sentence.

froid? 14. Non, monsieur; je n'ai pas froid, j'ai très chaud. 15. Avez-vous deux manteaux de drap? 16. J'en ai un de drap et un de velours bléu. 17. N'avez-vous pas plus de verres que d'assiettes? 18. Nous en avons davantage. 19. Le maréchal a-t-il plus de fer que d'acier? 20. Il n'a pas autant de celui-ci que de celui-là. 21. Il a moins de celui-ci que de celui-là. 22. Les Hollandais ont-ils de beaux jardins? 23. Leurs jardins sont très beaux. 24. Les jardins des Italiens sont plus beaux que ceux des Espagnols.

Exercise 30.

1. Are you more attentive than your sister? 2. I am not as attentive as your brother. 3. Have you more courage than my brother? 4. I have quite as much. 5. Has the blacksmith as much money as iron? 6. He has more of the latter than of the former. [L. 10, R. 5.] 7. Has he more modesty than the Spaniard? 8. He has more. 9. He has more than your friend's sister. 10. Are you not cold, sir? 11. No, sir; but I am afraid and sleepy. 12. Has the Dutchman more cheese than the Italian? 13. He has more cheese and more money. 14. Have you as much English silk as Italian silk? 15. I have more of this than of that. 16. Who has more friends than the Spaniard? 17. Your friend has more. 18. Has the Spaniard as much of your money as of his? 19. He has less of mine than of his. 20. Have we more silk cloaks than cloth cloaks? 21. We have more of these than of those. 22. Have you good cloaks? 23. Yes, sir; I have good cloaks, good hats, and good leather shoes. 24. Have you more plates than dishes? 25. I have not more plates than dishes, but I have more glasses than plates. 26. Are you not very cold? 27. No, sir; I am neither cold nor warm. 28. Has your carpenter wood? 29. Yes, sir; he has wood, money, cheese and meat. 30. Who has more money than the carpenter? 31. The Dutchman has more. 32. Who has more engravings than books? 33. The bookseller has more of these than of those. 34. Are you as attentive as your friend? 35. I am more attentive than my friend.

LEÇON XVII. LESSON XVII.

COMPARISON,—ENCORE, ETC.

1. The superlative absolute is formed by placing très, fort, or bien, *very*, before the adjective. [§ 14–2, (11.)]

Ces chandeliers sont très utiles.	*These candlesticks are very useful.*
Notre tailleur est bien obligeant.	*Our tailor is very obliging.*

2. The superlative relative is formed by adding the article *le, la, les*, to a comparative. [§ 14–2, (9.)]

Votre neveu est le plus savant de tous. *Your nephew is the most learned of all.*

3. *Encore* is used in French in the sense of *more, some more, any more, still,*—used affirmatively and interrogatively, *but not negatively.*

Avez-vous encore du café?	*Have you any more coffee?*
J'ai encore du café.	*I have more* (or *some more*) *coffee.*
J'en ai encore.	*I have some more,* or *some left.*

4. *Ne—plus* is used in the sense of *not any more,* and *no more,* or *none left.*

Je n'ai plus de livres.	*I have no more books.*
Je n'ai plus de chocolat.	*I have no chocolate left.*

5. *Ne—guère* means *but little, but few.*

Je n'ai guère d'amis.	*I have but few friends.*
Je n'en ai guère.	*I have but few—but little.*

6. The pronouns *moi, toi, lui, eux,* are used instead of the nominative pronouns *je, tu, il, ils,* after the *que* of a comparison, when the verb is understood.

Vous êtes plus heureux que moi.	*You are happier than I.*
Vous avez plus de mérite que lui.	*You have more merit than he.*

Résumé of Examples.

Votre marchand est bien obligeant.	*Your merchant is very obliging.*
Voilà le meilleur de ces garçons.	*That is the best of those boys.*
Nous avons encore des amis.	*We have some more* (or *still*) *friends.*
Vous avez encore du crédit.	*You have still* (or *yet*) *credit.*
Avez-vous encore une piastre?	*Have you a dollar left?*
Le maçon a-t-il encore des briques?	*Has the mason more bricks?*
Il n'en a plus.	*He has no more—he has none left.*
Il n'a plus de briques.	*He has no more bricks.*
Il n'en a guère.	*He has but few.*
Il n'en a plus guère.	*He has but few left.*
Je n'ai guère de livres.	*I have but few books.*
Avez-vous plus de courage que lui?	*Have you more courage than he?*
Il a moins de courage que moi.	*He has less courage than I.*
Combien de piastres avez-vous encore?	*How many dollars have you still,* or *have you left?*

Exercise 31.

Correct, e, *correct;*	Dictionnaire, m. *dictionary;*	Savant, e, *learned;*
Courage, m. *courage;*	Neveu, m. *nephew;*	Sœur, f. *sister;*
Crédit, m. *credit;*	Nièce, f. *niece;*	Salade, f. *salad;*
Beaucoup, *much;*	Nouvelle, f. *news;*	Tante, f. *aunt;*
Boyer, *Boyer;*	Quel, *which, which one;*	Tous, *all;*
Jardin, m. *garden;*		Ville, f. *town, city.*

1. Votre dictionnaire est-il très correct? 2. Il est plus correct que celui de Boyer. 3. Votre dictionnaire est le plus correct de tous. 4. Quel est le meilleur de ces jardins? 5. Celui-ci est le meilleur de tous les jardins de la ville. 6. Avez-vous encore de l'argent? 7. Je n'ai plus d'argent, mais j'ai encore du crédit. 8. Avons-nous encore de la salade? 9. Nous n'en avons plus. 10. Nous n'avons plus de viande. 11. Qui en a encore? 12. Mes frères et mes sœurs en ont encore. 13. En avez-vous encore beaucoup? 14. Je n'en ai plus guère. 15. Votre tante a-t-elle plus de robes que votre nièce? 16. Elle n'en a pas beaucoup. 17. Votre neveu est-il plus savant que votre nièce? 18. Il n'est pas aussi savant qu'elle. 19. Elle est plus savante que lui. 20. Avez-vous encore froid? 21. Je n'ai plus froid, j'ai bien chaud. 22. N'avez-vous plus de nouvelles? 23. Je n'en ai plus. 24. En avez-vous beaucoup? 25. Je n'en ai guère.

Exercise 32.

1. Has your brother a very good dictionary? 2. His dictionary is not very correct. 3. Has your father more courage than he? 4. He has much more courage than your nephew. 5. Have your brothers credit? 6. They have but little credit, but they have money. 7. Is your aunt obliging? 8. My aunt is very obliging. 9. Have you still books, pens and paper? 10. I have no more books, but I have still good pens and excellent English paper. 11. Who has still paper? 12. I have no more, but my brother has some more. 13. Have you any news, sir? 14. No, madam; I have none to-day. 15. Have you as much wood as my brother's son? 16. I have more than you or he. 17. Are you still wrong? 18. No, sir, I am no longer (*plus*) wrong, I am right. 19. Are your sisters still hungry? 20. They are neither hungry nor thirsty, but they are still sleepy. 21. Is your niece as learned as he? 22. She is more learned than he and (*que*) his aunt. 23. Have you no news, sir? 24. No, madam; I have no more news. 25. Who has news? 26. I have no more. 27. Have you them all? 28. Yes, sir; I have them all. 29. Has your aunt much of it left? 30. She has but little more of it. 31. Has your brother any more English horses? 32. He has no more. 33. He has two more. 34. Have you a handsome French shawl left? 35. I have no more French shawls, but I have an English one.

LEÇON XVIII. LESSON XVIII.

ADVERBS OF QUANTITY.—QUELQUE CHOSE, &c.

1. The adverbs of quantity, combien, *how much, how many;* trop, *too much, too many;* beaucoup, *much, many;* assez, *enough;* peu, *little, few;* guère, *but little, few;* and the word pas, meaning *no*, when coming before a noun or an adjective, are followed by the preposition *de.*

Combien de fleurs avez-vous?	*How many flowers have you.*
J'ai beaucoup de fleurs.	*I have many flowers.*
Vous avez trop de loisir.	*You have too much leisure.*
Notre sœur a assez de temps.	*Our sister has time enough.*

2. The adverb *bien*, used in the sense of *beaucoup*, (*much, many,*) is followed by the preposition *de*, joined to or blended with the article *le, la, les.* [L. 6.]

Vous avez bien de la complaisance.	*You have much kindness.*
Elle a bien des amis.	*She has many friends.*

3. Quelque chose, *something, any thing* [L. 7, 6.] and rien, *nothing, not any thing*, take *de* before an adjective.

Votre ami a quelque chose d'agréable.	*Your friend has something pleasant.*
Avez-vous quelque chose de bon?	*Have you any thing good?*
Je n'ai rien de bon.	*I have nothing (not any thing) good.*

4. *Quel*, m., *quelle*, f., *quels*, m. p., *quelles*, f. p., are used interrogatively for *which* or *what* before a noun.

Quelle serviette avez-vous?	*What* or *which napkin have you?*
Quelles bourses votre ami a-t-il?	*What purses has your friend?*

5. *Que* is used for *what* before a verb.

Qu'avez-vous?	*What is the matter with you?*

6. *Lequel*, m., *laquelle*, f., *lesquels*, m. p., *lesquelles*, f. p., are used absolutely for the word *which*, not followed by a noun, and equivalent to *which one, which ones.*

Lequel votre fils a-t-il?	*Which (one) has your son?*
Lesquelles avons-nous?	*Which (ones) have we?*

7. *Quelques* is used before a plural noun for *a few, some; quelques uns*, m., *quelques unes*, f., are used absolutely, with the same meaning—*Plusieurs* means *several*, and is invariable.

Le Danois a-t-il quelques pommes?	*Has the Dane a few apples?*
Il en a quelques unes.	*He has a few.*
Il en a plusieurs.	*He has several.*

Résumé of Examples.

Combien de poires avez-vous ?	*How many pears have you?*
Nous avons beaucoup de poires.	*We have many pears.*
Nous en avons beaucoup.	*We have many (of them).*
Nous avons assez de cerises.	*We have cherries enough.*
Nous n'en avons pas assez.	*We have not enough (of them).*
Vous n'avez guère de pêches.	*You have but few peaches.*
Votre jardinier a bien des pêches.	*Your gardener has many peaches.*
N'avez-vous pas de pêches ?	*Have you no peaches ?*
J'ai beaucoup de pêches et d'abricots.	*I have many peaches and apricots.*
Le boucher a-t-il quelque chose de bon ?	*Has the butcher any thing good?*
Il a quelque chose de bon et de mauvais.	*He has something good and bad.*
Il n'a rien de bon.	*He has not any thing (nothing) good.*
Quelles poires avez-vous ?	*What* or *which pears have you?*
Nous avons celles de votre sœur.	*We have your sister's.*
Quel habit *m.* avez-vous ?	*Which* or *what coat have you?*
Nous avons celui du tailleur.	*We have the tailor's.*
Qu'avez-vous de bon ?	*What have you good?*
Lequel avez-vous ?	*Which (one) have you?*
Lesquels votre frère a-t-il ?	*Which (ones) has your brother?*
J'ai du fruit mûr.	*I have ripe fruit.*

Exercise 33.

Abricot, m. *apricot;*	Jardinier, m. *gardener;*	Poivre, m. *pepper;*
Ananas, m. *pineapple;*	Fleur, f. *flower;*	Pomme, f. *apple;*
Beurre, m. *butter;*	Légume, m. *vegetable;*	Pomme de terre, f. *potato;*
Cerise, f. *cherry;*	Magasin, m. *warehouse;*	
Épicier, m. *grocer;*	Mûr, e, *ripe;*	Prune, f. *plum;*
Étranger, e, *foreign;*	Oncle, m. *uncle;*	Sucre, m. *sugar;*
Jardin, m. *garden;*	Poire, f. *pear;*	Thé, m. *tea.*

1. Combien de pommes de terre votre frère a-t-il ? 2. Il n'en a pas beaucoup. 3. L'épicier a-t-il beaucoup de sucre dans son magasin ? 4. Il n'en a guère, mais il a beaucoup de beurre et de poivre. 5. Votre jardinier a-t-il beaucoup de cerises ? 6. Il a plus de cerises que de prunes. 7. Les prunes sont-elles meilleures que les cerises ? 8. Les cerises sont meilleures que les prunes. 9. Avez-vous quelques poires mûres ? 10. Nous en avons quelques unes, nous avons aussi beaucoup d'ananas et d'abricots. 11. Votre oncle a-t-il quelque chose de bon dans son jardin ? 12. Il a quelque chose de bon et de beau. 13. Il a de beaux légumes et de belles fleurs. 14. Avez-vous des fleurs étrangères ? 15. J'en ai quelques unes. 16. Lesquelles avez-vous ? 17. J'ai celles de votre frère et celles de votre jardinier. 18. N'avez-vous pas aussi les miennes ? 19. Non, monsieur ; je ne les ai pas. 20. Qui en a beaucoup ? 21. Personne n'en

a beaucoup. 22. J'en ai quelques unes. 23. Avez-vous assez de thé? 24. J'en ai assez. 25. J'en ai plus que lui.

Exercise 34.

1. Has your gardener many vegetables? 2. Yes, sir; he has many. 3. How many gardens has he? 4. He has several gardens and several houses. 5. Have you many books? 6. I have but few, but my friend has many. 7. What coat has your brother? 8. He has a good cloth coat. 9. Has your uncle many peaches? 10. He has but few peaches, but he has many cherries. 11. How many plums has the tailor? 12. The tailor has no plums, he has cloth and silk. 13. What silk has your friend the merchant? 14. He has a great deal (*beaucoup*) of silk, and a great deal of money. 15. Has the gardener any thing good in (*dans*) his garden? 16. He has many pineapples. 17. Has he more vegetables than fruit? 18. He has more of this than of those. 19. Has your uncle many pears and cherries? 20. He has a few, and he has many apples and plums. 21. Have you a few? 22. I have still many, but my brother has no more. 23. Which peaches has he? 24. He has large (*grosses*) peaches. 25. Which (ones) have you? 26. I have the best peaches. 27. Has the merchant any thing good in his warehouse? 28. He has nothing good in his warehouse, but he has something good in his garden. 29. How many potatoes has the foreigner? 30. He has not many. 31. Has he good vegetables? 32. He has good vegetables. 33. Is he right or wrong? 34. He is right, but you are wrong. 35. He has neither this book nor that, he has the bookseller's.

LEÇON XIX. LESSON XIX.

THE NUMBERS—THE DAY OF THE MONTH.

1. The relative pronoun, que, *whom, which, that,* and the conjunction, que, *that,* are never omitted in French, and must be repeated before every verb depending on them. [§ 109.]

Les crayons que j'ai, sont meilleurs que ceux que vous avez. — *The pencils (which) I have, are better than those (which) you have.*

2. *Ne,* before the verb, and *que* after it, are used in the sense of *only, but.*

Je n'ai qu'un ami. — *I have but one friend.*

3. L'un et l'autre means *both;* les uns et les autres, *these and those, the latter and the former.* [§ 41, (11.)]

Vous avez l'un et l'autre. — *You have both.*

4. CARDINAL AND ORDINAL NUMBERS AS FAR AS TWENTY. [§ 22, 23.]

Cardinal.		*Ordinal.*	
Un, *m.* une, *f.*	*One, a, an,*	Premier, *m.* e, *f.*	*First,*
Deux,	*Two,*	Second,[1] *m.* e, *f.*	
		Deuxième,	*Second,*
Trois,	*Three,*	Troisième,	*Third,*
Quatre,	*Four,*	Quatrième,	*Fourth,*
Cinq,	*Five,*	Cinquième,	*Fifth,*
Six,	*Six,*	Sixième,	*Sixth,*
Sept,	*Seven,*	Septième,	*Seventh,*
Huit,	*Eight,*	Huitième,	*Eighth,*
Neuf,	*Nine,*	Neuvième,	*Ninth,*
Dix,	*Ten,*	Dixième,	*Tenth,*
Onze,	*Eleven,*	Onzième,	*Eleventh,*
Douze,	*Twelve,*	Douzième,	*Twelfth,*
Treize,	*Thirteen,*	Treizième,	*Thirteenth,*
Quatorze,	*Fourteen,*	Quatorzième,	*Fourteenth,*
Quinze,	*Fifteen,*	Quinzième,	*Fifteenth,*
Seize,	*Sixteen,*	Seizième,	*Sixteenth,*
Dix-sept,	*Seventeen,*	Dix-septième,	*Seventeenth,*
Dix-huit,	*Eighteen,*	Dix-huitième,	*Eighteenth,*
Dix-neuf,	*Nineteen,*	Dix-neuvième,	*Nineteenth,*
Vingt,	*Twenty.*	Vingtième,	*Twentieth.*

5. The cardinal numbers are used, in French, for the day of the month, except the *first*, for which the ordinal number *premier* substituted.

Le dix août, le cinq juillet,	*The tenth of August, the fifth of July.*
Le premier du mois prochain.	*The first of next month.*

6. The verb avoir, *to have*, is used actively, [§ 43, (2.)] for the day of the month. The verb *être* may also be used.

Quel jour du mois avons-nous ?	*What day of the month is it?*
Nous avons le vingt.	*It is the twentieth.*
C'est aujourd'hui le dix.	*To-day is the tenth.*

7. Before the word *onze*, the article *le* or *la* is not elided [§ 146].

Nous avons le onze de décembre,	*It is the eleventh of December.*

RÉSUMÉ OF EXAMPLES.

L'ouvrier a-t-il les outils que vous avez ?	*Has the workman the tools which you have?*
Les maisons que j'ai, sont-elles aussi bonnes que celles que vous avez ?	*Are the houses which I have, as good as those which you have?*
Combien de francs avez-vous ?	*How many francs have you?*
Je n'ai que dix francs, mais mon frère en a plus de vingt	*I have only ten francs, but my brother has more than twenty (of them).*
Avons-nous le quatorze du mois ?	*Is it the fourteenth day of the month?*

[1] In this word and its derivatives, *c* has the sound of *g* hard.

Non, monsieur; nous n'avons que le onze.	*No, sir; it is only the eleventh.*
Lequel do ces deux volumes avez-vous?	*Which of those two volumes have you?*
J'ai l'un et l'autre.	*I have both.*
Avez-vous la première place, ou la deuxième?	*Have you the first, or the second place?*
J'ai la première, et mon frère a la deuxième.	*I have the first, and my brother has the second.*

Exercise 35.

Aujourd'hui, *to-day;*	Février, m. *February;*	Outil, m. *tool;*
Canelle, f. *cinnamon;*	Franc, m. *franc;*	Ouvrage, m. *work;*
Centime, m. *centime—the 100th part of a franc;*	Histoire, f. *history;*	Œuvres, f. *works;*
	Italien, m. *Italian;*	Place, f. *place;*
Combien, *how much, how many;*	Kilogramme, m. *kilogramme—about two pounds;*	Quart, m. *quarter;*
Cravate, f. *cravat;*	Menuisier, m. *joiner;*	Septembre, m. *September;*
Demi, *half,* § 84, (2.)	Mousseline, f. *muslin;*	Volume, m. *volume.*

1. Le cheval que vous avez est-il bon? 2. Il est meilleur que celui que vous avez, et que celui de notre ami. 3. Combien d'enfants avez-vous? 4. Je n'en ai qu'un, mais l'Italien en a plus que moi. 5. Avons-nous le dix septembre? 6. Non, monsieur; nous avons le neuf de février. 7. Avez-vous ma cravate de soie, ou ma cravate de mousseline? 8. J'ai l'une et l'autre. 9. Avez-vous huit kilogrammes de canelle? 10. Non, monsieur; je n'en ai qu'un demi-kilogramme. 11. Combien de francs avez-vous, monsieur? 12. Je n'ai qu'un demi-franc, mais mon ami a un franc et demi. 13. Votre sœur a-t-elle vingt-cinq centimes? 14. Oui, monsieur; elle a un quart de franc. 15. N'avons-nous pas le premier août? 16. Non, monsieur; nous avons le six septembre. 17. Est-ce aujourd'hui le dix? 18. Non, monsieur; c'est le onze. 19. Votre frère a-t-il la première place? 20. Non, monsieur; il a la dixième. 21. Votre menuisier a-t-il beaucoup d'outils? 22. Oui, monsieur; il en a beaucoup. 23. Cet ouvrage a-t-il dix volumes? 24. Non, monsieur; il n'en a que neuf. 25. J'ai le sixième volume des œuvres de Molière, et le premier volume de l'histoire de France de Michelet.

Exercise 16.

1. Is that cinnamon good? 2. That cinnamon is better than yours and your brother's. [R. 1.] 3. What day of the month is it to-day? 4. It is the sixth. 5. Has your father twenty francs? 6. No, sir; he has only six francs fifty centimes. 7. How many volumes has your work? 8. It has many, it has fifteen. 9. Has the joiner read *(lu)* the second volume of Michelet's history of France? 10. Yes, sir; he has

read the second volume (of it). 11. Has your friend Molière's works? 12. He has only two volumes of them. 13. Have you my cloth coat or my velvet coat? 14. We have both. 15. We have this and that. 16. How much cinnamon have you? 17. We have two kilogrammes. 18. How many centimes has the merchant? 19. He has twenty-six. 20. Have you the third or the fourth place? 21. I have neither the third nor the fourth, I have the tenth. 22. Are you not ashamed to-day? 23. No, sir; I am not ashamed, but I am afraid. 24. Have you a quarter of a franc? 25. No, sir; but I have half a franc. 26. Is it the sixth of July? 27. No, sir; it is the fourth of March. 28. Has your uncle six children? 29. No, sir; he has only one. 30. Have you ten kilogrammes of meat? 31. I have only five kilogrammes. 32. Is the butcher's meat good? 33. It (*elle*) is not very good. 34. How many kilogrammes have you (of it)? 35. I have only two, but my brother has four.

LEÇON XX. LESSON XX.

THE TIME OF THE DAY.—AGE, ETC.

1. For the time of the day, the verb *être* is used unipersonally in French, in the same manner as the verb *to be* is used in English for the same object. The word *heure*, sing. *heures*, plur. represents the English expressions, *o'clock*, or *time*, and must always be expressed.

Quelle heure est-il?	*What o'clock (time) is it?*
Il est une heure.	*It is one o'clock.*
Il est dix heures.	*It is ten; it is ten o'clock.*

2. *Midi* is used for *twelve o'clock* in the day, and *minuit*, for *midnight*, or *twelve at night*. *Douze heures* is never used, except in the sense of *twelve hours*.

Est-il midi? Est-il minuit?	*Is it noon? Is it midnight?*

3. *Et quart, et demie*, [§ 84, (3.)] answer to the English expressions, *a quarter, half-past, after*, &c.

Il est neuf heures et quart.	*It is a quarter after nine.*
Il est midi et demi.	*It is half after twelve.*
Il est une heure et demie.	*It is half after one.*

4. *Moins un quart, moins vingt minutes*, answer to the English expressions, *a quarter before, twenty minutes before*, &c.

Il est dix heures moins un quart.	*It wants a quarter of ten.*
Il est neuf heures moins dix minutes.	*It is ten minutes before nine.*

5. The word *demi*, preceding the word *heure*, does not vary. Placed after it, it is variable. [§ 84, (2.) (3.)]

Une demi-heure.	*Half an hour.*
Une heure et demie.	*An hour and a half.*

6. The verb *avoir*, is used actively [§ 43, (2,) (3,)] in French, in speaking of age, and the word, an, *year*, is always expressed.

Quel âge avez-vous?	*How old are you?* lit. *What age have you?*
J'ai plus de vingt ans.	*I am more than twenty.*

7. *Plus de, moins de*, are used for *more than, less than*, before a number.

Avons-nous plus de dix mètres de cette toile d'Hollande?	*Have we more than ten metres of this Holland (Holland linen)?*
Vous en avez moins de six aunes.	*You have less than six ells of it.*

Résumé of Examples.

Il n'est pas encore deux heures.	*It is not yet two o'clock.*
Est-il une heure et demie?	*Is it half-past one?*
Il est midi et quart ou midi et demi.	*It is a quarter or half-past twelve.*
Il est huit heures moins un quart.	*It wants a quarter of eight.*
Quel âge votre fils a-t-il?	*How old is your son?*
Il n'a que dix-huit ans.	*He is only eighteen years old.*
Votre beau-frère n'a-t-il pas plus de dix-neuf ans?	*Is not your brother-in-law more than nineteen years old?*
Ma belle-sœur n'a pas moins de dix-huit ans et demi.	*My sister-in-law is not less than eighteen years and a half.*
Est-il plus de dix heures à votre montre?	*Is it more than ten o'clock by your watch?*
Il n'est que neuf heures à mon horloge.	*It is only nine by my clock.*
Votre fils est-il plus âgé que le mien?	*Is your son older than mine?*
Il est plus jeune que le vôtre.	*He is younger than yours.*

Exercise 37.

Âgé, e, *old;*
Aune, f. *ell;*
Beau-frère, m. *brother-in-law;*
Beau-fils, m. *son-in-law;*
Beau-père, m. *father-in-law;*
Belle-mère, f. *mother-in-law;*
Belle-sœur, f. *sister-in-law;*
Cela, *that;*
Cinquante, *fifty;*
Cousin-germain, m. *first cousin;*
Enfant, m. *child;*
Février, m. *February;*
Horloge, f. *clock;*
Indienne, f. *printed calico;*
Italienne, f. *Italian;*
Jeune, *young;*
Jour, m. *day;*
Maintenant, *now;*
Mars, m. *March;*
Mètre, m. *metre, a French measure; about three French feet; about* 1.09 *yards;*
Mois, m. *month;*
Ruban, m. *ribbon;*
Tard, *late;*
Verge, f. *yard.*

1. Votre beau-frère est-il plus âgé que le mien? 2. Le vôtre est plus jeune que le mien. 3. Quel âge votre belle-mère a-t-elle? 4. Elle a près de cinquante ans. 5. Quelle heure est-il maintenant? 6. Il est six heures passées. 7. Êtes-vous certain de cela? 8. Oui, monsieur; j'en suis certain. 9. Est-il plus de deux heures à votre montre? 10. Il n'est que midi à ma montre. 11. Avez-vous plus de cinq ans, mon enfant? 12. Je n'ai pas encore quatre ans. 13. Avez-vous plus de six verges d'indienne? 14. J'en ai moins de trois mètres. 15. Combien d'aunes de ruban votre beau-père a-t-il? 16. Il n'a guère de ruban, il n'en a qu'une demi-aune. 17. Est-il midi moins un quart? 18. Il est plus tard, monsieur; il est midi et quart. 19. Quel jour du mois avons-nous? 20. Nous avons le six octobre. 21. N'est-ce pas le huit février? 22. Non, madame; c'est le huit de mars. 23. Combien de jardins votre cousin-germain a-t-il? 24. Il n'en a qu'un, mais il est très beau. 25. Il en a plus de dix.

Exercise 38.

1. How old is your brother-in-law? 2. He is fifty years old. 3. Is your sister-in-law older than mine? 4. No, sir; my sister-in-law is younger than yours. 5. Is your son twenty-five years old? 6. No, madam; he is only sixteen. 7. What day of the month is it to-day? 8. It is the eleventh. 9. Have you the twentieth volume of Chateaubriand's works? 10. No, madam; we have the eleventh. 11. What o'clock is it, sir? 12. It is only twelve o'clock. 13. Is it no later? 14. It wants a quarter of one. 15. It is a quarter after five. 16. How many yards of this Holland (*toile d'Hollande*, f.) have you? 17. I have ten ells and a half. 18. I have six metres of it, and sixteen yards of Italian silk. 19. Is your mother-in-law younger than your father-in-law? 20. She is younger than he. 21. Are you twenty years old? 22. No, sir; I am only nineteen and a half. 23. We are sure (*sûr*) that it is ten o'clock. 24. We are sure that it is noon. 25. Is it twenty minutes of ten? 26. No, sir; it is a quarter before twelve (*midi*). 27. How many houses have you? 28. I have only one, but my sister-in-law has two. 29. Have you mine (f.) or yours? 30. I have neither yours nor mine, I have your son-in-law's. 31. Has your mother-in-law five yards of that printed calico? 32. She has only two yards of it. 33. What o'clock is it by (*à*) your watch? 34. It is half-past four, by my watch. 35. It is more than seven o'clock by mine (*à la mienne.*)

LEÇON XXI. LESSON XXI.

THE FOUR CONJUGATIONS OF VERBS.

1. The four classes or conjugations, into which the French verbs are divided are distinguished by the endings of the present of the infinitive [§ 44]. The first conjugation ends in ER; as CHANTER, *to sing;* DONNER, *to give;* PARLER, *to speak;* CHERCHER, *to seek.*

The second conjugation ends in IR; as CHÉRIR, *to cherish;* PUNIR, *to punish;* MUNIR, *to provide;* FINIR, *to finish.*

The termination of the infinitive of the regular verbs of the third conjugation, is EVOIR; as DEVOIR, *to owe;* RECEVOIR, *to receive;* that of the irregular verbs is OIR, as VALOIR, *to be worth.*

The fourth conjugation ends in RE: as, RENDRE, *to render;* FENDRE, *to split;* TENDRE, *to stretch;* VENDRE, *to sell.*

2. A verb preceded by another verb (other than the auxiliaries *avoir* and *être*), or by a preposition (other than *en*), is put in the present of the infinitive.

Il va travailler ou lire,	*He is going to work or to read.*

3. In French, verbs are often connected with others by prepositions not answering literally to those which accompany the same verbs in English. They also often come together without prepositions. The student will find in § 129, and the following sections of the Second Part, lists of verbs, with the prepositions which they require after them.

4. The following idioms are followed by the preposition *de* when they come before a verb (§ 132):

Avoir besoin, *to want;*	Avoir le temps, *to have time or leisure;*
Avoir coutume, *to be accustomed;*	Avoir peur, *to be afraid;*
Avoir dessein, *to intend, to design;*	Avoir raison, *to be right;*
Avoir envie, *to have a wish, a desire;*	Avoir regret, *to regret;*
Avoir honte, *to be ashamed;*	Avoir tort, *to be wrong;*
Avoir intention, *or* l'intention, *to intend;*	Avoir sujet, *to have reason;*
Avoir le courage, *to have courage;*	Avoir soin, *to take care.*

Cet enfant a besoin de dormir,	*That child wants to sleep.*
Vous avez honte de courir,	*You are ashamed to run.*

RÉSUMÉ OF EXAMPLES.

Avez-vous quelque chose à dire?	*Have you any thing to say?*
Je n'ai rien à dire.	*I have nothing to say.*
Votre sœur n'a-t-elle rien à écrire?	*Has your sister nothing to write?*
Elle a deux lettres à écrire.	*She has two letters to write.*

A-t-elle le temps de les écrire ?	*Has she time to write them ?*
Elle n'a pas dessein de les écrire.	*She does not design to write them.*
Elle n'a pas l'intention de les écrire.	*She does not intend to write them.*
Elle n'a pas envie de les écrire.	*She has no desire to write them.*
Avez-vous peur de danser ?	*Are you afraid to dance ?*
Je n'ai pas honte de danser.	*I am not ashamed to dance.*
Votre cousin a raison de sortir.	*Your cousin is right to go out.*
N'avez-vous pas soin d'écrire ?	*Do you not take care to write ?*
Avez-vous le courage de lui parler ?	*Have you the courage to speak to him ?*

Exercise 39.

Acheter, *to buy ;*	Faire, *to make, to do ;*	Marcher, *to walk ;*
Champ, m. *field ;*	Fatigué, e, *tired, weary ;*	Mars, m. *March ;*
Danser, *to dance ;*	Gazette, f. *newspaper ;*	Ne—rien, *nothing ;*
De bonne heure, *early ;*	Juillet, m. *July ;*	Page, f. *page ;*
Dormir, *to sleep ;*	Juin, m. *June ;*	Seize, *sixteen ;*
Écrire, *to write ;*	Lire, *to read ;*	Travailler, *to work, labor.*

1. Votre belle-mère a-t-elle quelque chose à faire ? 2. Elle n'a rien à faire. 3. A-t-elle deux pages à écrire ? 4. Non, monsieur ; elle n'en a qu'une. 5. Avez-vous l'intention de lire cette gazette ? 6. Oui, madame ; j'ai l'intention de la lire. 7. Avez-vous raison d'acheter un habit de velours ? 8. J'ai raison d'en acheter un. 9. Votre petite fille a-t-elle besoin de dormir ? 10. Oui, monsieur ; elle a besoin de dormir, elle est fatiguée. 11. Avez-vous peur de tomber ? 12. Je n'ai pas peur de tomber. 13. Le jardinier a-t-il le temps de travailler dans les champs ? 14. Il n'a pas envie de travailler dans les champs. 15. Vos champs sont-ils aussi grands que les miens ? 16. Ils sont plus grands que les vôtres. 17. Avez-vous honte de marcher ? 18. Je n'ai pas honte de marcher, mais j'ai honte de danser. 19. Quel âge votre fils a-t-il ? 20. Il a seize ans. 21. Avons-nous le deux mars ou le cinq juin ? 22. Nous avons le vingt-huit juillet. 23. Est-il midi ? 24. Non, monsieur ; il n'est pas encore midi, il n'est que onze[1] heures et demie. 25. Il est encore de bonne heure.

Exercise 40.

1. What has your brother-in-law to do ? 2. He has letters to write. 3. Does he want to work ? 4. Yes, sir ; he wants to work. 5. Does he intend to read my book ? 6. He does not intend to read your book, he has no time. 7. Is your sister ashamed to walk ? 8. My sister is not ashamed to walk, but my brother is ashamed to dance. 9. Has your cousin any thing to say ? 10. My cousin has nothing to say, she is afraid to speak (*parler*). 11. Is it late ? 12. No, madam ; it is not late, it is early. 13. Have you a wish to read my

[1] No elision takes place before *onze, onzième,* &c.

sister's letter (f.)? 14. Have you the courage to go to the war? 15. I have not the courage to go to the war. 16. Is your sister right to buy a silk dress (f.)? 17. Yes, sir; she is right to buy one. 18. Does that child want to sleep? 19. No, sir; that child does not want to sleep, he is not tired. 20. Has your brother's gardener a wish to work in my garden? 21. He has a wish to work in (*dans*) mine. 22. How old is that child? 23. That child is ten years old. 24. What is the day of the month? 25. It is the ninth of March. 26. Are you afraid to walk? 27. I am not afraid to walk, but I am tired. 28. Have you time to read my brother's book? 29. I have time to read his book. 30. Has the joiner a wish to speak? 31. He has a wish to work and to read. 32. Is your son afraid of falling? 33. He is not afraid of falling, but he is afraid of working. 34. What o'clock is it? 35. It is twelve.

LEÇON XXII. LESSON XXII.

AVOIR BESOIN, ETC.—ÊTRE FÂCHÉ, ETC.

1. The expressions, avoir besoin, *to want;* avoir soin, *to take care;* avoir honte, *to be ashamed;* avoir peur, *to be afraid,* require also the preposition *de* before a noun. Those idioms mean literally, *to have need, to have care, etc.*

Avez-vous besoin de votre frère?	*Do you want your brother?*
J'ai soin de mes effets.	*I take care of my things.*
Il a honte de sa conduite.	*He is ashamed of his conduct.*
Elle a peur du chien.	*She is afraid of the dog.*

2. As these expressions require the preposition *de* before their object, they will, of course, require the same preposition before the pronoun representing that object.

J'ai besoin de vous.	*I want you.*
J'ai soin de lui.	*I take care of him.*
De qui avez-vous besoin?	*Whom do you want?*
De quoi a-t-elle besoin?	*What does she want?*

3. When the object is not a person, and has been mentioned before, the pronoun *en* takes the place of the preposition *de*, and that of the pronoun representing the object.

Avez-vous besoin de votre cheval?	*Do you want your horse?*
J'en ai besoin.	*I want it.*

4. The expressions, être fâché, *to be sorry;* être étonné, *to be aston-*

ished; être content, *to be satisfied,* require the preposition *de* before a noun or pronoun. [§ 88.]

Je suis fâché de son malheur.	*I am sorry for his misfortune.*
Je suis étonné de sa conduite.	*I am astonished at his conduct.*
Je suis content de lui.	*I am pleased with him.*

5. Être fâché, in the sense of *to be angry,* requires the preposition *contre.*

Vous êtes fâché contre moi.	*You are angry with me.*

6. For rules on the government of adjectives, see § 87, and following Sections.

Résumé of Examples.

Avez-vous besoin d'argent?	*Do you want money?*
J'ai besoin d'argent.	*I want money.*
Je n'en ai pas besoin. [R. 3.]	*I do not want any.*
En avez-vous besoin?	*Do you want any?*
J'en ai besoin, et mon frère en a besoin aussi.	*I want some, and my brother wants some too.*
Avez-vous besoin de votre frère?	*Do you want your brother?*
J'ai besoin de lui.[1]	*I want him.*
De quoi avez-vous besoin?	*What do you want?*
J'ai besoin d'un dictionnaire.	*I want a dictionary.*
Avez-vous soin de votre livre?	*Do you take care of your book?*
J'en ai soin.	*I take care of it.*
Avez-vous soin de votre père?	*Do you take care of your father?*
J'ai soin de lui.[1]	*I take care of him.*
Votre frère est-il fâché contre moi?	*Is your brother angry with me?*
Il est fâché contre votre sœur.	*He is angry with your sister.*
Avez-vous peur de ce chien?	*Are you afraid of this dog?*
J'en ai peur.	*I am afraid of him.*
De qui avez-vous honte?	*Of whom are you ashamed?*
Je n'ai honte de personne.	*I am ashamed of nobody.*
Avez-vous besoin de quelque chose?	*Do you want any thing?*
Je n'ai besoin de rien.	*I want nothing.*

Exercise 41.

Besoin, m. *want, need;*	Étonné, e, *astonished;*	Lire, *to read;*
Car, *for;*	Fâché, e, *sorry, angry;*	Parler, *to speak;*
Conduite, f. *conduct;*	Fatigué, e, *weary, tired;*	Reposer, *to rest;*
Domestique, m. *servant;*	Garçon, m. *boy;*	Soin, m. *care;*
Effets, m. p. *things, clothes;*	Jeune homme, m. *young man;*	Travailler, *to work;*
Envie, f. *wish, desire;*		Vieux, *old.*

1. Qui a besoin de pain? 2. Personne n'en a besoin. 3. N'avez-vous pas besoin de votre domestique? 4. Oui, monsieur; j'ai besoin de lui.[1] 5. Votre jardinier a-t-il soin de votre jardin? 6. Oui,

[1] The word *en* should be avoided, *as much as possible,* in relation to persons.

madame; il en a soin. 7. A-t-il bien soin de son vieux père? 8. Oui, monsieur; il a bien soin de lui. 9. Votre garçon a-t-il honte de sa conduite? 10. Oui, monsieur; il en a honte. 11. Avez-vous peur de ce cheval-ci ou de celui-là? 12. Je n'ai peur ni de celui-ci ni de celui-là. 13. Notre domestique a-t-il soin de vos effets? 14. Il en a bien soin. 15. Avez-vous peur de parler ou de lire? 16. Je n'ai peur ni de parler ni de lire. 17. Êtes-vous étonné de cette affaire? 18. Je n'en suis pas étonné. 19. En êtes-vous fâché? 20. Oui, monsieur; j'en suis bien fâché. 21. Avez-vous besoin de ce garçon? 22. Oui, madame; j'ai besoin de lui. 23. N'avez-vous pas besoin de son livre? 24. Je n'en ai pas besoin. 25. Avez-vous envie de travailler ou de lire? 26. Je n'ai envie ni de travailler ni de lire, j'ai envie de me reposer car je suis fatigué.

Exercise 42.

1. Do you want your servant? 2. Yes, sir; I want him. 3. Does your brother-in-law want you? 4. He wants me and my brother.[1] 5. Does he not want money? 6. He does not want money, he has enough. 7. Is your brother sorry for his conduct? 8. He is very sorry for his conduct, and very angry with you. 9. Does he take good (*bien*) care of his books? 10. He takes good care of them. 11. How many volumes has he? 12. He has more than you, he has more than twenty. 13. What does the young man want? 14. He wants his clothes. 15. Do you want to rest (*vous reposer*)? 16. Is not your brother astonished at this? 17. He is astonished at it. 18. Have you a wish to read your brother's books? 19. I have a wish to read them, but I have no time. 20. Have you time to work? 21. I have time to work, but I have no time to read. 22. Does the young brother take care of his things? 23. He takes good care of them. 24. Is that little boy afraid of the dog? 25. He is not afraid of the dog, he is afraid of the horse. 26. Do you want bread? 27. I do not want any. 28. Are you pleased with your brother's conduct? 29. I am pleased with it. 30. Has your brother a wish to read my book? 31. He has no desire to read your book, he is weary. 32. Is that young man angry with you, or with his friends? 33. He is neither angry with me nor with his friends. 34. Do you want my dictionary? 35. I want your dictionary and your brother's.

[1] Repeat the preposition *de*.

LEÇON XXIII. LESSON XXIII.

THE PRESENT AND PAST PARTICIPLES.—THE PRESENT OF THE INDICATIVE.

1. If the *ending* or distinguishing characteristic of the conjugation of a verb, in the present of the infinitive, be removed, the part remaining will be the *stem* of the verb:—

1*st Conj.*	2*d Conj.*	3*d Conj.*	4*th Conj.*
Chant-er	Fin-ir	Rec-evoir	Rend-re.

2. To that *stem* are added, in the different simple tenses of a regular verb, the terminations proper to the conjugation to which it belongs. [§ 60.]

3. PARTICIPLE PRESENT.

Chant-ant	Fin-issant	Rec-evant	Rend-ant
Singing	*Finishing*	*Receiving*	*Rendering.*

4. PARTICIPLE PAST.

Chant-é	Fin-i	Reç-u[1]	Rend-u
Sung	*Finished*	*Received*	*Rendered.*

5. TERMINATIONS OF THE PRESENT OF THE INDICATIVE.

Je	chant -e	fin -is	reç -ois	rend -s
I	*sing*	*finish*	*receive*	*render*
Tu	parl -es	chér -is	aperç -ois	vend -s
Thou	*speakest*	*cherishest*	*perceivest*	*sellest*
Il	donn -e	fourn -it	perç -oit	tend
He	*gives*	*furnishes*	*gathers*	*tends*
Nous	cherch -ons	pun -issons	conc -evons	entend -ons
We	*seek*	*punish*	*conceive*	*hear*
Vous	port -ez	sais -issez	d -evez	perd -ez
You	*carry*	*seize*	*owe*	*lose*
Ils	aim -ent	un -issent	déç -oivent	mord -ent
They	*love, like*	*unite*	*deceive*	*bite*

6. The present of the indicative has but one form in French, therefore *Je chante*, may be rendered in English by, *I sing*, *I do sing*, or *I am singing.*

7. The plural of the present of the indicative may be formed from the participle present by changing *ant* into *ons, ez, ent.* Ex: Chantant, *nous chantons;* finissant, *nous finissons;* recevant, *nous recevons;* rendant, *nous rendons.*

[1] See § 52, (1).

8. This rule holds good not only in all the regular, but in almost all the irregular verbs.

9. Verbs may be conjugated interrogatively in French (except in the first person singular of the present of the indicative,) [§ 98, (4.) (5.), L. 25, R. 1.] by placing the pronoun after the verb, in all the simple tenses, and between the auxiliary and the participle, in the compound tenses.

Chantez-vous bien?	*Do you sing well?*
Avez-vous bien chanté?	*Have you sung well?*
N'avez-vous pas bien chanté? [L. 7, R. 2.]	*Have you not sung well?*
Ne chantez-vous pas bien?	*Do you not sing well?*
Votre père parle-t-il bien? [L. 4, R. 6—L. 6, R. 4.]	*Does your father speak well?*

10. The verb *porter* means *to carry*. It means also *to wear*, in speaking of garments; *apporter* means *to bring*, and *emporter*, *to carry away*. *Aimer* means *to love*, *to like*, *to be fond of*, and takes the preposition *à* before another verb.

Quel habit portez-vous?	*What coat do you wear?*
Je porte un habit de drap noir.	*I wear a coat of black cloth.*
Votre frère qu'apporte-t-il? [L. 4, R. 6.]	*What does your brother bring?*
Il apporte de l'argent à son ami.	*He brings money to his friend.*

11. A noun used in a general sense [§ 77 (1.)] takes the article *le*, *la*, *l'*, or *les*.

Aimez-vous le bœuf ou le mouton?	*Do you like beef or mutton?*
Je n'aime ni le bœuf ni le mouton.	*I like neither beef nor mutton.*

Résumé of Examples.

Chantez-vous une chanson italienne?	*Do you sing an Italian song?*
Nous chantons des chansons allemandes.	*We sing German songs.*
Portez-vous ce livre à l'homme?	*Do you carry this book to the man?*
Non, je le porte à mon frère.	*No, I carry it to my brother.*
Emportez-vous tout votre argent?	*Do you carry away all your money?*
J'en emporte seulement une partie.	*I carry away only a part of it.*
Finissez-vous votre leçon aujourd'hui?	*Do you finish your lesson to-day?*
Nous la finissons ce matin.	*We finish it this morning.*
N'aimez-vous pas les enfants?	*Do you not like children?*
Je les aime beaucoup.	*I like them much.*
Recevez-vous beaucoup de lettres?	*Do you receive many letters?*
Nous en recevons beaucoup.	*We receive many.*
Vendez-vous des marchandises?	*Do you sell goods?*
Nous en vendons beaucoup.	*We sell many.*
Votre frère aime le bœuf et le mouton.	*Your brother likes beef and mutton.*

Exercise 43.

☞ *We shall hereafter put a hyphen between the stem and the termination of the verbs placed in the vocabularies. The number indicates the conjugation.*

Aim-er, 1. *to love, to like, to be fond of;*
Autre, *other;*
Assez, *enough;*
Chapeau, m. *hat;*
Chér-ir, 2. *to cherish;*
Cherch-er, 1. *to seek, to look for;*
Compagnon, m. *companion;*
Dame, f. *lady;*
De bonne heure, *early;*
D-evoir, 3. *to owe;*
Donn-er, 1. *to give;*
Fin-ir, 2. *to finish;*
Fourn-ir, 2. *to furnish;*
Gard-er, 1. *to keep;*
Guère, *but little;*
Habits, m. p. *clothes, garments;*
Mais, *but;*
Maison, f. *house;*
Marchand, m. *merchant;*
Matin, m. *morning;*
Marchandises, f. p. *goods;*
Neveu, m. *nephew;*
Non seulement, *not only;*
Lecture, f. *reading;*
Parce que, *because;*
Paille, f. *straw;*
Perd-re, 4. *to lose;*
Port-er, 1. *to carry, to wear;*
Rec-evoir, 3. *to receive;*
Souvent, *often;*
Toujours, *always;*
Travail, m. *labor;*
Trouv-er, 1. *to find;*
Vend-re, 4. *to sell.*

1. Votre mère aime-t-elle la lecture? [R. 11.] 2. Oui, mademoiselle; elle l'aime beaucoup plus que sa sœur. 3. Quel chapeau votre neveu porte-t-il? 4. Il porte un chapeau de soie, et je porte un chapeau de paille. 5. Cette dame aime-t-elle ses enfants? 6. Oui, monsieur; elle les chérit. 7. Fournissez-vous des marchandises à ces marchands? 8. Je fournis des marchandises à ces marchands, et ils me donnent de l'argent. 9. Vos compagnons aiment-ils les beaux habits? [R. 11.] 10. Nos compagnous aiment les beaux habits et les bons livres. 11. Cherchez-vous mon frère? 12. Oui, monsieur; je le cherche, mais je ne le trouve pas. 13. Votre frère perd-il son temps. 14. Il perd son temps et son argent. 15. Perdons-nous toujours notre temps? 16. Nous le perdons très souvent. 17. Devez-vous beaucoup d'argent? 18. J'en dois assez, mais je n'en dois pas beaucoup. 19. Vendez-vous vos deux maisons à notre médecin? 20. Je n'en vends qu'une, je garde l'autre pour ma belle-sœur. 21. Recevez-vous de l'argent aujourd'hui? 22. Nous n'en recevons guère. 23. Votre menuisier finit-il son travail de bonne heure? 24. Il le finit tard. 25. A quelle heure le finit-il? 26. Il le finit à midi et demi. 27. Nous finissons le nôtre à dix heures moins vingt minutes.

Exercise 44.

1. Does your companion like reading? 2. My companion does not like reading. 3. Does your father like good books? [R. 11.] 4. He likes good books and good clothes.[1] 5. Do you owe more than twenty dollars? 6. I only owe ten, but my brother owes more than fifteen. 7. Are you wrong to finish your work early? 8. I am

[1] Repeat the article.

right to finish mine early, and you are wrong not to (*le ne pas*) finish yours. 9. Do you receive much money to-day? 10. I receive but little. 11. Do we give our best books to that little child? 12. We do not give them, we keep them because we want them. 13. Do you sell your two horses? 14. We do not sell our two horses, we keep one of them. 15. Do you finish your work this morning? 16. Yes, sir; I finish it this morning early. 17. Does your brother-in-law like fine clothes? 18. Yes, madam; he likes fine clothes. 19. Do you seek my nephew? 20. Yes, sir; we seek him. 21. Does he lose his time? 22. He loses not only his time, but he loses money. 23. How much money has he lost to-day? 24. He has lost more than ten dollars. 25. Does your joiner finish your house? 26. He finishes my house and my brother's. 27. Do you sell good hats? 28. We sell silk hats, and silk hats are good. [R. 11.] 29. How old is your companion? 30. He is twelve years old, and his sister is fifteen. 31. Does your brother like meat? 32. He likes meat and bread. 33. Do you receive your goods at two o'clock? 34. We receive them at half after twelve. 35. We receive them ten minutes before one.

LEÇON XXIV. LESSON XXIV.

IRREGULAR VERBS.—CHEZ, ETC.

1. There are in French, as in other languages, verbs which are called *irregular*, because they are not conjugated according to the rule, or *model verb* of the conjugation to which they belong. [§ 62.]

2. Many *irregular* verbs have tenses which are conjugated *regularly*.

3. The singular of the present of the indicative of the irregular verbs, is almost always irregular.

4. In verbs ending in *yer*, the *y* is changed into *i* before an *e* mute.[1] [§ 49.]

5. PRESENT OF THE INDICATIVE OF THE IRREGULAR VERBS,

ALLER, 1. *to go;* Je vais, *I go, do go,* or *am going;*	ENVOYER, 1. *to send;* J'envoie[R. 4.] *I send, do send,* or *am sending;*	VENIR, 2. *to come;* Je viens, *I come, do come,* or *am coming;*
Tu vas,	Tu envoies,	Tu viens,
Il va,	Il envoie,	Il vient,
Nous allons,	Nous envoyons,	Nous venons,
Vous allez,	Vous envoyez,	Vous venez,
Ils vont,	Ils envoient [R. 4.]	Ils viennent.

[1] Many French authors do not make that change, but write *j'envoye, etc.*

6. All verbs ending in *enir* are conjugated like *venir*.

7. The student will find, in § 62, the irregular verbs alphabetically arranged. He should *always* consult that table, when meeting with an irregular verb.

8. The expression *à la maison*, is used for the English *at home, at his* or *her house, etc.*

Le chirurgien est-il à la maison?	*Is the surgeon at home?*
Mon frère est à la maison.	*My brother is at home.*

9. The preposition *chez*, placed before a noun or pronoun, answers to the English, *at the house of, with* (meaning *at the residence of*), *among, etc.* [§ 142, (3.)]

Chez moi, chez lui, chez elle,	*At my house, at his house, at her house.*
Chez nous, chez vous, chez eux, *m.* chez elles, *f.*	*At our house, at your house, at their house.*

That is literally, *at the house of me, at the house of him, etc.*

Chez mon père, chez ma sœur,	*At my father's, at my sister's.*

10. The word *avec* answers to the English *with*, meaning merely *in the company of.*

Venez avec nous, ou avec lui.	*Come with us, or with him.*

11. The word *y* means *to it, at it, at that place, there.* It is generally placed before the verb, and refers always to something mentioned. [§ 39, (18.) § 103, (2), § 104.]

Votre sœur est-elle chez vous?	*Is your sister at your house?*
Oui, monsieur; elle y est.	*Yes, sir; she is there.*

12. In French, an answer cannot, as in English, consist merely of an auxiliary or a verb preceded by a nominative pronoun; as, Do you come to my house to-day? *I do.* Have you books? *I have.* The sentence, in French, must be complete; as, *I go there; I have some.* The words *oui* or *non*, without a verb, would however suffice.

Allez-vous chez lui aujourd'hui?	*Do you go to his house to-day?*
Oui, monsieur; j'y vais.	*Yes, sir; I do.*
Avez-vous des livres chez vous?	*Have you books at home?*
Oui, monsieur; nous en avons.	*Yes, sir; we have.*

Résumé of Examples.

Où le colonel est-il?	*Where is the colonel?*
Il est chez son frère ainé.	*He is at his eldest brother's.*
N'est-il pas chez nous?	*Is he not our house?*
Non, monsieur; il n'y est pas.	*No, sir; he is not.*

Madame votre mère est-elle à la maison?[1]	*Is your mother at home?*
Non, madame; elle n'y est pas.	*No, madam; she is not.*
Allez-vous chez nous, ou chez lui?	*Do you go to our house, or to his house?*
Nous allons chez le capitaine.	*We go to the captain's.*
N'est-il pas chez votre frère?	*Is he not at your brother's?*
Non, monsieur; il est chez nous.	*No, sir; he is at our house.*
N'envoyez-vous pas vos habits chez vos sœurs?	*Do you not send your clothes to your sisters'?*
Je les envoie chez elles.	*I send them to their house.*
N'allez-vous pas chez ce monsieur?	*Do you not go to that gentleman's?*
Je n'y vais pas,[2] je n'ai pas le temps d'y aller aujourd'hui.	*I do not,* [R. 12.] *I have not time to go there to-day.*

Exercise 45.

All-er, 1. ir. *to go;*	Horloger, m. *watch-maker;*	Peintre, m. *painter;*
Ami, m. *friend;*	Hollandais, e, *Dutch;*	Relieur, m. *book-binder;*
Associé, m. *partner;*	Magasin, m. *warehouse, store, shop;*	Rest-er, 1. *to remain, live;*
Capitaine, m. *captain;*	Maison, f. *house;*	Russe, *Russian;*
Demeur-er, 1. *to live, dwell;*	Matin, m. *morning;*	Ven-ir, 2. ir, *to come;*
Gilet, m. *waistcoat;*		Voisin, e, *neighbor.*

1. Où allez-vous mon ami? 2. Je vais chez monsieur votre père, est-il à la maison? 3. Il y est ce matin. 4. D'où venez-vous? 5. Nous venons de chez vous et de chez votre sœur. 6. Qui est chez nous? 7. Mon voisin y est aujourd'hui. 8. Où avez-vous l'intention de porter ces livres? 9. J'ai l'intention de les porter chez le fils du médecin. 10. Avez-vous tort de rester chez vous? 11. Je n'ai pas tort de rester à la maison. 12. L'horloger a-t-il de bonnes montres chez lui? 13. Il n'a pas de montres chez lui, il en a dans son magasin. 14. Chez qui portez-vous vos livres? 15. Je les porte chez le relieur. 16. Allez-vous chez le capitaine hollandais? 17. Nous n'allons pas chez le capitaine hollandais, nous allons chez le major russe. 18. Est-il chez vous ou chez votre frère? 19. Il demeure chez nous. 20. Ne demeurons-nous pas chez votre tailleur? 21. Vous y demeurez. 22. Votre peintre d'où vient-il? 23. Il vient de chez son associé. 24. Où portez-vous mes souliers et mon gilet? 25. Je porte vos souliers chez le cordonnier, et votre gilet chez le tailleur.

Exercise 46.

1. Where does your friend go? 2. He is going [L. 23, R. 6], to your house or to your brother's. 3. Does he not intend to go to

[1] The French, in speaking to a person whom they respect, prefix the word *Monsieur*, *Madame*, or *Mademoiselle* to the word representing their interlocutor's relations, or friends.

[2] See § 103, (2.)

your partner's? 4. He intends to go there, but he has no time to-day. 5. What do you want to-day? 6. I want my waistcoat, which (*qui*) is at the tailor's. 7. Are your clothes at the painter's? 8. They are not there, they are at the tailor's. 9. Where do you live, my friend? 10. I live at your sister-in-law's. 11. Is your father at home? 12. No, sir; he is not. 13. Where does your servant carry the wood? 14. He carries it to the Russian captain's. 15. Does the gentleman who (*qui*) is with your father, live at his house? 16. No, sir; he lives with me. 17. Is he wrong to live with you? 18. No, sir; he is right to live with me. 19. Whence (*d'où*) comes the carpenter? 20. He comes from his partner's house. 21. Has he two partners? 22. No, sir; he has only one, who lives here (*ici*). 23. Have you time to go to our house, this morning? 24. We have time to go there. 25. We intend to go there, and to speak to your sister. 26. Is she at your house? 27. She is at her (own) house. 28. Have you bread, butter, and cheese at home? 29. We have bread and butter there. 30. We have no cheese there, we do not like cheese. 31. Is your watch at the watchmaker's? 32. It (*elle*) is there. 33. Have you two gold watches? 34. I have only one gold watch. 35. Who intends to go to my father's, this morning? 36. Nobody intends to go there.

LEÇON XXV. LESSON XXV.

INTERROGATIVE FORM OF THE PRESENT OF THE INDICATIVE.

1. In the first person singular of the present of the indicative of almost all those French verbs, which in that person have only one syllable, and in those which end in *ger* or *gir*, the common interrogative form [L. 23, 9.] is not used. To render the verb interrogative, the expression *est-ce que* is prefixed to the affirmative form. [§ 98, (5.) (6.)]

Est-ce que je vends du drap?	*Do I sell cloth?*
Est-ce que je mange trop?	*Do I eat too much?*
Est-ce que j'agis bien?	*Do I act well?*

2. The first person singular of the indicative of avoir, *to have;* être, *to be;* aller, *to go;* pouvoir, *to be able;* devoir, *to owe;* savoir, *to know*, etc., *may* however, be conjugated interrogatively according to the general rules.

Ai-je vos mouchoirs?	*Have I your handkerchiefs?*
Combien vous dois-je?	*How much do I owe you?*

3. The form *est-ce que* is always allowable, and in conversation and familiar writing generally preferable,[1] even when the first person singular of the present of the indicative of a verb has several syllables, [§ 98, (6.)]

Est-ce que je vous envoie des livres?	*Do I send you books?*
Est-ce que je commence à parler?	*Do I begin to speak?*

4. *Est-ce que* may in conversation, be used with all the persons of those tenses susceptible of being conjugated interrogatively:—Qu'est-ce que vous lisez? may be said, instead of, Que lisez-vous? *What do you read?*

5. INTERROGATIVE FORM OF THE INDICATIVE PRESENT OF

ALLER, *to go.*	ENVOYER, *to send.*	VENIR, *to come.*
Est-ce que je vais? *do I go*, or *am I going?*	Est-ce que j'envoie? *do I send*, or *am I sending?*	Est-ce que je viens? *do I come*, or *am I coming?*
Vas-tu?	Envoies-tu?	Viens-tu?
Va-t-il?	Envoie-t-il?	Vient-il?
Allons-nous?	Envoyons-nous?	Venons-nous?
Allez-vous?	Envoyez-vous?	Venez-vous?
Vont-ils?	Envoient-ils?	Viennent-ils?

6. The article *le*, preceded by the preposition *à* is contracted into *au* before a noun masculine commencing, with a consonant, or an *h* aspirate; and into *aux* before a plural noun. [§ 13, (8.)]

Allez-vous au bal ou au marché?	*Do you go to the ball or to market?*

7. À l'église means *at* or *to church*; à l'école, *at* or *to school*:—

Nous allons à l'église et à l'école.	*We go to church and to school.*

8. Quelque part, means *somewhere, anywhere*; nulle part, *nowhere.*

Votre neveu où est-il?	*Where is your nephew?*
Il est quelque part.	*He is somewhere.*
Il n'est nulle part.	*He is nowhere.*

RÉSUMÉ OF EXAMPLES.

Est-ce que je vais à l'école?	*Do I go to school?*
Vous allez à l'église aujourd'hui.	*You go to church to-day.*
Est-ce que je commence mon travail?	*Do I begin my work?*
Est-ce que je parle anglais?	*Do I speak English?*
Est-ce que j'envoie ce livre à mon frère?	*Do I send this book to my brother?*
Allez-vous au marché demain?	*Do you go to market to-morrow?*
J'y vais après-demain.	*I go there the day after to-morrow.*

[1] No Frenchman, for example, would ever say *demandé-je?* do I ask? *apporté-je?* do I bring? etc., except *perhaps* in oratorical style or in poetry. This rule will apply also to the imperfect and past definite.

Envoyez-vous vos enfants à l'école?	*Do you send your children to school?*
Je les envoie chez le professeur.	*I send them to the professor's.*
Je les y envoie cette après-midi.	*I send them there this afternoon.*
Vos habits où sont-ils?	*Where are your clothes?*
Ils sont quelque part.	*They are somewhere.*
Ils ne sont nulle part.	*They are nowhere.*
Est-ce que je demeure chez vous?	*Do I live at your house?*

Exercise 47.

Absent, e, *absent;*	Cuir, m. *leather;*	Noir, e, *black;*
Adresse, f. *address;*	Depuis, *since;*	Perruquier, m. *hair-dresser;*
Banque, f. *bank;*	École, f. *school;*	Poste, f. *post-office;*
Banquier, m. *banker;*	Écolier, m. *scholar;*	Rouge, *red;*
Billet, m. *note, ticket;*	Église, f. *church;*	Village, m. *village;*
Chapelier, m. *hatter;*	Marché, m. *market;*	Vert, e, *green.*
Concert, m. *concert;*	Ne–point, *not,* (*a stronger negative than pas;*)	
Coup-er, 1. *to cut;*		

1. Où est-ce que je vais? 2. Vous allez chez le chapelier. 3. Est-ce que je vais à la banque? 4. Vous allez à la banque et au concert. 5. Est-ce que je coupe votre bois? 6. Vous ne coupez ni mon bois ni mon habit. 7. Est-ce que je porte un chapeau vert? 8. Vous ne portez pas un chapeau vert, vous en portez un noir. 9. Votre écolier va-t-il quelque part? 10. Il va à l'église, à l'école, et au marché. 11. Ne va-t-il pas chez le perruquier? 12. Il ne va nulle part. 13. Ne portez-vous point des bottes de cuir rouge? 14. J'en porte de cuir noir. 15. N'allez-vous pas chez le banquier? 16. Je ne vais pas chez lui, il est absent depuis hier. 17. Vient-il à la banque ce matin? 18. Il a l'intention d'y venir, s'il a le temps.[1] 19. A-t-il envie d'aller au concert? 20. Il a grande envie d'y aller, mais il n'a pas de billet. 21. Demeurez-vous dans ce village? 22. Oui, monsieur, j'y demeure. 23. Envoyez-vous ce billet à la poste? 24. Je l'envoie à son adresse.

Exercise 48.

1. Do I wear my large black hat? 2. You wear a handsome green hat. 3. Does the banker go to the hair-dresser's this morning? 4. He goes there this morning. 5. Does he intend to go to the bank this morning? 6. He does not intend to go there, he has no time. 7. Do you send your letters to the post-office? 8. I do not send them, they are not yet written (*écrites*). 9. Do I send you a note? 10. You send me a ticket, but I have no wish to go to the concert. 11. Does your brother go to school to-morrow. 12. He goes (there) to-day, and remains at home to-morrow. 13. Do I go there? 14. You

[1] The *i* of *si* is elided before *il, ils,* but in no other case. This is the only instance of the elision of *i*.

do not go anywhere. 15. Where do you go? 16. I am going to your brother's, is he at home? 17. He is not at home, he is absent. 18. Does your brother live in this village? 19. He does not; [L. 24. 12] he lives at my nephew's. 20. Are you wrong to go to school? 21. No, sir; I am right to go to church and to school. 22. Do you wish to come to my house? 23. I like to go to your house, and to your brother's. 24. When are you coming to our house? 25. To-morrow, if I have time. 26. Does the banker like to come here? 27. He likes to come to your house. 28. Is the hair-dresser coming? 29. He is not yet coming. 30. What are you sending to the scholar? 31. I am sending books, paper, and clothes. 32. Where is he? 33. He is at school. 34. Is the school in the village? 35. It is there.

LEÇON XXVI. LESSON XXVI.

IDIOMATIC USE OF ALLER, VENIR, ETC.

1. The verb *aller*, is used, in French, in the same manner as the verb *to go*, in English, to indicate a proximate future.

Allez-vous écrire ce matin?	*Are you going to write this morning?*
Je vais écrire mes lettres.	*I am going to write my letters.*

2. The verb *venir* is used idiomatically, in French, to indicate a *past just elapsed.* It requires, in this signification, the preposition *de* before another verb.

Je viens d'écrire mes lettres.	*I have just written my letters.*
Nous venons de recevoir des lettres.	*We have just received letters.*

3. *Aller trouver*, *venir trouver*, are used in the sense of *to go to*, *to come to*, in connection with nouns or pronouns representing persons.

Allez trouver le ferblantier.	*Go to the tinman.*
J'ai envie d'aller le trouver.	*I have a desire to go to him.*
Venez me trouver à dix heures.	*Come to me at ten o'clock.*

4. *Aller chercher*, means *to go for*, *to go and fetch.*

Allez chercher le médecin.	*Go and fetch the physician.*
Je vais chercher du sucre et du café.	*I am going for coffee and sugar.*

5. *Envoyer chercher*, means *to send for*, *to send and fetch.*

Envoyez chercher le marchand.	*Send for the merchant.*
J'envoie chercher des légumes.	*I send for vegetables.*

6. The *first* and *second* persons of the *plural* of the imperative are, with few exceptions, the same as the corresponding persons of the present of the indicative. The pronouns *nous*, *vous*, are not used with the imperative.

7. PLURAL OF THE IMPERATIVE OF ALLER, ENVOYER, AND VENIR.

Allons, *let us go*;	Envoyons, *let us send*;	Venons, *let us come*;
Allez, *go*;	Envoyez, *send*;	Venez, *come*.

8. *Tous*, m. *toutes*, f. followed by the article *les* and a plural noun, are used, in French, in the same sense as the word *every* in English.

Votre frère vient tous les jours.	*Your brother comes every day.*
Vous allez à l'école tous les matins.	*You go to school every morning.*

9. *Tout*, m. *toute*, f. followed by *le* or *la* and the noun in the singular, are used for the English expression *the whole*, coming before a noun.

Il reste ici toute la journée.	*He remains here the whole day.*

10. A day of the week or of the month, pointed out as the time of an appointment or of an occurrence, is not preceded by a preposition in French.

Venez lundi ou mardi.	*Come on Monday or Tuesday.*
Venez le quinze ou le seize avril.	*Come on the fifteenth or sixteenth of April.*

11. When the occurrence is a periodical or customary one, the article *le* is prefixed to the day of the week or the time of the day.

Il vient nous trouver le lundi.	*He comes to us Mondays.*
Il va trouver votre père l'après-midi.	*He goes to your father in the afternoon.*

RÉSUMÉ OF EXAMPLES.

Je vais parler à votre père.	*I am going to speak to your father.*
Nous venons de recevoir de l'argent.	*We have just received money.*
Que venez-vous de faire?	*What have you just done?*
Je viens de déchirer mon habit.	*I have just torn my coat.*
Votre frère va-t-il trouver son ami?	*Does your brother go to his friend?*
Il va le trouver tous les jours.	*He goes to him every day.*
Il vient me trouver tous les lundis.	*He comes to me every Monday.*
Allez-vous chercher de l'argent?	*Do you go and fetch money?*
Je n'en vais pas chercher.	*I do not.* [L. 24. 12.]
Envoyez-vous chercher des livres arabes?	*Do you send for Arabic books?*
Allez-vous chez cette dame lundi?	*Do you go to that lady's on Monday?*
J'ai l'intention d'y aller mardi.	*I intend to go there on Tuesday.*
J'y vais ordinairement le mercredi.	*I generally go there Wednesdays.*
Il va à l'église le dimanche.	*He goes to church Sundays.*

Exercise 49.

Année, f. *year;*
Apprend-re, 4. ir. *to learn;*
Après-midi, f. *afternoon;*
Commenc-er, 1. *to commence;*
Compagne, f. *companion;*
Connaissances, f. *acquaintances;*
Demain, *to-morrow;*
Dimanche, m. *Sunday;*
Écossais, e, *Scotch;*
Écri-re, 4. ir. *to write;*
Enseign-er, 1. *to teach;*
Excepté, *except;*
Jeudi, m. *Thursday;*
Journée, f. *day;*
Irlandais, e, *Irish;*
Lundi, m. *Monday;*
Malade, *sick;*
Mardi, m. *Tuesday;*
Mercredi, m. *Wednesday;*
Musique, f. *music;*
Prochain, e, *next;*
Vendredi, m. *Friday;*
Rest-er, 1. *to remain, live;*
Samedi, *Saturday;*
Teinturier, m. *dyer.*

1. Qu'allez-vous faire? 2. Je vais apprendre mes leçons. 3. N'allez-vous pas écrire à vos connaissances? 4. Je ne vais écrire à personne. 5. Qui vient de vous parler? 6. L'Irlandais vient de nous parler. 7. Quand l'Écossaise va-t-elle vous enseigner la musique? 8. Elle va me l'enseigner l'année prochaine. 9. Va-t-elle commencer mardi ou mercredi? 10. Elle ne va commencer ni mardi ni mercredi, elle a l'intention de commencer jeudi, si elle a le temps. 11. Votre compagne va-t-elle à l'église tous les dimanches? 12. Elle y va tous les dimanches et tous les mercredis. 13. Qui allez-vous trouver? 14. Je ne vais trouver personne. 15. N'avez-vous pas l'intention de venir me trouver demain? 16. J'ai l'intention d'aller trouver votre teinturier. 17. Envoyez-vous chercher le médecin? 18. Quand je suis malade, je l'envoie chercher. 19. Reste-t-il avec vous toute la journée? 20. Il ne reste chez moi que quelques minutes. 21. Allez-vous à l'école le matin? 22. J'y vais le matin et l'après-midi. 23. Y allez-vous tous les jours? 24. J'y vais tous les jours, excepté le lundi et le dimanche. 25. Le samedi, je reste chez nous, et le dimanche, je vais à l'église.

Exercise 50.

1. What is the Irishman going to do? 2. He is going to teach music. 3. Has he just commenced his work? 4. He has just commenced it. 5. Who has just written to you? 6. The dyer has just written to me. 7. Does your little boy go to church every day? 8. No, sir; he goes to church Sundays, and he goes to school every day. 9. Do you go for the physician? 10. I send for him because my sister is sick. 11. Do you go to my physician, or to yours? 12. I go to mine, yours is not at home. 13. Where is he. 14. He is at your father's, or at your bróther's. 15. Do you intend to send for the physician? 16. I intend to send for him. 17. Am I right to send for the Scotchman? 18. You are right to send for him. 19. Do you go to your father in the afternoon? 20. I go to

him in the morning. 21. Does your brother go to your uncle's every Monday? 22. He goes there every Sunday. 23. Are you going to learn music? 24. My niece is going to learn it, if she has time. 25. Am I going to read or to write? 26. You are going to read to-morrow. 27. Does he go to your house every day? 28. He comes to us every Wednesday. 29. At what hour? 30. At a quarter before nine. 31. Does he come early or late? 32. He comes at a quarter after nine. 33. What do you send for? 34. We send for wine, bread, butter, and cheese. 35. What do you go for? 36. We go for vegetables, meat and sugar. 37. We want sugar every morning.

LEÇON XXVII. LESSON XXVII.

PLACE OF THE PRONOUNS.

1. The personal pronoun used as the direct regimen [§ 2, (2.) § 42, (4.)] or object of a verb,[1] is, in French, placed before the verb, except in the second person singular, or in the first and second persons plural of the imperative used affirmatively.

Il me voit, il l'aime.	*He sees me, he loves him.*
Il nous aime, il vous aime.	*He loves us, he loves you.*

2. The personal pronoun representing the indirect regimen of the verb, [§ 2, (3.) § 42, (5.)] answering to the dative of the Latin, and to the indirect object of the English with the preposition *to* expressed or understood, is also in French placed before the verb.

Il me parle, il lui parle.	*He speaks to me, he speaks to him.*
Il nous donne une fleur.	*He gives us a flower.*[2]
Il vous parle, il leur parle.	*He speaks to you, he speaks to them.*

3. The personal pronoun is generally placed *after* the following verbs: aller, *to go;* accourir, *to run to;* courir, *to run;* venir, *to come;* penser à, songer à, *to think of.*

Il vient à moi.	*He comes to me.*
Il pense à vous, à eux.	*He thinks of you, of them.*

4. In the imperative used affirmatively, the pronouns follow the verb, and are joined to it by a hyphen.

Aimez-les, parlez-leur.	*Love them, speak to them.*

[1] The young student will easily distinguish the personal pronoun used as the direct regimen of a verb, by the fact that there is in English no preposition between the verb and this pronoun.

[2] The preposition *to* is understood. *He gives a flower to us.*

5. The words *en* and *y* follow the above rules, except the 3d.

J'en parle, j'y pense. *I speak of it, I think of it.*

6. The pronoun used as indirect regimen, answering to the genitive or ablative of the Latin, and to the indirect object which, in English, is separated from the verb by a preposition other than *to*, is in French, always placed *after* the verb.

Je parle de lui, d'elle, d'eux. *I speak of him, of her, of them.*
Je reste avec vous et avec eux. *I remain with you and with them.*

7. All pronouns used as objects of verbs, must be repeated.

Je les aime, je les respecte, je les honore. *I love, respect and honor them.*

RÉSUMÉ OF EXAMPLES. *See* § 32.

M'entendez-vous ?	*Do you hear* or *understand me?*
Je ne vous entends pas.	*I do not understand* or *hear you.*
Les entendez-vous?	*Do you hear them?*
Je les vois et je les entends.	*I see them and understand them.*
Il nous aime et il nous honore.	*He loves and honors us.*
Me parlez-vous de votre ami?	*Do you speak to me of your friend?*
Je vous parle de lui. [R. 6.]	*I speak to you of him.*
Nous parlez-vous de ces dames?	*Do you speak to us about those ladies?*
Je vous parle d'elles.	*I speak to you of them.*
Ne leur parlez-vous pas?	*Do you not speak to them?*
Je n'ai pas envie de leur parler.	*I have no wish to speak to them.*
Parlez-lui.	*Speak to him* or *her.*
Ne lui parlez pas.	*Do not speak to him.*
Allez à lui, courez à lui.	*Go to him, run to him.*
Parlez-leur. Ne leur parlez pas.	*Speak to them. Do not speak to them.*

EXERCISE 51.

Affaire, f. *affair;*	Compagnon, m. *companion;*	Matin, m. *morning;*
Arbre, m. *tree;*		Nouvelle, f. *news;*
Avis, m. *advice;*	Déjà, *already;*	Pens-er, 1, *to think;*
Cerisier, m. *cherry-tree;*	Écri-re, 4. ir. *to write;*	Poirier, m. *pear-tree;*
Communiqu-er, 1. *to communicate;*	Exemple, m. *example;*	Pommier, m. *apple-tree;*
	Envoy-er, 1. ir. *to send;*	Respect-er, 1. *to respect.*

1. Allez-vous lui écrire? 2. Je vais lui écrire et lui communiquer cette nouvelle. 3. Allez-vous lui parler de moi? 4. Je vais lui parler de vous et de votre compagnon. 5. Leur envoyez-vous de beaux arbres? 6. Je leur envoie des pommiers, des poiriers, et des cerisiers. 7. Ne m'envoyez-vous pas des cerisiers? (See note, page 38.) 8. Je ne vous en envoie pas, vous en avez déjà. 9. Avez-vous raison de leur parler de cette affaire? 10. Je n'ai pas tort de leur parler de cette affaire? 11. Venez à nous demain matin. 12. Venez nous

trouver cette après-midi. 13. Allez-vous les trouver tous les jours? 14. Je vais les trouver tous les soirs. 15. Leur donnez-vous de bons avis? 16. Je leur donne de bons avis et de bons exemples. 17. Nous parlez-vous de vos sœurs? 18. Je vous parle d'elles. 19. Ne nous parlez-vous pas de nos frères? 20. Je vous parle d'eux. 21. Ne les aimez-vous pas? 22. Nous les aimons et nous les respectons. 23. Pensez-vous à ce livre, ou n'y pensez-vous pas? 24. Nous y pensons et nous en parlons. 25. Nous n'y pensons pas.

Exercise 52.

1. When are you going to write to your brother? 2. I am going to write to him to-morrow morning. 3. Do you intend to write to him every Monday? 4. I intend to write to him every Sunday. 5. Have you a wish to speak to him to-day? 6. I have a wish to speak to him, but he is not here. 7. Where is he? 8. He is at his house. 9. Do you speak to them? 10. Yes, sir; I speak to them about (*de*) this affair. 11. Do they give you good advice? 12. They give me good advice, and good examples. 13. Do you go to your sister every day? 14. I go to her every morning, at a quarter before nine. 15. Does she like to see (*voir*) you? 16. She likes to see me and she receives me well. 17. Do you think of this affair? 18. I think of it the whole day. 19. Do you speak of it with (*avec*) your brother? 20. We speak of it often. 21. Do you send your companion to my house? 22. I send him every day. 23. Are you at home every day? 24. I am there every morning at ten o'clock. 25. Do you like to go to church? 26. I like to go there every Sunday and every Wednesday. 27. Do you speak of your houses? 28. I speak of them (*en*). 29. Does your brother speak of his friends? 30. Yes, sir; he speaks of them (*d'eux*). 31. Does he think of them? 32. Yes, sir; he thinks of them (*à eux*). 33. Does he think of this news? 34. Yes, sir; he thinks of it (*y*). 35. I love and honor them.

LEÇON XXVIII. LESSON XXVIII.

Respective place of the pronouns. *See* § 101.

1. When two pronouns occur, one used as a direct regimen or object (accusative), the other used as the indirect regimen or object (dative), the indirect object, if not in the third person singular or plural, must precede the direct object. [§ 101, (1.)]

Je vous le donne.	*I give it to you.*
Il me le donne.	*He gives it to me.*
Il nous le donne.	*He gives it to us.*

2. When the pronoun used as an indirect object (dative), is in the third person singular or plural, it must be placed after the direct object. [§ 101, (2.)]

Nous le lui donnons.	*We give it to him.*
Nous le leur donnons.	*We give it to them.*

3. The above rules of precedence apply also to the imperative used negatively.

Ne nous le donnez pas. [R. 1.]	*Do not give it to us.*
Ne le lui donnez pas. [R. 2.]	*Do not give it him.*

4. With the imperative used affirmatively, the direct object precedes in all cases the indirect object. [§ 101, (5.)]

Donnez-le-nous.	*Give it to us.*
Montrez-le-leur.	*Show it to them.*

5. *En* and *y* always follow the other pronouns.

Je lui en donne.	*I give him some.*
Il nous y envoie.	*He sends us thither.*

6. PRESENT OF THE INDICATIVE OF THE IRREGULAR VERBS.

VOIR, *to see;*	VOULOIR, *to will, be willing;*	POUVOIR, *to be able;*
Je vois, *I see, do see,* or *am seeing;*	Je veux, *I will* or *am willing;*	Je puis, *I can, I may, I am able;*
Tu vois,	Te veux,	Tu peux,[1]
Il voit,	Il veut,	Il peut,
Nous voyons,	Nous voulons,	Nous pouvons,
Vous voyez,	Vous voulez,	Vous pouvez,
Ils voient,	Ils veulent,	Ils peuvent.

7. The above verbs take no preposition before another verb.

8. The preposition *pour* is used to render the preposition *to*, when the latter means *in order to.*

Je vais chez vous, pour parler à votre frère, et pour vous voir.	*I go to your house, to speak to your brother, and to see you.*
J'ai besoin d'argent pour acheter des marchandises.	*I want money to (in order to) buy goods.*

RÉSUMÉ OF EXAMPLES.

Voulez-vous nous le donner?	*Will you give it to us?*
Je veux vous le prêter.	*I will lend it to you.*
Pouvez-vous me les donner?	*Can you give them to me?*

[1] After the verbs, pouvoir, *to be able;* oser, *to dare;* savoir, *to know;* the negative *pas* may be omitted.

Je ne puis vous les donner.	*I cannot give them to you.*
Votre frère peut-il le lui envoyer?	*Can your brother send it to him?*
Il ne veut pas le lui envoyer.	*He will not send it to him.*
Qui veut le leur prêter?	*Who will lend it to them?*
Personne ne veut le leur prêter.	*No one will lend it to them.*
Envoyez-les-nous.	*Send them to us.*
Ne nous les envoyez pas.	*Do not send them to us.*
Donnez-nous-en.	*Give us some (of it).*
Ne leur en envoyez pas.	*Do not send them any.*
Envoyez-le-leur, pour les contenter.	*Send it to them (in order) to satisfy them.*
Je puis vous l'y envoyer.	*I can send it to you there.*

EXERCISE 53.

Commis, m. *clerk;*	Guère, *but little;*	Poisson, m. *fish;*
Connaissance, f. *acquaintance;*	Marchande de modes, f *milliner;*	Pologne, f. *Poland;*
Croi-re, 4. ir. *to believe;*	Montr-er, 1. *to show;*	Prêter, 1. *to lend;*
Dette, f. *debt;*	Oubli-er, 1. *to forget;*	Semaine, f. *week;*
D-evoir, 3. *to owe;*	Pay-er, 1. *to pay;*	Souvent, *often;*
		Voyage, m. *journey.*

1. Voulez-vous donner ce livre à mon frère? 2. Je puis le lui prêter, mais je ne puis le lui donner. 3. Voulez-vous nous les envoyer? 4. La marchande de modes peut vous les envoyer. 5. Les lui montrez-vous? 6. Je les vois, et je les lui montre. 7. Avez-vous peur de nous les prêter? 8. Je n'ai pas peur de vous les prêter. 9. Ne pouvez-vous nous envoyer du poisson? 10. Je ne puis vous en envoyer, je n'en ai guère. 11. Voulez-vous leur en parler? 12. Je veux leur en parler, si je ne l'oublie pas. 13. Venez-vous souvent les voir? 14. Je viens les voir tous les matins, et tous les soirs. 15. Ne leur parlez-vous point de votre voyage en Pologne? 16. Je leur en parle, mais ils ne veulent pas me croire. 17. Est-ce que je vois mes connaissances, le lundi? 18. Vous les voyez tous les jours de la semaine. 19. Vous envoient-elles plus d'argent que le commis de notre marchand? 20. Elles m'en envoient plus que lui. 21. En envoyez-vous au libraire? 22. Je lui en envoie quand je lui en dois. 23. N'avez-vous pas tort de lui en envoyer? 24. Je ne puis avoir tort de payer mes dettes. 25. Ils vous en donnent, et ils vous en prêtent quand vous en avez besoin.

EXERCISE 54.

1. Will you send us that letter? 2. I will send it to you, if you will read it. 3. I will read it if (*si*) I can. 4. Can you lend me your pen? 5. I can lend it to you, if you will take care of it. [L. 22, (3.)] 6. May I speak to your father? 7. You may speak to him. he is here. 8. Are you afraid of forgetting it? [L. 21, (4.)] 9. I am

not afraid of forgetting it. 10. Will you send them to him? 11. I intend to send them to him, if I have time. 12. Do you speak to him of your journey? 13. I speak to him of my journey. 14. I speak to them of it. 15. Can you communicate it to him? 16. I have a wish to communicate it to him. 17. Do you see your acquaintances every Monday? 18. I see them every Monday, and every Thursday. 19. Where do you intend to see them? 20. I intend to see them at your brother's, and at your sister's. 21. Can you send him there every day? 22. I can send him there every Sunday, if he wishes (*s'il le veut*). 23. Can you give them to me? 24. I can give them to you. 25. Who will lend them books? 26. No one will lend them any. 27. Your bookseller is willing to sell them good books and good paper. 28. Is he at home? 29. He is at his brother's. 30. Are you wrong to pay your debts? 31. I am right to pay them. 32. Will you send it to us? 33. I am willing to send it to you, if you want it. 34. Are you willing to give them to us? 35. We are willing to give them to your acquaintances.

LEÇON XXIX. LESSON XXIX.

USE OF THE ARTICLE. (§ 77.)

1. The article *le, la, les,* as already stated, is used in French before nouns taken in a general sense.

Les jardins sont les ornements des villages et des campagnes.	*Gardens are the ornaments of villages and of rural districts.*

2. The article is also used in French, as in English, before nouns taken in a particular sense.

Les jardins de ce village sont superbes.	*The gardens of this village are superb.*

3. It is also used before abstract nouns, before verbs, and adjectives used substantively.

La paresse est odieuse.	*Idleness is odious.*
La jeunesse n'est pas toujours docile.	*Youth is not always tractable.*
Le boire et le manger sont nécessaires à la vie.	*Eating and drinking are necessary to life.*

4. The article is used before the names of countries, provinces, rivers, winds, and mountains. [§ 77, (3.) (4.)]

La France est plus grande que l'Italie.	*France is larger than Italy.*
La Normandie est très fertile.	*Normandy is very fertile.*

5. The article is used before titles.

Le général Cavaignac.	*General Cavaignac.*
Le maréchal Ney.	*Marshal Ney.*

6. In respectful address or discourse, the words, *monsieur, madame, mademoiselle* are placed before titles and designations of relationship.

Monsieur le président.	(*Mr.*) *President.*
Madame la comtesse.	(*Madam*) *Countess.*
Mademoiselle votre sœur.	(*Miss*) *your sister.*

7. The plural of *monsieur, madame,* and *mademoiselle,* is *messieurs, mesdames,* and *mesdemoiselles.*

8. The student should be careful to distinguish a noun taken in a *general* or in a *particular* sense, from one taken in a *partitive* sense [§ 78.]

General or particular sense.	*Partitive sense.*
Nous aimons les livres,	Nous avons des livres,
We like books.	*We have books,* i. e., *some books.*
Nous avons les livres,	Vous avez écrit des lettres.
We have the books.	*You have written letters,* i. e., *some letters.*

Résumé of Examples.

La modestie est amiable.	*Modesty is amiable.*
Le courage est indispensable au général.	*Courage is indispensable to the general.*
Les fleurs sont l'ornement des jardins.	*Flowers are the ornaments of gardens.*
Les fleurs des jardins de ce château.	*The flowers of the gardens of this villa.*
Avez-vous l'intention de visiter la France?	*Do you intend visiting France?*
J'ai l'intention de visiter l'Italie.	*I intend visiting Italy.*
Le capitaine Dumont est-il ici?	*Is Captain Dumont here?*
Le major Guillaume est chez lui.	*Major William is at home.*
Voyez-vous madame votre mère?	*Do you see your mother?*
Je vois monsieur votre frère.	*I see your brother.*
Mon frère n'aime pas les louanges.	*My brother is not fond of praises.*

Exercise 55.

Aim-er, 1. *to be fond of, to like;*	Cerise, f. *cherry;*	Framboise, f. *raspberry;*
Apport-er, 1. *to bring;*	Demeur-er, 1. *to dwell, live;*	Légume, m. *vegetable;*
Bois, m. *wood, forest;*	Étudi-er, 1. *to study;*	Loin, *far;*
Capitaine, m. *captain;*	Fleur, f. *flower;*	Lundi, m. *Monday;*
Caporal, m. *corporal;*	Fraise, f. *strawberry;*	Pêche, f. *peach;*
		Prune, f. *plum.*

1. Aimez-vous le pain ou la viande? 2. J'aime le pain, la viande, et le fruit. 3. Avons-nous des pêches dans notre jardin? 4. Nous y

avons des pêches, des fraises, des framboises, et des cerises. 5. Monsieur votre frère aime-t-il les cerises? 6. Il n'aime guère les cerises, il préfere les prunes. 7. Avez-vous des légumes? 8. Je n'aime point les légumes. 9. Nous n'avons ni légumes ni fruits. [L. 8, 3. 4.] 10. Nous n'aimons ni les légumes ni les fruits. 11. Allez-vous tous les jours dans le bois de monsieur votre frère? 12. Je n'y vais pas tous les jours. 13. Votre sœur apporte-t-elle les fleurs? 14. Elle les apporte. 15. Madame votre mère apporte-t-elle des fleurs? 16. Elle en apporte tous les lundis. 17. Voyez-vous le général Bertrand? 18. Je ne le vois pas, je vois le caporal Duchêne. 19. Mesdemoiselles vos sœurs sont-elles fatiguées? 20. Mes sœurs sont fatiguées d'étudier. 21. Monsieur le président est-il chez lui? 22. Non, monsieur; il est chez monsieur le colonel Dumont. 23. Demeure-t-il loin d'ici? 24. Il ne demeure pas loin d'ici. 25. Où demeure-t-il? 26. Il demeure chez monsieur le capitaine Lebrun.

Exercise 56.

1. Does your sister like flowers? 2. My sister likes flowers, and my brother is fond of books. 3. Is he wrong to like books? 4. No, sir; he is right to like books and flowers. 5. Have you many flowers in your gardens? 6. We have many flowers and much fruit. 7. Is your cousin fond of raspberries? 8. My cousin is fond of raspberries and[1] strawberries. 9. Is the captain fond of praises? 10. He is not fond of praises. 11. Has the gardener brought you vegetables? 12. He has brought me vegetables and fruit.[1] 13. Is he ashamed to bring you vegetables? 14. He is neither ashamed nor afraid to sell vegetables. 15. Is your mother tired? 16. My mother is not tired. 17. Is your brother at Colonel D's? 18. He lives at Colonel D's, but he is not at home at present (*à présent*). 19. How many peaches have you? 20. I have not many peaches, but I have many plums. 21. Does Captain B. like peaches? 22. He likes peaches,[1] plums, raspberries, and strawberries. 23. Are you going into (*dans*) your brother's wood? 24. I go there every morning. 25. Is General H. here? 26. No, sir; he is not here, he is at your cousin's. 27. Does your friend, General H., live far from here? 28. He does not live far from here, he lives at his brother's. 29. Have you fine flowers in your garden? 30. We have very fine flowers; we are fond of flowers. 31. Do you give them to him? 32. I give them to you. 33. I give you some. 34. I give them some. 35. Give us some. 36. Do not give us any.

[1] The student must not forget that the article is repeated before every noun.

LEÇON XXX. LESSON XXX.

USE OF THE ARTICLE, CONTINUED.

1. Adjectives of nation will, according to Rule 3 of the last lesson, be preceded by the article. [§ 145.]

Il apprend le français, l'anglais, l'allemand, et l'italien.	*He learns French, English, German, and Italian.*

2. After the verb *parler*, the article may be omitted before an adjective of nation, taken substantively.

Votre frère parle espagnol et portugais.	*Your brother speaks Spanish and Portuguese.*

3. The article is not used, in French, before the number which follows the name of a sovereign. The number, (unless it be *first* and *second*) must be the cardinal, and not the ordinal. [§ 26, (3.)]

Vous avez l'histoire de Henri quatre.	*You have the history of Henry the Fourth.*

4. A word placed in apposition with a noun or pronoun is not in French preceded by un, une, *a* or *an*, unless it be qualified by an adjective, or determined by the following part of the sentence.

Votre ami est médecin.	*Your friend is a physician.*
Notre frère est avocat.	*Our brother is a barrister.*
Votre ami est un bon médecin.	*Your friend is a good physician.*
Notre frère est un avocat célèbre.	*Our brother is a celebrated advocate.*

5. PRESENT OF THE INDICATIVE OF THE IRREGULAR VERBS,

APPRENDRE, *to learn;*	CONNAÎTRE, *to know;*	SAVOIR, *to know;*
J'apprends, *I learn, do learn,* or *am learning;*	Je connais, *I know,* or *do know;*	Je sais, *I know,* or *do know;*
Tu apprends,	Tu connais,	Tu sais,
Il apprend,	Il connaît,	Il sait,
Nous apprenons,	Nous connaissons,	Nous savons,
Vous apprenez,	Vous connaissez,	Vous savez,
Ils apprennent.	Ils connaissent.	Ils savent.

6. Connaître means *to be acquainted with;* savoir, *to know,* is said only of things.

Connaissez-vous ce Français, cet Anglais, cet Allemand, et cet Espagnol? [§ 145.]	*Do you know that Frenchman, that Englishman, that German, and that Spaniard?*
Savez-vous le français, l'anglais, l'allemand, et l'espagnol?	*Do you know French, English, German, and Spanish?*

Résumé of Examples.

Le Capitaine G. sait-il le français?	*Does Captain G. know French?*
Il ne le sait pas, mais il l'apprend.	*He does not know it, but learns it.*
Connaissez-vous le Docteur L.?	*Do you know Dr. L.?*
Je ne le connais pas, mais je sais où il demeure.	*I am not acquainted with him, but I know where he lives.*
Ce monsieur est-il peintre?	*Is that gentleman a painter?*
Non, il est architecte.	*No, he is an architect.*
Ce monsieur est un architecte distingué.	*That gentleman is a distinguished architect.*
Ce Français parle grec et arabe.	*That Frenchman speaks Greek and Arabic.*
Il parle le grec, l'arabe, et l'italien.	*He speaks the Greek, Arabic, and Italian languages.*
Avez-vous vu Charles dix, frère de Louis dix-huit?	*Have you seen Charles the Tenth, a brother of Louis the Eighteenth?*

Exercise 57.

Allemand, e, *German;*	Grec, que, *Greek;*	Quatorze, *fourteen;*
Ancien, ne, *ancient;*	Hongrois, e. *Hungarian;*	Quatre, *four;*
Anglais, e, *English;*	Langue, f. *language;*	Russe, *Russian;*
Chinois, e, *Chinese;*	Moderne, *modern;*	Suédois, e, *Swedish,*
Danois, e, *Danish, Dane;*	Pays, m. *country;*	*Swede;*
Fort, *very;*	Polonais, e, *Polish, Pole;*	Tapissier, m. *upholsterer.*

1. Connaissez-vous ce monsieur? 2. Oui, madame; je le connais fort bien. 3. Savez-vous de quel pays il est? 4. Il est hongrois. 5. Parle-t-il allemand? 6. Il parle allemand, polonais, russe, suédois, et danois. 7. N'est-il pas médecin? 8. Non, monsieur; avant la révolution, il était capitaine. 9. Avez-vous envie d'apprendre le russe? 10. J'ai envie d'apprendre le russe et le grec moderne. 11. Connaissez-vous les messieurs qui parlent à votre sœur? 12. Je ne les connais pas. 13. Savez-vous où ils demeurent? 14. Ils demeurent chez le tapissier de votre frère. 15. N'avez-vous pas l'histoire de Louis quatorze, dans votre bibliothèque? 16. Je n'ai ni celle de Louis quatorze, ni celle de Henri quatre. 17. Avez-vous tort d'apprendre le chinois? 18. Je n'ai pas tort d'apprendre le chinois. 19. Vos compagnons apprennent-ils les langues anciennes? 20. Ils savent plusieurs langues anciennes et modernes. 21. Parlez-vous anglais? 22. Je sais l'anglais et je le parle. 23. Connaissez-vous l'Anglais que nous voyons? 24. Je ne le connais pas. 25. Il ne me connaît pas, et je ne le connais pas.

Exercise 58.

1. Does our physician know French? 2. He knows French, English, and German. 3. Does he know the French physician? 4. He knows him very well. 5. Are you acquainted with that lady? 6. I

157103

am not acquainted with her. 7. Is she a German or a Swede. 8. She is neither a German nor a Swede, she is a Russian. 9. Do you intend to speak to her? 10. I intend to speak to her in (*en*) English. 11. Does she know English? 12. She knows several languages; she speaks English, Danish, Swedish, and Hungarian. 13. Is your brother a colonel? 14. No, sir; he is a captain. 15. Is your upholsterer a Dane? 16. He is not a Dane, he is a Swede. 17. Are you a Frenchman? 18. No, sir; I am a Hungarian. 19. Do you know Chinese? 20. I know Chinese, Russian, and modern Greek. 21. Are you wrong to learn languages? 22. I am not wrong to learn languages. 23. Do you know the Englishman who lives at your brother's? 24. I am acquainted with him. 25. I am not acquainted with him. 26. Do you like books? 27. I am fond of books. 28. Have you a desire to learn Russian? 29. I have no desire to learn Russian. 30. Have you no time? 31. I have but little time. 32. What do you learn? 33. We learn Latin, Greek, French, and German. 34. Do you not learn Spanish? 35. We do not learn it.

LEÇON XXXI. LESSON XXXI.

RELATIVE PRONOUNS. (§ 38.)

1. Qui, *who*, *which*, used as nominative, may relate to persons or to things.

Les fleurs qui sont dans votre jardin. *The flowers which are in your garden.*

2. Qui, *whom*, used as the object of a verb, can only be said of persons. It is used interrogatively with or without a preposition.

Qui votre frère voit-il? *Whom does your brother see?*
De qui parlez-vous ce matin? *Of whom do you speak this morning?*

3. Que, *whom*, *which*, may be said of persons or things. It can never be understood, and must be repeated before every verb. [L. 19. 1.]

Les personnes que nous voyons. *The persons whom we see.*
Les langues que nous apprenons. *The languages which we learn.*

4. Ce que, is employed for *that which*, or its equivalent *what*.

Ce que vous apprenez est utile. *That which you learn is useful.*
Trouvez-vous ce que vous cherchez? *Do you find what you seek?*

5. Que answers to the English pronoun *what*, used absolutely before a verb.

Que pensez-vous de cela?	*What do you think of that?*

6. Quoi, *what*, when not used as an exclamation, is generally preceded by a preposition, and relates only to things.

De quoi voulez-vous parler?	*Of what do you wish to speak?*
À quoi pensez-vous?	*Of what do you think?*

7. Lequel, *m.*, laquelle, *f.*, lesquels, *m. p.*, lesquelles, *f. p.*, *which*, or *which one*, [L. 18. 6] or *which ones*, relate to persons or things. They may be preceded by a preposition, contracted or not with the article.

Lequel avez-vous apporté?	*Which one have you brought?*
Duquel (de laquelle) parlez-vous?	*Of which one do you speak?*

8. Dont, *of which*, or *of whom*, *whose*, may relate to persons or things, in the masculine or feminine, singular or plural. It can never be used absolutely, and must always be preceded by an antecedent. It is preferable to *de qui* or *duquel*, etc.

Les fleurs dont vous me parlez.	*The flowers of which you speak to me.*
Les demoiselles dont votre sœur vous parle.	*The young ladies of whom your sister speaks to you.*

9. PRESENT OF THE INDICATIVE OF THE IRREGULAR VERBS,

DI-RE, 4. *to say.*	FAI-RE, 4. *to make, to do.*	METT-RE, 4. *to put.*
Je dis, *I say, do say, or am saying.*	Je fais, *I make*, or *do, I am making* or *doing.*	Je mets, *I put, do put, or am putting.*
Tu dis,	Tu fais,	Tu mets,
Il dit,	Il fait,	Il met,
Nous disons,	Nous faisons, [L. 63, note.]	Nous mettons,
Vous dites,	Vous faites,	Vous mettez,
Ils disent.	Ils font.	Ils mettent.

RÉSUMÉ OF EXAMPLES.

Connaissez-vous le monsieur qui parle à notre cousin?	*Do you know the gentleman who speaks to our cousin?*
Je connais celui qui lui parle.	*I know him who speaks to him.*
Comprenez-vous ce que je vous dis?	*Do you understand what I say to you?*
Qui vous a parlé de cette affaire?	*Who has spoken to you of this affair?*
L'Anglais dont vous parlez est ici.	*The Englishman of whom you speak is here.*
L'Espagnol dont la sœur est ici.	*The Spaniard whose sister is here.*
Que faites-vous ce matin?	*What do you do this morning?*
Que dites-vous à notre ami?	*What do you say to our friend?*
Nous faisons ce que vous nous dites.	*We do that which (what) you say to us.*
Pour qui faites-vous cet habit?	*For whom do you make this coat?*
De quoi parlez-vous à votre frère?	*Of what do you speak to your brother?*
Nous faisons ce que nous pouvons.	*We do what we can.*
Nous parlons de ce dont vous parlez.	*We speak of that of which you speak.*

Exercise 59.

Arriv-er, 1. *to arrive;*
Avec, *with;*
Coffre, m. *trunk;*
Command-er, 1. *to order;*
Écossais, e, *Scotch;*
Enfant, m. *child;*
Habillement, m. *dress, clothes;*
Hollandais, e, *Dutch;*
Linge, m. *linen;*
Monsieur, m. *gentleman;*
Nom, m. *name;*
Plaisir, m. *pleasure;*
Presque, *almost;*
Rien, *nothing;*
Recommand-er, 1. *to recommend;*
Soulier, m. *shoe;*
Vrai, e, *true.*

1. Qui connaissez-vous? 2. Nous connaissons les Hollandais dont vous nous parlez. 3. Quelles leçons apprenez-vous? 4. Nous apprenons les leçons que vous nous recommandez. 5. Ce que je vous dis, est-il vrai? 6. Ce que vous nous dites est vrai. 7. De qui nous parlez-vous? 8. Nous vous parlons des Écossais qui viennent d'arriver. 9. Savez-vous qui vient d'arriver? 10. Je sais que le monsieur que nous connaissons vient d'arriver. 11. Vos sœurs que font-elles? 12. Elles ne font presque rien, elles n'ont presque rien à faire. 13. Que mettez-vous dans votre coffre? 14. Nous y mettons ce que nous avons, nos habillements et notre linge. 15. N'y mettez-vous pas vos souliers? 16. Nous y mettons les souliers dont nous avons besoin. 17. De quoi avez-vous besoin? 18. Nous avons besoin de ce que nous avons. 19. Cet enfant sait-il ce qu'il fait? 20. Il sait ce qu'il fait, et ce qu'il dit. 21. Ne voulez-vous pas le leur dire? 22. Avec beaucoup de plaisir. 23. Faites-vous ce que le marchand vous commande? 24. Nous faisons ce qu'il nous dit. 25. Il parle de ce dont vous parlez.

Exercise 60.

1. Have you what (*ce dont*) you want? 2. We have what we want. 3. Is the gentleman whom you know, here? 4. The lady of whom you speak is here. 5. Has she just arrived? [L. 26. 2.] 6. She has just arrived. 7. Do you know that gentleman? 8. I know the gentleman who is speaking with your father. 9. Do you know his name? 10. I do not know his name, but I know where he lives (*demeure*). 11. What do you do every morning? 12. We do almost nothing, we have very little to do. 13. Does the tailor make your clothes? 14. He makes my clothes, my brother's, and my cousin's. 15. Do you know what you say? 16. I know what I say, and what I do. 17. Do you know the Scotchman of whom your brother speaks? 18. I know him well. 19. What does he put into (*dans*) his trunk? 20. He puts his clothes. 21. Is that which you say, true? 22. What I say is true. 23. Do you understand that which I say to you? 24. I understand all that you say. 25. Of whom does your brother speak? 26. He speaks of the gentleman whose

sister is here. 27. Is your brother wrong to do what he does? 28. He cannot be wrong to do it. 29. What are you doing? 30. I am doing that which you do. 31. Where do you put my books? 32. Into (*dans*) your brother's trunk. 33. Is your brother here? 34. He is not here. 35. He is at my brother's, or at my father's.

LEÇON XXXII. LESSON XXXII.

PLAN OF THE EXERCISES IN COMPOSING FRENCH.

Hitherto the student has been occupied exclusively in acquiring facts, forms and principles, and in *translating*, by the aid of these, French into English and again English into French. Following still the plan of the work, let him now undertake the higher business of endeavoring to *compose* in French. With this intent, let him take some of the words, given for this purpose, in the lists at page 271, and seek to incorporate them in sentences entirely his own. The words taken from the lists, are to be used merely as things suggestive of thought. The *form* which, in any given case, the sentence may assume, should be determined by the models found in the Lessons preceding; for, every sentence which the pupil has once mastered in the regular course of the Lessons, is or should be to him a *model*, on which he may at pleasure build other constructions of his own. Indeed, this constructing sentences according to models, that is, shaping one's thoughts according to the forms and idioms peculiar to a foreign tongue, is the true and only secret of *speaking and writing* that language well. The pupil, therefore, as he passes along in the ordinary course of the Lessons, should frequently be found applying his knowledge in the way of actually composing independent sentences. In this way he will soon acquire a facility and accuracy in the language, which are hardly otherwise attainable at all.

METTRE, ÔTER, FAIRE, ETC.

1. The verb *mettre* is used in the same sense as the English *to put on*, in speaking of garments. *Mettre le couvert*, means *to lay the cloth, or set the table.*

Quel chapeau mettez-vous?	*What hat do you put on?*
Votre frère met son habit noir.	*Your brother puts on his black coat.*
La domestique va mettre le couvert.	*The servant is going to lay the cloth.*

2. *Ôter* means *to take off, to take away, to take out.*

Mon domestique ôte son chapeau.	*My servant takes off his hat.*
Ôtez ce livre de la table.	*Take away that book from the table.*
N'a-t-on pas ôté le dîner?	*Have they not taken away the dinner?*

3. The verb *faire* is used before another verb, in the sense of *to have, to cause.*

Votre frère fait-il bâtir une maison?	*Does you brother have a house built?*
Il en fait bâtir plus d'une.	*He has more than one built.*

4. It may be used in the same sense before its own infinitive.

Je fais faire un habit de drap.	*I have a cloth coat made.*
Vous faites faire des souliers de cuir.	*You have leather shoes made.*

5. *Vouloir*, [L. 28. 6.] followed by *dire*, is used in the sense of *to mean.*

Que voulez-vous dire?	*What do you mean?*
Votre sœur que veut-elle dire?	*What does your sister mean?*

Résumé of Examples.

Ne mettez-vous pas vos habits?	*Do you not put on your clothes?*
J'ai peur de les gâter.	*I am afraid of spoiling them.*
Ne portez-vous jamais votre habit noir?	*Do you never wear your black coat?*
Je le mets tous les samedis.	*I put it on every Saturday.*
Pourquoi n'ôtez-vous pas votre manteau?	*Why do you not take off your cloak?*
J'ai trop froid, j'ai peur de l'ôter.	*I am too cold, I am afraid to take it off.*
Faites-vous raccommoder vos bas?	*Do you have your stockings mended?*
Je fais raccommoder mes habits.	*I have my clothes mended.*
Je fais faire une paire de bottes.	*I have a pair of boots made.*
Je fais creuser un puits.	*I have a well dug.*
Votre frère que veut-il dire?	*What does your brother mean?*
Que veut-il dire?	*What does he mean?*
Il ne veut rien dire.	*He means nothing.*
Ôtez-vous vos souliers et vos bas?	*Do you take off your shoes and stockings?*
Je n'ôte ni les uns ni les autres.	*I take off neither these nor those.*
Le dîner est prêt, le domestique va mettre le couvert.	*Dinner is ready, the servant is going to lay the cloth.*
Voulez-vous ôter le couvert?	*Will you take away the things?*
Je vais mettre le couvert.	*I am going to lay the cloth.*
Je vais ôter le couvert.	*I am going to take away the things.*

Exercise 61.

Apothicaire, m. *druggist;*
Après, *after;*
Cave, f. *cellar;*
Car, *for, because;*
Creus-er, 1. *to dig;*
Dimanche, m. *Sunday;*
Dîner, m. *dinner;*
Fâché, e, *sorry, angry;*
Gât-er, 1. *to spoil;*
Gilet, m. *waistcoat, vest;*
Grand, e, *large, very;*
Manteau, m. *cloak;*
Noir, e, *black;*
Pantoufle, f. *slipper;*
Pourquoi, *why;*
Prêt, e, *ready;*
Raccommod-er, 1. *to mend;*
Remett-re, 4. ir. *to put on again;*
Tout à l'heure, *immediately;*
Uniforme, m. *uniform;*
Velours, m. *velvet.*

1. Le Général N. met-il son uniforme? 2. Il ne le met point. 3. Pourquoi ne portez-vous point votre manteau noir? 4. J'ai peur de le gâter. 5. Mettez-vous vos souliers de satin tous les matins? 6. Je ne les mets que les dimanches. 7. Il est midi, le domestique met-il le couvert? 8. Il ne le met pas encore, il va le mettre tout-à-l'heure. 9. Le dîner n'est-il pas prêt? 10. Le domestique ôte-t-il le couvert? 11. Il ne l'ôte pas encore, il n'a pas le temps de l'ôter. 12. Ôtez-vous votre habit, quand vous avez chaud? 13. Je l'ôte, quand j'ai trop chaud. 14. Faites-vous faire un habit de drap? 15. Je fais faire un habit de drap, et un gilet de satin noir. 16. Ne faites-vous point raccommoder vos pantoufles de velours? 17. Ne faites-vous pas creuser une cave? 18. Je fais creuser une grande cave. 19. L'apothicaire, que veut-il dire? 20. Il veut dire qu'il a besoin d'argent. 21. Savez-vous ce que cela veut dire? 22. Cela veut dire que votre frère est fâché contre vous. 23. Avez-vous envie de mettre votre manteau? 24. J'ai l'intention de le mettre, car j'ai grand froid. 25. Je vais l'ôter, car j'ai chaud.

EXERCISE 62.

1. Do you take off your coat? 2. I do not take off my coat; I put it on. 3. Do you take off your cloak, when you are cold? 4. When I am cold, I put it on. 5. Does your little boy take off his shoes and stockings? [§ 21, (4.)] 6. He takes them off, but he is going to put them on again. 7. Does that little girl lay the cloth? 8. She lays the cloth every day at noon (*midi*). 9. Does she take away the things after dinner? 10. She takes away the things every day. 11. Do you intend to have a coat made? 12. I intend to have a coat made. 13. I am going to have a coat and vest made. 14. Does your brother have his boots mended? 15. He has them mended. 16. What does your son mean? 17. I do not know what he means. 18. Is he angry with me, or with my brother? 19. He is neither angry with you, nor with your brother. 20. Is he afraid to spoil his coat? 21. He is not afraid to spoil it. 22. Does the druggist want money? 23. He does not want money. 24. Does your sister take my book from the table? 25. She does not take it away. 26. Why do you take off your shoes? 27. I take them off because they hurt me (*gênent*). 28. Do you intend to have a house built? 29. I intend to have one built. 30. Does the tailor spoil your coat? 31. He does not spoil it. 32. Who spoils your clothes? 33. No person spoils them. 34. What hat do you wear? 35. I wear a black hat.

LEÇON XXXIII. LESSON XXXIII.

UNIPERSONAL VERBS.

1. The unipersonal verb is conjugated only in the third person singular of a tense. Its nominative pronoun, il, *it*, is used absolutely, *i. e.*, it represents no noun previously expressed.

Il pleut aujourd'hui.	*It rains to-day.*

2. The unipersonal verb assumes the termination of the class or conjugation to which it belongs. Some verbs are always unipersonal, and will be found in § 62. Others are only occasionally so, and if irregular, will be found in the *personal* form in the same § 62.

3. PRESENT OF THE INDICATIVE OF THE UNIPERSONAL VERBS,

Y AVOIR, *to be there:*	PLEUVOIR, *to rain:*	NEIGER, *to snow:*
Il y a, *there is, there are.* See § 61–2, page 362.	Il pleut, *it rains, it is raining.*	Il neige, *it snows, it is snowing.*
GRÉLER, *to hail:*	GELER, *to freeze:*	DÉGELER, *to thaw:*
Il grèle (§ 49) *it hails, it is hailing.*	Il gèle (§ 49) *it freezes, it is freezing.*	Il dégèle (§ 49) *it thaws, it is thawing.*

4. Il y a, means *there is*, or *there are*, and may be followed by a singular or plural noun, [§ 61–2.]

Il y a du gibier au marché.	*There is game in the market.*
Il y a des pommes dans votre jardin.	*There are apples in your garden.*

5. In relation to the weather, the verb *faire* is used unipersonally in the same manner as the English verb *to be.*

Il fait beau temps aujourd'hui.	*It is fine weather to-day.*
Il fait chaud, il fait froid.	*It is warm, it is cold.*

6. The verb *être*, however, is used when the word temps, *weather*, precedes it.

Le temps est beau ce matin.	*The weather is fine this morning.*

RÉSUMÉ OF EXAMPLES.

Pleut-il ce matin?	*Does it rain this morning?*
Il ne pleut pas, il neige.	*It does not rain, it snows.*
Il va pleuvoir ce matin.	*It is going to rain this morning.*
Ne gèle-t-il pas ce matin?	*Does it not freeze this morning?*
Il ne gèle pas, il fait du brouillard.	*It does not freeze, it is foggy.*
Y a-t-il du sucre chez vous?	*Is there any sugar at your house?*
Il y en a beaucoup chez mon frère.	*There is a great deal at my brother's.*
Y a-t-il plusieurs personnes chez moi?	*Are there several persons at my house?*

Il y a plus de deux personnes.	*There are more than two persons.*
N'y a-t-il personne à l'église?	*Is there nobody at church?*
Il n'y a encore personne.	*There is as yet no one there.*
Est-il trop tôt?	*Is it too soon?*
Au contraire, il est trop tard.	*On the contrary, it is too late.*
Fait-il froid ou chaud aujourd'hui?	*Is it cold or warm to-day?*
Il fait chaud et humide.	*It is warm and damp.*
Fait-il du vent, ou du brouillard?	*Is it windy, or foggy?*
Il fait un temps bien désagréable.	*It is very disagreeable weather.*
Le temps n'est pas agréable.	*The weather is not agreeable.*

Exercise 63.

Assemblée, f. *assembly, party;*	Couvert, e, *cloudy;*	Manuscrit, m. *manuscript;*
Bibliothèque, f. *library;*	Écurie, f. *stable;*	Superbe, *very beautiful;*
Brouillard, m. *fog;*	Épais, se, *thick;*	Veau, m. *veal;*
Chambre, f. *room;*	Foin, m. *hay;*	Vent, m. *wind;*
Cinquante, *fifty;*	Gibier, m. *game;*	Volaille, f. *poultry.*
	Humide, *damp;*	

1. Quel temps fait-il aujourd'hui? 2. Il fait un temps superbe. 3. Fait-il très beau temps aujourd'hui? 4. Il fait un temps couvert et humide. 5. Pleut-il beaucoup ce matin? 6. Il ne pleut pas encore, mais il va pleuvoir. 7. Fait-il du vent ou du brouillard? 8. Il ne fait pas de vent. 9. Le brouillard est très épais. 10. Combien de personnes y a-t-il à l'assemblée? 11. Il y a plus de deux cents [L. 20. 7.] personnes. 12. N'y a-t-il pas beaucoup de manuscrits dans votre bibliothèque? 13. Il n'y en a pas beaucoup, il n'y en a que cinquante-cinq. 14. Fait-il trop froid pour vous, dans cette chambre? 15. Il n'y fait ni trop froid ni trop chaud. 16. Y a-t-il beaucoup de foin dans votre écurie? 17. Il y en a assez pour mon cheval. 18. Restez-vous à la maison, quand il pleut? 19. Quand il pleut, je reste à la maison, mais quand il fait beau temps je vais chez mon cousin. 20. Y a-t-il de la viande au marché? 21. Il y en a beaucoup; il y a aussi du gibier. 22. Il y a du veau, du mouton, et de la volaille. 23. N'y a-t-il pas aussi des légumes et des fruits? 24. Il n'y en a pas. 25. Il y en a aussi.

Exercise 64.

1. Are you cold this morning? 2. I am not cold, it is warm this morning. 3. Is it foggy or windy? 4. It is neither foggy nor windy, it rains in torrents (*à verse*). 5. Is it going to rain or to snow? 6. It is going to freeze, it is very cold. 7. It is windy and foggy. 8. Is there any body at your brother's to-day? 9. My brother is at home, and my sister is at church. 10. Is there any meat in the (*au*) market? 11. There is meat and poultry. 12. Is it too warm or too cold, for your sister, in this room? 13. It is not so warm in this room, as in your brother's library. 14. Are there good English

books in your sister's library? 15. There are some good ones. 16. Are there peaches and plums in your garden? 17. There are many. 18. Do you remain at your brother's, when it snows? 19. When it snows, we remain at home. 20. Are there ladies at your mother's? 21. Your two sisters are there to-day. 22. Have you time to go and fetch them? 23. I have no time this morning. 24. Is your horse in the stable? 25. It is not there, it is at my brother's. 26. Does it hail this morning? 27. It does not hail, it freezes. 28. What weather is it this morning? 29. It is very fine weather. 30. Is it too warm? 31. It is neither too warm nor too cold. 32. Is it going to freeze? 33. It is going to snow. 34. Does it snow every day? 35. It does not snow every day, but it snows very often (*souvent*).

LEÇON XXXIV. LESSON XXXIV.

PLACE OF THE ADVERB. (§ 136.)

1. In simple tenses, the adverb generally follows the verb, and is placed as near it as possible.

Votre commis écrit très bien.	*Your clerk writes very well.*
Cette demoiselle lit très mal.	*That young lady reads very badly.*

2. When a verb is in the infinitive, the two negatives *ne* and *pas*, *ne* aud *rien*, should be placed before it.

Ne pas parler, ne pas lire.	*Not to speak, not to read.*

3. The adverb assez, *enough*, *tolerably*, *pretty*, precedes generally the other adverbs. It precedes also adjectives and nouns.

Vous écrivez assez correctement.	*You write pretty correctly.*
Vous avez assez de livres.	*You have books enough.*
Cet enfant est assez attentif.	*That child is attentive enough.*

4. Voici means, *here is;* voilà, *there is.*

Voici le livre que vous aimez.	*Here is the book which you like.*
Voilà le monsieur dont vous parlez.	*There is the gentleman of whom you speak.*

5. *Dans* is used for *in* or *into*, when the noun which follows it is preceded by an article, or by a possessive, demonstrative, or numeral adjective. [§ 142, (2.)]

Le crayon est dans le pupître.	*The pencil is in the desk.*
Mettez cette lettre dans votre malle.	*Put this letter into your trunk.*

6. *En* renders *to*, *in*, or *into*, coming after the verbs *to be*, *to go*, *to*

reside, followed by the name of a part of the earth, a country, or province.

Notre ami est en France.	*Our friend is in France.*
Vous allez en Italie.	*You go to Italy.*

7. The preposition *à* is used for the words *at* or *to*, *in* or *into*, before the name of a town, city, or village, preceded by the verbs mentioned above.

Il va à Paris le mois prochain.	*He is going to Paris next month.*

8. The same preposition is used in the expressions *à la campagne*, *à la ville*,[1] *à la chasse*, *à la pêche*, *au marché*, *etc.*

Nous allons à la campagne.	*We go into the country.*
Vous n'allez pas à la ville.	*You do not go to the city.*
Je vais à la chasse et à la pêche.	*I go hunting and fishing.*
Il ne va pas au marché.	*He does not go to market.*

9. INDICATIVE PRESENT OF THE IRREGULAR VERBS,

CONDUI-RE, 4. *to conduct.*	ÉCRI-RE, 4. *to write.*	LI-RE, 4. *to read.*
Je conduis, *I conduct, do conduct, etc.*	J'écris, *I write, do write,* or *am writing;*	Je lis, *I read, do read,* or *am reading;*
Tu conduis,	Tu écris,	Tu lis,
Il conduit,	Il écrit,	Il lit,
Nous conduisons,	Nous écrivons,	Nous lisons,
Vous conduisez,	Vous écrivez,	Vous lisez,
Ils conduisent.	Ils écrivent.	Ils lisent.

RÉSUMÉ OF EXAMPLES.

Votre parent écrit-il bien?	*Does your relation write well?*
Il écrit assez bien.	*He writes tolerably.*
Nous avons assez de livres.	*We have books enough.*
Nous sommes assez attentifs à nos leçons.	*We are attentive enough to our lessons.*
Voila la demoiselle dont vous parlez.	*There is the young lady of whom you speak.*
Votre cheval n'est-il pas dans le champ?	*Is not your horse in the field?*
Il n'y est pas, il est dans le jardin.	*It is not there, it is in the garden.*
Allez-vous en France cette année?	*Do you go to France this year?*
Nous allons à Paris et à Lyon.	*We go to Paris and to Lyons.*
Où conduisez-vous ce jeune homme?	*Where do you take this young man?*
Je le conduis en Allemagne.	*I take him to Germany.*
Demeurez-vous à la ville?	*Do you live in the city?*
Nous demeurons à la campagne.	*We live in the country.*
Allez-vous souvent à la chasse?	*Do you go often hunting?*
Nous allons quelquefois à la pêche.	*We sometimes go fishing.*

[1] Être à la ville, *to be*, or rather, *to dwell in the city, and not in the country.* Être dans la ville, *to be within the city.* Être en ville, *to be out, not to be at home, to be in the city.*

Exercise 65.

Associé, m. *partner;*	Fort, *very;*	Suisse, f. *Switzerland;*
Canif, m. *penknife;*	Pêche, f. *fishing;*	Terre, f. *farm, estate;*
Campagne, f. *country;*	Prusse, f. *Prussia;*	Ville, f. *town, city;*
Chasse, f. *hunting;*	Rapidement, *rapidly;*	Vîte, *quickly;*
Commis, m. *clerk,*	Rend-re, 4. *to return;*	Voyage, m. *journey.*

1. Écrivez-vous encore la même leçon? 2. Je n'écris plus la même, j'en écris une autre. 3. Votre commis écrit-il rapidement? 4. Il écrit fort bien, mais il n'écrit pas vîte. 5. N'avez-vous pas assez d'argent pour acheter cette terre? 6. J'ai assez d'argent, mais j'ai l'intention de faire un voyage en France. 7. Voilà votre livre, en avez-vous besoin? 8. Je n'en ai pas besoin, j'en ai un autre. 9. Avez-vous encore besoin de mon canif? 10. Je n'en ai plus besoin, je vais vous le rendre. 11. Notre cousin demeure-t-il à la ville? 12. Il ne demeure plus à la ville, il demeure à la campagne. 13. Aime-t-il à aller à la chasse? 14. Il n'aime pas à aller à la chasse. 15. Il va tous les jours à la pêche. 16. Notre associé est-il à Paris, ou à Rouen? 16. Il est à Marseille. 18. Où avez-vous l'intention de conduire votre fils? 19. Je vais le conduire en Italie. 20. Demeurez-vous à Milan, ou à Florence? 21. Je ne demeure ni à Milan ni à Florence, je demeure à Turin. 22. Votre ami demeure-t-il en Suisse? 23. Il ne demeure plus en Suisse, il demeure en Prusse. 24. Votre domestique est-il à l'église? 25. Non, monsieur; il est à l'école.

Exercise 66.

1. Does your clerk write as well as your son? 2. He writes tolerably well, but not as well as my son. 3. Have you books enough in your library? 4. I have not books enough, but I intend to buy some more. 5. Here is your sister's letter, will you read it? 6. I intend to read it. 7. Does your son like to go fishing? 8. He likes to go fishing and hunting. 9. When does he like to go fishing? 10. When I am in the country. 11. What do you do, when you are in the city? 12. When I am in the city, I read and learn my lesson. 13. Do you intend to go to France this year? 14. I intend to go to Germany. 15. Will you go to the city, if it (*s'il*) rains? 16. When it rains, I always remain at home. [R. 1.] 17. How many friends have you in the city? 18. I have many friends there. 19. Are there many English in France? 20. There are many English in France, and in Italy (*Italie*). 21. Are there more English in Germany than in Italy? 22. There are more English in Italy than in Germany. 23. Is it fine weather in Italy? 24. It is very fine weather there. 25. Does it often freeze there? 26. It freezes sometimes

there, but not often. 27. Does that young lady read as well as her sister? 28. She reads better than her sister, but her sister reads better than I. 29. Is there any one at your house? 30. My father is at home. 31. Is your brother-in-law absent? 32. My brother-in-law is at your house. 33. There is no one at home to-day.

LEÇON XXXV. LESSON XXXV.

ON, AVOIR LIEU, DEVOIR, ETC.

1. The indefinite pronoun *on* has no exact equivalent in English. It may be rendered by *one*, *we*, *they*, *people*, etc., according to the context. *On* has, of course, no antecedent, and seldom refers to a particular person, [§ 41, (4.) (5.) § 113.]

On doit honorer la vertu.	*We should honor virtue.*
On nous apporte de l'argent.	*Money is brought to us.*

2. As may be seen in the last example, *on* is often the nominative of an active verb, which is best rendered in English by the passive, [§ 113, (1.)]

On dit que votre épouse est ici.	*It is said that your wife is here.*
On raconte des histoires singulières.	*Singular histories are related.*
On récolte beaucoup de blé en France.	*Much wheat is harvested (grown) in France.*

3. *Avoir lieu* answers to the English expression, *to take place.*

Cela a lieu tous les jours.	*That takes place every day.*

4. *Au lieu de* answers to the English, *instead of.* The verb which follows it must, according to Rule 2, Lesson 21, be put in the infinitive.

Au lieu d'étudier, il joue.	*Instead of studying, he plays.*

5. Devoir, *to owe*, is used before an infinitive, like the English verb, *to be*, to express obligation.

Je dois lui écrire demain.	*I am to write to him to-morrow.*
Nous devons y aller demain.	*We are to go there to-morrow.*

6. *Recevoir des nouvelles*, means, *to hear from.*

Devez-vous recevoir des nouvelles de votre sœur?	*Are you to hear from your sister?*

7. *Entendre parler*, answers to the English phrase, *to hear of* or *about.*

Entendez-vous souvent parler de vos amis?	*Do you often hear of your friends?*

Résumé of Examples.

Que dit-on de nous dans la ville?	*What do they say of us in the city?*
On ne parle pas de vous.	*People do not speak of you.*
Ne mange-t-on pas tous les jours?	*Do not people eat every day?*
On mange quand on a faim.	*People eat when they are hungry.*
Ou trouve de l'or en Californie.	*Gold is found in California.*
Dit-on quelque chose de nouveau?	*Do they (people) say any thing new?*
On ne dit rien de nouveau.	*Nothing new is said.*
A-t-on reçu des nouvelles de George?	*Has any thing been heard from George?*
On n'a point entendu parler de lui.	*Nothing has been heard of him.*
On n'a point reçu de ses nouvelles.	*They have not heard from him.*
Devez-vous écrire à notre ami?	*Are you to write to our friend?*
Je dois lui écrire demain.	*I am to write to him to-morrow.*
Le concert doit-il avoir lieu ce soir?	*Is the concert to take place this evening?*
Il doit avoir lieu ce matin.	*It is to take place this morning.*
Je viens au lieu de mon frère.	*I come instead of my brother.*
Il danse au lieu de marcher.	*He dances instead of walking.*

Exercise 67.

Afrique, f. *Africa;*	Fourn-ir, 2. *to furnish;*	Part-ir, 2. ir. *to depart, to set out, to leave;*
Alger, *Algiers;*	Habits, m. p. *clothes;*	Prochain, e, *next;*
Apport-er, 1. *to bring;*	Malade, *sick;*	Sav-oir, 3. ir. *to know;*
Demain, *to-morrow;*	Mois, m. *month;*	Voyage, m. *journey.*
Diamant, m. *diamond;*	Or, m. *gold;*	

1. Vous apporte-t-on de l'argent tous les jours? 2. On ne m'en apporte pas tous les jours. 3. Vous fournit-on des habits quand vous en avez besoin? [L. 22.] 4. On m'en fournit toutes les fois (*every time*) que j'en ai besoin. 5. A-t-on besoin d'argent quand on est malade? 6. Quand on est malade, on en a grand besoin. 7. Avez-vous reçu des nouvelles de mon fils? 8. Je n'ai point reçu de ses nouvelles. 9. Ne dit-on pas qu'il est en Afrique? 10. On dit qu'il doit partir pour Alger. 11. Quand doit-il commencer son voyage? 12. On dit qu'il doit le commencer le mois prochain. 13. Ce mariage a-t-il lieu aujourd'hui ou demain? 14. On nous dit qu'il doit avoir lieu cette après-midi. 15. Il doit avoir lieu à cinq heures et demie. 16. Avez-vous envie de venir au lieu de votre frère? 17. Mon frère doit venir au lieu de notre cousin. 18. Avez-vous l'intention de lui dire ce qu'il doit faire? 19. Il sait ce qu'il doit faire. 20. Savez-vous ce qu'on dit de nouveau? 21. On ne dit rien de nouveau. 22. Trouve-t-on beaucoup d'or en Californie? 23. On y en trouve beaucoup. 24. Y trouve-t-on aussi des diamants? 25. On n'y en trouve point, on n'y trouve que de l'or.

Exercise 68.

1. What do people say of me? 2. People say that you are not very attentive to your lessons. 3. Is it said that much gold is found in

Africa? 4. It is said that much gold is found in California. 5. Do they bring you books every day? 6. Books are brought to me [R. 2] every day, but I have no time to read them. 7. What should one do (*doit-on faire*) when one is sick? 8. One should send for a physician. 9. Do you send for my brother? 10. I am to send for him this morning. 11. Do you hear from your son every day? 12. I hear from him every time that your brother comes. 13. Does the sale (*vente*, f.) take place to-day? 14. It takes place this afternoon. 15. At what time (*heure*) does it take place? 16. It takes place at half after three. 17. I have a wish to go there, but my brother is sick. 18. What am I to do? 19. You are to write to your brother, who, it is said (*dit on*), is very sick. 20. Is he to leave for Africa? 21. He is to leave for Algiers. 22. Do you come instead of your father? 23. I am to write instead of him. 24. Does the concert take place this morning? 25. It is to take place this afternoon. 26. Do you know at what hour? 27. At a quarter before five. 28. Is your brother coming? 29. My brother is not coming, he has no time. 30. Are you angry with your brother? 31. I am not angry with him. 32. Is there any thing new? (*Is any thing new said?*) 33. There is nothing new. 34. What is said of him? 35. Nothing is said of him.

LEÇON XXXVI. LESSON XXXVI.

REFLECTIVE VERBS.—[§ 43, (6.) § 56].

1. A verb is called reflective or pronominal, when it is conjugated with two pronouns of the same person, i. e., the usual nominative pronoun, and the pronouns *me*, *te*, *se*, etc. [§ 56.] In these verbs, the subject is represented as acting upon itself.

Je m'applique à l'étude.	*I apply (myself) to study.*
Je me propose de voyager.	*I propose to (myself) to travel*, i. e., *it is my intention to travel.*

In these verbs, the second pronoun is in fact only the objective pronoun direct or indirect, which, according to Rules 1 and 2, Lesson 27, is placed before the verb.

2. The reflective form of the verb, which is much more frequently used in French than in English, often answers to the passive form so common in the latter language.

Cela se voit tous les jours.	*That is seen every day*—literally, *That sees itself every day.*
Cette marchandise se vend facilement.	*That merchandise is easily sold.* *That merchandise sells itself easily.*
Cela se fait ainsi.	*That is done thus.* *That does itself so.*

3. The verb *se porter*, literally, *to carry one's self*, is used idiomatically for *to do* or *to be* in speaking of health.

Comment vous portez-vous ?	*How do you do?*
Je me porte très bien.	*I am very well.*

4. *S'asseoir*, [3. ir. see § 62.] *to sit down*, is also a reflective verb.

Votre frère s'assied.	*Your brother sits down.*

5. *Se promener* means *to walk*, *to ride*, etc., for pleasure, or health.

Je me promène tous les jours.	*I take a walk every day.*
Je me promène à cheval.	*I take a ride.*

6. *Marcher*, *aller à cheval*, *aller en voiture*, signify *to walk or to ride*, when we wish to express simply the manner of progressing.

Marchez-vous beaucoup tous les jours ?	*Do you walk much every day?*
Je vais à cheval et en voiture.	*I ride on horseback and in a carriage.*

7. CONJUGATION OF THE PRESENT OF THE INDICATIVE OF THE REFLECTIVE VERBS,

SE PORT-ER, 1. *to be or do;*	SE PROMEN-ER, 1. *to walk or ride;*	S'ASSE-OIR, 3. ir. *to sit down;*
Je me porte, *I am or do;*	Je me promène, *I take a walk or ride;*	Je m'assieds, *I sit down or am sitting down;*
Tu te portes,	Tu te promènes, [§ 49.]	Tu t'assieds,
Il se porte,	Il se promène,	Il s'assied,
Nous nous portons,	Nous nous promenons,	Nous nous asseyons,
Vous vous portez,	Vous vous promenez,	Vous vous asseyez,
Ils se portent.	Ils se promènent.	Ils s'asseient.

8. The reflective pronouns, in the imperative of reflective verbs, follow Rule 4, of Lesson 27, and Rules 3, 4, of Lesson 28 and also § 100, (2) (3.).

Asseyons-nous, asseyez-vous.	*Let us sit down, sit down.*
Ne nous asseyons pas.	*Let us not sit down.*

RÉSUMÉ OF EXAMPLES.

A quoi vous appliquez-vous ?	*To what do you apply yourself?*
Je m'occupe de mes affaires.	*I occupy myself with my affairs.*
Je m'adresse à mes amis.	*I apply to my friends.*
Vous adressez-vous à votre père ?	*Do you apply to your father?*
Je m'adresse à lui [§ 100, (4.)]	*I apply to him.*
Monsieur votre père, comment se porte-t-il ?	*How is your father?*
Il se porte passablement bien.	*He is tolerably well.*
Pourquoi ne vous asseyez-vous pas ?	*Why do you not sit down?*
Je m'assieds quand je suis fatigué.	*I sit down when I am weary.*
Je n'ai pas le temps de m'asseoir.	*I have no time to sit down.*

Vous promenez-vous tous les jours?	*Do you take a walk every day?*
Je me promène en voiture aujourd'hui.	*I take a ride to-day (in a carriage).*
Vos amis se promènent-ils à cheval?	*Do your friends take a ride?*
N'aimez-vous pas à marcher?	*Do you not like walking?*
J'aime beaucoup à aller à cheval.	*I like riding much.*
Aimez-vous à vous promener?	*Do you like walking (for pleasure)?*
Asseyons-nous, s'il vous plait.	*Let us sit down, if you please.*
Ne nous asseyons-nous pas?	*Do we not sit down?*
Ne nous asseyons pas, il est trop tard.	*Let us not sit down, it is too late.*
Combien ce drap se vend-il la[1] verge?	*For how much is that cloth sold a yard?*
Il se vend vingt-cinq francs le mètre.	*It is sold twenty-five francs the metre.*
Comment cela s'appelle-t-il?	*How is that called? What is the name of that?*
Comment vous appelez-vous [§ 49, (4.)]?	*What is your name? How do you call yourself?*

Exercise 69.

Banquier, m. *banker;*	Magnifique, *magnificent;*	Pied, m. *foot;*
Comment, *how;*	Matin, m. *morning;*	Port-er, *to carry, wear;*
Cheval, m. *horse;*	Mieux, *better;*	Quelquefois, *sometimes;*
Drap, m. *cloth;*	Obligé, e, *obliged;*	Quitt-er, 1. *to leave;*
Fatigué, e, *weary, tired;*	Part-ir, 2. ir. *to set out;*	Voiture, f. *carriage.*

1. Comment ce monsieur s'appelle-t-il? 2. Je ne sais comment il s'appelle. 3. Cette dame ne s'appelle-t-elle pas L.? 4. Non, madame, elle s'appelle M. 5. Monsieur votre père se porte-t-il bien ce matin? 6. Il se porte beaucoup mieux. 7. Fait-il beau temps aujourd'hui? 8. Il fait un temps magnifique; n'allez-vous pas vous promener? 9. Nous n'avons ni cheval ni voiture. 10. Ne pouvez-vous marcher? 11. Je suis trop fatigué pour marcher. 12. N'allez-vous pas à cheval tous les matins? 13. Je me promène tous les matins. 14. Comment vous promenez-vous? 15. Quelquefois à pied, et quelquefois en voiture. 16. A qui vous adressez-vous, quand vous avez besoin d'argent? 17. Je m'adresse à mon banquier? 18. Ne voulez-vous pas vous asseoir? 19. Nous vous sommes bien obligés. 20. Ce drap se vend-il fort bien? 21. Il se vend fort cher. 22. Ne devez-vous pas aller à la campagne, s'il fait beau temps? 23. Votre frère doit-il quitter la ville aujourd'hui? 24. Il doit partir demain matin. 25. Ma sœur se promène tous les matins.

Exercise 70.

1. Does your sister walk every day? 2. She takes a walk every morning. 3. She likes riding on horseback, and in a carriage.

[1] The English *a* or *an*, before a measure, is rendered into French by the article *le*, or *la*, etc.

4. What is that little girl called? 5. She is called L. 6. Is not that gentleman called L.? 7. No, sir; he is called G., and his cousin is called H. 8. How is your brother? 9. My brother is very well, but my sister is not well. 10. How are your two daughters? 11. They are tolerably well to-day. 12. Will you not sit down, gentlemen? 13. We are much obliged to you, madam, we have not time. 14. Does that book sell well? 15. It sells very well. 16. How is that silk sold an ell (*l'aune*)? 17. It is sold six francs an ell. 18. Is it fine weather to-day? 19. It is very fine weather; will you not take a walk? 20. I have no time to walk. 21. To whom does your brother apply? 22. He applies to his brother. 23. Is his brother at home? 24. No, sir; he is at Paris. 25. When does he intend to go to France? 26. He intends to go to France, in one month. 27. Is your sister to leave to-morrow morning? 28. She is to leave to-day, if (*s'il*) it is fine weather. 29. What do people say of this? 30. Nothing is said about it [L. 35]. 31. Are you too much fatigued to walk? 32. I am not too much fatigued, but I have no wish to walk. 33. Do you like walking or riding? 34. I like riding, when I have a good horse. 35. I do not like walking.

LEÇON XXXVII. LESSON XXXVII.

USE OF REFLECTIVE PRONOUN.—SE SOUVENIR, ETC.

1. The reflective pronoun is often used to express possession, instead of the possessive adjective. In such cases, the article takes the place of this adjective, before the noun. [§ 77, (9.)]

Vous chauffez-vous les pieds?	*Do you warm your feet?*
Je me chauffe les mains et les pieds.	*I warm my hands and feet.*

2. *Se souvenir* [2. ir. *See* § 62.], *se rappeler* [§ 49, (4.)], correspond to the English verb *to remember*. *Se rappeler* takes a *direct* object, that is, *no preposition* intervenes between the verb and its object, if the same be a noun or a pronoun.

Vous rappelez-vous ces demoiselles?	*Do you remember those young ladies?*
Je ne me les rappelle pas.	*I do not remember them.*

3. Custom seems, however, to sanction the use of the preposition *de* between the verb *se rappeler* and an infinitive.

Nous ne nous rappelons pas d'en avoir été privés (CONDILLAC).	*We do not remember having been deprived of it.*

4. *Se souvenir*, takes the preposition *de* before a noun or pronoun, as well as before an infinitive.

Vous souvenez-vous de cette affaire ?	*Do you remember that affair ?*
Je ne m'en souviens pas.	*I do not remember it.*
Je me souviens de lui avoir écrit.	*I remember having written to him.*

5. *Se coucher*, corresponds to the English verbs *to retire, to go to bed.*

Je me couche de bonne heure.	*I retire early.*

6. *Se lever* [§ 49, (6.)] means *to rise, to get up.*

Je me lève au point du jour.	*I rise at the break of day.*

Résumé of Examples.

Vous coupez-vous les ongles ?	*Do you cut your nails ?*
Je me coupe les ongles et les cheveux.	*I cut my nails and hair.*
Vous coupez-vous les doigts ?	*Do you cut your fingers ?*
Je me coupe souvent les doigts, quand je taille ma plume.	*I often cut my fingers, when I mend my pen.*
Vous rappelez-vous [§ 49, (4.)] les malheurs du frère de votre ami ?	*Do you remember the misfortunes of your friend's brother ?*
Je me rappelle ses malheurs.	*I remember his misfortunes.*
Je me les rappelle distinctement.	*I recollect them distinctly.*
Je me rappelle de l'avoir vu.	*I remember having seen him.*
Vous souvenez-vous de cela ?	*Do you remember that ?*
Je ne m'en souviens pas du tout.	*I do not remember it at all.*
A quelle heure vous couchez-vous ?	*At what hour do you retire ?*
Nous nous couchons tous les jours au coucher du soleil.	*We go to bed every day at sunset.*
Nous nous levons de meilleure heure que vous,—au lever du soleil.	*We rise earlier than you,—at sunrise.*
Il se lève à cinq heures du matin, et il se couche à dix heures et demie du soir.	*He rises at five o'clock in the morning, and goes to bed at half after ten in the evening.*

Exercise 71.

Associé, m. *partner ;*	Cheveux, m. pl. *hair ;*	Parfaitement, *perfectly ;*
Bois, m. *wood ;*	De meilleure heure, *earlier ;*	Perruquier, m. *hair-dresser ;*
Boucher, m. *butcher ;*	Doigt, m. *finger ;*	Poêle, m. *stove ;*
Se brûl-er, 1. ref. *to burn one's self ;*	Fer, m. *iron ;*	Pouce, m. *thumb ;*
Charpentier, m. *carpenter ;*	Feu, m. *fire ;*	Promesse, f *promise ;*
Se chauff-er, 1. ref. *to warm one's self ;*	Main, f. *hand ;*	Se souvenir, 2. *to remember* (*see* Venir, § 62.);
	S'occuper, 1. *to occupy one's self ;*	Travaill-er, 1. *to work.*

1. Le perruquier se coupe-t-il le pouce ? 2. Non, monsieur ; il se coupe les cheveux. 3. Le charpentier ne se coupe-t-il pas la main ? 4. Il ne se coupe pas la main, il coupe le bois. 5. Ne vous rappelez-vous pas cette dame ? 6. Je me rappelle cette dame et ces messieurs.

7. De quoi vous occupez-vous? 8. Nous nous occupons de nos affaires. 9. Vous souvenez-vous des fusils de votre père? 10. Je ne m'en souviens point du tout. 11. Cette petite fille ne se brûle-t-elle pas? 12. Elle ne se brûle pas, il n'y a pas de feu dans le poêle. 13. Pourquoi le boucher ne se chauffe-t-il pas? 14. Parcequ'il n'a pas froid. 15. Ces enfants se lèvent-ils de meilleure heure que moi? 16. Ils se couchent de bonne heure, et ils se lèvent tous les matins à six heures. 17. Votre associé ne veut-il pas s'asseoir? 18. Il n'a pas le temps de s'asseoir. 19. Vous souvenez-vous de vos promesses? 20. Je m'en souviens parfaitement. 21. Ne vous chauffez-vous pas, quand vous avez froid? 22. Je ne me chauffe presque jamais. 23. Ne se couche-t-on pas, quand on a sommeil? 24. On se couche quand on a sommeil, et on mange quand on a faim. 25. Quand on se porte bien, se lève-t-on de bonne heure? 26. Quand on se porte bien, on doit (*should*) se lever de bonne heure.

Exercise 72.

1. Do you rise early when you are well? 2. When I am well, I rise every morning at five o'clock. 3. Do you remember your cousin L.? 4. I remember him perfectly well. 5. Do you go to bed early? 6. We go to bed at ten o'clock. 7. Does not the tailor burn his fingers? 8. He does not burn his fingers, his iron is not warm. 9. Does the carpenter cut his thumb? 10. He cuts neither his thumb nor his hand. 11. Why do you not warm yourself? 12. I do not warm myself, because I am not cold. 13. Is it not very cold to-day? 14. It is not cold to-day, it rains. 15. Does your hair-dresser rise at sunrise? 16. The carpenter rises at sunrise, and goes to bed at sunset. 17. Do you rise earlier than I? 18. We rise every morning at the break of day. 19. Do you cut your hair often? 20. I cut my hair and my nails every month. 21. Do you remember that gentleman? 22. I remember him very well. 23. I do not remember him. 24. Do you cut your fingers, when you mend a pen? 25. I cut my hand, when I work. 26. Do you remember what you learn? 27. I do not remember all that (*tout ce que*) I learn. 28. Do you know if your father is well? 29. He is very well to-day. 30. Is not your mother well? 31. She is not very well. 32. Do you remember your friend's misfortunes? 33. I remember them. 34. I remember that.

LEÇON XXXVIII. LESSON XXXVIII.

SE TROMPER, S'ENNUYER, ETC.

1. The verb *tromper*, conjugated actively, corresponds to the English verb *to deceive*.

Il trompe tout le monde.	*He deceives every body.*

2. Conjugated reflectively, *se tromper* means *to be mistaken*; literally, *to deceive one's self*.

On se trompe bien souvent.	*One is often mistaken.*

3. *Ennuyer*, [§ 49, (2.)] used actively, means *to weary the mind, to tease, to bore*.

Cet homme ennuie ses auditeurs.	*That man wearies his hearers.*
Vous nous ennuyez par vos demandes.	*You tease*, or *weary us by your questions.*

4. *S'ennuyer* has no exact correspondent in English. It signifies generally, *to be* or *to become mentally weary of any thing or place*.

Nous nous ennuyons ici.	*We are weary of being here.*
Vous ennuyez-vous à la campagne?	*Are you weary of being in the country?*
Je m'ennuie partout.	*I find no amusement anywhere.*

5. *Je m'ennuie* means in fact, *I am mentally weary, I want change, amusement, occupation*, etc.

6. *S'amuser*, answers to the English expressions, *to amuse one's self, to take pleasure in, to spend one's time in, to find amusement in, to enjoy one's self*.

Nous nous amusons à la campagne.	*We enjoy ourselves in the country.*
Vous vous amusez à des bagatelles.	*You spend your time in trifles.*

RÉSUMÉ OF EXAMPLES.

On se trompe souvent soi-même, en cherchant à tromper les autres.	*We often deceive ourselves, while seeking to deceive others.*
Votre commis ne se trompe-t-il pas?	*Is not your clerk mistaken?*
Il se trompe bien rarement.	*He is very rarely mistaken.*
Ne vous trompez-vous pas fréquemment?	*Are you not frequently mistaken?*
Tout le monde est sujet à se tromper.	*Every one is apt to be mistaken.*
Ce marchand trompe tout le monde.	*That merchant deceives every body.*
Sa conversation nous ennuie.	*His conversation wearies us.*
Vous ennuyez vos amis par vos plaintes.	*You weary your friends by your complaints.*
Est-ce que je ne vous ennuie pas?	*Do I not weary you?*
Vous ennuyez-vous chez nous?	*Are you weary of remaining with us?*
Je m'ennuie à la ville, et je m'amuse à la campagne.	*I become weary of the city, and find amusement in the country.*
A quoi vous amusez-vous?	*With what do you amuse yourself?*
Je m'amuse à lire l'allemand.	*I amuse myself in reading German.*

Exercise 73.

Apprend-re, 4. ir. *to learn;*
Banquier, m. *banker;*
Client, m. *client, customer;*
Demeur-er, 1. *to dwell;*
Entend-re, 4. *to hear;*
Ennuyer, 1. *See* § 49,(2.)
Langue, f. *language;*
Malade, *sick;*
Mémoire, m. *bill;*
Préfér-er, 1. *to prefer;*
Quand, *when;*
Quelquefois, *sometimes;*
Rec-evoir, 3. *to receive;*
Rev-enir, 2. ir. *to come back;*
Tromp-er, 1. *to deceive.*

1. Aimez-vous à demeurer à la campagne? 2. Je préfère la campagne à la ville. 3. Vous ennuyez-vous souvent à la campagne? 4. Quand je m'ennuie à la campagne, je reviens à la ville. 5. Reçoit-on des nouvelles du Général L.? 6. On n'entend pas parler de lui. 7. Vous trompez-vous quelquefois? 8. Tout le monde se trompe quelquefois. 9. Le banquier trompe-t-il ses clients? 10. Il ne trompe ni ses clients, ni ses amis, il ne trompe personne. 11. Ne vous trompez-vous pas dans ce mémoire? 12. Je ne me trompe pas. 13. Vous amusez-vous à lire ou à écrire? 14. Je m'amuse à apprendre l'allemand et le français. 15. Avez-vous tort d'apprendre les langues? 16. J'ai raison de les apprendre. 17. Vous ennuyez-vous souvent? 18. Je m'ennuie quand je n'ai rien à faire. 19. A quoi vous amusez-vous, quand vous êtes à la campagne? 20. Nous nous promenons le matin, et nous travaillons le reste de la journée. 21. Vous portez-vous toujours bien? 22. Nous sommes quelquefois malades. 23. Envoyez-vous chercher le médecin? 24. Nous l'envoyons chercher. 25. Je vais le chercher.

Exercise 74.

1. Are you not mistaken? 2. I am not mistaken. 3. Is not the banker mistaken? 4. He is not mistaken, but his clerk is certainly (*certainement*) mistaken. 5. Does he not deceive you? 6. He does not deceive me, he deceives nobody. 7. Are you not wrong to deceive your father? 8. I do not intend to deceive him. 9. Does not the merchant make a mistake? 10. He makes a mistake in the bill which he writes. 11. Do you like the country or the city? 12. I prefer the city, I soon become weary of the country. 13. Does not that child weary you by his questions? 14. Does not that long story (*récit*, m.) weary you? 15. It does not weary me, it amuses me. 16. Do you amuse yourself when you are in the country? 17. I amuse myself, I learn French and Italian. 18. Are you not weary of remaining at your uncle's? 19. I am never weary of remaining there. 20. Is your brother often mistaken? 21. Every body is sometimes mistaken. 22. Does his conversation weary you? 23. On

the contrary, it amuses us. 24. Is your brother heard from? 25. Nothing is heard of him. [L. 35.] 26. Is your sister well? 27. No, sir; she is sick. 28. Do I weary you? 29. You do not weary me. 30. Am I mistaken? 31. You are not mistaken. 32. Is he often mistaken? 33. He is often mistaken. 34. Do you not rise late? 35. No, sir; I rise early.

LEÇON XXXIX. LESSON XXXIX.

SE PASSER, SE SERVIR, ETC.

1. The reflective verb, *se passer*, is used idiomatically in the sense of *to do without*. It is followed by the preposition *de*, when it comes before a noun or a verb.

Vous passez-vous de ce livre?	*Do you do without that book?*
Je ne puis m'en passer.	*I cannot do without it.*

2. *Se servir* [2. ir. *see* § 62], *to use*, also requires the preposition *de* before its object.

Je me sers de votre canif.	*I use your penknife.*
Je ne m'en sers pas.	*I do not use it.*

3. The second example of the two rules above, shows that when the object of those verbs is a thing, it is represented in the sentence by the pronoun *en*.

Je m'en sers, je m'en passe.	*I use it, I do without it.*

4. The pronoun[1] used as indirect object of a reflective verb, if representing a person, follows the verb [§ 100, (4.)]

Je puis me passer de lui.	*I can do without him.*
Je m'adresse à vous et à elle.	*I apply to you and to her.*

5. S'endormir [2. ir. *see* § 62.], *to fall asleep*, and s'éveiller, *to awake*, are also reflective.

Je m'endors aussitôt que je me couche.	*I fall asleep as soon as I go to bed.*
Je m'éveille à six heures du matin.	*I awake at six o'clock in the morning.*

6. S'approcher, *to come near, to approach;* s'éloigner, *to draw back, to leave*, take the preposition *de* before a noun. Their object, when a pronoun, is subject to Rules 3 and 4 above.

Votre fils s'approche-t-il du feu?	*Does your son draw near the fire?*
Il ne s'en approche pas.	*He does not come near it.*
Il s'éloigne de moi et de vous.	*He goes from me and from you.*

[1] The rule does not apply to the reflective pronoun, which is sometimes an indirect object.

Résumé of Examples.

Vous servez-vous de ce couteau ?	*Do you use that knife?*
Je ne m'en sers pas; il ne coupe pas.	*I do not use it; it does not cut.*
De quels couteaux vous servez-vous ?	*What knives do you use?*
Nous nous servons de couteaux d'acier.	*We use steel knives.*
Pouvez-vous vous passer d'argent ?	*Can you do without money?*
Nous ne pouvons nous en passer.	*We cannot do without it.*
Vous passez-vous de votre maître ?	*Do you do without your teacher?*
Nous nous passons de lui.	*We do without him.*
Vous adressez-vous à ces messieurs ?	*Do you apply to those gentlemen?*
Nous nous adressons à eux et à vous.	*We apply to them and to you.*
Vous vous endormez facilement.	*You go to sleep easily.*
Je m'éveille de très bonne heure.	*I awake very early.*
Pourquoi vous approchez-vous du feu?	*Why do you come near the fire?*
Je m'en approche, parce que j'ai froid ?	*I come near it, because I am cold.*
Nous nous éloignons du feu.	*We go from the fire.*
Nous nous en éloignons.	*We go from it.*
Nous nous approchons de notre père.	*We go near our father.*
Nous nous approchons de lui.	*We go near him.*

Exercise 75.

Aussi, *also;*	Encre, f. *ink;*	Ordinairement, *generally;*
Aussitôt—que, *as soon as;*	Fenêtre, f. *window;*	Plume, f. *pen;*
Canif, m. *penknife;*	Feu, m. *fire;*	Pourquoi, *why;*
Demoiselle, *young lady;*	Fourchette, f. *fork;*	Prêt-er, 1. *to lend;*
Domestique, m. *servant;*	Heure, f. *hour, o'clock;*	Quart, m. *quarter;*
	Moins, *less;* (*minus*).	Tail-er, *to mend.*
	Obligé, e, *obliged;*	

1. Pouvez-vous vous passer d'encre. 2. Nous pouvons nous en passer, nous n'avons rien à écrire. 3. Vous servez-vous de votre plume ? 4. Je ne m'en sers pas; en avez-vous besoin ? 5. Ne voulez-vous pas vous approcher du feu ? 6. Je vous suis bien obligé, je n'ai pas froid. 7. Pourquoi ces demoiselles s'éloignent-elles de la fenêtre ? 8. Elles s'en éloignent parce qu'il y fait trop froid. 9. Ces enfants ne s'adressent-ils pas à vous ? 10. Ils s'adressent à moi et à mon frère. 11. A quelle heure vous éveillez-vous le matin ? 12. Je m'éveille ordinairement à six heures moins un quart. 13. Vous levez-vous aussitôt que vous vous éveillez ? 14. Je me lève aussitôt que je m'éveille. 15. De quels livres vous servez-vous ? 16. Je me sers des miens et des vôtres. 17. Ne vous servez-vous pas de ceux de votre frère ? 18. Je m'en sers aussi. 19. Les plumes dont [L. 31, R. 8,] vous vous servez sont-elles bonnes ? 20. Pourquoi votre ami s'éloigne-t-il du feu ? 21. Il s'en éloigne parce qu'il a trop chaud. 22. Pourquoi votre domestique s'en approche-t-il ? 23. Il s'en approche pour se chauffer. 24. Vous ennuyez-vous ici ? 25. Je ne m'ennuie pas.

EXERCISE 76.

1. Will you lend me your penknife? 2. I cannot do without it, I want it to mend my pen. 3. Do you wish to use my book? 4. I wish to use it, will you lend it to me? 5. What knife does your brother use? 6. He uses my father's knife, and my brother's fork. 7. Will you not draw near the fire? 8. We are much obliged to you, we are warm. 9. Is that young lady warm enough? [L. 34, 3.] 10. She is very cold. 11. Tell her (*dites-lui*) to come near the fire. 12. Why do you go from the fire? 13. We are too warm. 14. Does your brother leave the window? 15. He leaves the window, because he is cold. 16. To whom does that gentleman apply? 17. He applies to me and to my brother. 18. Why does he not apply to me? 19. Because he is ashamed to speak to you. 20. Do you awake early every morning? 21. I awake early, when I go to bed early. 22. Why do you go to sleep? 23. I go to sleep because I am tired. 24. Are you afraid to go near your father? 25. I am not afraid to approach him. 26. Can you do without us? 27. We cannot do without you, but we can do without your brother. 28. Do you want my brother's horse? 29. No, sir; we can do without it. 30. Do you intend to do without money? 31. You know very well that we cannot do without it. 32. Is your brother weary of being here? 33. He is not weary of being here. 34. Come near the fire, my child.

LEÇON XL. LESSON XL.

S'EN ALLER, SE PLAIRE, ETC.

1. The verb *aller* (1. ir. § 62.), conjugated reflectively, and preceded by the word *en*, i. e., *s'en aller*, corresponds to the English expressions *to go away*, *to leave*.

2. INDICATIVE PRESENT OF THE VERB S'EN ALLER, *TO GO AWAY*.

Je m'en vais,	*I go away;*	Nous nous en allons,	*We go away;*
Tu t'en vas,	*Thou art going away;*		
Il s'en va,	*He goes away;*	Vous vous en allez,	*You are going away;*
		Ils s'en vont,	*They go away.*

3. THE SAME TENSE CONJUGATED INTERROGATIVELY.

Est-ce que je m'en vais?	*Do I go away?*	Nous en allons-nous?	*Do we go away?*
T'en vas-tu?	*Art thou going away?*	Vous en allez-vous?	*Do you go away?*
S'en va-t-il?	*Is he going away?*	S'en vont-ils?	*Do they go away?*

4. Se fâcher, *to be* or *become angry*, requires the preposition *contre* or *de* before the noun or pronoun following it.

Se fâche-t-il contre votre frère?	*Does he get angry with your brother?*
Il se fâche contre lui.	*He is angry with him.*
Vous vous fâchez d'un rien.	*You get angry at nothing.*

5. Se réjouir, *to rejoice*, is followed by the preposition *de*.

Je me réjouis de votre bonheur.	*I rejoice at your happiness.*

6. Se plaire [4. ir. *see* § 62,] *to take pleasure, to delight in any thing, to like to be in a place*, takes *à* before its object.

Je me plais à la campagne.	*I like to be in the country.*
Je me plais à étudier, à lire.	*I take pleasure in studying, in reading.*

7. Se dépêcher, se hâter, *to make haste*, take *de* before their object.

Dépêchez-vous de finir vos leçons.	*Make haste to finish your lessons.*
Pourquoi ne vous dépêchez-vous pas?	*Why do you not make haste?*

Résumé of Examples.

Le marchand s'en va-t-il aujourd'hui?	*Does the merchant go away to-day?*
Nous nous en allons demain.	*We are going away to-morrow.*
Je m'en vais quand je suis fatigué.	*I go away when I am tired.*
Pourquoi vous fâchez-vous contre lui?	*Why do you get angry with him?*
Il se plaît à jouer, il n'étudie jamais.	*He takes pleasure in playing, he never studies.*
Vous plaisez-vous chez vos parents?	*Do you like to be at your relations?*
De quoi vous réjouissez-vous?	*At what do you rejoice?*
Nous nous réjouissons de votre succès.	*We rejoice at your success.*
Nous nous en réjouissons.	*We rejoice at it.*
Pourquoi vous dépêchez-vous?	*Why do you make haste?*
Nous nous dépêchons d'écrire.	*We make haste to write.*
Nous nous plaisons en Angleterre.	*We like to be in England.*
Nous ne nous plaisons pas à Paris.	*We do not like to be in Paris.*
Nous ne nous y plaisons pas.	*We do not like to be there.*
Vous plaisez-vous à New-York?	*Do you like to be in New York?*
Nous nous y plaisons.	*We like to be there.*

Exercise 77.

Ambassadeur, m. *ambassador;*	Jamais, *never;*	Prochain, e, *next;*
Arrivée, f. *arrival;*	Jou-er, 1. *to play;*	Retourn-er, 1. *to return;*
Autrui, m. *others;*	Malheur, m. *misfortune;*	Semaine, f. *week;*
Bientôt, *soon;*	Mieux, *better;*	Souvent, *often;*
Cour-ir, 2. ir. *to run;*	Midi, *noon;*	Tante, f. *aunt;*
	Parce que, *because;*	Turc, turque, *Turkish.*

1. Vous en allez-vous bientôt? 2. Je m'en vais la semaine prochaine. 3. Pourquoi vous en allez-vous? 4. Parce que je ne me

plais pas ici. 5. Vous plaisez-vous mieux chez votre tante qu'ici? 6. Je m'y plais mieux. 7. N'avez-vous pas tort de vous en aller si tôt? 8. J'ai raison de m'en aller. 9. Ne vous réjouissez-vous pas des malheurs d'autrui? 10. Nous ne nous en réjouissons point. 11. Cet homme se fâche-t-il contre le jardinier? 12. Il se fâche contre lui, parce qu'il ne veut pas se dépêcher. 13. Se fâche-t-il bien souvent? 14. Il se fâche à tout moment, il se fâche d'un rien. 15. Ne vous dépêchez-vous jamais? 16. Je me dépêche toujours, quand j'ai quelque chose à faire. 17. Ne vous plaisez-vous pas à courir et à jouer? 18. Je me plais à jouer, et mon frère se plaît à lire. 19. Vous réjouissez-vous de l'arrivée de l'ambassadeur turc? 20. Je m'en réjouis. 21. Ne vous plaisez-vous pas en Amérique? 22. Je m'y plais beaucoup mieux qu'en France. 23. Votre écolier ne se plaît-il pas chez vous? 24. Il se plaît chez moi, mais il désire retourner chez son père. 25. Dépêchez-vous, il est déjà midi.

Exercise 78.

1. At what hour does your friend go away? 2. He goes away every morning at nine o'clock. 3. Do you go away with (*avec*) him? 4. I go away with him, when I have time. 5. Will you make haste to finish your letter? 6. I make haste to finish it. 7. Does the gardener get angry with his brother? 8. He gets angry with him, when he does not make haste. 9. Make haste my friend, it is ten o'clock. 10. Why do you not make haste? 11. I like to play, but I do not like to study. 12. Do you like to stay at my house? 13. I like to stay there. 14. Do you rejoice at the arrival of your mother? 15. I rejoice at it. 16. Is not your brother wrong to go away so soon? 17 He is right to go away, he has much to do at home. 18. Do you rejoice at other people's misfortunes? 19. I do not rejoice at them. 20. I rejoice at your success. 21. Does not your brother draw near the fire? 22. He goes from the fire, he is too warm. 23. Does that young lady get angry with you? 24. She gets angry at trifles (*de rien*). 25. Do you like to be in Paris? 26. I like to be there. 27. Can you do without me to-day? 28. We cannot do without you; make haste to finish your work (*ouvrage*). 29. Do you want your penknife? 30. I want to use it. 31. Make haste to rise, it is six o'clock. 32. Is it fine weather? 33. No, sir; it rains. 34. Is your father well this morning? 35. Yes, sir; he is very well.

LEÇON XLI. LESSON XLI.

THE PAST INDEFINITE. [§ 121.]

1. The past indefinite is composed of the present of the indicative of one of the auxiliary verbs, *avoir* and *être* [§ 45, (8.)], and the participle past of a verb. See the different paradigms of verbs, § 47 and following sections.

J'ai parlé, je suis arrivé.	*I have spoken, I have arrived.*

2. The past indefinite is used to express an action entirely completed, but performed at a time of which a part is not yet elapsed, or at a time entirely past, but not specified. [§121, (1.) (2.)]

J'ai vu votre père ce matin.	*I have seen your father this morning.*
Je ne vous ai pas encore parlé.	*I have not yet spoken to you.*

3. The past indefinite may also be used, when the time is specified. [§ 121, (3.)]

Je lui ai écrit la semaine dernière.	*I wrote to him last week.*
Je lui ai envoyé une lettre le mois dernier.	*I sent him a letter last month.*

4. In this tense, and in other compound tenses, the adverb is generally placed between the auxiliary and the participle. [§ 136, (3.)]

Vous nous avez souvent parlé.	*You have often spoken to us.*
Je ne l'ai pas encore vu.	*I have not yet seen him.*

5. The adverbs, aujourd'hui, *to-day ;* demain, *to-morrow ;* hier, *yesterday ;* polysyllabic adverbs of manner ending in *ment*, and long adverbs generally, do not come between the auxiliary and the participle, but follow Rule 1, Lesson 34. See § 136, (5.)

Vous avez lu dernièrement.	*You read lately.*

6. The unipersonal verb *y avoir*, [L. 33, R. 3, 4,] placed before a word expressing time, corresponds with the English word, *ago.*

J'ai reçu une lettre, il y a huit jours.	*I received a letter, eight days ago.*
Vous avez acheté une maison, il y a un an.	*You bought a house, a year ago.*

RÉSUMÉ OF EXAMPLES.

Vos neveux nous ont parlé.	*Your nephews spoke to us.*
Nous avons parlé à votre père.	*We spoke to your father.*
Le tailleur a-t-il fait mon habit ?	*Has the tailor made my coat ?*
Le boulanger a mis son chapeau.	*The baker has put on his hat.*
Le cordonnier a ôté ses souliers.	*The shoemaker has taken his shoes off.*

Votre frère a dit quelque chose.	*Your brother said something.*
Votre sœur qu'a-t-elle dit ?	*What did your sister say ?*
N'avez-vous rien dit à mon cousin ?	*Have you told my cousin nothing ?*
Je ne lui ai rien dit.	*I have told him nothing.*
Je ne l'ai jamais rencontré.	*I have never met him.*
Je ne leur ai jamais parlé.	*I never spoke to them.*
Qu'avez-vous fait aujourd'hui ?	*What have you done to-day ?*
Hier, nous n'avons pas travaillé.	*We did not work yesterday.*
En avez-vous souvent parlé ?	*Have you often spoken about it ?*
Je leur en ai souvent parlé.	*I have often spoken to them about it.*
Je ne le leur ai pas encore dit.	*I have not yet told them of it.*
N'avez-vous pas assez écrit ?	*Have you not written enough ?*
Il m'a écrit, il y a longtemps.	*He wrote to me, a long time ago.*
Il nous a répondu, il y a un mois.	*He replied to us, a month ago.*

Exercise 79.

Avocat, m. *barrister ;*	Garçon, m. *boy ;*	Mis, *from* mettre, *put on ;*
Cela, ceci, *that, this ;*	Hier, *yesterday ;*	Planter, t. *to plant ;*
Dit, *told, said ;*	Journée, f. *day ;*	Poirier, m. *pear-tree ;*
Étudier, t. *to study ;*	Lu, *from* lire, *read ;*	Soulier, m. *shoe ;*
Gant, m. *glove ;*	Ministre, m. *minister ;*	Vu, *from* voir, *seen.*

1. Qui vous a dit cela ? 2. L'avocat me l'a dit. 3. Lui avez-vous parlé de cette affaire ? 4. Je ne lui en ai pas encore parlé. 5. L'avez-vous vu dernièrement ? 6. Je l'ai vu, il y a quelques jours. 7. N'avez-vous pas écrit hier ? 8. Nous avons lu et écrit toute la journée. [L. 26, (9.)] 9. N'avez-vous pas ôté vos gants et vos souliers ? 10. Je n'ai pas ôté mes gants, mais j'ai ôté mon chapeau. 11. Le tailleur n'a-t-il pas mis son chapeau ? 12. Oui, monsieur ; il a mis son chapeau. 13. Qu'avez-vous fait à ce petit garçon ? 14. Je ne lui ai rien fait. 15. Ne lui avez-vous point dit que je suis ici ? 16. Je ne le lui ai pas encore dit. 17. Qu'avez-vous étudié ce matin ? 18. Nous avons étudié nos leçons, et nous avons lu nos livres. 19. Le jardinier du ministre a-t-il planté le poirier ? 20. Il l'a planté, il y a plus de huit jours. 21. Avez-vous acheté un habit de drap noir ? 22. J'en ai acheté un. 23. L'avez-vous porté aujourd'hui ? 24. Je ne l'ai pas encore porté. 25. Nous avons mis nos souliers et nos bas ce matin.

Exercise 80.

1. Have you studied to-day ? 2. We have no time to study, we have read a page. 3. Have you not written to my brother ? 4. I have not yet written to him. 5. Has not the German written to my mother ? 6. He has not yet written to her. 7. Have you told (*à*) my mother that I have taken (*pris*) this book ? 8. I have not yet seen your mother. 9. What have you done this morning ? 10. We have done nothing. 11. Have you taken off your coat ? 12. I have

not taken off my coat, it is too cold. 13. Has the bookseller written to your brother? 14. He wrote to him, a long time ago. 15. Did he write to him, a month ago? 16. He wrote to him, more than a year ago. 17. Have you planted a pear-tree? 18. We have planted several. 19. Is it too cold to (*pour*) plant trees? 20. It is too warm. 21. What has the gardener done to your little boy? 22. He has done nothing to him. 23. Has any one done any thing to him? 24. No one has done any thing to him. 25. Is any thing the matter with him? 26. Nothing is the matter with him. 27. Has your father put on his black hat? 28. No, sir; he has not put on his black hat. 29. What has your brother said? 30. He has said nothing. 31. Has your sister told you that? 32. She told it me. 33. Did you not work yesterday? 34. We did not work yesterday, we have nothing to do. 35. Your little boy has done nothing to-day.

LEÇON XLII. LESSON XLII.

THE PAST PARTICIPLE. [§ 134.]

1. The past participle, which, in French, forms a part of every compound tense, [§ 45, (8)] is susceptible of changes in its termination.

2. The student will find in the table of the terminations of the regular verbs [§ 60], the different changes which the past participle of those verbs undergoes. The feminine terminations of the past participle of the irregular verbs, will be found in the alphabetical table, § 62.

3. The last letter of the feminine termination is always an *e* mute.

4. The plural of a past participle not ending with an *s* is formed by the addition of that letter to the singular, masculine or feminine.

5. The past participle, accompanied by the auxiliary *avoir*, never agrees with the nominative or subject [§ 134, (3.)].

Les demoiselles ont chanté.	*The young ladies sang.*
Ces messieurs ont lu toute la journée.	*Those gentlemen read the whole day.*

6. The participle past, having *être* as its auxiliary, assumes in its termination the gender and number of the subject, [§ 134, (2.)]

Ma fille est arrivée ce matin.	*My daughter arrived this morning.*
Nos frères ne sont pas venus.	*Our brothers have not come.*

7. The participle, accompanied by the auxiliary *avoir*, agrees in gender and number with its direct object or *régime direct*, [§ 2, (2.) § 42, (4.)] when the object precedes it, [§ 134, (4.)]

Les dames que nous avons vues.	*The ladies whom we have seen.*
Les lettres que nous avons lues.	*The letters which we have read.*

8. When the *régime direct* or objective (accusative) follows the participle, no agreement takes place, [§ 134, (5.)]

Avez-vous vu les dames?	*Have you seen the ladies?*
Avons-nous lu les lettres?	*Have we read the letters?*

9. A past participle never agrees with its *régime indirect*, or indirect object (dative or ablative), [§ 2, (3.) § 42, (5.)]

Les dames à qui nous avons parlé.	*The ladies to whom we have spoken.*

10. The past participle used adjectively, that is, without an auxiliary, follows the rule of the adjective, [§ 66, (3.) § 134, (1.)]

Des livres bien imprimés.	*Well printed books.*

11. The participle, preceded by the relative pronoun *en*, remains invariable, although the *en* should relate to a feminine or plural noun, [§ 135, (7.)]

Avez-vous apporté des plumes?	*Have you brought pens?*
J'en ai apporté.	*I have brought some.*

12. The presence of *en* does not, however, prevent the agreement of the participle, when it is preceded by a direct regimen, [§ 135, (7.)]

Les plumes que j'en ai apportées.	*The pens which I have brought from it.*

Résumé of Examples.

Vos sœurs ont-elles écrit?	*Have your sisters written?*
Elles n'ont pas encore écrit.	*They have not yet written.*
Les lettres que nous avons écrites.	*The letters which we have written.*
Avez-vous écrit vos lettres?	*Have you written your letters?*
Je les ai lues; je les ai écrites.	*I have read them; I have written them.*
Les avez-vous apportées?	*Have you brought them?*
Je ne les ai pas apportées.	*I have not brought them.*
Avez-vous appelé ces dames?	*Have you called those ladies?*
Je ne les ai pas appelées.	*I have not called them.*
Qui avez-vous vu ce matin?	*Whom have you seen this morning?*
Nous avons vu ces demoiselles.	*We have seen those young ladies.*
Nous les avons vues.	*We have seen them.*
Nous ne leur avons pas parlé.	*We have not spoken to them.*
Avez-vous des livres reliés?	*Have you bound books?*
J'ai des livres brochés.	*I have unbound (stitched, in paper covers,) books.*
Avez-vous acheté des pommes?	*Have you bought apples?*
J'en ai acheté.	*I have bought some.*
Nous en avons acheté.	*We have bought some.*
Nous les en avons persuadés.	*We have persuaded them of it.*

Exercise 81.

Achet-er, 1. *to buy*, [§ 49, (5.)]
Apport-er, 1. *to bring*;
Appel-er, 1. *to call*, [§ 49, (4.)]
Broch-er, 1. *to stitch*;
Bourse, f. *purse*;
Cass-er, 1. *to break*;
Commission, f. *errand*;
Donn-er, 1. *to give*;
Dit, *from* Dire, 4. ir. *said*;
Entend-re, 4. *to hear*;
Examin-er, 1. *to examine*;
Exprès, *on purpose*;
Fleur, f. *flower*;
Gard-er, 1. *to keep*;
Gravure, f. *engraving*;
Laiss-er, 1. *to leave*;
Marchand, m. *merchant*;
Musique, f. *music*;
Oubli-er, 1. *to forget*;
Point, *not*, a stronger negative than *pas*;
Rec-evoir, 3. *to receive*;
Reli-er, 1. *to bind*;
Revenus, m. p. *income*;
Tasse, f *cup*;
Vu, *from* voir, 3. ir. *seen*.

1. Nous avez-vous apporté nos habits? 2. Nous ne les avons pas encore apportés. 3. Les avez-vous oubliés? 4. Nous ne les avons pas oubliés, mais nous n'avons pas eu le temps de les apporter. 5. Pourquoi n'avez-vous pas appelé les marchands? 6. Je les ai appelés, mais ils ne m'ont pas entendu. 7. Avez-vous entendu cette musique? 8. Je l'ai entendue. 9. N'avez-vous pas vu les jolies fleurs que j'ai apportées? 10. Je les ai vues; à qui les avez-vous données? 11. Je ne les ai données à personne, je les ai gardées pour vous. 12. Avez-vous bien examiné ces gravures? 13. Je les ai bien examinées. 14. Les avez-vous achetées? 15. Je ne les ai point achetées. 16. N'avez-vous point reçu vos revenus? 17. Je ne les ai point encore reçus. 18. La domestique a-t-elle cassé ces tasses? 19. Elle les a cassées. 20. A-t-elle cassé des tasses exprès? 21. Elle n'en a pas cassé exprès. 22. Avez-vous acheté des livres reliés, ou brochés? 23. J'ai acheté des livres reliés. 24. Nous avez-vous dit ces paroles? 25. Nous vous les avons dites, mais vous les avez oubliées. 26. Je n'ai pas oublié votre commission.

Exercise 82.

1. Have you seen my cups? 2. I have not yet seen them. 3. Have you brought me my books? 4. I have not forgotten them, I have left them at my brother's. 5. Has your mother called your sisters? 6. She has not called them. 7. Has the servant told you this news? (*nouvelle.*) 8. She has told me this news. 9. She has told it me. 10. Have you not forgotten my errand? 11. We have not forgotten it, we have forgotten your money. 12. Where have you left your purse? 13. We left it at the merchant's. 14. Have you brought the beautiful (*belles*) engravings which I saw at your bookseller's? 15. I have not seen them. 16. Has your mother bought them? 17. She has bought books, but she has bought no engravings. 18. Has that little girl broken my cups? 19. She has broken them on purpose. 20. Does that lady receive her income

every month? 21. She receives it every six months. 22. Is the house which you have bought large? 23. I have bought no house. 24. Did you receive a letter from your father yesterday? 25. I re-received a letter from him, four days ago. 26. Have you spoken to those ladies? 27. I have spoken to them. 28. Have you given them flowers? 29. I have given them some (*en*). 30. Are the books which you have bought bound? 31. No, sir; they are in paper covers. 32. Have you examined that house? 33. I have not examined it. 34. Your brother (*en*) has examined several (*plusieurs*).

LEÇON XLIII. LESSON XLIII.

USE OF THE AUXILIARIES (§ 46).

1. The active verb, [§ 43, (2.) (3.)] that is, the verb which has or may have a direct regimen or object, always takes *avoir* as its auxiliary [(§ 46, (1.)]

Nous avons écrit à notre banquier. *We have written to our banker.*

2. Most neuter verbs,[1] *i. e.*, verbs which cannot have a direct object, take also the auxiliary *avoir*.

Nous avons couru, marché, parlé. *We have run, walked, spoken.*

3. The compound tenses of a few neuter verbs are, however, conjugated with *être:* aller, *to go;* arriver, *to arrive;* entrer, *to enter, to go in;* rentrer, *to go in again;* tomber, *to fall;* décéder, mourir, *to die;* naître, *to be born;* partir, *to start;* venir, *to come;* parvenir, *to succeed;* devenir, *to become;* revenir, *to return.*

A quelle heure êtes-vous venu? *At what hour did you come?*
Je suis[2] né en France. *I was born in France.*

4. A few neuter verbs [see list § 46, (3.)] take *avoir*, when they express action, and *être*, when they express situation.

Votre frère a-t-il sorti ce matin? *Has your brother gone out this morning?* i. e., *Has he been out?*
Votre frère est-il sorti? *Has your brother gone out?* i. e., *Is he out now?*

5. The past indefinite of the verb *être* [4. ir.] (*J'ai été*, &c.) is

[1] "There are in French," says Girault Duvivier, "about 600 neuter verbs; and of these upwards of 550 take *avoir*."

[2] Observe that when the person spoken of, is *living*, the French use the *present* and not the *past* of the auxiliary, with the past participle of naître, *to be born:* Cette dame *est* née en Angleterre. *That lady (is) was born in England.* Mon frère *est* né en France. *My brother (is) was born in France.*

used instead of the past indefinite of *aller* (*Je suis allé*); when speaking of a place where one has been.

Le médecin a été à Paris.	*The physician has been at Paris.*
J'ai été à l'église ce matin.	*I went to church this morning.*

6. When, however, we are still in a given place, or on the road towards it, the expression, *Je suis allé*, &c., is used.

Le médecin est allé à Londres.	*The physician has gone to London.*
Votre sœur est allée à l'église.	*Your sister has gone to church.*

RÉSUMÉ OF EXAMPLES.

Avez-vous été au bal hier au soir?	*Did you go to the ball last evening?*
Nous n'y avons pas été.	*We did not go.*
Où cette demoiselle a-t-elle été?	*Whither did that young lady go?*
Elle a été chez son frère, et chez nous.	*She went to her brother's, and to our house.*
Où votre sœur est-elle allée ce matin?	*Where is your sister gone this morning?*
Elle est allée trouver sa cousine.	*She has gone to her cousin.*
N'avez-vous pas sorti aujourd'hui?	*Did you not go out to-day?*
Je n'ai pas encore sorti.	*I have not yet been out.*
Où monsieur le général est-il?	*Where is the general?*
Je ne sais pas, monsieur, il est sorti.	*I do not know, sir, he has gone out.*
Où ce monsieur est-il né?	*Where was that gentleman born?*
Il est né à Paris ou à Lyon.	*He was born in Paris or Lyons.*
Votre nièce a-t-elle été voir son frère?	*Did your niece go to see her brother?*
Elle a été le voir hier.	*She went to see him yesterday (and is back).*
Elle est allée le voir hier.	*She went to see him yesterday (and is not back).*

EXERCISE 83.

Bijouterie, f. *jewelry;*	Maçon, m. *mason;*	Orfèvre, m. *goldsmith;*
Chapelier, m. *hatter;*	Magasin, m. *warehouse;*	Part-ir, 2. ir. *to set out;*
Été, (*from* être, 4. ir.) *been;*	Malade, *sick;*	Retourn-er, 1. *to return;*
Espagne, f. *Spain;*	Marchandise, f. *merchandise;*	Sort-ir, 2. ir. *to go out;*
Horloger, m. *watch-maker;*	Né, (*from* Naître, 4. ir.) *to be born;*	Venu, (*from* venir, 2. ir.) *come.*

1. A quelle heure votre sœur est-elle venue? 2. Elle est venue à huit heures moins un quart. 3. Ces demoiselles sont-elles nées à Rouen, ou à Caen? 4. Elles ne sont nées ni à Rouen ni à Caen, elles sont nées à Strasbourg. 5. L'horloger est-il chez lui? 6. Non, monsieur; il est allé à son magasin. 7. A-t-il été à Paris cette année? 8. Oui, madame; il y a été. 9. Y a-t-il acheté des marchandises? 10. Il y a acheté de la bijouterie. 11. Avez-vous été trouver mon père? 12. J'ai été le trouver. 13. Votre chapelier a-t-il sorti aujourd'hui? 14. Il n'a pas sorti, il est malade. 15. Le maçon est-il

à la maison? 16. Non, madame; il est sorti. 17. Quand est-il sorti? 18. Il est sorti il y a une heure. 19. Votre chapelier est-il arrivé aujourd'hui, ou hier? 20. Il est arrivé hier, à quatre heures du matin. 21. Notre tailleur a-t-il été voir son père aujourd'hui? 22. Il est parti pour Lyon. 23. L'orfèvre de mon cousin n'est-il pas parti pour l'Espagne? 24. Non, monsieur; il est retourné en Allemagne. 25. Ma sœur a été à l'église ce matin, et elle est allée à l'école, il y a une demi-heure.

Exercise 84.

1. Is the physician at home? 2. No, sir; he is not at home; he is out. 3. Have you been out this morning? 4. No, sir; I have not been out; I am sick. 5. Is your sister's little girl out? 6. Yes, sir; she is out, she is at my brother's. 7. At what hour did the hatter arrive? 8. He arrived last evening at nine. 9. Did the jeweller go to Paris, or to Lyons this year? 10. He went to Paris six months ago, but he is back (*de retour*). 11. Did you go to my brother, or to my sister? 12. I have not had time to go to them. 13. Where was that gentleman born? 14. He was born in England, in Exeter, or in Portsmouth. 15. Was not your sister born in Paris? 16. No, sir; she was born in Madrid, in Spain. 17. Did you tell me that your brother has bought a good house? 18. He has bought a very good house, in London. 19. Do you know at what time the watchmaker arrived? 20. He arrived this morning, at a quarter before five. 21. Has he brought much jewelry? 22. He has not brought much jewelry, but he has brought many watches (*montre*, f.) 23. Has he been in France, or in Germany? 24. He has been in France, in Germany, and in Switzerland (*Suisse*). 25. Is your sister in (*à la maison*), sir? 26. No, sir; she is out, she has gone to church. 27. Did she go to school yesterday? 28. She went to school, and to church. 29. Is she there now? 30. No sir; she is back. 31. Has the hatter arrived? 32. Yes, sir; he has arrived. 33. When did he arrive? 34. He arrived yesterday, at nine o'clock in the morning.

LEÇON XLIV. LESSON XLIV.

MENER, PORTER, AMENER, APPORTER, ETC.

1. *Combien de temps* corresponds with the English expression *how long.*

Combien de temps avez-vous demeuré en Italie?	*How long did you live in Italy?*

2. *Combien de fois* answers to the English, *how often, how many times.*

Combien de fois y avez-vous été ?	*How many times have you been there ?*

3. *Jusqu'où* is used for *how far, what distance,* etc.

Jusqu'où avez-vous été ?	*How far have you been ?*

4. *Jusqu'à quelle heure* (*till what hour,*) means also, *how late.*

Jusqu'à quelle heure avez-vous attendu ?	*How late did you wait ?*

5. *D'où* means *whence;* par où, *which way, in what direction.*

D'où venez-vous mon ami ?	*Whence do you come, my friend ?*
Par où votre ami est-il allé ?	*Which way did your friend go ?*

6. Mener [§ 49.], porter, *to take, to carry;* amener, apporter, *to bring, to take with one;* emmener, emporter, *to take, to carry away.* We use mener, amener, emmener, for *to take, to bring, to take away,* in the sense of *conducting, leading, guiding, on foot or in a vehicle.* Porter, apporter, emporter, mean *to carry, to bear, to carry away,* etc.

Menez votre sœur à l'école.	*Take your sister to school.*
Portez ce livre à votre sœur.	*Take this book to your sister.*

Résumé of Examples.

Jusqu'où votre frère est-il allé ?	*How far has your brother gone ?*
Il est allé jusqu'à Paris.	*He has gone as far as Paris.*
Combien de temps va-t-il y rester ?	*How long is he going to stay there ?*
Il va y rester jusqu'au printemps.	*He is going to stay there until spring.*
Combien de temps avez-vous demeuré à Londres ?	*How long did you live in London ?*
Nous y avons demeuré six ans.	*We lived there six years.*
Jusqu'où avez-vous été ?	*How far did you go ?*
Nous avons été jusqu'aux Champs Élysées.	*We went as far as the Champs-Élysées.*
Jusqu'à quelle heure avez-vous écrit ?	*How late did you write ?*
J'ai écrit jusqu'à minuit.	*I wrote until midnight.*
D'où ces Allemandes viennent-elles ?	*Whence come those German ladies ?*
Elles viennent d'Aix-la-Chapelle.	*They come from Aix-la-Chapelle.*
Par où sont-elles venues ?	*Which way did they come ?*
Elles sont venues par Bruxelles.	*They came by Brussels.*
Menez-vous cette petite fille à l'école ?	*Do you take (lead) that little girl to school ?*
Je ne l'y mène pas, je l'y porte, elle est trop petite pour marcher.	*I do not lead her there, I carry her there, she is too small to walk.*
Amenez-vous vos enfants ?	*Do you bring your children ?*
Portez-vous une lettre à la poste ?	*Do you take a letter to the post-office ?*
J'emmène mon cheval, j'emporte ma montre.	*I take away my horse, I take away my watch.*

Exercise 85.

Bruit, m. *noise;*	Ici, *here;*	Pied, m. *foot;*
Drap, m. *cloth;*	Loin, *far;*	Quitt-er, l. *to leave;*
Élève, m. *pupil;*	Magnifique, *magnificent;*	Soieries, f. p. *silk goods,*
Fils, m. *son;*	Midi, *noon;*	Voiture, *carriage;*
Fin, e, *fine;*	Nouvelle, f. *news;*	Voyageur, m. *traveller;*

1. Le jeune homme est-il allé loin? 2. Il n'est pas allé bien loin, il n'est allé que jusqu'à Paris. 3. Vos enfants font trop de bruit, pourquoi ne les emmenez-vous pas? 4. Ils sont malades, ils ne peuvent marcher. 5. Comment les avez-vous amenés ici? 6. Je les ai amenés en voiture. 7. À quelle heure amenez-vous le médecin? 8. Je l'amène tous les jours à midi. 9. Combien de fois par jour menez-vous vos élèves à l'église? 10. Je les mène à l'église deux fois par jour. 11. Combien de fois y avez-vous été? 12. J'y ai été plusieurs fois. 13. Par où ces voyageurs sont-ils venus? 14. Ils sont venus par Amiens et par Rouen. 15. D'où apportez-vous cette nouvelle? 16. Je l'apporte de Cologne. 17. D'où avez-vous amené ces superbes chevaux? 18. Je les ai amenés d'Angleterre. 19. Si vous quittez la France, avez-vous l'intention d'emmener votre fils? 20. J'ai l'intention de l'emmener. 21. Qu'avez-vous apporté de France? 22. Nous avons apporté de magnifiques soieries, des draps fins, et des chapeaux de Lyon. 23. Avez-vous amené votre fille à pied ou à cheval? 24. Je l'ai amenée en voiture. 25. Vos frères nous ont apporté des livres.

Exercise 86.

1. How long did your son live in London? 2. He lived there ten years. 3. How far has the physician gone? 4. The physician has gone as far as Cologne. 5. Has he taken his son with him? 6. He has not taken him. 7. How have you brought your two little girls? 8. I brought one in a carriage, and I carried the other. 9. Is she too little to walk? 10. She is not too small to walk, but she is sick. 11. Have you brought your horse? 12. We have brought two horses. 13. Have you brought the books which you have promised me (*promis*)? 14. I have forgotten to bring them. 15. Has that lady brought her eldest (*aîné*) son? 16. She has brought all her children. 17. How did they come? 18. They came in a carriage. 19. Which way did your brother come from Germany? 20. He came by Aix-la-Chapelle and Brussels. 21. Do you intend to take your son to school this afternoon? 22. I do not intend to take him there, it is too cold. 23. Is that child too sick to walk? 24. He is too sick to walk, and I intend to carry him. 25. Why do

you not take him in a carriage? 26. My brother has taken my horse away. 27. Have you brought the physician? 28. I have not brought him, no one is sick at our house. 29. Will you take this book to church? 30. I have another, I do not want it. 31. Have you taken my letter to the post-office? 32. I have forgotten it. 33. How late did you write? 34. I wrote until midnight (*minuit*). 35. Whence do your sisters come? 36. They come from Paris.

LEÇON XLV. LESSON XLV.

AUXILIARY AND PARTICIPLE OF REFLECTIVE AND UNIPERSONAL VERBS.

1. The reflective or pronominal verb always takes *être* as its auxiliary [§ 46, (2), 2.]

Votre cousin s'est promené.	*Your cousin has taken a walk.*
Nos amis se sont flattés.	*Our friends have flattered themselves.*

2. Although the past participle of a reflective verb be conjugated with *être*, it agrees with its direct regimen, when that regimen precedes it, and is invariable when the regimen follows it. The student should be careful to see, if the reflective pronoun be a direct, or an indirect regimen [§ 135.]

Vous vous êtes flattées, Mesdemoiselles.	*You have flattered yourselves, young ladies.*
Elles se sont donné la main.	*They have given (to) each other the hand.*

It will be easily perceived that *se*, in the first sentence, is a *direct* regimen, and that the same word, in the second, represents an *indirect* object.

3. Verbs essentially unipersonal, *i. e.*, verbs which cannot be conjugated otherwise, take *avoir* as an auxiliary.

Il a plu, il a neigé, il a gelé.	*It rained, it snowed, it froze.*

4. Verbs occasionally unipersonal, take *être* as an auxiliary.

Il lui est arrivé un malheur.	*A misfortune has happened to him.*

5. Faire [4. ir.] used unipersonally, and y avoir, *to be there*, take the auxiliary *avoir*.

A-t-il fait beau temps le mois passé?	*Was it fine weather last month?*
Y a-t-il eu beaucoup de monde?	*Were there many people there?*

6. The past participle of a unipersonal verb is always invariable [§ 135, (6.)]

Les pluies qu'il y a eu cet été.	*The rains which we have had this summer.*

Résumé of Examples.

Les Italiennes se sont-elles promenées?	*Did the Italian ladies take a walk?*
Oui, monsieur; elles se sont promenées.	*Yes, sir; they have taken a walk.*
Nous nous sommes aperçus de cela.	*We perceived that.*
Votre mère s'est-elle bien portée?	*Has your mother been well?*
Vos sœurs se sont-elles assises?	*Did your sisters sit down?*
Cette marchandise s'est-elle bien vendue?	*Did that merchandise sell well?*
Vos enfants se sont-ils appliqués à l'étude?	*Did your children apply to study?*
Ils s'y sont appliqués.	*They applied to it.*
Nous nous sommes donné de la peine. [§ 135, (1.)]	*We gave (to) ourselves trouble.*
Quel temps a-t-il fait ce matin?	*What weather was it this morning?*
N'a-t-il pas fait beau temps?	*Was it not fine weather?*
Quel malheur est-il arrivé?	*What misfortune has happened?*
Vous est-il arrivé quelque chose?	*Has any thing happened to you?*
Il ne m'est rien arrivé.	*Nothing has happened to me.*

Exercise 87.

Acier, m. *steel;*	S'asse-oir, 3. ir. ref. *to sit down;*	Plu, *from* pleuvoir, *rained;*
S'adress-er, 1. ref. *to apply (to a person or place);*		Plume, f. *pen;*
	S'ennuy-er, 1. pec. [§ 49.] *to grow weary;*	Se port-er, 1. ref. *to be* or *do;*
S'aperc-evoir, 3. ref. *to perceive;*	Grél-er, 1. pec. *to hail;* Hollandais, e, *Dutch;*	Se tromp-er, 1. ref. *to be mistaken;*
S'appliqu-er, 1. *to apply (to a thing);*	Neig-er, 1. pec. *to snow;* Peine, f. *trouble;*	Se serv-ir. 2. ir. ref. *to use;* Se vend-re, 4. ref. *to sell.*

1. A qui vos sœurs se sont-elles adressées? 2. Elles se sont adressées à moi. 3. Ne se sont-elles pas trompées? [L. 38, 1.] 4. Elles se sont trompées. 5. Vous êtes-vous aperçu de votre erreur? 6. Je ne m'en suis pas aperçu. 7. Vous êtes-vous ennuyés à la campagne? 8. Nous nous y sommes ennuyés. [L. 38, 4.] 9. Ces demoiselles se sont-elles ennuyées chez vous? 10. Elles s'y sont ennuyées. 11. De quoi vous êtes-vous servie pour écrire, mademoiselle? [L. 39, 2.] 12. Je me suis servie d'une plume d'or. 13. Ces écolières ne se sont-elles pas servies de plumes d'acier? 14. Elles se sont servies de plumes d'argent. 15. La Hollandaise s'est-elle assise? 16. Elle ne s'est point assise. 17. Lui est-il arrivé un malheur? 18. Il ne lui est rien arrivé, elle ne se porte pas très bien. 19. Ne s'est-elle pas donné [§ 135, (1.)] de la peine pour rien?

20. Cette soie ne s'est-elle pas bien vendue? 21. Elle s'est très bien vendue. 22. N'a-t-il pas fait beau temps toute la journée? 23. Non, monsieur; il a plu,[1] il a neigé et il a grêlé. 24. N'est-il rien arrivé aux deux dames que nous avons vues ce matin? 25. Non, madame; il ne leur est rien arrivé.

EXERCISE 88.

1. Has it rained to-day? 2. It has not rained, but it has hailed and snowed. 3. Has any thing happened to your little boy? 4. Nothing has happened to him, but he is sick to-day. 5. Did your sister sit down at your house? 6. She did not sit down, she was sick. 7. Did that cloth sell well? 8. It sold well, we have sold it all. 9. Did you perceive your error (*erreur*)? 10. We perceived it. 11. Were not your sisters mistaken in this affair? 12. They were not mistaken. 13. Were not your cousins weary of being in the country? 14. They were weary of being at my brother's. 15. What have you used, to write your exercises? 16. I used a gold pen, and my brother used a silver pen. 17. Have you used my penknife (*canif*)? 18. I have used it. 19. What has happened to you? 20. Nothing has happened to me. 21. Has your mother been well? 22. She has not been well. 23. Did your brothers apply to their studies, at school? 24. They applied to their studies, and have finished their lessons. 25. What weather was it this morning? 26. It was very fine weather. 27. Has your sister taken much trouble in this affair? 28. She has taken much trouble for nothing. 29. Did the Dutch ladies walk? 30. They walked this morning. 31. How far did they walk? 32. They walked as far as your brother's. 33. Did you shake hands? (have you given each other the hand?) 34. We shook hands. 35. Those ladies flattered themselves very much (*beaucoup*).

LEÇON XLVI. LESSON XLVI.

THE PASSIVE VERB. (§ 54.)

1. The passive verb is conjugated by adding to the verb *être*, in all its tenses, the past participle of an active verb. See model, § 54.

2. This participle must agree in gender and number with the subject [§ 134, (2.) L. 42, R. 6.]

[1] This sentence might be written: *Il a plu, neigé, et grêlé.* See Lesson 87, Rule 2.

Ces vieillards sont respectés.	*Those old men are respected.*
Ces enfants sont aimés de tout le monde.	*Those children are loved by everybody.*

3. The genius of the French language seems to prefer the active to the passive voice. Many expressions, which are in the passive in English, are accordingly rendered into French by the active or reflective [§ 128, (5.) § 113, (1.)].

Cette maison est à louer ou à vendre.	*That house is to be let or sold.*
Ma sœur est à plaindre.	*My sister is to be pitied.*
Cet homme est à craindre.	*That man is to be feared.*
Cet homme s'appelle H. [L. 36, R. 2.]	*That man is called H.*
Cet homme se trompe. [L. 38, R. 2.]	*That man is mistaken.*
On dit que cela est ainsi. [L. 35, R. 2.]	*It is said that it is so.*
On nous a dit cela. [L. 35, R. 2.]	*We have been told that.*

4. In answer to a question [*see* L. 24, R. 12], the pronoun *le* corresponds in signification with the English word *so*, or *it*, expressed or understood. *Le* refers then to a noun not *determined* (not preceded by an article or a possessive adjective), to an adjective, to a verb or even to a whole sentence.

Ces enfants sont-ils aimés?	*Are those children loved?*
Ils ne le sont pas.	*They are not (so).*
Ces demoiselles sont-elles sœurs?	*Are those young ladies sisters?*
Elles ne le sont pas.	*They are not.*

5. When *le* refers to a determined noun, it often corresponds in signification to the pronoun *he*, *she*, or *they*, which may or may not be expressed in the English sentence. *Le* must then assume the gender and number of the noun to which it refers.

Êtes-vous la sœur de mon ami?	*Are you the sister of my friend?*
Je la suis.	*I am (she).*

Résumé of Examples.

Leur conduite est-elle approuvée?	*Is their conduct approved?*
Elle n'est approuvée de personne.	*It is approved by nobody.*
Cette dame est-elle estimée et respectée?	*Is that lady esteemed and respected?*
Elle n'est ni estimée ni respectée.	*She is neither esteemed nor respected.*
Ces marchandises sont à vendre.	*Those goods are to be sold (for sale).*
Ces enfants sont à plaindre.	*Those children are to be pitied.*
A-t-on dit quelque chose à mon frère?	*Has anything been said to my brother?*
On ne lui a rien dit.	*Nothing has been said to him.*
Savez-vous comment cela s'appelle?	*Do you know how that is called?*
Madame, êtes-vous maîtresse ici?	*Madame, are you mistress here?*
Je ne le suis pas, Monsieur.	*I am not (so), sir.*
Êtes-vous la maîtresse de la maison?	*Are you the mistress of the house?*
Je la suis.	*I am (she).*

Exercise 89.

S'appel-er, 1. pec. *to be called* [§ 49, (4.)];
Auteur, m. *author;*
Blâm-er, 1. *to blame;*
Car, *for;*
Conduite, f. *conduct;*
Croi-re, 4. ir. *to believe;*
Écolier, m. *scholar;*
Jardin, m. *garden;*
Lou-er, 1. *to let, to praise;*
Mère, f. *mother;*
Paresseux, se, *idle;*
Pun-ir, 2. *to punish;*
Rarement, *seldom;*
Relieur, m. *bookbinder;*
Souvent, *often;*
Us-er, 1. *to wear out;*
Vend-re, 4. *to sell;*

1. Votre mère est-elle aimée de sa sœur? 2. Elle est aimée de son frère et de sa sœur. 3. Les Italiens sont-ils aimés des Français? 4. Vos écoliers ne sont-ils pas blâmés? 5. Ils sont blâmés quelquefois. 6. Sont-ils souvent punis? 7. Ils sont rarement punis. 8. Par qui êtes-vous puni, quand vous êtes paresseux? 9. Je ne suis jamais puni. 10. Sa conduite a-t-elle été approuvée? 11. Elle a été approuvée de tout le monde. 12. Elle a été approuvée par[1] ses amis. 13. Cet auteur est-il estimé? 14. Il est estimé de tout le monde. 15. Le jardin du relieur est-il à vendre ou à louer? 16. On dit qu'il est à louer. 17. Le menuisier a-t-il fait faire un habit? 18. Il en a fait faire deux. 19. Les habits que vous avez achetés sont-ils usés (*worn out*)? 20. Ils sont usés, j'en ai fait faire d'autres. 21. Dit-on que nos amis sont aimés de tout le monde? 22. On ne le dit pas, car on ne le croit pas. 23. Les dames que nous avons vues à l'église hier au soir, sont-elles sœurs? 24. Elles ne le sont pas, on dit qu'elles sont cousines. 25. On dit que l'officier que vient d'arriver s'appelle S.

Exercise 90.

1. Are you blamed or praised? 2. I am neither blamed nor praised. 3. Is not your cousin esteemed by every body? 4. She is esteemed by nobody. 5. What has been said of my brother? 6. Nothing has been said of him. 7. Do you know if your brother's house is to be let? 8. I have been told (*on m'a dit*) that it is to be sold. 9. Is not an idle person to be pitied? 10. The idle man is to be pitied. 11. Is your son sometimes punished at school? 12. He is always punished when he is idle. 13. Are your scholars praised, when they are diligent (*diligent*)? 14. They are praised, when they are diligent, and they are blamed when they are idle. 15. Is that lady esteemed and respected? 16. She is loved, esteemed, and respected by every body. 17. What has been told you? 18. We have been told that your brother is respected by every body. 19. Madam, are you Mr. S.'s sister? 20. No, sir; I am not. 21. Madam, are

[1] The prepositions *de* and *par* are used indifferently after many passive verbs.

you pleased with your son's conduct? 22. No, sir; I am not, for he is blamed by every body. 23. How is that large (*gros*) man called? 24. It is said that he is called H. 25. What is your brother's name? 26. He is called James. 27. Have you been told that my brother has arrived? 28. We have been told so. 29. Are the goods which your brother has brought, for sale? 30. They are not for sale. 31. Has the bookbinder had a coat made? 32. He has had a coat made. 33. Is his other coat worn out? 34. The coat which he bought last year is worn out.

LEÇON XLVII. LESSON XLVII.

S'EN ALLER, ÊTRE, ETC.

1. In the compound tenses of the verb s'en aller, *to go away*, [L. 40. 1, 2], the pronoun *en* will of course keep its general place, *after* the other pronouns and *before* the auxiliary. It must never come between the auxiliary and the participle.

Je m'en suis allé,	*I went away;*	Nous nous en sommes allés,	*We went away;*
Tu t'en es allé,	*Thou didst go away;*	Vous vous en êtes allés,	*You went away;*
Il s'en est allé,	*He went away;*	Ils s'en sont allés,	*They went away.*

Les dames s'en sont allées. *The ladies have gone away.*
Les messieurs s'en sont allés. *The gentlemen have gone away.*

2. The verb *aller* when referring to articles of dress answers to the English, *to fit, to sit.*

Mon habit va bien. *My coat fits* or *sits well.*

3. *Seoir*, [3. ir. *see* table § 62.] answers to the English, *to suit, to become.*

Ce chapeau ne vous sied point. *That hat does not become you.*

4. *Essayer*, (§ 49.) corresponds in signification to the English, *to try on.*

J'ai essayé mon gilet, il ne me va pas bien. *I have tried my waiscoat, it does not fit me well.*

5. *Être* is often used in French for appartenir, *to belong*, [§ 106, (3.)]

A qui est cette maison? { *To whom does that house belong?* / *Whose house is that?*
Elle est à mon cousin. *It is my cousin's.*

Résumé of Examples.

A quelle heure vous en êtes-vous allé?	*At what hour did you go away?*
Je m'en suis allé à neuf heures.	*I went away at nine o'clock.*
Vous en êtes-vous allées trop tôt, mesdames?	*Did you go away too soon, ladies?*
Nous nous en sommes allées trop tard.	*We went away too late.*
Cette robe vous va-t-elle bien?	*Does that dress fit you well?*
Elle ne me va pas bien.	*It does not fit me well.*
Cet habit vous sied-il fort bien?	*Does that coat become you very well?*
Je l'ai essayé, mais il ne me va pas bien.	*I have tried it on, but it does not fit me well.*
Il va bien à mon frère.	*It fits my brother well.*
Il me gêne, il me serre trop.	*It hurts me, it presses me too much.*
Cette robe ne lui va pas bien.	*That dress does not fit her well.*
Ces livres sont-ils à vous, ou à moi?	*Are those books yours, or mine?*
Ils ne sont ni à moi ni à vous.	*They belong neither to me nor to you.*
A qui sont-ils donc?	*Whose are they then?*
Les livres de qui avez-vous apportés?	*Whose books have you brought?*
J'ai apporté ceux de mon frère.	*I have brought my brother's.*

Exercise 91.

Beau-frère, m. *brother-in-law;*	Étroit, e, *narrow, tight;*	Lire, 4. ir. *to read;*
Botte, f. *boot;*	Foncé, e, *dark;*	Mieux, *better;*
Clair, e, *light;*	Gên-er, 1. *to hurt, to press;*	Neuf, ve, *new;*
Couleur, f. *color;*	Gilet, m. *waistcoat;*	Où, *where;*
Court, e, *short;*	Grand, e, *large;*	Serr-er, 1. *to press;*
Compagne, f. *companion;*	Large, *wide;*	Ten-ir, 2. ir. *to hold;*
		Vers, *towards, about.*

1. Vos bottes ne vont-elles pas bien? 2. Elles ne me vont pas bien, elles me serrent trop. 3. Sont-elles trop étroites? 4. Elles sont trop étroites et trop courtes, elles me gênent. 5. Le cordonnier s'en est-il allé? 6. Il ne s'en est pas encore allé. 7. A quelle heure les compagnes de votre sœur s'en sont-elles allées? 8. Elles s'en sont allées vers six heures de l'après-midi. 9. L'habit que vous tenez, est-il à vous ou à votre frère? 10. Il n'est ni à lui ni à moi, il est à mon beau-frère. 11. Lui va-t-il bien? 12. Il lui va fort bien, et il lui sied bien. 13. Où l'a-t-il fait faire? 14. Il l'a fait faire en France ou en Allemagne. 15. A qui sont les livres que lit mademoiselle votre sœur? 16. Ils sont à moi. 17. Votre gilet va-t-il mieux que celui de votre beau-frère? 18. Il me va beaucoup mieux. 19. Votre habit ne vous gêne-t-il pas? 20. Il ne saurait (*cannot*) me gêner, il est de beaucoup trop large. 21. Avez-vous essayé votre habit neuf? 22. Je l'ai essayé, mais la couleur ne me sied pas. 23. Est-elle trop claire? 24. Elle est trop foncée. 25. Les couleurs foncées ne me siéent jamais.

EXERCISE 92.

1. Have your friends gone away? 2. They have not gone away, they are still here. 3. At what hour did your mother go away? 4. She went away early this morning. 5. Did your little sister go away late? 6. She went away too soon. 7. Does your sister's new dress become her? 8. It does not become her. 9. Why does it not become her? 10. Dark colors never become her. 11. Do light colors become your brother's wife? 12. They become her very well. 13. Are your new boots too narrow, or too wide? 14. They are neither too narrow nor too wide, they fit very well. 15. Does your brother's waistcoat fit him? 16. It fits him, but it does not become him. 17. Light colors never become him. 18. Does your coat press you? 19. It does not press me, it is by far too wide. 20. Whose house is that? 21. It is my father's and brother's. 22. Whose books have you brought this morning? 23. I have brought my brother's and sister's. 24. Whose dresses are those? 25. They are my mother's, my sister's, and my cousin's. 26. Are not those German books yours? 27. They are not mine, they are my friend's. 28. Are those pens yours or mine? 29. They are neither yours nor mine, they are my brother's. 30. Does this hat fit you well? 31. Yes, sir; it fits me well, but it does not become me. 32. Is your hat too small? 33. It is too large. 34. Are your gloves too large? 25. They are too small, I cannot put them on.

LEÇON XLVIII. LESSON XLVIII.

FALLOIR, *TO BE NECESSARY*, ETC.

1. The verb falloir [3. ir.], *to be necessary*, is always conjugated unipersonally. See table, § 62, page 364.

Il faut, il a fallu.	*It is necessary, it was* or *has been necessary.*
Il faut étudier tous les jours.	*It is necessary to study every day.*

2. As *falloir* has always a unipersonal pronoun for its nominative or subject, a pronoun in the indirect regimen (dative—*me, te, lui, nous, vous, leur,*) placed before the verb, will be equivalent to the pronoun used as nominative to the English verbs *must, to be obliged,* etc.

Il me faut écrire un thême.	*I must write an exercise.*
Où nous faut-il aller?	*Where must we go?*

3. *Falloir* is used in the signification of *to want, to need, to be under the necessity of having.*

Il me faut un livre.[1]	*I need a book.*
Il lui faut de l'argent.	*He is in want of money.*

4. When *must* is used in the last acceptation, and has a noun as its nominative, the noun in the corresponding French sentence should be in the indirect regimen preceded by *à*.

Il faut un livre à ma sœur.	*My sister must have a book (needs a book).*

Résumé of Examples.

Pour apprendre une langue, il faut étudier.	*To learn a language, it is necessary to study.*
Il faut aller à l'église et à l'école.	*It is necessary to go to church and to school.*
Il faut rester à la maison.	*It is necessary to remain at home.*
Il me faut lire un bon livre.	*I must read a good book.*
Il lui faut aller voir sa mère.	*She must go and see her mother.*
Que nous faut-il faire?	*What must we do?*
Que leur faut-il lire?	*What must they read?*
Que leur faut-il?	*What do they want* or *need?*
Il leur faut de l'argent ou du crédit.	*They must have money or credit.*
Vous faut-il cinquante francs?	*Do you want fifty francs?*
Il me faut cinquante-cinq francs.	*I must have* or *I need fifty-five francs.*
Combien d'argent faut-il à votre père?	*How much money does your father want?*
Il lui en faut beaucoup.	*He wants much (of it).*
Nous avons ce qu'il [R. 3.] nous faut.	*We have what we want.*

Exercise 93.

Aller trouver, *to go to a person;*	Davantage, *more;*	Fort, *very, very much;*
Chirurgien, m. *surgeon;*	Désir-er, 1. *to wish, desire;*	Modiste, *milliner;*
Centime, m. 100*th of a franc;*	Dette, f. *debt;*	Ouvrage, m. *work;*
Combien, *how much, how many?*	Envoy-er, 1. ir. [§ 49, (2.)], *to send;*	Payer, 1. pec. [§ 49,(2.)], *to pay;*
	Fin-ir, 2. *to finish;*	Peine, f. *trouble;*
		Quand, *when.*

1. Que faut-il faire aujourd'hui? 2. Aujourd'hui, il faut travailler. 3. A-t-il fallu travailler fort, pour finir l'ouvrage à temps? 4. Il a fallu travailler toute la journée. 5. Quand nous faut-il écrire à notre ami? 6. Il faut lui écrire aujourd'hui. 7. Me faut-il aller trouver mon père? 8. Il vous faut aller le trouver, il désire vous parler. 9. A-t-il besoin de quelque chose? 10. Il lui faut des livres, des plumes, et de l'encre. 11. Ne lui faut-il pas aussi de l'argent?[2] 12. Il lui en faut beaucoup pour payer ses dettes. 13. Vous faut-il encore quelque chose? 14. Il ne me faut plus rien, j'ai tout ce qu'il me faut. 15. Ne

[1] Another construction of these sentences will be found Lesson 22, 1, 2.
[2] See note, Lesson 7.

faut-il pas du papier à votre sœur? 16. Il ne lui en faut pas davantage.[1] 17. Que faut-il envoyer au chirurgien? 18. Il faut lui envoyer de l'argent, il en a grand besoin. 19. La modiste a-t-elle tout ce qu'il lui faut? 20. Elle n'a pas tout ce qu'il lui faut. 21. Combien vous faut-il? 22. Il me faut cinq francs. 23. Ne vous faut-il pas davantage? 24. Il ne me faut pas davantage. 25. Que lui faut-il pour sa peine? 26. Il demande un franc vingt-cinq centimes.

EXERCISE 94.

1. What must we do? 2. You must bring your book and learn your lesson. 3. Is it necessary to write to your brother to-day? 4. It is not necessary to write to him. 5. Has it been necessary to speak to your father? 6. It has been necessary to speak to him. 7. Is it necessary to go to D. to-day? 8. It is necessary to go there (*y*). 9. Must I go to your sister? 10. You must go to her, she wishes to speak to you. 11. How much money must your brother have? 12. He must have ten francs fifty centimes. 13. How many books does your sister want? 14. She must have many books, she reads (*lit*) much. 15. What will you send to the surgeon? 16. We must send him our horse; his own (*le sien*) is sick. 17. Must he not have paper? 18. He must have some; he has letters to write. 19. Must he have much? 20. He must have a quire (*main*, f.). 21. Do you want any thing more? (*See No.* 13, *in the French exercise above.*) 22. I need something more. 23. I need nothing more. 24. Must you have one hundred francs? 25. I must have ten dollars. 26. What does the surgeon want? 27. He must have money, to (*pour*) pay his debts. 28. Has the tailor all that he wants? 29. He has not all that he wants. 30. The milliner has received all that she wants. 31. What must you have for your trouble? 32. How much do you want? 33. How much do we want? 34. What must I do? 35. You must write a letter. 36. What must she write? 37. She must write four pages. 38. She must go to church.

LEÇON XLIX. LESSON XLIX.

SEOIR, CONVENIR, VALOIR, ETC.

1. The verb *seoir* [3. ir. Lesson 47, Rule 3.], is also used unipersonally.

Il ne vous sied pas de parler ainsi. *It does not become you to speak thus.*

[1] This adverb should never be placed before a substantive.

2. The verb *convenir* [2. ir. *see* § 62.], *to suit*, is at times used unipersonally. It then signifies *to be suitable, advisable*, &c.

Il convient de lui écrire.	*It is advisable to write to him.*

3. The irregular verb *valoir* [*see* table, § 62.] corresponds in signification to the English expression, *to be worth.*

Cette maison vaut cinq mille francs.	*That house is worth five thousand francs.*

4. Ne rien valoir means *to be good for nothing;* ne pas valoir grand'chose, *to be worth little, not to be good for much.*

Ce drap ne vaut rien.	*That cloth is good for nothing.*
Notre maison ne vaut pas grand'chose.	*Our house is not good for much.*

5. Être riche de . . . means *to be worth, to possess;* when a person is the nominative of the verb, *valoir* is never used in this sense.

Cette personne est riche de cinq mille piastres.	*That person is worth five thousand dollars.*

6. Valoir mieux, conjugated unipersonally, means *to be better;* valoir la peine, *to be worth the while.*

Il vaut mieux travailler que d'être oisif.	*It is better to labor than to be idle.*
Il ne vaut pas la peine de parler, quand on n'a rien à dire.	*It is not worth the while to speak, when one has nothing to say.*

Résumé of Examples.

Il ne vous sied pas de nous faire des reproches.	*It does not become you to reproach us.*
Il ne vous convient pas de parler de la sorte.	*It is not suitable for you to speak so.*
Il ne nous convient pas d'y aller.	*It does not suit us to go there.*
Combien votre jardin vaut-il?	*How much is your garden worth?*
Il vaut beaucoup plus que le vôtre.	*It is much more valuable than yours.*
Il ne vaut pas autant que le mien.	*It is not worth as much as mine.*
Notre maison ne vaut rien.	*Our house is good for nothing.*
Votre habit ne vaut pas grand'chose.	*Your coat is not good for much.*
Cela ne vaut pas la peine.	*That is not worth the while.*
Ce château peut valoir cent mille francs.	*That villa may be worth one hundred thousand francs.*
De combien votre oncle est-il riche?	*How much is your uncle worth?*
Il est riche de deux cent mille francs.	*He is worth two hundred thousand francs.*
Ne vaut-il pas mieux lire que jouer?	*Is it not better to read than to play?*

Exercise 95.

Assur-er, 1. *to assure;*	Cass-er, 1. *to break;*	Couteau, m. *knife;*
Au juste, *precisely;*	Centaine, f. *about a hundred;*	Marché, m. *market;*
Autre chose, *something else;*	Chaîne, f. *chain;*	Mérit-er, 1. *to deserve, merit.*

Montre, f. *watch;* Pouvoir, 3. ir. *to be able;* Tout au plus, *at most;*
Négligence, f. *neglect;* Reproch-er, 1. *to re-* Va, *from* aller, *to go;*
Négociant, m. *merchant;* *proach;* Vingtaine, f. *about twenty.*

1. Vous sied-il de nous reprocher notre négligence? 2. Il me sied de vous faire des reproches, quand vous le méritez. 3. Vous convient-il d'aller trouver mon frère? 4. Il ne me convient pas d'aller le trouver, j'ai autre chose à faire. 5. Combien ce champ peut-il valoir? 6. Il peut valoir une vingtaine [§ 27, (2.)] de mille francs. 7. Valez-vous mieux que votre frère? 8. Mon frère vaut beaucoup mieux que moi. 9. Ce couteau ne vaut-il pas plus que le vôtre? 10. Le mien est meilleur, il vaut davantage. 11. Combien votre montre vaut-elle? 12. Elle ne vaut pas grand'chose, elle ne va pas bien. 13. De combien le négociant est-il riche? 14. Je ne puis vous le dire au juste, il est riche d'une centaine de mille francs. 15. Ne vaut-il pas mieux rester ici que d'aller au marché? 16. Il vaut mieux aller au marché. 17. Votre chaîne d'or vaut-elle plus que la mienne? 18. Elle vaut tout autant. 19. Elle ne vaut pas grand'chose, elle est cassée. 20. Cela vaut-il cinquante francs? 21. Cela vaut tout au plus deux francs. 22. Avez-vous demandé au marchand ce que cela vaut? 23. Je ne le lui ai pas demandé. 24. Il m'assure que cela vaut une centaine de francs.

Exercise 96.

1. How much is my house worth? 2. It is worth about twenty thousand francs. 3. Is that horse worth as much as this one? 4. This horse is worth two hundred dollars, and that one three hundred. 5. Is it worth the while to write to your brother? 6. It is not worth the while. 7. Is it worth the while to go out, when one does not wish to walk? 8. It is not (*n'en*) worth the while. 9. Does it suit you to write to my brother to-morrow? 10. It does not suit me to write to him. 11. Does it become you to reproach me with my neglect? 12. It becomes me to blame (*blimer*) you when you deserve it. 13. What is that man worth? 14. I cannot tell you exactly, about fifty thousand francs. 15. Is that cloth good? 16. No, sir; it is good for nothing. 17. Is your gun worth as much as mine? 18. Yes, sir; it is worth more. 19. Will you go to my father's? 20. No, sir; I have something else to do. 21. Is it better to go to market early than late? 22. It is better to go early. 23. How much may your horse be worth? 24. It is not worth much, it is very old. 25. Is your watch better than mine? 26. It is not worth much, it does not go. 27. Is that book worth two francs? 28. It is worth one, at most. 29. Have you asked your sister what that

book is worth? 30. I have not. [L. 24, R. 12; L. 46, R. 4.] 31. What must I do? 32. You must speak to your father. 33. Must he have money? 34. He must have some. 35. Has he not sold his horse? 36. He has sold it, but it is not worth much.

LEÇON L. LESSON L.

PRENDRE, ACHETER, DEMANDER.

1. When the verbs prendre [4. ir. *see* § 62.], *to take;* voler, *to rob, to steal;* acheter, *to buy;* demander, *to ask for;* payer, *to pay*, are followed by one regimen only, or by several regimens in the same relation; these regimens, if nouns, are not to be separated from the verb by a preposition; if pronouns, they take the form of the direct regimen, *le, la, les.*

Avez-vous payé le livre?	*Have you paid for the book?*
Avez-vous payé le libraire?	*Have you paid the bookseller?*
Avez-vous demandé votre argent?	*Have you asked for your money?*
L'avez-vous demandé?	*Have you asked for him?*

2. When the verbs above mentioned are accompanied by several regimens, holding different relations, the regimen representing the thing or object will be direct, and come under the above rule, and that representing the person, will, if a noun, be preceded by the preposition *à*, and, if a pronoun, assume the form of the indirect regimen: lui, *to him, to her;* leur, *to them.*

J'ai pris le livre à mon frère.	*I have taken the book from my brother.*
J'ai payé le livre au libraire.	*I have paid the bookseller for the book.*
Je le lui ai payé.	*I have paid him for it.*

3. Demander is used also in the sense of *to inquire for, to ask for.*

J'ai demandé ce monsieur.	*I asked for that gentleman.*

RÉSUMÉ OF EXAMPLES.

Vous a-t-on volé vos livres?	*Has any one stolen your books from you?*
On me les a volés [L. 35, 1, 2.]	*They have been stolen from me.*
A-t-on payé les souliers au cordonnier?	*Has the shoemaker been paid for the shoes?*
On ne les lui a pas encore payés.	*He has not yet been paid for them.*
Qu'a-t-on pris à votre père?	*What has been taken from your father?*
On lui a pris son argent.	*His money has been taken from him.*
Ne vous a-t-on rien payé?	*Has nothing been paid you?*
On m'a payé presque tout.	*I have been paid almost all.*
J'ai acheté des livres au libraire.	*I bought books from the bookseller.*

Qui avez-vous demandé?	*Whom have you asked for?*
J'ai demandé mon frère aîné.	*I inquired for my eldest brother.*
Avez-vous demandé de l'argent à votre ami?	*Have you asked your friend for money?*
Je ne lui en ai pas demandé.	*I have not asked him for any.*

Exercise 97.

Chapelier, m. *hatter;*	Légume, m. *vegetable;*	Rend-re, 4. *to return;*
Crayon, m. *pencil;*	Loyer, m. *rent;*	Renseignements, m. p. *information;*
Demeur-er, 1. *to dwell, to live;*	Pantoufle, f. *slipper;*	Revenus, m. p. *income;*
Fenêtre, f. *window;*	Paysan, m. *peasant;*	Tout, e, *all;*
Frapp-er, 1. *to knock;*	Propriétaire, m. *landlord;*	Voyageur, m. *traveller;*

1. Que vous a-t-on pris? 2. On m'a pris mes livres, mes crayons, et mon canif. 3. Savez-vous qui vous les a pris? 4. Je ne connais pas celui qui me les a pris, mais je sais qu'il demeure ici. 5. Avez-vous demandé vos livres? 6. Je les ai demandés à mon cousin. 7. Vous les a-t-il rendus? 8. Il me les a payés. 9. Vous a-t-on volé beaucoup de fruit cette année? 10. On m'a volé des légumes, mais on ne m'a point volé de fruit. 11. Avez-vous payé votre chapeau au paysan? 12. Je ne le lui ai pas payé, je l'ai payé au chapelier. 13. A qui avez-vous demandé des renseignements? 14. J'en ai demandé au voyageur. 15. Savez-vous qui vient de frapper à la porte? 16. C'est M. L., qui vous demande. 17. Qui avez-vous demandé? 18. J'ai demandé votre frère. 19. Votre frère a-t-il payé toutes ses dettes? 20. Il ne les a pas encore payées, parce qu'il n'a pas reçu ses revenus. 21. Lui avez-vous payé ce que vous lui avez acheté? 22. Je le lui ai payé. 23. Ne leur avez-vous pas payé votre loyer? 24. Je le leur ai payé. 25. Ils nous ont payé notre maison.

Exercise 98.

1. Have you paid your landlord? 2. I have paid him my rent. 3. Have you paid him for the windows which you have broken? 4. I have paid him for them. 5. Has the hatter paid for all his hats? 6. He has not paid for them, he has bought them on credit (*à crédit*). 7. Do you pay what you owe, every day? 8. I pay my butcher every week. 9. Have you paid him for his meat? 10. I have paid him for it. 11. For whom did you inquire this morning? 12. I inquired for your brother. 13. Why did you not inquire for my father? 14. I know that your father is in England. 15. Has the hatter been paid for his hats? 16. He has been paid for them. 17. Has your money been taken from you? 18. My hat has been stolen from me. 19. Have you asked your brother for your money? 20. I have asked him for it, but he cannot return it to me. 21. Has he no money?

22. He has just paid all his debts, and he has no money left (*de reste*). 23. Have you asked your father for money? 24. I have not asked him for any, I know that he has none. 25. From what bookseller have you bought your books? 26. I bought them from your bookseller. 27. Are you wrong to pay your debts? 28. I am right to pay them. 29. Who is inquiring for me? 30. The physician is inquiring for you 31. Who knocks? 32. Your shoemaker knocks.

LEÇON LI. LESSON LI.

THE PAST DEFINITE. (§ 120.)

1. The past definite may be called the *narrative* or *historical* tense of the French. It is used to express an action *entirely past*, definite and complete in itself. The time must be specified, and every portion of it must be elapsed. "One night at least," say the best French grammarians, "should have occurred since the action took place."

Mon frère partit hier pour Paris. *My brother left yesterday for Paris.*

2. The student will bear in mind that the past indefinite [L. 41.] may be used for the past definite. The past definite, however, may never be used for the indefinite. In conversation, the indefinite is often preferred to the definite, as the latter would at times appear too formal [§ 121, (3)].

3. The past definite may generally be rendered in English, by the simple form of the imperfect, or by the same tense conjugated with *did*. The past definite can never be rendered in English, by the participle present of the verb preceded by *was*, *were*, etc.

J'allai à l'église hier matin. *I went*, or *did go to church yesterday morning.*

4. TERMINATIONS OF THE PAST DEFINITE OF THE FOUR CONJUGATIONS. See L. 23, and § 60.

Je	chant -ai	fin -is	reç -us	rend -is
I	*sang*	*finished*	*received*	*rendered*
Tu	parl -as	chér -is	aperç -us	vend -is
Thou	*spokest*	*cherishedst*	*perceivedst*	*soldedst*
Il	donn -a	fourn -it	perç -ut	tend -it
He	*gave*	*furnished*	*gathered*	*tended*
Nous	cherch -âmes	pun -îmes	conç -ûmes	entend -îmes
We	*sought*	*punished*	*conceived*	*heard*
Vous	port -âtes	sais -îtes	d -ûtes	perd -îtes
You	*carried*	*seized*	*owed*	*lost*
Ils	aim -èrent	un -irent	déç -urent	mord -irent
They	*loved, liked*	*united*	*deceived*	*bit*

5. It will be seen that the terminations of the second, and fourth conjugations are alike.

Résumé of Examples.

On nous parla de vous hier.	*They spoke to us of you yesterday.*
Le banquier nous donna de l'argent l'année dernière.	*The banker gave us money last year.*
Le banquier nous a donné de l'argent.	*The banker has given us money.*
Le professeur nous parla de vous, l'année dernière.	*The professor spoke to us about you, last year.*
Il nous a parlé de ses amis, et des nôtres.	*He spoke to us of his friends, and of ours.*
Pendant notre voyage, il nous raconta ses aventures.	*During our journey, he related to us his adventures.*
Il nous a raconté l'histoire de sa vie.	*He related to us the history of his life.*

Exercise 99.

Aîné, e, *elder, eldest;*	Se lev-er, 1. ref. *to rise;*	Propriétés, f. p. *property;*
Avec, *with;*	Lorsque, *when;*	Racont-er, 1. *to relate;*
Se couch-er, 1. ref. *to go to bed;*	Lyon, *Lyons;*	Remerci-er, 1. *to thank;*
Dernier, e, *last;*	Neuf, ve, *new;*	Séjour, m. *stay;*
S'échapp-er, 1. ref. *to escape;*	Ordinairement, *generally;*	Semaine, f. *week;*
Habillement, m. *dress;*	Pendant, *during;*	Soldat, m. *soldier;*
	Pri-er, 1. *to beg;*	Tard, *late;*
		Trop tôt, *too soon.*

1. Le banquier reçut-il beaucoup d'argent la semaine dernière? 2. Il en reçut beaucoup. 3. Aussitôt que vous aperçûtes votre frère, ne lui parlâtes-vous pas? 4. Dès que je l'aperçus, je lui parlai. 5. Avez-vous déjà porté vos habillements neufs? 6. Je ne les ai pas encore portés. 7. Quand il vous donna de l'argent hier, le remerciâtes-vous? 8. Je le remerciai, et je le priai de vous remercier. 9. Avez-vous trouvé vos livres? 10. Je ne les ai pas encore trouvés. 11. Lorsque vous vîntes nous voir, ne finîtes-vous pas vos affaires avec mon père? 12. Je les finis alors, et je le payai. 13. N'avez-vous pas vu votre sœur aînée, pendant votre séjour à Lyon? 14. Je ne l'ai pas vue. 15. Ne vous couchâtes-vous pas trop tôt, hier au soir? 16. Je me couchai tard. 17. A quelle heure vous êtes-vous levé ce matin? 18. Je me suis levé à cinq heures; je me lève ordinairement de bonne heure. 19. Ne cherchâtes-vous pas à vous échapper de votre prison, l'année dernière? 20. Je n'ai jamais cherché à m'échapper. 21. Avez-vous vendu vos propriétés? 22. Je ne les ai pas vendues. 23. Qu'avez-vous donné au soldat? 24. Je ne lui ai rien donné. 25. Pendant son séjour à B., nous lui donnâmes tout ce qu'il voulut.

Exercise 100.

1. What did you receive last week? 2. We received fifty francs from your friend, and twenty-five from your brother. 3. Did you take your son to church with you yesterday? 4. I did not take him there (*y*). 5. What did you lose last year? 6. We lost our money, our clothes, and our horses. 7. Have you looked (*cherchés*) for them? 8. I looked for them, but did not find them. 9. Did they speak of your brother yesterday? 10. They spoke of him and of you. 11. What did the physician give you? 12. He gave me nothing. 13. At what hour did your sister rise yesterday? 14. She rose at five o'clock. 15. Did you rise early this morning? 16. We rose at half-past six. 17. Has your cousin sold all his property? 18. He has not sold it, he has given it to his eldest sister. 19. Has the traveller related his adventures to you? 20. He related them to me. 21. Did that man try (*cherché*) to speak to your father? 22. He tried to speak to him. 23. Did the professor speak of your brother, during his stay at your house? 24. He spoke of him. 25. Has your friend worn his new coat? 26. He has not worn it yet. 27. Have you thanked your brother? 28. I have thanked him. 29. What have you given to your eldest sister? 30. I have given her nothing, I have nothing to give her. 31. When your brother gave you a book last year, did you thank him? 32. I did not thank him. 33. Is it late? 34. It is not late, it is only six. 35. Is it fine weather, or bad weather? 36. It is very fine weather.

LEÇON LII. LESSON LII.

THE PAST DEFINITE, CONTINUED.

1. The terminations of the past definite of irregular verbs, are seldom arbitrary,[1] but, an irregular verb of one conjugation will sometimes, in this tense, assume the terminations of another conjugation. In a few instances the *stem* [L. 23.] of the verb is entirely changed.

Avoir, *to have;*	Être, *to be;*	Voir, *to see;*	Lire, *to read;*
J' e -us, *I had*	f -us, *I was*	v -is, *I saw*	l -us, *I read*
Tu e -us	f -us	v -is	l -us
Il e -ut	f -ut	v -it	l -ut
Nous e -ûmes	f -ûmes	v -îmes	l -ûmes
Vous e -ûtes	f -ûtes	v -îtes	l -ûtes
Ils e -urent	f -urent	v -irent	l -urent

[1] This termination is arbitrary only in verbs ending in *enir*, in which an *n* comes after the *i* of the termination: *vînmes*, *tînmes*, etc.

2. *Avoir* and *être*, it will be perceived, take in this tense a new stem, *e*-us, *f*-us; *être* and *lire*, though belonging to the 4th conjugation, take the terminations of the 3d, and *voir*, a verb of the 3d, takes the terminations of the 4th.

3. In other instances, the stem of the verb drops some of its letters, and sometimes adopts others. This may be seen in the verbs

	Venir, *to come;*	Prendre, *to take;*	Craindre, *to fear;*	Connaître, *to know;*	Conduire, *to conduct.*
Je	v -ins	pr -is	craign -is	conn -us	conduis -is
Tu	v -ins	pr -is	craign -is	conn -us	conduis -is
Il	v -int	pr -it	craign -it	conn -ut	conduis -it
Nous	v -înmes	pr -îmes	craign -îmes	conn -ûmes	conduis -îmes
Vous	v -întes	pr -îtes	craign -îtes	conn -ûtes	conduis -îtes
Ils	v -inrent	pr -irent	craign -irent	conn -urent	conduis -irent

4. Like *venir*, are conjugated all verbs ending in *enir;* like *craindre, connaître*, and *conduire*, those ending in *indre, aître*, and *uire;* and like *prendre*, those composed of this verb and a prefix: as, *comprendre, surprendre*, &c.

5. We would at all times refer the student to the table of irregular verbs, § 62, for those tenses of the irregular verbs, with which he is not familiar.

Résumé of Examples.

Ne conduisîtes-vous point votre fils en Espagne, l'année dernière?	*Did you not take your son to Spain, last year?*
Je l'y conduisis, et je l'y laissai.	*I took him thither, and left him.*
Aussitôt que vous vîtes votre frère, ne le reconnûtes-vous pas?	*As soon as you saw your brother, did you not recognize him?*
Je le reconnus, aussitôt que je l'aperçus.	*I recognized him, as soon as I perceived him.*
Le pharmacien ne vint-il pas vous voir?	*Did not the apothecary come to see you?*
Il vint me voir; il fut bien étonné de trouver chez moi, un de ses anciens amis.	*He came to see me; he was much astonished to find one of his old friends, at my house.*
Ne prîtes-vous pas congé de vos amis, hier?	*Did you not take leave of your friends, yesterday?*
Je pris congé d'eux, et je les priai de m'écrire.	*I took leave of them, and begged them to write to me.*

Exercise 101.

Accompagner, 1. to *accompany;*
A la fin, *at last;*
Amicalement, *kindly;*
Arrivée, f. *arrival;*
Attend-re, 4. *to wait for;*
Au secours, *to the assistance;*
Congé, m. *leave;*
Cour-ir, 2. ir. *to run;*
De mon mieux, *as well as I could;*
Se dépêch-er, 1. ref. *to make haste;*
Dès que, *as soon as;*
Écolier, m. *scholar;*
S'ennuy-er, 1. pec. *to become weary;*
Se hât-er, 1. ref. *to hasten;*
Histoire, f. *history;*
Inform-er, 1. *to inform;*
Notaire, m. *notary;*
Lu, *from* lire, 4. ir. *to read;*
Peintre, m. *painter;*
Perd-re, 2. *to lose;*
Sans, *without;*
Secour-ir, 2. ir. *to succor.*

1. Nos écoliers s'ennuyèrent-ils hier d'attendre si longtemps? 2. Ils furent obligés d'attendre si longtemps, qu'à la fin ils perdirent patience. 3. Ne reçûtes-vous point votre parent amicalement, lorsqu'il vint vous voir? 4. Je le reçus de mon mieux. 5. Ne lûtes-vous pas la lettre de votre frère, avant hier? 6. Je la lus, et je l'envoyai à mon oncle. 7. Ne courûtes-vous pas au secours de votre frère, aussitôt que vous le vîtes en danger? 8. Je me hâtai de le secourir. 9. Ne vous êtes-vous pas dépêchés de venir? 10. Nous nous sommes dépêchés. 11. Aussitôt que vous eûtes aperçu mon frère, ne m'informâtes-vous pas de son arrivée? 12. Je vous en informai. 13. A quelle heure votre sœur est-elle venue aujourd'hui? 14. Elle est venue à midi. 15. Vos compagnons vinrent-ils hier vous prier de les accompagner? 16. Ils vinrent me voir, mais ils me quittèrent sans me parler de leur voyage. 17. Ne peignîtes-vous pas un tableau, l'année dernière? 18. Je peignis un tableau d'histoire. 19. Le peintre italien a-t-il fini son portrait? 20. Il le finit hier. 21. Il l'a fini ce matin. 22. Dès que j'eus reçu cette nouvelle, j'envoyai chercher le notaire. 23. Ce jeune homme a-t-il pris congé de son père. 24. Il a pris congé de lui. 25. Il prit congé de lui hier.

Exercise 102.

1. Did the notary accompany you yesterday? 2. He accompanied me as far as (*jusque chez*) your brother's. 3. Did your companion take leave of you yesterday? 4. He took leave of me this morning. 5. Did you read yesterday, the book which I have lent you? 6. I read it the day before yesterday (*avant hier*). 7. At what time did the painter come this morning? 8. He came at half-past nine. 9. Has he finished your father's portrait? 10. He painted all day yesterday, but the portait is not yet finished. 11. Did you not run to your father's relief, when you saw him in danger? 12. I hastened to succor him. 13. What did you do when you came? 14. As soon as I came, I sent for my brother. 15. Did you take your sister to Germany last year? 16. I took her there this year. 17. Did you take your children to school yesterday? 18. I took them to my brother's. 19. Do you paint a historical picture? 20. I painted last year a historical picture. 21. Did your sister beg you to accompany her? 22. She begged me to accompany her. 23. Did you send for the notary, as soon as you heard from your father? 24. I sent for him. 25. When did the notary take leave of you? 26. He took leave of me this morning at nine. 27. Has the apothecary finished his letter? 28. He has not yet finished it. 29. Were you not

much (*bien*) astonished yesterday to see that lady? 30. I was not astonished to see her. 31. Did you make haste to read your book, last night (*hier au soir*)? 32. I made haste to read it. 33. Have you finished it? 34. I have not yet finished it.

LEÇON LIII. LESSON LIII.

THE IMPERFECT. (§ 119.)

1. The imperfect, or simultaneous past tense, may be called the *descriptive* tense of the French. The action which it represents, or the situation which it describes, is imperfect of itself. This tense leaves the beginning, duration, and end of an action *undetermined*. It may often be rendered in English by the auxiliary *was*, and the participle present of the verb [§ 119, 120.]

J'écrivais ce matin quand vous êtes entré.	*I was writing this morning when you came in.*
Je passais hier quand vous m'appelâtes.	*I was passing yesterday when you called me.*

2. The imperfect is also used to express an action which is *customary* or *often repeated*. It may then be rendered in English by the words *used to*, placed before the verb.

L'année dernière, j'allais tous les jours à l'école.	*Last year, I went (used to go) every day to school.*
Quand nous demeurions à la campagne, nous nous couchions ordinairement à neuf heures.	*When we lived, (used to live) in the country, we used to go to bed at nine o'clock.*

3. The imperfect can *seldom* be rendered in English by the past tense which takes *did*[1] as an auxiliary. The past definite *never* corresponds in meaning to the English imperfect, composed of the anxiliary "*was*," and the participle present. It cannot be rendered by the verb preceded by "*used to*."

J'allais à la chasse hier matin quand nous nous rencontrâmes.	*I was going hunting yesterday morning when we met (did meet).*
J'allai à la chasse hier matin.	*I went (did go) hunting yesterday morning.*

4. The imperfect is formed from the participle present, by changing *ant* into *ais*, etc., § 61. It may also be formed by adding *ais*, etc., to

[1] Except when, in interrogative sentences, *did* is used as an auxiliary to *used to* expressed or understood.

the stem of the verb, for the 1st and 4th conjugations, *issais*, etc., for the 2d, and *evais* for the 3d.

5. TERMINATIONS OF THE IMPERFECT OF THE FOUR CONJUGATIONS.

Je	chant	-ais	fin	-issais	rec	-evais	rend -ais
I	*was singing*		*was finishing*		*was receiving*		*was rendering*
Tu	parl	-ais	chér	-issais	aperc	-evais	vend -ais
Thou	*wast speaking*		*wast cherishing*		*wast perceiving*		*wast selling*
Il	donn	-ait	fourn	-issait	perc	-evait	tend -ait
He	*was giving*		*was furnishing*		*was gathering*		*was tending*
Nous	cherch	-ions	pun	-issions	conc	-evions	entend -ions
We	*were seeking*		*were punishing*		*were conceiving*		*were hearing*
Vous	port	-iez	sais	-issiez	d	-eviez	perd -iez
You	*were carrying*		*were seizing*		*were owing*		*were losing*
Ils	aim	-aient	un	-issaient	déc	-evaient	mord -aient
They	*were loving*		*were uniting*		*were deceiving*		*were biting.*

RÉSUMÉ OF EXAMPLES.

Je chantais quand on m'apporta votre lettre.	*I was singing when they brought me your letter.*
J'aimais autrefois à lire les poètes anglais.	*I used to like formerly to read the English poets.*
J'étais dans votre chambre lorsque vous êtes entré.	*I was in your room when you came in.*
Comment votre père se portait-il, lorsque vous demeuriez en France?	*How was your father when you lived in France?*
Avez-vous payé à mon père ce que vous lui deviez, et ce que vous lui aviez promis?	*Have you paid my father what you owed him, and what you had promised him?*
Je parlai hier toute la matinée.	*I spoke yesterday the whole morning.*
Je parlais hier à votre père, lorsque votre ami nous rencontra.	*I was speaking to your father, when your friend met us yesterday.*
Je cherchais votre père.	*I was looking for your father.*

EXERCISE 103.

Autrefois, *formerly;*	Écolier, m. *scholar;*	Presque pas, *almost none, but little;*
Brun, e, *brown;*	Noir, e, *black;*	Retrouv-er, 1. *to find again;*
Chambre, f. *room;*	Mérit-er, 1. *to deserve;*	Thême, m. *exercise;*
Crayon, m. *pencil;*	Pantoufle, f. *slipper;*	Vert, e, *green.*
Demeur-er, 1. *to live, dwell;*	Parchemin, m. *parchment;*	
De nouveau, *again;*		

1. De qui parliez-vous ce matin quand je suis venu vous trouver? 2. Ma cousine parlait de son frère, et je parlais du mien. 3. N'aimiez-vous pas mieux le bœuf que le mouton, autrefois? 4. J'aimais le bœuf, mais je n'ai jamais aimé le mouton. 5. Ne vendiez-vous pas beaucoup de livres, lorsque vous demeuriez à Paris? 6. J'en vendais beaucoup, parceque j'étais libraire. 7. Le libraire a-t-il vendu beaucoup de crayons ce matin? 8. Il a vendu beaucoup de crayons aujourd'hui. 9. Vendiez-vous beaucoup de parchemin, lorsque vous

étiez libraire? 10. Je n'en vendais presque pas. 11. Votre frère portait-il un habit vert, lorsqu'il demeurait à Londres? 12. Il portait un habit brun et des pantoufles noires. 13. Que cherchiez-vous? 14. Je cherchais mon livre. 15. Depuis quand l'aviez-vous perdu? 16. Je l'avais perdu depuis hier. 17. L'avez-vous retrouvé? 18. Je l'avais retrouvé, mais je l'ai perdu de nouveau. 19. Ce boulanger vous fournissait-il de bon pain? 20. Il nous en fournissait d'excellent. 21. Punissiez-vous souvent vos écoliers? 22. Je les punissais quand ils le méritaient. 23. Où étiez-vous ce matin, quand je vous cherchais? 24. J'étais dans ma chambre. 25. Je finissais mon thême.

Exercise 104.

1. Who was at your house this morning? 2. My friend G. was there, and was looking for you. 3. Were you looking for me this morning? 4. I was not looking for you, I was looking for your scholar. 5. Did you speak to my father yesterday? 6. I was speaking to him, when they brought me your letter. 7. Did you use to sell much meat, when you lived in B.? 8. I sold much meat, because I was a butcher. 9. Did your father use to wear a white hat, when he lived in London? 10. He used to wear a black hat, and my brother wore a black coat. 11. Were you singing when my father came? 12. No, sir; I was finishing my exercise. 13. Had you lost your pencil this morning? 14. I had lost it, and was looking for it when you spoke to me. 15. Has your brother paid all that he owed? 16. He has not paid for his coat. 17. How was your mother when she lived in Italy? 18. She was very well. 19. You used to like reading (*la lecture,*) did your sister (use to) like it also? 20. She liked it also. 21. Where was your sister this morning, when I was looking for her? 22. She was at my mother's. 23. What song were you singing this morning? 24. I was singing an Italian song. 25. Have you been afraid to speak to me? 26. I have never been afraid to speak to you. 27. Have you brought my book? 28. I have not brought it. 29. Of what were you speaking? 30. I was speaking of nothing. 31. What were you giving to my brother? 32. I was not giving him any thing. 33. What were you carrying? 34. I was carrying a tree. 35. Where were you carrying it? 36. I was carrying it home.

LEÇON LIV. LESSON LIV.

THE IMPERFECT, CONTINUED.

1. The imperfect of the indicative of every French verb, regular or irregular, ends in *ais, ais, ait, ions, iez, aient.*

2. No verb of the first conjugation ER, is irregular in this tense.

3. The only irregularity found in the irregular verbs of the second conjugation IR, is that, to form the imperfect, the stem of these verbs takes *ais*, etc., instead of *issais:* as, ven-ir, *je ven-ais*, cour-ir, *je courais ;* cueill-ir, *je cueill-ais.* Exception: Fuir, *to flee—je fuyais.*

4. The irregular verbs of the third conjugation OIR, change that termination (*oir*) into *ais*, etc., like the regular verbs of the same: as, sav-oir, *je sav-ais ;* av-oir, *j'av-ais.* Exceptions: se-oir, *to become*, voir, *to see*, and their compounds, and déchoir, [*see* § 62.]

5. The changes which the stem of the irregular verbs of the fourth conjugation undergoes, in this tense, are too various to admit of a complete classification. We, however, offer the following.

PRENDRE, *to take.*	ÉCRIRE, *to write.*	CRAINDRE, *to fear.*
Je pren -ais, etc.	J'écriv -ais, etc.	Je craign -ais, etc.
CONNAÎTRE, *to know.*		CONDUIRE, *to conduct.*
Je connaiss -ais, etc.		Je conduis -ais, etc.

6. Like prendre and écrire are conjugated, in this tense, those verbs in which *prendre* and *écrire* appear in composition; as comprendre, *je comprenais ;* souscrire, *je souscrivais.*—Like craindre and connaître, those ending in *indre* and *aître ;* teindre, *je teignais ;* paraître, *je paraissais.*—Like conduire, those ending in *ire:* as, lire, *je lisais ;* faire, *je faisais ;* luire, *je luisais ;* dire, *je disais*, etc.—Exceptions: rire, taire, écrire, and their compounds.

7. Mettre and its compounds, and être are regular in this tense.

8. The participle present, from which the French grammarians *derive* the imperfect, presents, of course, the same irregularities: venant, valant, prenant, écrivant, craignant, connaissant, conduisant. Exceptions: avoir, *ayant ;* savoir, *sachant.*

RÉSUMÉ OF EXAMPLES.

De quoi notre ami avait-il peur ?	*Of what was our friend afraid?*
Il n'avait peur de rien.	*He was afraid of nothing.*
N'aviez-vous pas besoin de mon frère ?	*Did you not want my brother?*
Nous avions besoin de lui.	*We wanted him.*
Le marchand n'avait-il pas besoin d'argent ?	*Did not the merchant want money?*
Il en avait grand besoin.	*He had great need of it.*

Quelle voiture conduisiez-vous ?	*What carriage were you driving ?*
Pour qui me preniez-vous ?	*For whom were you taking me ?*
Je venais vous trouver quand je vous rencontrai.	*I was coming to you when I met you.*
A qui écriviez-vous ce matin ?	*To whom were you writing this morning ?*
J'écrivais à ma sœur et à mon frère.	*I was writing to my sister and to my brother.*

Exercise 105.

Autrement, *otherwise ;*	Oubli-er, 1. *to forget ;*	Teind-re, 4. ir. *to dye ;*
Cass-er, 1. *to break ;*	Pêche, f. *fishing ;*	Teinturier, m. *dyer ;*
Chasse, f. *hunting ;*	Peind-re, 4. ir. *to paint ;*	Toile, f. *linen cloth ;*
Dire, 4. ir. *to say ;*	Reven-ir, 2. ir. *to return ;*	Rencontr-er, 1. *to meet ;*
Montre, f. *watch ;*		Val-oir, 3. ir. *to be worth ;*
Moins, (au) *at least ;*	Sav-oir, 3. ir. *to know ;*	Ven-ir, 2. ir. *to come, to have just ;* L. 26, 2.
Mort, e, *dead ;*	Se tromp-er, 1. *to be mistaken ;*	
Offens-er, 1. *to offend ;*		Vite, *quickly.*

1. Pourquoi n'écriviez-vous pas plus vite ce matin ? 2. Parce que j'avais peur de me tromper. 3. Ne craigniez-vous pas d'offenser cette dame ? 4. Je craignais de l'offenser, mais je ne pouvais faire autrement ? 5. Que peigniez-vous ce matin ? 6. Je peignais un tableau d'histoire. 7. Votre teinturier que teignait-il ? 8. Il teignait du drap, de la soie, et de la toile. 9. De quelle couleur les teignait-il ? 10. Il teignait le drap en noir, et la soie et la toile en vert. 11. Conduisiez-vous le jeune Polonais à l'école, lorsque je vous ai rencontré ? 12. Je conduisais mon fils aîné à l'église. 13. Que lisiez-vous ? 14. Je lisais des livres que je venais d'acheter. 15. Ne saviez-vous pas que ce monsieur est mort ? 16. Je l'avais oublié. 17. Combien la montre que vous avez cassée valait-elle ? 18. Elle valait au moins deux cents francs. 19. Ne valait-il pas mieux rester ici, que d'aller à la chasse ? 20. Il valait beaucoup mieux aller à l'école. 21. Votre ami que vous disait-il ? 22. Il me disait que son frère est revenu d'Espagne. 23. N'alliez-vous pas à la chasse tous les jours, lorsque vous demeuriez à la campagne ? 24. J'allais souvent à la pêche. 25. Mon frère allait tous les jours à l'école, quand il était ici.

Exercise 106.

1. Were you afraid this morning when you came to our house ? 2. I was afraid. 3. Of what were you afraid ? 4. I was afraid of the horse. 5. Was not your friend afraid of falling ? (*de tomber. See* L. 21, R. 2, 4.) 6. He was not afraid of falling, but he was afraid of making a mistake (*de se tromper. See* 2. *in Exercise above.*) 7. Were you not afraid of offending your brother ? 8. I was afraid of offending him. 9. Were you taking your son to school ? 10. I

was conducting him to school. 11. Was the dyer dyeing your coat? 12. He was not dyeing my coat, he was dyeing silk. 13. What color was he dyeing the silk? 14. He was dyeing some red, and some green. 15. Was he dyeing his linen cloth black or green? 16. He was neither dyeing it black nor green, he was dyeing it pink (*rose*). 17. Were you aware (*saviez-vous*) that your uncle is dead? 18. I did not know it (*imperfect*). 19. What was the gentleman reading? 20. He was reading a letter which he had just received. 21. Were you cold when you came here? 22. I was cold, hungry, and thirsty. 23. Were you not ashamed of your conduct? (*conduite*). 24. I was ashamed of it. 25. Were you not in want of money? 26. I was not in want of it. 27. Did you not want your father? 28. We did not want him. 29. Whither were you going when I met you? 30. I was going to your house. 31. Were you driving your brother's carriage? 32. I was driving my own (*la mienne*). 33. Were you writing to my father or to me? 34. I was writing to your friend's cousin. 35. Your friend was taking me for your eldest brother.

LEÇON LV. LESSON LV.

THE PAST ANTERIOR AND THE PLUPERFECT. (§ 122, 123.)

1. The past anterior is formed from the past definite of the auxiliary and the past participle of the verb: j'eus parlé, *I had spoken;* je fus venu, *I had come.*

2. The past anterior expresses generally a momentary action, which took place before another action. The latter immediately follows the former, and often depends upon it. The action expressed by this tense is not a customary one. The past anterior is often preceded by à peine, *scarcely;* dès que, aussitôt que, *as soon as;* quand, lorsque, *when;* [§ 122. § 123, (3.)]

Dès que j'eus fini ma tâche, je m'en allai. — *As soon as I had finished my task, I went away.*

3. This tense partakes of the nature of the past definite.

4. The pluperfect is composed of the imperfect of the auxiliary and the past participle of the verb; j'avais parlé, *I had spoken;* j'étais venu, *I had come.*

5. To this tense might be applied nearly all the rules on the use of the imperfect. The action which it expresses, or the situation

which it depicts, is frequently a customary one, or one often repeated.

Dès que j'avais fini ma tâche, je m'en allais.	*As soon as my task was finished, I used to go away.*

Résumé of Examples.

Aviez-vous eu soin de vos effets?	*Had you taken care of your things?*
J'en avais eu soin.	*I had taken care of them.*
N'aviez-vous pas eu besoin de moi?	*Had you not wanted me?*
J'avais eu besoin de vous et de votre frère.	*I had wanted you and your brother.*
N'aviez-vous pas eu l'intention de me parler?	*Had you not intended to speak to me?*
Nous avions eu envie de dormir.	*We had had a wish to sleep.*
Dès que vous eûtes fini votre lettre, ne la portâtes-vous pas à la poste?	*As soon as you had finished your letter, did you not carry it to the post-office?*
Dès que vous aviez fini vos lettres, ne les portiez-vous pas à la poste?	*As soon as your letters were finished, did you not (commonly) take them to the post-office?*
Dès que vous fûtes arrivé, ne commençâtes-vous pas à écrire?	*As soon as you had arrived, did you not commence writing?*
Dès que vous étiez arrivé, ne commençiez-vous pas à écrire?	*As soon as you used to arrive, did you not (generally) commence writing?*

Exercise 107.

Arrêt-er, 1. *to stop;*	Égar-er, 1. *to mislay;*	Perd-re, 1. ir. *to lose;*
Bal, m. *ball;*	Invit-er, 1. *to invite;*	Remont-er, 1. *to wind up;*
Bourse, f. *purse;*	Se lev-er, ref. *to rise;*	Retrouv-er, 1. *to find again;*
Se coucher, 1. ref. *to go to bed;*	Malade, *sick;*	Sort-ir, 2. ir. *to go out;*
Dangereusement, *dangerously;*	Musicien, m. *musician;*	Spectacle, m. *play.*
Dîner, m. *dinner;*	Oubli-er, 1. *to forget;*	
	Part-ir, 2. *to set out;*	

1. Ne saviez-vous pas où le musicien était allé? 2. Je savais qu'il était allé à Paris. 3. Ne vous avait-on pas dit que votre frère est mort? 4. On m'avait dit qu'il était dangereusement malade. 5. Ne vous couchiez-vous pas ordinairement, dès que vous aviez fini vos leçons? 6. Dès que je les avais finies, j'allais au spectacle. 7. Dès que vous eûtes fini vos leçons, que fîtes-vous hier au soir? 8. Aussitôt que je les eus finies, j'allai au bal. 9. Cette petite fille n'avait-elle pas envie de dormir? 10. Elle avait plus envie de dormir que d'étudier. 11. Qu'aviez-vous fait de (*with*) votre livre, quand je vous le demandai? 12. Je l'avais égaré. 13. Où l'aviez-vous égaré? 14. Je l'avais oublié dans le jardin. 15. Pourquoi votre montre était-elle arrêtée? 16. Parce que j'avais oublié de la remonter. 17. L'horloger ne l'avait-il pas remontée? 18. Il avait oublié de le faire. 19. N'aviez-vous pas perdu votre bourse? 20. Je l'avais perdue,

mais je l'ai retrouvée. 21. Votre cousin était-il parti? 22. Il n'était pas encore parti. 23. Était-il sorti? 24. Il était sorti avec ma mère. 25. Où était-il allé? 26. Il était allé chez mon frère, qui l'avait invité à dîner.

Exercise 108.

1. Had you not intended to speak to my brother? 2. I had intended to speak to him, but he had gone. 3. Did your sister go to bed last evening, as soon as she had read (*lu*) her book? 4. She went to bed as soon as she had read it. 5. Did she usually go to bed, as soon as she had read her book? 6. She generally went to bed, as soon as she had read six pages. 7. Were you told that your sister was sick? 8. I was told that she had been dangerously sick. 9. Did you know what you had done with your pen? 10. I knew that I had mislaid it. 11. Had your sister mislaid hers? 12. She had left (*laissée*) it in my room. 13. How many of your books have you mislaid? 14. I had mislaid five, but my brother has found them. 15. Where had you left them? 16. I had left them in the garden. 17. Had your brother's watch stopped? 18. It had stopped. 19. Why had it stopped? 20. He had forgotten to wind it up. 21. Had he not lost his key? (*clef*, f.) 22. He had not lost it. 23. Had you wanted my father or me? 24. I had wanted your little girl. 25. Was she out? 26. She was out with your brother. 27. Had she gone to my sister's? 28. She had gone thither. 29. Had the dyer gone? 30. He had not yet gone, he intended to leave at five. 31. Had you spoken to him, when I came yesterday? 32. I had spoken to him. 33. Had you told him that my sister is here? 34. I had told him. 35. Is he still here? 36. No, sir; he has gone, he went this morning at six.

LEÇON LVI. LESSON LVI.

PLACE OF THE SUBJECT AND OF THE OBJECT.

1. We have given [L. 6, R. 4, and § 76 (4.)] a rule for the place of the noun, subject or nominative of an interrogative sentence. To avoid confusing the student, we have hitherto refrained from introducing another construction which is often used by the French, instead of that given in the rule. When the sentence commences with où, *where;* que, *what;* quel, *which;* combien, *how much, how many;* and quand, *when;* the noun may be placed immediately after

the verb. This construction is similar to that of the English interrogative sentence, when the verb has no auxiliary [§ 76, (5.)]

Où sont nos amis et nos parents?	*Where are our friends and relations?*
Qu'écrit votre correspondant?	*What writes your correspondent?*

2. When there are, in a French sentence, two regimens of equal length, the direct should precede the indirect [§ 76, (7.)].

Avez-vous donné les jouets à l'enfant?	*Have you given the child the playthings?*
Avez-vous donné cette lettre à l'homme?	*Have you given the man that letter?*

3. The régime indirect precedes the direct, when the latter is followed by a relative pronoun, or by other words qualifying it, and rendering it much longer than the indirect [§ 76, (8)]. The indirect regimen should also precede the direct, when the sentence would otherwise be equivocal [§ 76, (9)].

Avez-vous donné à l'enfant, les joue's que vous lui aviez promis?	*Have you given the child, the playthings which you had promised him?*

Résumé of Examples.

Quel âge a cette demoiselle?	*How old is that young lady?*
Que veulent dire ces messieurs?	*What do those gentlemen mean?*
Où sont allés messieurs vos frères?	*Where have your brothers gone?*
Combien d'enfants a ce monsieur?	*How many children has that gentleman?*
Avez-vous payé cet argent au marchand?	*Have you paid the merchant that money?*
J'ai payé mon habit au tailleur.	*I paid the tailor for my coat.*
Vous avez payé au tailleur, le gilet que vous avez acheté.	*You have paid the tailor for the waistcoat which you have bought.*
N'aviez-vous pas demandé cela à l'enfant?	*Had you not asked the child for that?*

Exercise 109.

Accompagn-er, 1. *to accompany;*	Chaîne, f. *chain;*	Dernier, e, *last;*
Aîné, e, *eldest;*	Chapeau, m. *hat, bonnet;*	Près, *near, nearly;*
Associé, m. *partner;*	Cinquante, f. *fifty;*	Propriétaire, m. *landlord;*
Auberg-iste, m. *landlord;*	Clef, f. *key;*	Rend-re, 4. *to return;*
Bouteille, f. *bottle;*	Commis, m. *clerk;*	Serrurier, m. *locksmith;*
		Serviette, f. *napkin.*

1. Où étaient vos parents l'année dernière? 2. Ils étaient en Angleterre. 3. Où sont restés les messieurs qui vous accompagnaient ce matin? 4. Ils sont restés chez leurs associés. 5. Que lisaient vos amies, lorsque vous les avez quittées? 6. Elles lisaient les nouvelles qu'elles venaient de recevoir. 7. Que dit monsieur votre père?

8. Il ne dit rien. 9. Quel âge a ce monsieur? 10. Il a près de cinquante ans. 11. Quel âge ont vos enfants? 12. L'aîné a dix ans, et le plus jeune a six ans. 13. Avez-vous demandé votre chaîne d'or à ce monsieur? 14. Je la lui ai demandée. 15. Avez-vous rendu au commis, l'argent qu'il vous avait prêté? 16. Je le lui ai rendu. 17. Aviez-vous envie d'envoyer vos clefs au serrurier? 18. J'avais envie de les lui envoyer, car elles sont cassées. 19. Aviez-vous oublié de payer votre habit au tailleur? 20. J'avais oublié de le lui payer. 21. Valait-il la peine d'envoyer ces plumes à l'écolier? 22. Il ne valait pas la peine de les lui envoyer, il en avait d'autres. 23. Valait-il la peine d'envoyer ces bouteilles à l'aubergiste? 24. Il valait la peine de les lui envoyer, car il n'en avait pas. 25. Avez-vous demandé des serviettes à votre père? 26. Je n'ai pas voulu lui en demander.

EXERCISE 110.

1. What does the tailor mean? 2. I do not know what he means. 3. Where is your eldest sister? 4. She is at my brother's, or at my sister's. 5. What was the locksmith saying to you? 6. He was saying that he has brought my key. 7. How many letters have you carried to the post-office? 8. I have carried seven, three for you, and four for my father. 9. Have you given my sister the letter which I have written? 10. I have not given it to her, I left it upon my table. 11. Where is the gentleman who has brought that penknife? 12. He lives at my father's; do you wish to speak to him? 13. I wished to send him a letter which I brought from England. 14. Have you returned to that man the money which he had lent you? 15. I have returned it to him. 16. Has your mother paid the milliner (*modiste*) for her bonnet? 17. She has not yet paid her for it. 18. How old is the shoemaker's eldest son? 19. He is twenty-one. 20. Had you a wish to send your brother the key of your room? 21. I had a wish to send it to him. 22. Was it worth the while to give your brother that book? 23. It was worth the while to give it to him, for (*car*) he wanted it. 24. Was it worth the while to send these bottles to the druggist (*apothicaire*)? 25. It was worth the while to send them to him. 26. Where is the landlord? 27. He is in England. 28. Is your sister at home? 29. No, sir; she is out. 30. How many children has the locksmith? 31. He has ten. 32. How many books has the physician? 33. He has five hundred volumes. 34. Have you given the gentleman that letter? 35. I have forgotten to give it to him.

LEÇON LVII. LESSON LVII.

PLACE OF VERB.—PRESENT TENSE USED IN FRENCH, WHERE THE PAST IS USED IN ENGLISH, ETC.

1. The French avoid placing the verb at the end of such sentences as the following when the nominative is a noun.

Dites moi où demeure M. H.	*Tell me where Mr. H. lives.*
Je ne sais où est mon père.	*I do not know where my father is.*
Savez-vous où est George?	*Do you know where George is?*

2. In speaking of a state, condition, or action commenced in the past, but still continuing, the French use the present of the indicative. The past is commonly used in English in similar cases.

Combien de temps y a-t-il qu'il est ici?	*How long has he been here?*
Il y a deux heures qu'il écrit.	*He has been writing these two hours.*
Il y a un mois qu'il demeure à Paris.	*He has lived in Paris one month.*
Il y a deux ans qu'il est mort.	*He has been dead these two years.*

3. When, however, the state no longer continues, the past may be used in French, in the same manner as it is used in English.

Combien de temps avez-vous demeuré à L.?	*How long did you live in L.?*
Combien de mois avez-vous appris l'allemand?	*How many months did you learn German?*
Il y a un mois que je ne l'ai vu.	*I have not seen him this month.*

4. Combien y a-t-il ... Combien de milles y a-t-il ... Quelle distance y a-t-il? answer to the English expressions *How far ... How many miles is it ... What is the distance*, etc.

RÉSUMÉ OF EXAMPLES.

Combien de temps y a-t-il que vous avez cette maison?	*How long have you had that house?*
Il y a deux ans que nous l'avons.	*We have had it these two years.*
Combien de temps avez-vous eu cette maison?	*How long did you have this house?*
Nous l'avons eue dix ans.	*We had it ten years.*
Combien de temps y a-t-il que votre frère apprend le grec?	*How long has your brother been learning Greek?*
Il y a six ans qu'il l'apprend.	*He has been learning it six years.*
Quelle distance y a-t-il de Calais à Boulogne?	*How far is it from Calais to Boulogne?*
Il y a huit lieues de Calais à Boulogne.	*It is eight leagues from Calais to Boulogne.*

Exercise 111.

Affiche, f. *bill;*
An, m., année, f. *year;*
Angleterre, f. *England;*
Attend-re, 4. *to expect, to wait for;*
Copenhague, *Copenhagen;*
Compagnie, f. *company;*
Demeurer, 1. *to live;*
Demi, e, *half;*
Fatigué, e, *tired;*
Imprimeur, m. *printer;*
Lieue, f. *league;*
Londres, *London;*
Maintenant, *now;*
Mois, m, *month;*
Morceau, m. *piece;*
Né, *from* naître, 4. *to be born;*
Verger, m. *orchard;*
Vienne, *Vienna.*

1. Combien de temps y a-t-il que M. L. demeure à Paris? 2. Il y a dix ans qu'il y demeure. 3. N'a-t-il pas demeuré à Lyon? 4. Il y a demeuré autrefois. 5. Pouvez-vous me dire où est le fils du capitaine? 6. Il y a un an qu'il est en Angleterre. 7. Savez-vous où demeure M. B.? 8. Il demeurait autrefois à Rouen; je ne sais pas où il demeure maintenant. 9. Y a-t-il longtemps que vous êtes ici? 10. Il y a plus de deux mois que nous sommes ici. 11. Combien de temps y a-t-il que vous avez ce verger? 12. Il y a un an que nous l'avons. 13. Où cet imprimeur est-il né? 14. Il est né à Falaise. 15. Savez-vous combien il y a de Paris à Vienne? 16. Il y a trois cent-six lieues de Paris à Vienne, et deux cents lieues de Vienne à Copenhague. 17. Y a-t-il longtemps que la compagnie est venue? 18. Il y a plus de deux heures qu'elle est ici. 19. Y a-t-il longtemps que vous avez lu cette affiche? 20. Il y a plus de trois heures que je l'ai lue. 21. N'y a-t-il pas plus d'une demi-heure que votre sœur lit? 22. Il y a si longtemps qu'elle lit, qu'elle en est fatiguée. 23. Y a-t-il longtemps que vous attendez ce morceau de musique? 24. Il y a plus d'un an que je l'attends.

Exercise 112.

1. How long has the printer been here? 2. He has been here more than a year. 3. Do you not know where my father lives? 4. I know where he lives, but I have no time to go to his house today. 5. How long has the physician lived in Paris? 6. He has lived there ten years. 7. How long did he live in England? 8. He lived in England six years and a half. 9. Can you tell me where the locksmith lives? 10. He lives at my brother's. 11. Have you been waiting long for this book? 12. I have been waiting for it more than a year. 13. How long has your son been learning Greek? 14. He has been learning it these two years. 15. Was not your sister born in Falaise? 16. No, sir; she was born at Paris. 17. How long has your brother had this orchard? 18. He has had it more than six months. 19. How far is it from Paris to Lyons? 20. It is one hundred and sixteen leagues from Paris to Lyons. 21. Is it farther (*plus loin*) from Lyons to Geneva (*Génève*) than from Lyons

to Turin? 22. It is farther from Lyons to Turin than from Lyons to Geneva. 23. How long did your father live in Germany? (*Allemagne.*) 24. He lived in Germany two years, and in England six months. 25. How long have you lived in Paris? 26. We have been here six months. 27. How long did you live in Rome? 28. We lived there more than a year. 29. How long has your brother been gone? 30. He has been gone these two years. 31. Have you been learning German more than one year? 32. I have been learning it more than four years. 33. Your sister has been learning music one year and a half.

LEÇON LVIII. LESSON LVIII.

CHANGER, TARDER.

1. Changer [1. *see* § 49, (1.)], used in the sense of *to change, to leave one thing for another*, is followed by the preposition *de;* changer d'habit, de chapeau, etc., *to put on another coat, hat, etc.;* changer d'avis, *to change one's mind;* changer de maison, *to move, to change houses;* changer de place, changer de pays, changer de climat, *to go to another place, country, climate;* changer de nom, *to change one's name.* The student will perceive that the noun following *changer*, is not preceded by a possessive adjective, like the noun of the English sentence.

Voulez-vous changer d'habit?	*Will you change your coat?*
Ce monsieur a changé de nom.	*That gentleman has changed his name.*

2. Changer contre, means *to exchange for;* changer pour, *to change for, to get change for.*

Voulez-vous changer votre chapeau contre le mien?	*Will you exchange your hat for mine?*
Changez ce billet pour de l'argent.	*Change that bill for silver.*

3. Tarder means *to tarry, to be long in coming.* Tarder, used unipersonally, and accompanied by an indirect object, means *to long, to wish for.*

Votre sœur tarde bien à venir.	*Your sister is very long coming.*
Il me tarde de la voir.	*I long to see her.*

RÉSUMÉ OF EXAMPLES.

N'avez-vous pas changé d'appartement?	*Have you not taken another apartment?*
Nous avons changé de maison.	*We have changed houses.*

Votre frère a changé de conduite.	*Your brother has changed his conduct.*
Cette dame a changé de religion.	*That lady has changed her religion.*
Contre quoi avez-vous changé votre cheval ?	*For what have you exchanged your horse ?*
J'ai besoin de monnaie, pouvez-vous me changer cette pièce de vingt francs ?	*I want change, can you change me this twenty franc piece ?*
Ce garçon a beaucoup tardé.	*That boy tarried very much.*
Il nous tardait d'arriver.	*We longed to arrive.*
Il leur tardait de revoir leurs amis.	*They longed to see their friends again.*
Il me tarde de revoir la France.	*I long to see France again.*

Exercise 113.

Air, m. *air ;*	Jeune, *young ;*	Pays, m. *country ;*
Avis, m. *mind, meaning ;*	Maître, m. *master, owner ;*	Pièce, f. *piece ;*
Blanc, che, *white ;*	Manteau, m. *cloak ;*	Rentr-er, 1. *to come in again, to go in again ;*
Combat, m. *combat ;*	Monnaie, f. *change ;*	Vie, f. *life, conduct ;*
Conduite, f. *conduct ;*	Mouillé, e, *wet ;*	Visage, m. *countenance, face.*
Gris, e, *gray ;*	Parce que, *because ;*	
Guinée, f. *guinea ;*	Passé, e, *past, last ;*	

1. Cet homme n'a-t-il pas changé de vie ? 2. Il a changé de conduite. 3. Cette grande maison n'a-t-elle pas changé de maître ? 4. Elle a changé de maître, le capitaine G. vient de l'acheter. 5. Vous êtes mouillé, pourquoi ne changez-vous pas de manteau ? 6. Parce que je n'en ai pas d'autre. 7. Votre cousine ne change-t-elle pas souvent d'avis ? 8. Elle en change bien souvent. 9. Pendant le combat, ce jeune soldat n'a-t-il pas changé de visage ? 10. Il n'a point changé de visage ? 11. Ce malade ne devrait-il pas changer d'air ? 12. Le médecin lui recommande de changer de pays. 13. Où est votre cheval gris ? 14. Je ne l'ai plus, je l'ai changé contre un blanc. 15. Avec qui l'avez-vous changé ? 16. Je l'ai changé avec le jeune homme qui demeurait ici le mois passé. 17. Le marchand peut-il me changer cette pièce de quarante francs ? 18. Il ne saurait (*cannot*) vous la changer, il n'a pas de monnaie. 19. Avez-vous la monnaie d'une guinée ? (*change for a guinea*). 20. Combien de schellings y a-t-il dans une guinée ? 21. Il y en a vingt et un. 22. Votre petit garçon ne tarde-t-il pas à rentrer ? 23. Il tarde beaucoup. 24. Ne vous tarde-t-il pas d'aller en Italie ? 25. Il me tarde d'y aller.

Exercise 114.

1. Why do you not change your coat ? 2. For a very good reason, (*raison*, f.) because I have no other. 3. Has your father changed houses ? 4. No, sir ; but we intend to do so (*de le faire*) to-morrow. 5. Has that child changed his conduct ? 6. He has changed his conduct, he is very good now (*maintenant*). 7. Have you changed your

religion? 8. No, sir; I have not changed my religion. 9. Do you not change your place very often? 10. I change my place when I am tired. 11. Does not your sister change her mind every day? 12. She does not change her mind every day. 13. Was not your brother afraid, did not his countenance change? 14. His countenance changed, but he was not afraid. 15. Have you not changed rooms (*chambre*, f.)? 16. I have not changed rooms, my room is very good. 17. Do you not long to be in France? 18. I long to be there. 19. Does not your mother tarry too long? 20. She is very long in coming. 21. Have you changed the forty franc piece? 22. I have not changed it yet. 23. Why have you not changed it? 24. Because your father has no change. 25. Have you the change for a guinea? 26. No, sir; I have only twelve shillings. 27. How many cents are there in a dollar? 28. There are one hundred. 29. Has that gentleman exchanged that house? 30. Yes, sir; he has exchanged it for a warehouse. 31. Will you exchange your hat for mine? 32. No, sir; your hat is too small for me. 33. With whom have you exchanged your horse? 34. I have exchanged it with my brother. 35. I have exchanged it for a white one.

LEÇON LIX. LESSON LIX.

PLURAL OF COMPOUND NOUNS.

1. We have given in Lesson 11, rules for forming the plural of nouns, but have in accordance with our plan of not presenting too many difficulties at once, deferred until the present Lesson, the rules for the formation of the plural of compound nouns.

2. When a noun is composed of two substantives, or of a substantive and an adjective, *both* take the form of the plural: un chef-lieu, des chefs-lieux, *a chief place, chief places;* un gentilhomme, des gentilshommes, *a nobleman, noblemen* [§ 9, (1.) (3.)].

3. When, however, two nouns are connected by a preposition, the *first* only becomes plural: Un chef-d'œuvre, des chefs-d'œuvre, *a master-piece, master-pieces* [§ 9, (2.)].

4. In words composed of a noun and a verb, preposition or adverb, the *noun* only becomes plural; passe-port, passe-ports, *passport, passports* [§ 9, (6.)].

5. Words composed of two verbs, or of a verb, an adverb, and a

preposition, are invariable: un passe-partout, des passe-partout, *master-key, master-keys* [§ 9, (8.)].

6. We have seen [L. 5, R. 4.] that the name of the material always follows the name of the object, and that both are united by the preposition *de*. The name of the profession or occupation, also follows the noun representing the individual, and the same preposition *de* connects the two: un maître d'armes, *a fencing-master;* un maître de dessin, *a drawing master;* un marchand de farine, *a dealer in flour* [§ 76, (12.) § 81, (4.)].

7. The name of a vehicle, boat, mill, etc., always precedes the noun describing the power by which it is impelled, or the purpose to which it is adapted; the name of an apartment, that of the use to which it is appropriated. The connecting preposition is *à:* un moulin à vapeur, *a steam mill;* un bateau à vapeur, *a steamboat;* un moulin à eau, *a water mill;* la salle à manger, *the dining-room* [§ 76, (13.) (14.) § 81, (4.) (5.)].

Résumé of Examples.

Lille et Arras sont les chefs-lieux des départements du Nord et du Pas-de-Calais.	*Lisle and Arras are the chief places of the departments of the North and of the Pas-de-Calais.*
Les chemins de fer et les bateaux à vapeur sont très nombreux en Amérique.	*Railroads and steamboats are very numerous in America.*
Cette maison contient un salon, une salle à manger, une cuisine, et plusieurs chambres à coucher.	*That house contains a drawing-room, a dining-room, a kitchen, and several bed-rooms.*
Les moulins à vent sont plus communs en France que les moulins à eau ou à vapeur.	*Windmills are more common in France than water or steam-mills.*

Exercise 115.

Armes, f. p. *fencing;*
Bât-ir, 2. *to build;*
Bouteille, f. *bottle;*
Cabriolet, m. *gig;*
Chat-huant, m. *owl;*
Chauve-souris, f. *bat;*
Département, m. *department;*
Dessin, m. *drawing;*
Engag-er, 1. *to engage;*
Faire bât-ir, 2. *to have built;*
Italie, f. *Italy;*
Se munir, 1. ref. *to provide one's self with;*
Ordinaire, *usual;*
Roue, f. *wheel;*
Voyag-er, 1. *to travel;*
Voile, f. *sail.*

1. Faut-il avoir un passe-port pour voyager en France? 2. Il faut en avoir un. 3. Les Anglais se munissent-ils de passe-ports pour voyager en Angleterre? 4. On n'a pas besoin de passe-port en Angleterre. 5. Aimez-vous à voyager sur les chemins de fer? 6. J'aime mieux voyager sur les chemins de fer que sur les chemins ordinaires. 7. Avez-vous apporté vos passe-partout? 8. Je n'ai point de passe-partout, je n'ai que des clefs ordinaires. 9. Votre

frère est-il venu dans un bâteau à vapeur? 10. Il est venu dans un bâteau à voiles. 11. Avez-vous une voiture à quatre chevaux? 12. Non, monsieur; nous n'avons qu'un cabriolet à un cheval. 13. Votre frère a-t-il bâti un moulin à vapeur? 14. Il a fait bâtir deux moulins, l'un à vent et l'autre à eau. 15. Votre compagnon a-t-il engagé un maître d'armes? 16. Non, monsieur; il a déjà un maître de dessin, et un maître de danse. 17. Combien de chambres à coucher avez-vous? 18. Nous en avons deux. 19. Avez-vous une bouteille de vin? 20. Non, monsieur; mais j'ai une bouteille à vin (*wine-bottle*) [§ 81.]. 21. Voyez-vous les chats-huants? 22. Non, mais je vois les chauves-souris. 23. J'ai une voiture à quatre roues.

Exercise 116.

1. Is your father in England? 2. No, sir; he is in France with my brother. 3. Have they taken passports? 4. Yes, sir; they have taken two. 5. Is it necessary to have a passport to travel in America? 6. No, sir; but it is necessary to have one to travel in Italy. 7. Is there a steamboat from Calais to Dover (*Douvres*)? 8. There are several. 9. Is there a railroad from Paris to Brussels (*Bruxelles*)? 10. There is one from Paris to Brussels, and one from Paris to Tours. 11. Has your brother bought a wind-mill? 12. No, sir; but he has built a steam-mill. 13. Are there many wind-mills in America? 14. No, sir; but there are many water and steam-mills. 15. Have your sisters a dancing-master? 16. They have a dancing-master, and a music master. 17. Does your cousin learn drawing? 18. He does not learn it, he cannot find a drawing-master. 19. Is the fencing-master in the dining-room? 20. No, sir; he is in the drawing-room. 21. Is your cousin in his bed-room? 22. No, sir; he is out (*sorti*). 23. How many rooms are there in your house. 24. Five; a kitchen, a dining-room, a drawing-room, and two bed-rooms. 25. Are there owls here? 26. Yes, sir; and bats too. 27. Have you seen those master-pieces? 28. Yes, sir; I have seen them. 29. Have you sent them to the chief place of the department? 30. I have sent them there. 31. Have you a two-horse gig? 32. I have a four-horse one. 33. Has your brother a two-wheel carriage? 34. He has a two-seat carriage (*à deux sièges*).

LEÇON LX. LESSON LX.

THE TWO FUTURES, SIMPLE, AND ANTERIOR. [§ 124.]

1. The future of every verb, in the French language, ends with *rai, ras, ra, rons, rez, ront.*

2. This tense, in all the regular verbs, as also in the irregular verbs not mentioned in the next lesson, may be formed from the present of the infinitive by changing the *r* of the first and second conjugations, and the *oir* and *re* of the third and fourth, into the terminations already given, and here again repeated.

3. CONJUGATION OF THE FUTURE SIMPLE OF THE REGULAR VERBS,

Je	chante -rai	fini -rai	recev -rai	rend -rai
I	*will sing*	*will finish*	*will receive*	*will render*
Tu	parle -ras	chéri -ras	apercev -ras	vend -ras
Thou	*wilt speak*	*wilt cherish*	*wilt perceive*	*wilt sell*
Il	donne -ra	fourni -ra	percev -ra	tend -ra
He	*shall give*	*will furnish*	*will gather*	*will tend*
Nous	cherche-rons	puni -rons	concev -rons	entend -rons
We	*will seek*	*shall punish*	*will conceive*	*will hear*
Vous	porte -rez	saisi -rez	dev -rez	perd -rez
You	*will carry*	*will seize*	*will owe*	*will lose*
Ils	aime -ront	uni -ront	décev -ront	mord -ront
They	*will love*	*will unite*	*will deceive*	*will bite*

4. The future anterior is merely the past participle of the verb, conjugated with the future of one of the auxiliaries *avoir* and *être:*

J'aurai fini; je me serai flatté. *I shall have done; I shall have flattered myself.*

5. The student, when rendering English into French, should be careful to distinguish *will*, taken as an auxiliary, from the same word employed as a separate verb. In this latter case, it is always equivalent to the verb, *to wish*, or *to be willing*, and should not be rendered by the future of the verb, but by the present of *vouloir:*

Ne lui écrirez-vous pas?	*Will you not write to him? (are you not going to write to him?)*
Ne voulez-vous pas lui écrire?	*Will you not (are you not willing) to write to him?*

In the first example *will* is used as an auxiliary to *write;* in the second it is used as a separate verb.

RÉSUMÉ OF EXAMPLES.

Quand parlerez-vous à ce monsieur?	*When will you speak to that gentleman?*
Vous fournira-t-il des provisions?	*Will he furnish you provisions?*
Ils ne recevront pas leurs revenus.	*They will not receive their income.*

Ne vendrez-vous pas vos propriétés?	*Will you not sell your property?*
Que voulez-vous avoir?	*What do you wish to have?*
Que veut lire votre frère?	*What will your brother read?*
Apporterez-vous des pommes?	*Will you bring apples?*
Nous amènerons nos enfants.	*We will bring our children.*
Vous apporterez des légumes.	*You will bring vegetables.*

Exercise 117.

Abreuvoir, m. *watering place;*	Champ, m. *field:*	Men-er, 1. [§ 49, (6.)] *to take, to lead;*
Appel-er, 1. [§ 49, (4.)] *to call;*	Château, m. *villa:*	Prom-en-er, 1. ref. [§ 49, (6.)] *to walk or ride for pleasure, or health;*
Après-midi, f. *afternoon;*	Colporteur, m. *pedlar, hawker;*	Récolt-er, 1. *to harvest;*
Avoine, f. *oats;*	Donner à manger, *to feed;*	Sem-er, 1. [§ 49, (6.)] *to sow.*
Blé, m. *wheat;*	Écurie, f. *stable;*	
Cachet-er, 1. [§ 49, (4.)] *to seal;*	Foin, m. *hay:*	
	Geler, 1. [§ 49, (5.)] *to freeze;*	

1. Mènerez-vous vos enfants à l'école? 2. Je les mènerai à l'école et à l'église. 3. Le jardinier apportera-t-il des légumes au marché? 4. Il y en apportera. 5. Où mènerez-vous ce cheval? 6. Je le mènerai à l'écurie. 7. Lui donnerez-vous à manger? 8. Je lui donnerai du foin et de l'avoine. 9. Lui donnerez-vous de l'eau? 10. Je le mènerai à l'abreuvoir. 11. Paierez-[§ 49, (2.)] vous ce que vous devez? 12. Ne voulez-vous pas vous promener? 13. Je me promènerai cette après-midi. 14. Vous promènerez-vous à pied, ou à cheval? 15. Je me promènerai à cheval, et ma sœur se promènera en voiture. 16. Marcherez-vous beaucoup, dans votre voyage à Paris? 17. Nous ne marcherons pas du tout. 18. N'appellerez-[§ 49, (4.)] vous pas le colporteur? 19. Je ne l'appellerai pas. 20. N'achèterez-[§ 49, (5.)] vous pas ce château? 21. Nous l'achèterons si nous pouvons. 22. Ne gèlera-t-il pas [§ 49, (5.)] cette nuit? 23. Je ne le crois pas, il fait trop chaud. 24. Ne sèmerez-[§ 49, (6.)] vous pas tout le blé que vous récolterez? 25. Je n'en sèmerai qu'une partie, je vendrai le reste. 26. Je cachetterai mes lettres, et je les porterai à la poste.

Exercise 118.

1. Will not the gentleman call his children? 2. He will call his children and his sister's. 3. Will you not bring your children? 4. I cannot bring them. 5. Will you not take a ride this afternoon? 6. We will ride in a carriage to-morrow. 7. Will you not buy my father's horses? 8. I shall not buy them, I have no money. 9. Will you not call the pedlar? 10. I do not wish to call him, I do not wish to buy any thing. 11. Will you pay the tailor? 12. I will pay him for my coat. 13. Will it not freeze to-morrow. 14. It will

freeze to-morrow; it is very cold. 15. Will you not sow oats in this field? (*See note, Lesson* 7). 16. I will not sow oats, I will sow wheat there. 17. Will you take your sister to school? 18. I will take her there this afternoon. 19. Will you not take your son to market? 20. I will not take him there. 21. Will not the gardener take his horse to the watering place? 22. He will take him there. 23. Will you give oats to your horse? 24. I will give him hay. 25. Will you bring your son with you? 26. I will bring him to-morrow. 27. Will he bring his horse? 28. He will bring his horse and carriage. 29. Why do you carry that little child? 30. He is too sick to (*pour*) walk. 31. Will your brother sell his property? 32. He will only sell part of it. 33. Will not your servant carry the letter to the post-office? 34. I will seal it and give it to him. 35. Will you feed my horse? 36. I will not feed him, I have no oats.

LEÇON LXI. LESSON LXI.

IRREGULARITIES OF THE FUTURE.

1. The two irregular verbs of the first conjugation aller, *to go*, and envoyer, *to send*, make in the future *j'irai, j'enverrai* [*see* § 62.]

2. All the verbs of the second conjugation, which end in *enir*, change that termination into *iendrai*, etc., for the future: as, tenir, *to hold*; venir, *to come*; *je tiendrai, je viendrai.* Acquérir, *to acquire*; conquérir, *to conquer*; requérir, *to require*; mourir, *to die*; and courir, *to run*, and its compounds, double the *r* in the future:—*j'acquerrai, je mourrai, je courrai.* Cueillir, *to gather*, and its compounds, change the *i* preceding the *r* into *e*: *je cueillerai.*

3. In the third conjugation, s'asseoir, *to sit down*, and seoir, *to sit*, make *je m'assiérai* and *je siérai.* Falloir, *to be necessary*, vouloir, *to be willing*, and valoir, *to be worth*, make *il faudra, je voudrai*, and *je vaudrai.* Voir, *to see*, and revoir, *to see again*, make *je verrai, je reverrai.* Pouvoir, *to be able*, makes *je pourrai*, and pourvoir, *to provide*, *je pourvoirai.* Savoir, *to know*, and avoir, *to have*, make *je saurai*, and *j'aurai.*

4. Être, *to be*, faire, *to make*, and its compounds, are the only verbs of the fourth conjugation, which are irregular in the future: *je serai, je ferai*, etc.

5. The futures, simple and anterior, are used in French after an adverb of time, in cases similar to those in which the English use the present and perfect of the indicative, with a *future* meaning.

Quand vous verrez ces messieurs . .	*When you see those gentlemen . . .*
Dès que vous aurez reçu cette lettre vous partirez.	*As soon as you have received this letter you will leave.*

Résumé of Examples.

Irez-vous en France cette année ?	*Shall you go to France this year ?*
Nous irons en France et en Italie.	*We shall go to France and Italy.*
Nous vous enverrons chercher.	*We shall send for you.*
Ne viendrez-vous pas nous trouver ?	*Will you not come to us ?*
Ne nous assiérons-nous pas ?	*Shall we not sit down ?*
Quand ils viendront, j'aurai ma	*When they come, I shall have my letter.*
Cela vaudra-t-il la peine ?	*Will that be worth the while ?*
Cet habit ira-t-il bien ?	*Will that coat fit well ?*
Il faudra leur envoyer de l'argent.	*It will be necessary to send them money.*

Exercise 119.

Avec, *with ;*	Guitare, f. *guitar ;*	Part-ir, 2. ir. *to set out, to leave ;*
Bientôt, *soon ;*	Lentement, *slowly ;*	Permett-re, 4. ir. *to permit ;*
Connaît-re, 4. ir. *to know ;*	Malade, *ill, sick ;*	Plaisir, m. *pleasure ;*
Demain, *to-morrow ;*	March-er, *to walk, to go on foot ;*	Prêt-er, 1. *to lend ;*
Demeure, f. *dwelling ;*	Moi-même, *myself ;*	Sort-ir, 2. ir. *to go out.*
Fraise, f. *strawberry ;*	Où, *where ;*	

1. Ne viendrez-vous pas nous voir demain ? 2. J'irai vous voir, si le temps le permet. 3. N'enverrez-vous pas chercher le médecin, si votre fils est malade ? 4. Je l'irai chercher moi-même. 5. Quand je serai fatigué, je marcherai plus lentement. 6. Quand vous connaîtrez sa demeure, irez-vous le voir ? 7. J'irai le voir, aussitôt que je saurai où il demeure. 8. Ne le verrez-vous pas aujourd'hui ? 9. Je le verrai cette après-midi. 10. Pourrez-vous nous accompagner ? 11. Je le ferai avec beaucoup de plaisir. 12. Ne leur enverrez-vous point des fraises ? 13. Je leur en enverrai, quand les miennes seront mûres. 14. Ne faudra-t-il pas leur écrire bientôt ? 15. Quand nous aurons reçu des nouvelles de leur parent, il faudra leur écrire. 16. Que ferons-nous demain ? 17. Nous irons à la chasse. 18. N'irez-vous pas chez votre père ? 19. Nous irons certainement. 20. Quand votre guitare sera arrivée, la prêterez-vous ? 21. Je ne pourrai la prêter. 22. A quelle heure partirez-vous demain ? 23. Je partirai à cinq heures du matin. 24. Ne sortirez-vous pas ce soir ? 25. Je ne sortirai pas, et je me coucherai de bonne heure.

Exercise 120.

1. Will you send for the physician ? 2. I will send for him this afternoon. 3. Will not the little girl go and fetch apples ? 4. She will send for some. 5. Will you not sit down, when you are tired ?

6. We will not sit down, we have no time. 7. What will your brother do, when he is tired? [R. 5.] 8. He will do what [*ce que*] he can. [R. 5.] 9. Will it be worth the while to (*de*) write to him? 10. It will not be worth the while, for (*car*) he will not come. 11. Will it not be necessary to speak to the merchant? 12. It will not be necessary to speak to him. 13. Will it be necessary for us to take passports? 14. It will be necessary. (*Il le faudra.*) 15. Will not your little boy walk more slowly, when he is tired? 16. When he is tired, he will sit down. 17. What will your sister do to-morrow? 18. She will go to church and to school. 19. Will she not come here? 20. She will not be able to come. 21. Will you walk, or go on horseback? (*Irez-vous à pied, ou à cheval?*) 22. I shall go on horseback. 23. Why do you not go in a carriage? 24. Because my carriage is in London. 25. When will you see them? 26. I shall see them as soon as I can. 27. Will they come to our house to-morrow? 28. They will do so with much pleasure. 29. When you see that gentleman, will you speak to him? 30. I will not speak to him. 31. When you have written your letters, what will you do? 32. I shall come to your house. 33. When you have read that book, will you send it to me? 34. I will send it to you. 35. Will you send it to-day? 36. I will send it to-morrow. 37. They will come to you to-morrow.

LEÇON LXII. LESSON LXII.

THE TWO CONDITIONALS. (§ 125.)

1. The conditional present may be formed from the future, by displacing the terminations *ai, as, a, ons, ez, ont*, and substituting those of the imperfect of the indicative, *ais, ais, ait, ions, iez, aient.*

2. Every verb in the French language, regular and irregular, has in this tense the above terminations.

3. CONJUGATION OF THE CONDITIONAL PRESENT OF THE REGULAR VERBS,

Je chanter -ais	finir -ais	recevr -ais	rendr -ais
I would sing	*would finish*	*would receive*	*would render*
Tu parler -ais	chérir -ais	apercevr -ais	vendr -ais
Thou wouldst speak	*wouldst cherish*	*wouldst perceive*	*wouldst sell*
Il donner -ait	fournir -ait	percevr -ait	tendr -ait
He should give	*should furnish*	*would gather*	*should tend*
Nous chercher -ions	punir -ions	concevr -ions	entendr -ions
We would seek	*should punish*	*would conceive*	*should hear*
Vous porter -iez	saisir -iez	devr -iez	perdr -iez
You should carry	*would seize*	*should owe*	*would lose*
Ils aimer -aient	unir -aient	décevr -aient	mordr -aient
They would love	*should unite*	*would deceive*	*should bite*

4. The irregularities of the conditional do not appear in the terminations, but in the *stem* of the verb. They are precisely the same as those of the future. Those irregularities will be found in the last lesson, and need not be repeated here. The conditional of any irregular verb may be formed, by placing after the last *r* of the future, the terminations of the imperfect of the indicative.

5. The conditional past is formed from the conditional present of one of the auxiliaries, *avoir, être*, and the past participle of the verb [§ 125, (2.)]

J'aurais écrit, je me serais flatté.	*I should have written, I should have flattered myself.*

6. The two futures and the two conditionals should not be used after the conjunction *si* (*if*). But in such case, the present and the imperfect of the indicative should be used.

S'il pouvait quitter son père, il viendrait.	*If he could leave his father, he would come.*
Si j'étais à votre place, j'irais.	*If I were in your place, I would go.*

Résumé of Examples.

Nous irions à la chasse, si nous avions le temps.	*We would go hunting, if we had time.*
Je lirais, si j'avais des livres ici.	*I would read, if I had books here.*
J'aimerais mieux aller à pied qu'à cheval.	*I would prefer walking to riding.*
Votre mère se porterait mieux à Paris.	*Your mother would be better in Paris.*
Nous nous passerions facilement de ce livre.	*We might easily do without that book.*
Ne vaudrait-il pas mieux lui écrire?	*Would it not be better to write to him?*
Ne faudrait-il pas lui écrire?	*Would it not be necessary to write to him?*
Je m'assiérais, si j'étais fatigué.	*I would sit down if I were tired.*
Cet habit m'irait bien, s'il était assez large.	*That coat would fit me well, if it were broad enough.*

Exercise 121.

S'amus-er, 1. ref. *to amuse one's self;*
S'approch-er, 1. ref. *to come near;*
Certainement, *certainly;*
S'éloign-er, 1. ref. *to go from;*
Demeur-er, 1. *to live;*
S'ennuy-er, 1. ref. [§49.] *to be* or *become weary;*
Interromp-re, 4. ir. *to interrupt;*
Invit-er, 1. *to invite;*
Mett-re, 4. ir. *to put on;*
Mouill-er, 1. *to wet;*
Ôt-er, 1. *to take off;*
Peut-être, *perhaps;*
Se tromp-er, 1. ref. *to be mistaken;*
Se por-ter, 1. ref. *to be* or *do;*
Séch-er, 1. *to dry;*
Vite, *quick, quickly;*
Voyage, m. *journey.*

1. Quel habit mettriez-vous, si vous alliez à la chasse? 2. Je mettrais un habit vert. 3. N'ôteriez-vous pas vos bottes, si elles étaient mouillées? 4. Je les ôterais, et je les ferais sécher. 5. Si

vous aviez froid, ne vous approcheriez-vous pas du feu? 6. Je m'en approcherais certainement. 7. Votre petit garçon ne s'en éloignerait-il pas, s'il avait trop chaud? 8. Il s'en éloignerait bien vite. 9. Vous ennuieriez-vous ici? 10. Je ne m'ennuierais pas, je m'amuserais à lire. 11. Ne vous tromperiez-vous pas, si vous faisiez ce calcul? 12. Je me tromperais peut-être, si j'étais interrompu. 13. Viendriez-vous, si on vous invitait? 14. Je viendrais avec beaucoup de plaisir. 15. Ne vous porteriez-vous pas mieux, si vous lisiez moins? 16. Je me porterais beaucoup mieux. 17. Ne faudrait-il pas lui parler de votre affaire? 18. Il faudrait lui en parler. 19. Combien d'argent vous faudrait-il? 20. Il me faudrait mille francs, si je faisais ce voyage. 21. Ne vaudrait-il pas mieux lui parler, que lui écrire? 22. Il vaudrait mieux lui écrire. 23. Si vous étiez à ma place, que feriez-vous? 24. Si j'étais à votre place, je lui paierais ce que je lui dois. 25. Si j'avais le temps, je porterais volontiers vos lettres à la poste.

EXERCISE 122.

1. Would you not read if you had time? 2. I would read two hours every day, if I had time. 3. What coat would your brother put on, if he went to church? 4. He would put on a black coat. 5. Would you put on a black hat? 6. I would put on a straw hat, (*chapeau de paille*) if it was warm. 7. Would you not draw [L. 39, 6.] near the fire, if you were cold? 8. We would draw near it. 9. Would you not take off your coat? 10. I would take it off, if it were wet. 11. Would you go to my father's, if he invited you? 12. I would go to his house and to your brother's, if they invited me. 13. Would you put on your boots, if they were wet? 14. If they were wet, I would not put them on. 15. How much money would you want, if you went to England? 16. We would want three thousand francs. 17. Would you not be better, if you lived in the country? 18. I should not be better. 19. Would it not be better to write to your brother? 20. It would be better to write to him. 21. Would you read the book, if I lent it to you? 22. I would certainly read it. 23. If you were in his place, would you go to school? 24. If I were in his place, I would go. 25. If you were in my place, would you write to him? 26. I would write to him every day. 27. Would your sister be mistaken? 28. She would not be mistaken, she is very attentive. 29. If you rose every morning at five, would you be better? 30. I should not be better. 31. Would you prefer going on foot? 32. I would prefer going on horseback. 33. Would you not sit down? 34. I would sit down, if I were tired.

LEÇON LXIII. LESSON LXIII.

FAIRE USED IDIOMATICALLY, ETC.

1. The verb *faire*[1] is used in the formation of a number of idiomatic sentences. See L. 32, R. 3, 4. Faire faire, *to have made, to bespeak;* faire raccommoder, *to have mended;* faire la cuisine, *to cook;* faire cuire, *to cook, to bake;* faire bouillir, *to boil;* faire rôtir, *to roast;* faire chauffer, *to warm* (in speaking of food); faire bonne chère, *to live well.*

Nous avons fait faire des habits.	*We have had clothes made.*
Vous faites raccommoder vos gilets.	*You have your waistcoats mended.*

2. The past participle of *faire* never varies, when it precedes an infinitive.

Les livres que vous avez fait venir.	*The books which you have sent for.*

3. Faire peur, *to frighten;* faire attention, *to pay attention;* faire tort, *to injure;* faire mal, faire du mal, *to hurt,* take *à* before a noun.

Nous avons fait peur à ces enfants.	*We have frightened those children.*
Vous leur avez fait mal.	*You have hurt them*

4. The last example will show that, when a noun preceded by *à*, expressed or understood, is replaced by a pronoun, that pronoun will take the form of the indirect regimen (*dative*). By an exception to the rules for the place of personal pronouns, when *faire attention* has for its indirect object a pronoun representing a person, that pronoun follows the verb.

Nous ferons attention à lui.	*We will pay attention to him.*

5. In speaking of the parts of the body, the French use the article, *le, la, les,* etc., instead of the possessive adjective, [§ 77, (9.)] when the possession is expressed by a reflective (L. 37, R. 1.) or other personal pronoun, or by some other word in the sentence.

Vous m'avez fait mal à la main.	*You have hurt my hand.*
Le bras lui fait mal.	*His arm hurts or pains him.*

RÉSUMÉ OF EXAMPLES.

Ferez-vous raccommoder vos souliers?	*Will you have your shoes mended?*
Je ferais faire un habit, si j'avais de l'argent.	*I would bespeak a coat, if I had money.*

[1] In the present participle of *faire* and its compounds, in the first person plural of the present of the indicative and the imperative, and throughout the imperfect, the *ai* of the first syllable is pronounced nearly like *ụ* in *tub;* also in the word *bienfaisance.*

Il ne sait pas faire la cuisine.	*He does not understand cooking.*
Avez-vous fait cuire votre viande?	*Have you cooked your meat?*
Ferez-vous chauffer votre bouillon?	*Will you warm your broth?*
Vous lui avez fait mal au coude.	*You have hurt his elbow.*
Vous m'avez fait mal au pied.	*You have hurt my foot.*
Vous avez fait peindre votre maison neuve.	*You have had your new house painted.*

Exercise 123.

Bât-ir, 2. *to build;*	Gigot de mouton, m. *leg of mutton;*	Où, *where;*
Bouillon, m. *broth;*	Gravure, f. *engraving;*	Pied, m. *foot;*
Bras, m. *arm;*	Maçon, m. *mason;*	Poignet, m. *wrist;*
Chien, m. *dog;*	Main, f. *hand;*	Tête, f. *head;*
Cuisinier, m. *cook;*	March-er, 1. *to step, tread;*	Tout à l'heure, *by-and-by;*
Épaule, f. *shoulder;*		Travail, m. *work, labor.*

1. Quand ferez-vous bâtir une maison? 2. J'en ferai bâtir une l'année prochaine, si je reçois mon argent. 3. Avez-vous fait bouillir ce gigot de mouton? 4. Je l'ai fait rôtir. 5. Le cuisinier a-t-il fait chauffer votre bouillon? 6. Il ne l'a pas encore fait chauffer, mais il le fera tout-à-l'heure. 7. N'avez-vous pas fait venir des livres? 8. Nous n'en avons pas fait venir, mais nous avons fait venir des gravures. 9. N'avez-vous pas fait peur à ces petites filles? 10. Nous leur avons fait peur. 11. Ferez-vous attention à votre travail? 12. J'y ferai attention. 13. Avez-vous fait mal à cette petite fille? 14. Je ne lui ai pas fait mal. 15. N'avez-vous pas fait mal à ce chien? 16. Je lui ai fait mal. 17. Où avez-vous fait mal à votre fils? 18. Je lui a fait mal au bras et à la main. 19. Ne lui avez-vous pas fait mal au pied? 20. Je lui ai fait mal à l'épaule. 21. A qui ce maçon a-t-il fait mal? 22. Il n'a fait mal à personne. 23. Vous ai-je fait mal au pied? 24. Vous m'avez marché sur le pied, et vous m'avez fait mal. 25. La tête, l'épaule, le bras, le poignet, et la main me font mal. [R. 5.]

Exercise 124.

1. Will you have your coat mended? 2. I will not have it mended. 3. Will not your brother have his house painted? 4. He will have it painted next year. 5. Will you not have a coat made? 6. I would have one made, if I had money. 7. Have you hurt your your brother? 8. I have hurt him, I have stepped upon his foot. 9. Does his arm pain him? 10. Yes, sir; his shoulder, arm, and wrist pain him. 11. Will not your son pay attention to his work? 12. He will pay attention to it, he has nothing else (*rien autre chose*) to do. 13. Have I hurt your hand or your elbow? 14. You have hurt my fingers (*doigts*). 15. Does your cook understand cooking?

16. He understands cooking. 17. Has the cook roasted that leg of mutton? 18. He has boiled it. 19. Has he not warmed it? 20. He has not had time to warm it. 21. Has the physician sent for engravings? 22. He has sent for books. 23. Have you hurt his elbow? 24. I have not hurt his elbow, but his hand. 25. Have I not hurt your fingers? 26. You have hurt my wrist. 27. Where have you hurt your son? 28. I have not hurt him. 29. Would the cook boil that meat, if he had time? 30. He would not boil it, he would roast it. 31. When will he warm your broth? 32. He will warm it by-and-by, if he has time. 33. If you had stepped upon my foot, would you not have hurt me? 34. I should certainly have hurt you, if I had stepped upon your foot.

LEÇON LXIV. LESSON LXIV.

FAIRE, CONTINUED.

1. **Faire connaissance**, *to become*, or *get acquainted*, takes the preposition *avec* before its object. **Faire un mille**, etc., **faire un voyage, faire un tour de promenade**, mean *to go*, or *travel a mile*, etc., *to go on a journey, to take a walk.*

Nous avons fait vingt milles à cheval.	*We travelled twenty miles on horseback.*

2. **Faire ses adieux, faire des emplettes, faire des progrès, faire des questions, faire du feu**, correspond in signification to the English expressions, *to bid farewell, to make purchases, to improve* or *progress, to ask questions, to make a fire.*

J'ai fait mes adieux à mes parents.	*I bid farewell to my relations.*
Avez-vous fait du feu dans ma chambre?	*Have you made a fire in my room?*

3. **Faire sortir** means, *to send out*, or *to order out;* **faire entrer**, *to let in, to bid come in;* **faire attendre**, *to keep waiting.*

Vous les avez fait entrer dans ma chambre.	*You made them come into my room.*
Vous avez fait attendre mon père.	*You made my father wait.*

4. **Faire son possible**, *to do one's best*, takes the preposition *pour*. **Faire semblant**, *to pretend;* **faire usage**, *to make use*, are followed by *de*.

Nous avons fait notre possible.	*We have done our best.*
Nous avons fait semblant de lire.	*We pretended to read.*

Résumé of Examples.

Nous avons fait connaissance avec eux.	*We have become acquainted with them.*
Vous avez fait vingt lieues en dix heures.	*You travelled twenty leagues in ten hours.*
Nous ferons un tour de promenade.	*We shall take a walk.*
Je lui ai fait plusieurs questions.	*I asked him several questions.*
Ils nous ont fait leurs adieux.	*They have bid us farewell.*
Vous nous avez fait attendre.	*You have made us wait.*
Cet enfant fait semblant de dormir.	*That child pretends to be asleep.*
Vous faites semblant de lire.	*You pretend to be reading*, or *do as if you were reading.*
Nous ferons notre possible pour le voir.	*We will do our best to see him.*

Exercise 125.

Aise, *glad;*	Se fâch-er, 1. ref. *to become angry;*	Mendiant, m. *beggar;*
Aliment, m. *food;*	Faire l'aumône, *to give alms;*	Négociant, m. *merchant;*
Crédit, m. *credit;*	Laiss-er, 1. *to leave, let;*	Quart, m. *quarter;*
Demand-er, 1. *to ask;*	Lieue, f. *league;*	Rarement, *seldom;*
Dorm-ir, 2. ir. *to sleep;*		Réuss-ir, 2. *to succeed;*
Étude, f. *study;*		Riz, m. *rice.*

1. Seriez-vous bien aise de faire connaissance avec ce monsieur? 2. J'en serais bien aise. 3. Ce cheval fait-il une lieue en un quart d'heure? 4. Il a fait ce matin une lieue en douze minutes. 5. Leur avez-vous fait des questions? 6. Je leur en ai fait.[1] 7. Quelles questions leur avez-vous faites? 8. Je leur ai demandé s'ils avaient fait des emplettes. 9. Vos élèves font-ils des progrès dans leurs études? 10. Ils n'en font pas beaucoup, ils viennent rarement à l'école. 11. Si vous étiez chez vous, feriez-vous semblant de dormir? 12. Je ne ferais certainement pas semblant de dormir. 13. Pourquoi ne faites-vous pas entrer ce mendiant? 14. Ma mère vient de lui faire l'aumône. 15. Le négociant fait-il usage de son crédit? 16. Il en fait usage. 17. De quels aliments ce malade fait-il usage? 18. Il fait usage de riz et de bouillon. 19. Faites-vous votre possible pour réussir? 20. Je fais tout mon possible. 21. Avez-vous fait entrer ces enfants, ou les avez-vous fait sortir? 22. Je les ai laissés où ils étaient. 23. Vous avons-nous fait attendre? 24. Vous nous avez fait attendre plusieurs heures. 25. Si vous faisiez attendre ces dames, elles se fâcheraient.

Exercise 126.

1. Does that child pretend to read? 2. He pretends to read. 3. Does not that gentleman pretend to sleep? 4. He does not pretend to sleep, he sleeps really (*réellement*). 5. Will you take a walk

[1] See Lesson 42. 11, and § 135, (7.)

this morning? 6. I would do so with pleasure, if I had time. 7. Have you become acquainted with the physician? 8. I have not yet become acquainted with him. 9. How many questions have you asked (*à*) the child? 10. I asked him many questions. 11. Have you asked him if he had studied his lesson? 12. I did not ask him. 13. Will not that little girl do her best to learn her lesson? 14. She will do her best to learn it. 15. Of what food do you make use, when you are sick? 16. We make use of bread and rice. 17. Have you forgotten to bid farewell to your mother? 18. I had not forgotten it, I intended to go to her house this afternoon. 19. With whom have you become acquainted? 20. With the bookseller. 21. Do you not keep those ladies waiting? 22. I do not keep them waiting, they are not ready (*prêtes*). 23. Do I make you wait? 24. You do not make me wait. 25. Have you left your children in your room? 26. I have not done so (*le*). 27. Have you sent them out? 28. I have not sent them out, I have let them remain where they were. 29. Have you made purchases this morning? 30. I have made none, I have no money. 31. Has the servant made a fire in my room? 32. He has made one. 33. Will you do your best to come to-morrow? 34. I will do my best to come early. 35. We travelled yesterday forty leagues in sixteen hours.

LEÇON LXV. LESSON LXV.

FAIRE, CONTINUED.

1. *Faire* is also used in the sense of *playing the part of*, or *pretending to be.*

Il fait le grand seigneur.	*He plays the great lord.*

2. *Faire* also means *to matter, to concern, to help.*

Cela ne fait rien.	*That is no matter.*
Cela ne vous fait rien.	*That is nothing to you, does not concern you.*
Qu'est-ce que cela nous fait?	*What is that to us?*
Je ne puis qu'y faire.	*I cannot help it.*

3. *Se faire mal*, conjugated reflectively, means *to hurt one's self.* *Se faire* is used reflectively, in the sense of the English verbs, *to become, to turn.* It is also used with the signification of the words

cause, have, get, etc. *Se faire* takes *être* as its auxiliary. [§ 46. L. 45.]

Je me suis fait médecin.	*I have become a physician.*
Je me suis fait faire une paire de bottes.	*I have had a pair of boots made for me.*
Je me suis fait raser.	*I have had my beard shaved.*
Nous nous sommes fait couper les cheveux.	*We have had our hair cut.*
Je me suis fait mal au doigt.	*I have hurt my finger.*

4. Besides the instances mentioned [L. 33, R. 5.], *faire* is used unipersonally in many idiomatic expressions.

Il fait jour, il fait nuit.	*It is daylight, it is night.*
Il fait de la boue, il fait de la poussière.	*It is muddy, it is dusty.*
Il fait clair de lune, il fait obscur.	*It is moonlight, it is dark.*
Il fait bon ici, il fait cher ici.	*It is comfortable here, it is dear here.*

RÉSUMÉ OF EXAMPLES.

Ce jeune homme fait le savant.	*That young man plays the learned man.*
Cela ne me fait rien.	*That is nothing to me.*
Que pouvons-nous y faire?	*What can we do to it?*
Mon frère s'est fait orfèvre.	*My brother has turned goldsmith.*
Pourquoi vous faites-vous raser?	*Why do you get shaved?*
Je me ferai couper les cheveux.	*I will have my hair cut.*
Je me suis fait bâtir une maison.	*I have had a house built for me.*
Nous nous sommes fait mal à la tête.	*We have hurt our heads.*
Il commence à se faire tard.	*It is beginning to grow late.*
Fait-il cher vivre à Paris?	*Is it dear living in Paris?*
Il fait beaucoup de boue.	*It is very muddy.*

EXERCISE 127.

Absolument, *absolutely;* Artisan, m. *mechanic;* Bijoutier, m. *jeweller;* Bon marché, *cheap;* Chagriné, e, *vexed;* Denrées, f. p. *provisions;* Étudiant, m. *student;* Fou, folle, *fool, simpleton;* Impertinent, e, *impertinent;* Ouvrier, m. *workman;* Peintre, m. *painter;* Personne, m. *nobody;* Tanneur, m. *tanner;* Vigneron, m. *vine dresser;* Vitrier, m. *glazier.*

1. Pourquoi cet ouvrier fait-il le malade? 2. Il fait le malade, parce qu'il n'a pas envie de travailler. 3. Cet étudiant ne fait-il pas le savant? 4. Il ne fait pas le savant, il fait le fou. 5. Sied-il à ce jeune homme de faire le maître ici? 6. Il ne sied à personne de faire l'impertinent. 7. Cela fait-il quelque chose? [R. 2.] 8. Cela ne fait absolument rien. 9. Cela peut-il faire quelque chose à ces vignerons? 10. Cela ne leur fait rien du tout. 11. N'êtes-vous pas bien chagrinés de cela? 12. Nous en sommes bien fâchés, mais nous ne pouvons qu'y faire. 13. Votre associé ne s'est-il pas fait bijoutier? 14. Non, monsieur; il s'est fait peintre. 15. Cet artisan

ne s'est-il pas fait vitrier? 16. Il s'est fait tanneur, et son frère s'est fait soldat. 17. La modiste ne s'est-elle pas fait couper les cheveux? 18. Elle se les est fait couper. 19. Ne vous levez-vous pas aussitôt qu'il fait jour? 20. Oui, monsieur; je me lève de très bonne heure. 21. Ne fait-il pas clair de lune? 22. Il fait très clair, mais il ne fait pas clair de lune. 23. Fait-il bon vivre en Amérique? 24. Il fait très bon vivre en Amérique, les denrées y sont à bon marché.

Exercise 128.

1. Does not that gentleman play the learned man? 2. He plays the lord and fool at the same time (*à la fois*). 3. Does not that boy pretend to be sick? 4. He pretends to be sick, he does not wish to study his lessons. 5. When you have no wish to work, do you pretend to be sick. 6. I never pretend to be sick. 7. Is it muddy today? 8. It is not muddy, it is dusty. 9. Will it be moonlight this evening? 10. It will not be moonlight, it will be very dark. 11. Is it comfortable here? 12. It is very comfortable. 13. Is it too warm or too cold? 14. It is neither too warm nor too cold here. 15. Will you have your hair cut? 16. I had my hair cut yesterday morning. 17. Will you not go home, it is beginning to grow late? 18. Is it not very dark out? (*dehors.*) 19. It is not dark, it is moonlight. 20. Has not the glazier turned goldsmith? 21. He has not turned goldsmith, he has turned soldier. 22. Does that concern your brother? 23. That does not concern him. 24. Are you not sorry for that? 25. I am sorry for it, but I cannot help it. 26. Why do you get shaved? 27. Because I cannot shave myself. 28. Have you not hurt those children? 29. I have not hurt them. 30. Have you not hurt your arm? 31. No, sir; but I have hurt my head. 32. Has not your sister hurt her hand? 33. She has hurt her hand, and my mother has hurt her elbow. 34. Have you not hurt your head? 35. I have not hurt my head, but I have hurt my hand.

LEÇON LXVI. LESSON LXVI.

AVOIR MAL, ETC.

1. *Avoir mal*, means *to have a pain or ache, a sore.* When used in relation to one of the limbs, it means generally, *to have a sore, a bruise, a cut*, etc. The name of the part of the body is preceded by the preposition *à* and the article [*See* L. 63, R. 5, § 77, (9.)]

N'avez-vous pas mal au doigt?	*Have you not a sore finger?*
Je n'ai pas mal à la tête.	*My head does not ache.*

2. *Avoir une douleur*, or *des douleurs*, corresponds to the English *to have a pain* or *pains*.

J'ai une douleur au bras.	*I have a pain in my arm.*

3. The construction mentioned in Rule 1, is used after *avoir*, taken in the sense of tenir, *to hold*, and after *avoir froid*, and *avoir chaud* [Lesson 63, Rule 5.)

Vous avez les armes à la main.	*You have your arms in your hands.*
J'ai chaud aux mains et aux pieds.	*My hands and feet are warm.*

4. The article *le*, etc., is used before words indicating moral and physical properties, in cases where the English use *a* or *an*, or omit the article. When, however, an adjective precedes the noun, *un*, *une*, or *de*, *des*, are at times used.

Cette dame a l'esprit juste.	*That lady has a correct mind.*
Votre sœur a les yeux noirs.	*Your sister has black eyes.*

5. A moral or physical property, which in the individual is single, is not put in the plural in French, though the reference be to a number of individuals.

Ces dames ont l'esprit juste.	*Those ladies have correct minds.*
Ces garçons se sont fait mal à la tête.	*Those boys have hurt their heads.*

Résumé of Examples.

N'avez-vous pas mal au pied ?	*Have you not a sore foot?*
Cette demoiselle a le mal de tête.	*That young lady has the headache.*
N'avez-vous pas mal aux dents ?	*Do not your teeth ache ?*
Mon frère a le mal de dents.	*My brother has the toothache.*
Mon cousin a mal au côté.	*My cousin has a pain in his side.*
Il a des douleurs de poitrine.	*He has pains in his chest.*
Qu'avez-vous à la main ?	*What have you in your hand ?* *What is the matter with your hand ?*
Je n'ai rien à la main.	*I have nothing in my hand.* *Nothing is the matter with my hand.*
J'ai chaud aux mains, et froid aux pieds.	*My hands are warm, and my feet cold.*
Vos sœurs ont le goût délicat.	*Your sisters have a delicate taste.*
Ces messieurs ont le nez aquilin.	*Those gentlemen have Roman noses.*

Exercise 129.

Bleu, e, *blue;*	Mal de gorge, m. *sore throat;*	Pied, m. *foot;*
Bouche, f. *mouth;*	Mal d'oreille, m. *ear-ache;*	Presque, *almost;*
Dent, f. *tooth;*	Nièce, f. *niece;*	Teint, m. *complexion;*
Doigt, m. *finger;*	Noir, e, *black;*	Tête, f. *head;*
Gorge, f. *throat;*		Visage, m. *face;*
Mémoire, f. *memory;*		Yeux, *pl. of* œil, *eyes.*

1. Ce jeune homme a-t-il mal à la gorge? 2. Oui, monsieur; il y a deux jours qu'il a le mal de gorge. 3. Avez-vous souvent mal à la tête? 4. J'ai le mal de tête presque tous les jours. 5. N'avez-vous pas mal au bras? 6. J'ai mal au bras, et à la main. 7. Votre sœur a-t-elle le mal d'oreille? 8. Oui, madame; elle a le mal d'oreille et le mal de dents. 9. N'avez-vous pas froid à la tête? 10. Non, monsieur; mais j'ai froid aux doigts. 11. N'avez-vous point froid au visage? 12. Non, monsieur; je n'y ai point froid. 13. Ce monsieur a-t-il le nez aquilin? 14. Il a le nez aquilin, et la bouche grande. 15. Cette demoiselle a-t-elle de belles dents? 16. Elle a de belles dents, et de beaux yeux. 17. Ce petit garçon a-t-il les pieds petits? 18. Il a les pieds petits, et les mains grandes. 19. Votre nièce n'a-t-elle pas les yeux bleus? 20. Non, monsieur; elle a les yeux noirs. 21. Vos écoliers se sont-ils fait mal au visage? 22. Ils se sont fait mal à la poitrine. 23. Vos filles ont-elles une bonne mémoire? 24. Elles ont la mémoire excellente. 25. Ces Italiennes n'ont pas le teint frais.

Exercise 130.

1. What is the matter with your hand? 2. I have had a sore hand these ten days. 3. Has your brother sore fingers? 4. He has sore fingers, and a sore hand. 5. What has your brother in his hand? 6. He has a pen in his hand. 7. Has your little boy a sore throat? 8. He has a sore throat. 9. Has not your eldest sister the tooth-ache? 10. She has not the toothache, but she has a sore finger. 11. Why does not the soldier walk? 12. He cannot walk, he has a sore foot. 13. Have you not sore feet? 14. My feet are not sore. 15. If your fingers were sore, would you write? 16. If I had sore fingers, I should not write. 17. If your brother had the headache, would he study his lesson? 18. He could not study his lesson, if he had the headache. 19. Has not that gentleman pains in his chest? 20. He has pains in his chest and in his side. 21. Has your little girl black eyes, or blue eyes? 22. She has black eyes, and a fresh complexion. 23. Has not your daughter the tooth-ache? 24. She has the tooth-ache, and the ear-ache. 25. Are not your hands and feet cold? 26. My hands are cold, but my feet are warm. 27. Have not those ladies aquiline noses? 28. They have aquiline noses, and a fair complexion (*le teint beau*). 29. Has your sister large hands? 30. No, sir; my sister has small hands. 31. Have not those little girls hurt their heads? 32. They have not hurt their heads, they have hurt their faces. 33. That little boy has black hair (*cheveux*).

LEÇON LXVII. LESSON LXVII.

AVOIR BEAU, ETC.

1. *Avoir beau—Vous avez beau*, corresponds in signification to the English expression, *it is in vain for you to*. It must be followed by the infinitive.

Vous avez beau dire, il ne viendra pas.	*It is in vain for you to speak, he will not come.*

2. Épouser, marier, *to marry*, have, in French, a different meaning. *Marier*, conjugated actively, can only have as its nominative the person performing the ceremony, or giving one or both of the parties in marriage; *épouser* takes, as its nominative, the contracting parties only, and must always be followed by a direct regimen. Se marier, *to get married*, and marier, conjugated passively, take the same nominative as *épouser*.

M. L. a marié sa fille avec M. G.	*Mr. L. has married his daughter to Mr. G.*
M. G. a épousé la fille de M. L.	*Mr. G. has married Mr. L.'s daughter.*
M. G. et Mlle. L. sont mariés.	*Mr. G. and Miss L. are married.*
Mon frère va se marier.	*My brother is going to be married.*

3. *Un de mes amis*, is equivalent to the English, *a friend of mine.*

Votre ami a épousé une de mes amies.	*Your friend has married a friend of mine.*

RÉSUMÉ OF EXAMPLES.

Ils ont beau dire et beau faire, ils ne l'empêcheront pas de se marier.	*Whatever they may say or do, they will not prevent his marrying.*
Vous avez beau lui faire des remontrances.	*It is in vain for you to remonstrate with him.*
L'évêque de B. a marié ma sœur.	*The bishop of B. has married my sister.*
Le capitaine G. a épousé ma cousine.	*Captain G. has married my cousin.*
Quand il se mariera, il nous invitera à la nôce.	*When he marries, he will invite us to the wedding.*
Votre cousine est mariée avec mon cousin.	*Your cousin is married to my cousin.*
Votre cousine a épousé un de mes cousins.	*Your cousin has married a cousin of mine.*
Le colonel a épousé une de mes sœurs.	*The colonel has married a sister of mine.*

Exercise 131.

Aîné, e, *elder, eldest;*
Archevêque, m. *archbishop;*
Cadet, te, *younger;*
Demoiselle, f. *young lady;*
Devoir, 3. *to owe, to be about;*
Époux, pl. *couple, man and wife;*
Infanterie, f. *infantry;*
Évêque, m. *bishop;*
Parent, e, *relation;*
Princesse, f. *princess;*
Prochain, e, *next;*
Savoir, 3. ir. *to know;*
Régiment, m. *regiment;*
Vieillard, *old man.*

1. Votre nièce ne va-t-elle pas se marier? 2. Elle se mariera l'année prochaine. 3. Qui épousera-t-elle? 4. Elle épousera le fils aîné du général M. 5. Savez-vous qui a marié ces deux époux? 6. L'archevêque de Paris les a mariés. 7. N'a-t-il pas aussi marié Mlle. L.? 8. Il l'a mariée avec M. G. 9. Qui votre demoiselle a-t-elle épousé? 10. Elle a épousé M. L., capitaine au 25ème regiment d'infanterie. 11. Ce vieillard n'a-t-il pas tort de se marier? 12. Il n'a pas tort de se marier, mais il a tort d'épouser cette demoiselle. 13. Quand ces princesses vont-elles se marier? 14. Elles se marieront le mois prochain. 15. Qui les mariera? 16. L'évêque d'Arras les mariera. 17. Qui doivent-elles épouser? 18. L'aînée doit épouser M. W., et la cadette M. G. 19. Le capitaine G. n'a-t-il pas épousé une de vos parentes? 20. Oui, monsieur; il a épousé une de mes cousines. 21. Qui est cette demoiselle? 22. C'est une de mes sœurs. 23. N'avez-vous pas un de mes livres? 24. J'ai un de vos livres, et une de vos plumes. 25. Je viens de parler à une de vos sœurs.

Exercise 132.

1. Is your brother going to marry Miss L.? 2. Yes, sir; it is in vain for us to speak to him, he will marry her. 3. Will not your father marry your sister to Mr. G.? 4. No, sir; he will marry her to Mr. L. 5. Is Captain H. married? 6. No, sir; he is not yet married, but he will be married next year. 7. Whom does he intend to marry? 8. He intends to marry a cousin of mine, who is at my brother's. 9. Who will marry them? 10. My eldest brother intends to marry them. 11. Is your youngest sister married? 12. No, sir; she is not married. 13. Is she going to be married? 14. She will marry when she is [L. 61, 5.] old enough (*assez âgée*). 15. Whom did Colonel J. marry? 16. He married a sister of mine. 17. How long have they been married [L. 57, 2.]? 18. They have been married two years. 19. Is not that young lady wrong to get married? 20. She is wrong to marry, she is too young. 21. Who married General S. and Miss N.? 22. The bishop of Arras married them. 23. Did not the archbishop of York marry that couple? 24. The

archbishop of Paris married them. 25. Will not your aunt marry? 26. She will not marry. 27. Is not your sister at home? 28. No, sir; she is with (*chez*) an aunt of mine. 29. Is your brother at your house? 30. No, sir; he is with one of my relations. 31. Is he married? 32. He is not married. 33. Is Captain H. married? 34. He was married last week. 35. He married Miss H.

LEÇON LXVIII. LESSON LXVIII.

DIMENSION, WEIGHT, ETC.

1. The verb *avoir* is used in expressing the size of an object. The preposition *de* precedes the noun of dimension. When there is no verb in the sentence, the preposition must be placed before the number, and again before the noun of dimension.

Cette muraille a dix pieds de hauteur.	*That wall is ten feet high.*
Ce puits a cent pieds de profondeur.	*That well is one hundred feet deep.*
Une table de quatre pieds de longueur.	*A table four feet long.*

2. In sentences where sizes are compared, and the verb *être* is used, the preposition *de* is placed before the number expressing the *excess.*

Vous êtes plus grand que moi de deux pouces.	*You are taller than I by two inches.*

3. When the price of an article is mentioned, the article *le* is used before the noun expressing the measure, weight, etc. When the remuneration, or rent, etc., for a definite space of time is mentioned the preposition *par* (*per*) is used.

Le beurre se vend un franc la livre.	*Butter is sold a franc a pound.*
Il gagne six francs par jour.	*He earns six francs per day.*

4. The same preposition is used, when we speak of the number of times any occurrence takes place in a given space of time.

Je vais à la poste deux fois par jour.	*I go to the post-office twice a day.*

RÉSUMÉ OF EXAMPLES.

La canelle se vend deux francs la livre.	*Cinnamon is sold two francs a pound.*
Cette soie vaut six francs le mètre.	*That silk is worth six francs a metre.*
Ce clocher a cinq cents pieds de hauteur.	*That steeple is five hundred feet high.*

Cet étang a huit pieds de profondeur.	*That pond is eight feet deep.*
Une chambre de quinze pieds de longueur, *sur* dix-huit de largeur, et huit de hauteur.	*A room fifteen feet long, by eighteen feet broad, and eight feet high.*
De quelle taille est votre frère?	*How tall is your brother?*
Sa taille est de cinq pieds huit pouces.	*His height is five feet eight inches.*
Notre ami est-il grand ou petit?	*Is our friend tall or short?*
Il est de taille moyenne.	*His height is middling.*
Votre maison est plus haute que la mienne de cinq pieds.	*Your house is higher than mine by five feet.*
Je vais à l'école deux fois par jour.	*I go to school twice a day.*
Il nous paie huit francs par semaine.	*He pays us eight francs a week.*

Exercise 133.

Bon marché, *cheap;*	Grandeur, f. *size;*	Profondeur, f. *depth;*
Cassonade, f. *brown sugar;*	Hauteur, f. *height;*	Pouce, m. *inch;*
Écossais, e. *Scotch, Scotchman;*	Largeur, f. *breadth;*	Semaine, f. *week;*
Épaisseur, f. *thickness;*	Longueur, f. *length;*	Taille, f. *height, size;*
Étoffe, f. *stuff;*	Loyer, m. *rent;*	Une fois, *once;*
	Mètre, m. *metre;*	Verge, f. *perch, yard, rod.*
	Moyen, ne, *middling;*	

1. Votre maison est-elle grande? 2. Elle a cinquante pieds de long, et vingt-cinq de large. 3. Quelle longueur votre jardin a-t-il? 4. Il a vingt-cinq verges de longueur, et douze de largeur. 5. De quelle grandeur est ce livre? 6. Il a dix-huit pouces de longueur, treize de largeur, et trois d'épaisseur. 7. Votre maison est-elle plus longue que celle-ci? 8. Elle est plus longue de deux pieds. 9. Quelle profondeur a ce puits? 10. De quelle hauteur est ce clocher? 11. Il a trois cent cinquante-trois pieds de hauteur. 12. De quelle taille est cet officier? 13. Il est de haute taille. 14. De combien cet Écossais est-il plus grand que son frère? 15. Il est plus grand de toute la tête. 16. N'êtes-vous pas de beaucoup plus grand que moi? 17. Je suis plus grand que vous de trois pouces. 18. Combien cette étoffe se vend-elle la verge? 19. Elle se vend trois francs le mètre. 20. La cassonade ne se vend-elle pas cher? 21. Elle se vend à bon marché. 22. Combien de lettres écrivez-vous par semaine? 23. Je n'en écris que six par semaine. 24. Combien payez-vous par semaine pour votre loyer? 25. Je ne paie que dix francs par semaine.

Exercise 134.

1. How large is your father's garden? 2. It is twenty-five rods long, and ten broad. 3. Is your cousin's house large? 4. It is fifty-six feet long, and forty broad. 5. Is your house larger than mine?

6. It is larger than yours by ten feet. 7. Do you know how deep that well is? 8. It is twenty-five feet deep, and six feet broad. 9. How is that cloth sold a metre? 10. It is sold forty-five francs a metre. 11. How much do you receive a week for your work? 12. I receive fifty francs a week for my work. 13. How much does your friend pay a month for his board (*pension*, f.)? 14. He pays seventy francs a month. 15. Are you taller than your cousin? 16. I am taller than he, by the whole head. 17. Is not your nephew taller than your son? 18. He is taller than my son, by three inches. 19. How large is this room? 20. It is sixty feet long by forty. 21. What size is your brother? 22. He is tall, he is taller than I. 23. How many books do you read a week? 24. I read ten volumes a week. 25. How is butter sold a pound? 26. Butter is sold two francs a pound. 27. Do you know how much your son earns a day? 28. He earns as much as yours, he earns ten francs a day. 29. How much is that silk worth a metre? 30. It is worth six francs a metre. 31. Our friend's stature is middling. 32. Do you go to church twice a day? 33. I go to church once a day. 34. Does your son go to the post-office every day? 35. He goes thither six times a day.

LEÇON LXIX. LESSON LXIX.

METTRE, SE METTRE, ETC.

1. *Mettre* (4. ir.) forms, in French, many idiomatic expressions. Mettre à même de, *to enable;* mettre pied à terre, *to alight, to land;* mettre le pied, *to set one's foot;* mettre à la porte, *to turn out of doors;* mettre au fait de, *to accquaint with;* mettre à l'abri, *to shelter;* mettre à l'ombre, *to put in the shade;* mettre un habit à l'endroit, à l'envers, *to put on a coat right side out, wrong side out,* &c.

Nous l'avons mis à même de connaître la vérité.	*We enabled him to know the truth.*
Il a mis cet insolent à la porte.	*He turned that insolent person out of doors.*

2. *Mettre*, conjugated reflectively, i. e., *se mettre*, means *to place one's self, to dress one's self;* se mettre à table, *to sit down to table;* se mettre en colère, *to become angry, to put one's self into a passion.*

Il se met à l'ombre, au soleil.	*He places himself in the shade, in the sun.*

3. *Se mettre*, followed by an infinitive, means *to commence, to begin.*

Ils se mirent à pleurer.	*They commenced weeping.*

A l'anglaise, à la française, are used elliptically for, à la mode française, à la mode anglaise, *after the French, after the English fashion.*

Résumé of Examples.

Ce cavalier a mis pied à terre.	*That horseman has come down from his horse.*
Vous n'osez mettre le pied chez lui.	*You dare not set your foot inside his house.*
Mettez ces enfants à l'abri de la pluie.	*Shelter those children from the rain.*
Vous avez mis votre manteau à l'envers.	*You have put on your cloak inside out*
Ce monsieur se met toujours à l'anglaise.	*That gentleman always dresses after the English fashion.*
Hier, nous nous mîmes à table à dix heures.	*Yesterday, we sat down to table at ten o'clock.*
Pourquoi vous mettez-vous à l'ombre?	*Why do you go into the shade?*
Ces enfants se mirent à rire.	*Those children commenced laughing.*
Pourquoi ne vous mettez-vous pas à l'ouvrage?	*Why do you not set yourself to work?*
Je vais me mettre en pension.	*I will commence boarding.*
Nous allons nous mettre en voyage.	*We are going to commence our journey.*

Exercise 135

A l'italienne, *after the Italian fashion;*	Effets, m. p. *things;*	Étudi-er, 1. *to study;*
A merveille, *exceedingly well;*	Entr-er, 1. *to come in;*	Mise, f. mettre, *dressed;*
Couvert, *See* L. 32, 1.;	Endroit, m. *right side;*	Pluie, f. *rain;*
Défend-re, 4. *to forbid;*	Envers, m. *wrong side;*	Rire, 4. ir. *to laugh;*
	Étourdi, e, *giddy person;*	Soleil, m. *sun;*
		Tablier, m. *apron.*

1. Avez-vous défendu à cet homme de mettre le pied chez vous? 2. Je le lui ai défendu. 3. Avez-vous mis ces effets à l'abri de la pluie? 4. Je les ai mis à l'abri de la pluie et du vent. 5. Avez-vous mis votre frère au fait de cette affaire? 6. Je ne l'en ai pas mis au fait. 7. Ne l'avez-vous pas mis à même d'étudier? 8. Je l'ai mis à même de s'instruire, s'il désire le faire. 9. Voulez-vous mettre cela de côté? 10. Je vais le mettre au soleil. 11. Votre ami n'a-t-il pas voulu entrer? 12. Il n'a point voulu mettre pied à terre. 13. Votre teinturier n'a-t-il pas mis son tablier à l'envers? 14. Non, monsieur; il l'a mis à l'endroit. 15. N'avez-vous pas mis cet étourdi à la porte? 16. Nous lui avons fermé la porte au nez (*in his face*). 17. A quelle heure vous mettez-vous à table? 18. Aussitôt que le couvert sera mis [L. 61, (5.)]. 19. Cet homme se met-il bien? 20. Il se met toujours à l'anglaise, ou à l'italienne. 21. Ces enfants ne se mirent-ils pas à pleurer? 22. Au lieu de se mettre à pleurer, ils se mirent à rire. 23. Pourquoi ne vous mettez-vous pas à

écrire? 24. Il est temps de se mettre à table. 25. Ces Siciliennes sont-elles bien mises? 26. Elles sont mises à merveille (*extremely well dressed.*)

Exercise 136.

1. Did the gentleman alight this morning? 2. He would not alight, he had no time. 3. Have you put that insolent person out of doors? 4. No, sir; but I forbade him to set his foot in my house. 5. Did you shelter those little children from the rain? 6. I sheltered them from the rain and the wind. 7. Have you enabled your son to study medicine (*la médecine*)? 8. I enabled him to study medicine, if he wishes to do so. 9. Have you put on your coat inside out? 10. I have not put it on inside out, but right side out. 11. Did you put yourself in a passion? 12. No, sir; I did not become angry. 13. Did you sit down to table at four o'clock, yesterday? 14. We sat down to table at six o'clock. 15. Do you intend to commence boarding? 16. I intend to board with Mr. L. (*chez M. L.*) 17. When do you commence your journey? 18. We commence our journey to-morrow morning. 19. Did your son commence laughing? 20. No, sir; he commenced weeping. 21. Why do you not commence working? 22. Because I am going to commence reading. 23. Does that lady dress after the English fashion? 24. She dresses after the Italian fashion. 25. Are those ladies well dressed? 26. They are extremely well dressed. 27. Will you not place yourself in the shade? 28. I will place myself in the sun, I am very cold. 29. Is your coat inside out? 30. No, sir; it is right side out. 31. Is this the right side of this cloth? 32. It is the wrong side. 33. Are you not dressed after the English fashion? 34. I am dressed after the Italian fashion. 35. You are well dressed.

LEÇON LXX. LESSON LXX.

THE IMPERATIVE.

1. Conjugation of the Imperative of the Regular Verbs.

	Chant -e	fin -is	reç -ois	rend -s
	sing	*finish*	*receive*	*render*
Qu'il	parl -e	chér -isse	aperç -oive	vend -e
	let him speak	*let him cherish*	*let him perceive*	*let him sell*
	donn -ons	fourn -issons	perc -evons	tend -ons
	let us give	*let us furnish*	*let us gather*	*let us tend*
	Cherch -ez	pun -issez	conc -evez	entend -ez
	seek	*punish*	*conceive*	*hear*
Qu'ils	port -ent	sais -issent	d -oivent	perd -ent
	let them carry	*let them seize*	*let them owe*	*let them lose*

2. The second person singular, and the first and second persons plural of the *imperative*, are the same as the first person singular, and the first and second persons plural, of the present of the *indicative*. The pronouns are dropped.

Je parle, *parle;* je finis, *finis.* *I speak*, speak; *I finish*, finish.

3. Exceptions—Avoir, *to have*, makes in those persons of the imperative, *aie, ayons, ayez;* être, *to be: sois, soyons, soyez;* savoir, *to know: sache, sachons, sachez;* and aller, *va*, and *vas* before *y* not followed by an infinitive.

4. *Vouloir* has only the second person plural, veuillez, *have the goodness to*

5. A third person singular and plural is given, in the imperative, by most of the French grammarians. These parts, however, belong properly to the subjunctive, as they express rather a strong wish than a command. The English expressions, *let him speak, that he may speak*, are rendered in French by *qu'il parle.*

6. A droite, à gauche, correspond in signification to the English *to the right, to the left.*

Allez à droite, à gauche. *Go to the right, to the left.*

7. For the place of the pronouns in connection with the imperative, see Lesson 27, Rule 1, 4; Lesson 28, Rule 1, 2, 3, 4.

Résumé of Examples.

Prenons la première rue à droite.	*Let us take the first street to the right.*
Ne cherchez plus à le tromper.	*Seek no longer to deceive him.*
Sachons nous contenter du nécessaire.	*Let us know how to content ourselves with necessaries.*
Faites bien attention à ce que vous dites.	*Pay great attention to what you say.*
Dites toujours la vérité.	*Always tell the truth.*
Allons! messieurs; dépêchez-vous.	*Come! gentlemen; make haste.*
Tenez, monsieur; voilà votre argent.	*Here, sir; here is your money.*
Veuillez accepter ce présent.	*Be so kind as to accept this present.*

Exercise 137.

Clef, f. *key;*	Prochain, e, *next;*	Renvoy-er, 1. *to send back;*
Crayon, m. *pencil;*	Promett-re, 4. ir. *to promise;*	Sans faute, *without fail;*
Institutrice, f. *teacher;*	Rapport-er, 1. *to bring back;*	Se serv-ir, 2. ref. *to use;*
Obé-ir, 2. *to obey;*	Remett-re, 4. ir. *to deliver;*	Tiers, m. *third;*
Partie, f. *part;*		Verrez, 3. ir. *from* voir, *to see.*
Précepteur, m. *instructor;*		

1. Envoyez chercher le médecin; votre petit garçon est malade. 2. Nous l'avons déjà envoyé chercher. 3. Vous n'avez pas besoin

de votre crayon, prêtez-le-moi [L. 27, R. 4; L. 28, R. 4]. 4. Je ne saurais vous le prêter, je m'en sers. 5. Donnez-le-moi, ou me le prêtez (ou prêtez-le-moi). [§ 100, (6.)] 6. Je l'ai promis à votre institutrice. 7. Si vous ne le lui avez pas dit, dites-le-lui aussitôt que possible. 8. Ne le lui dites pas encore. 9. Parlez-lui-en, [§ 39, 17.] la prochaine fois que vous le verrez. 10. Ayez patience, mon ami, votre père ne tardera pas à venir. 11. Obéissez à votre précepteur. 12. Je lui obéis toujours. 13. Donnez-lui-en une bonne partie. 14. Je lui en ai déjà donné plus des deux tiers. 15. Avez-vous porté cette clef au serrurier? 16. J'ai oublié de la lui remettre. 17. Portez-la-lui sans faute cette après-midi. 18. Veuillez me dire où demeure M. G. 19. Prenez la première rue à gauche, il demeure dans la deuxième maison à droite. 20. Allons, mesdemoiselles, dépêchons-nous. 21. Menez-les-y le plus tôt possible. 22. Ne me les rapportez pas. 23. Renvoyez-les-moi demain. 24. Portons-les-y. 25. Ne les y portons pas. 26. Prêtez-les-lui, mais ne les lui donnez pas.

Exercise 138.

1. Give a book to the young man. 2. I have already given him one, and he does not read it. 3. Lend it to him, if you will not give it to him. 4. I will not lend it to him. 5. Make haste, young ladies, it is ten o'clock. 6. Have the goodness to give me a pen. 7. I have given one to your brother. 8. Obey your father, and speak to your sister. 9. Will you not send for the letter? 10. I will send for it. 11. Send for it as soon as you can. 12. Do not do so (*le*), but write to my cousin. 13. Come, children (*mes enfants*), learn your lesson. 14. Give him some [§ 39, 17], or lend him some [§ 100, (6)]. 15. Do not make haste, we have (*le*) time. 16. Have patience, my child, the merchant will soon come. 17. Send it to him, if you cannot give it to him. 18. Write to him this afternoon, without fail. 19. I would write to him, if I had time. 20. Let us take the first street to the left. 21. Take the second street to the right. 22. Pay attention to what your brother says. 23. Let us tell the truth. 24. Let us read that book to-day. 25. Pay your debts as soon as possible. 26. Let us obey our instructor. 27. Carry the key to him. 28. Bring me back the books which I have lent you. 29. Do not bring them back to me, read them. 30. Let us have patience, we shall soon have money. 31. Let us speak to them, they are at my father's. 32. Tell them that I intend to write to them tomorrow morning. 33. Go to church this afternoon. 34. Bring me back my letters. 35. Do not carry them there, but bring them to me as soon as possible.

LEÇON LXXI. LESSON LXXI.

VERB AFTER THE IMPERATIVE, ETC.

1. A verb, following another verb in the imperative, is put in the infinitive, (according to general Rule, L. 21. 2.) The conjunction which often comes between the two verbs in English is not used in French.

Allez parler au musicien.	*Go and speak to the musician.*
Allez faire votre ouvrage.	*Go and do your work.*
Courez voir ces messieurs.	*Run and see those gentlemen.*

2. Prendre garde, *to take care, to take heed:* when followed by another verb in the infinitive, means *to take care not to.*

Prenez garde de tomber.	*Take care not to fall.*

3. *Prendre le deuil*, means *to go into mourning:* prendre la peine, *to take the trouble;* prendre les devants, *to go on before;* prendre un parti, *to take a determination;* prendre du café, du thé, &c., *to take coffee, tea, &c.*

RÉSUMÉ OF EXAMPLES.

Envoyez chercher le tapissier.	*Send for the upholsterer.*
Allez chercher votre parapluie.	*Go and fetch your umbrella.*
Courez voir votre père.	*Run and see your father.*
Prenons garde de nous blesser.	*Let us take care not to hurt ourselves.*
Prenez garde de déchirer vos habits.	*Take care not to tear your clothes.*
N'avez-vous pas pris le deuil?	*Have you not put on mourning?*
Prenez la peine de vous asseoir.	*Take the trouble to sit down.*
Prenez du thé ou du café.	*Take tea or coffee.*
Quel parti avez-vous pris?	*What resolution have you taken?*

EXERCISE 139.

Attend-re, 4. *to expect, to wait for;*	Gât-er, 1. *to spoil;*	Robe, f. *dress;*
Chocolat, m. *chocolate;*	Gouverneur, m. *governor;*	Soin, m. *care;*
Courrier, m. *courier:*	Lorsque, *when;*	Tomb-er, 1. *to fall,*
Croi-re, 4. ir. *to believe;*	Port-er, 1. *to wear;*	Tach-er, 1. *to stain, to spoil;*
Déchir-er, 1. *to tear;*	Quelquefois, *sometimes;*	Se tai-re, 4. ir. *to be silent.*

1. Allez voir mon frère, il a quelque chose à vous communiquer. 2. Courez leur dire que je les attends. 3. Mon frère a bien pris garde de déchirer ses habits. 4. Votre cousine a-t-elle pris garde de tacher sa robe? 5. Elle a pris garde de tomber, car en tombant elle l'aurait *gâtée*. 6. Ces petites filles ont-elles pris le deuil? 7. Elles viennent de le prendre. 8. Pour qui prenez-vous le deuil? 9. Je porte le deuil de ma mère. 10. Prenez-vous du thé ou du café le

matin? 11. Nous prenons du thé et du café. 12. Ne prenez-vous pas quelquefois du chocolat? 13. Nous n'en prenons que lorsque nous sommes malades. 14. Quel parti le gouverneur a-t-il pris? 15. Il a pris le parti de se taire. 16. Prendrez-vous mon parti, (*my part*) ou celui de votre fils? 17. Je prendrai le vôtre, si je crois que vous avez raison. 18. Pourquoi ne prenez-vous pas la peine de lire sa lettre? 19. Parce qu'elle n'en vaut pas la peine. 20. Votre courrier a-t-il pris les devants? 21. Il n'a pu prendre les devants. 22. N'avez-vous pas tort de prendre son parti? 23. Je n'ai pas tort de le prendre. 24. Avez-vous pris le thé[1] (*your tea*)? 25. Nous n'avons pas pris (*our*) le thé, nous avons pris le café.[2]

Exercise 140.

1. Has your brother taken care not to spoil his hat? 2. He has taken care not to spoil it, he has only one. 3. Go and speak to your sister, she calls you (*appelle*). 4. Will you not take a cup (*tasse*) of tea? 5. I have just taken my tea. 6. What have you said to your little girl? 7. I have told her to take care not to tear her dress. 8. Let us take care not to tear that book. 9. My son has just brought it. 10. Has he taken his tea? 11. He has not yet taken tea, it is too early. 12. At what hour do you take tea[1] at your house? 13. We take tea at six o'clock. 14. Do you take tea[1] or coffee for breakfast (*à votre déjeûner*)? 15. We take coffee. 16. Is your courier gone on before? 17. He has not been able to go on before. 18. What resolution have you taken? 19. I have taken the resolution to study my lesson. 20. Have you taken care not to tear your books? 21. I have taken care not to stain them. 22. What has your brother determined? 23. He has determined to remain silent. 24. Have you taken my part? 25. I have taken my brother's part. 26. Are you right to take his part? 27. I am right to take his part, because he is right. 28. Are you not afraid to take his part? 29. I am not afraid to take his part. 30. Will you take your sister's part or mine? 31. I will take my sister's part. 32. Go and read your book, you do not know your lesson. 33. I know my lesson, and I know also that you are my friend. 34. Let us go to our father, he wants us.

[1] Le thé, *the meal called tea*; du thé, *the beverage called tea.*

[2] *Le café—prendre le café*, is often said of the coffee generally taken by the French after dinner.

Ne m'attendez pas pour dîner; je viendrai seulement au café. — *Do not expect me to dinner; I will only come to the (or to take) coffee.*

LEÇON LXXII. LESSON LXXII.

THE SUBJUNCTIVE.

1. All the French verbs, regular and irregular, end in this tense with *e, es, e, ions, iez, ent.*

2. CONJUGATION OF THE PRESENT OF THE SUBJUNCTIVE OF THE REGULAR VERBS.

Que je chant -e	fin -isse	reç -oive	rend -e
That I may sing	*may finish*	*may receive*	*may render*
Que tu parl -es	ch-r -isses	aperç -oives	vend -es
That thou mayest speak	*mayest cherish*	*mayest perceive*	*mayest sell*
Qu'il donn -e	fl-rn -isse	perç -oive	tend -e
That he may give	*may flourish*	*may gather*	*may tend*
Que nous cherch -ions	pun -issions	ooce -evions	entend -ions
That we may seek	*may punish*	*may conceive*	*may hear*
Que vous port -iez	sais -issiez	d -eviez	perd -iez
That you may carry	*may seize*	*may owe*	*may lose*
Qu'ils aim -ent	un -issent	d-ç -oivent	mord -ent
That they may love	*may unite*	*may deceive*	*may bite*

3. In the first conjugation, the subjunctive is, in the singular, similar to the present of the indicative. Exception: aller—je vais, *que j'aille.*

4. The first and second persons plural of the subjunctive, in the four conjugations, are the same as the corresponding persons of the imperfect of the indicative. The third person plural is like the corresponding person in the indicative present. Exceptions: avoir, subjunctive, *nous ayons, vous ayez, ils aient;* savoir: *nous sachions, vous sachiez, ils sachent;* être: *nous soyons, vous soyez, ils soient;* faire: *nous fassions, nous fassiez, ils fassent;* aller: *ils aillent;* vouloir: *ils veuillent;* valoir: *ils vaillent.*

5. The subjunctive may also be formed from the participle present, by changing *ant* into *e, es, e, ions, iez, ent:* as, chantant, *je chante;* finissant, *je finisse;* ouvrant, *j'ouvre;* sachant, *je sache;* craignant, *je craigne.*

6. The verbs presenting exceptions to this last rule are the following, which the student will find conjugated in the Second Part of this grammar, § 62.

Acquérir	Concevoir	Mourir	Prendre,	Savoir	Venir
Aller	Décevoir	Mouvoir	(and	Tenir (and	(and
Apercevoir	Devoir	Percevoir	its com-	its com-	its com-
Avoir	Être	Pouvoir	pounds)	pounds)	pounds)
Boire	Faire	Pourvoir	Recevoir	Valoir	Vouloir

7. The past of the subjunctive is formed from the subjunctive

present of one of the auxiliaries, *avoir*, *être*, and the past participle of a verb [§ 45].

Que j'aie parlé, que je sois venu.	*That I may have spoken, that I may have come.*

8. A verb is put in the subjunctive, when it is preceded by the conjunction *que*, and another verb expressing consent, command, doubt, desire, surprise, want, duty, necessity, regret, fear, apprehension, &c. [§ 127, (2.)]

Je veux que vous lui parliez.	*I wish you to speak to him.*
Je désire que vous arriviez à temps.	*I wish you to arrive in time.*

9. When the first verb expresses fear or apprehension, the verb preceded by *que*, must also be preceded by *ne*, which, however, has no negative sense [§ 127, (3); § 138, (4.) (5.) (6.)]

Je crains qu'il ne tombe.	*I am afraid lest he fall.*

10. After craindre, *to fear;* appréhender, *to apprehend;* avoir peur, *to be afraid;* trembler, *to tremble; pas* is used in connection with the *ne*, when we wish for the accomplishment of the action or occurrence expressed by the second verb [§ 138, (7)].

Je tremble qu'il n'arrive pas à temps.	*I tremble that he may not arrive in time.*

RÉSUMÉ OF EXAMPLES.

Le médecin veut-il que je boive de l'eau?	*Does the physician wish me to drink water?*
Je consens que vous alliez le voir.	*I consent that you go to see him.*
Nous doutons que vous arriviez à temps.	*We doubt your arriving in time.*
Je crains que votre maître ne vous punisse.	*I fear lest your master may punish you.*
Je crains que votre maître ne vous punisse pas.	*I fear that your master may not punish you.*
Je m'étonne qu'il ne sache pas cela.	*I am astonished that he does not know that.*
J'exige que vous lui donniez cela.	*I require you to give him that.*
Voulez-vous qu'il aille à la chasse?	*Do you wish him to go hunting?*
Que voulez-vous que je dise?	*What do you wish me to (that I should) say?*
J'aime mieux que vous me payiez.	*I would rather that you should pay me.*

EXERCISE 141.

Artisan, m. *mechanic;*	Empêch-er, 1. *to prevent;*	Moulin à scie, *saw-mill;*
Atelier, m. *workshop;*	Fortement, *very much;*	Obé-ir, 2. *to obey;*
Au dessus, *above;*	Force, f. *strength;*	Rempl-ir, 2. *to fulfill;*
Bracelet, m. *bracelet;*	Magasin, m. *warehouse;*	Rue, f. *street;*
Déjà, *already;*	Malsain, e, *unhealthy;*	Tomb-er, 1. *to fall.*

1. Que voulez-vous que nous fassions? 2. Je désire que vous fassiez attention à vos études. 3. Ne craignez-vous pas que la pluie ne vous empêche de sortir? 4. Nous craignons fortement que la pluie ne nous empêche de remplir nos engagements. 5. Doutez-vous qu'il soit chez lui maintenant? 6. Je doute qu'il y soit, il est déjà dix heures. 7. Exigez-vous qu'il parte de bonne heure? 8. Je m'étonne qu'il ne soit pas déjà parti. 9. Aimez-vous mieux que je vous rende ces bracelets? 10. J'aime mieux que vous me les payiez. 11. Votre voisin craint-il que son enfant ne sorte? 12. Il craint qu'il ne tombe dans la rue. 13. Ne désirez-vous pas que vos élèves vous obéissent? 14. Je souhaite qu'ils m'obéissent et qu'ils obéissent à leurs professeurs. 15. Ne craignez-vous pas que cet artisan ne tombe malade? 16. Je crains qu'il ne tombe malade, car son atelier est très malsain. 17. Ne regrettez-vous pas qu'il soit obligé de travailler? 18. Je regrette qu'il soit obligé de travailler au dessus de ses forces. 19. Ne désirez-vous pas qu'on lui apprenne cette nouvelle? 20. Je désire qu'on la lui apprenne le plus tôt possible. 21. Votre père ne veut-il pas que vous achetiez un magasin? 22. Il veut que j'achète un moulin à scie. 23. Désirez-vous que je vous quitte? 24. Je désire que vous restiez avec moi. 25. Je veux que vous partiez ce matin.

Exercise 142.

1. Do you wish me to speak to the mechanic? 2. I wish you to tell him to (*de*) come here to-morrow morning. 3. What do you wish me to do? 4. I wish you to bring me a book. 5. Do you not wish me to read your letter? 6. I wish you to read it, and (*que*) give it to my sisters. 7. Does not your sister fear lest the rain may prevent her going out? 8. She fears that the rain may prevent our going out. 9. Do you doubt that your father be at home now? 10. I doubt his being there. 11. Do you require me to do my work now? 12. I wish you to do your work before going out (*avant de sortir*). 13. Do you not regret your being obliged to work? 14. I do not regret my being obliged to work. 15. Are you not astonished that he knows that? 16. I am astonished that he knows all. 17. Do you require me to pay him to day? 18. I wish you to pay him to-morrow. 19. What would you have me do (*See No.* 1, *of the above exercise*)? 20. I will have you pay him immediately. 21. Do you fear lest the master punish your son? 22. I fear that he may not punish him. 23. What would you have me say? 24. I would have you say the truth. 25. Does not your father wish you to buy a house? 26. He wishes me to buy a warehouse. 27. Do

you wish us to leave you? 28. I wish you to go away to-morrow. 29. Do you wish me to stay with you? 30. I wish you to stay here. 31. Do you wish me to tell him that news? 32. I wish you to tell it to him. 33. Do you wish your children to obey their teacher? 34. I wish them to obey him.

LEÇON LXXIII. LESSON LXXIII.

USE OF THE SUBJUNCTIVE, CONTINUED.

1. A verb, preceded by the conjunction *que* and one of the unipersonal verbs, il faut, *it is necessary;* il importe, *it matters, it is important;* il convient, *it is proper, becoming;* il vaut mieux, *it is better;* il plaît, *it pleases, suits;* il se peut, il peut se faire, *it may be;* il est juste, *it is just;* il est bon, *it is proper;* il est nécessaire, *it is necessary;* il est important, *it is important;* il est temps, *it is time;* il est indispensable, *it is indispensable;* il est à propos, *it is proper;* il est fâcheux, *it is sad, it is a pity;* il est urgent, *it is urgent*, or by another verb, or expression implying necessity, will, or propriety, must be put in the subjunctive [§ 127, (4.)]

Il faut que vous restiez ici.	*You must remain here.*
Il est juste que vous soyez récompensé.	*It is just you should be rewarded.*

2. The unipersonal verb *il est*, governs the indicative present or the future, when it is used affirmatively, and followed by *que*, coming after one of the adjectives, sûr, *sure;* certain, *certain;* vrai, *true;* démontré, *proved;* incontestable, *incontestable;* évident, *evident*, and others, having a positive and affirmative sense.

Il est certain qu'il vient ou qu'il viendra.	*It is certain that he comes or that he will come.*

3. When, however, the verb *il est*, used in the above connection, is negative or interrogative, it is followed by the subjunctive.

Il n'est nullement certain qu'il vienne.	*It is by no means certain that he will come.*

4. After certain conjunctions, afin que, *in order that;* quoique, *although*, etc., [*see full list*, § 143, (2.)] the subjunctive is always used.

Quoique vous fassiez, quoique vous disiez.	*Whatever you may do, whatever you may say.*

5. Other important rules, on the government of conjunctions, will be found in said § 143.

Résumé of Examples.

Que faut-il que votre sœur fasse?	*What must your sister do?*
Faut-il que je lui écrive?	*Must I write to him?*
Il est nécessaire que vous lui écriviez.	*It is necessary for you to write to him.*
Il est temps que vous lui donniez son argent.	*It is time that you should give him his money.*
N'est-il pas fâcheux qu'il soit arrivé si tard?	*Is it not a pity that he (should have) arrived so late?*
Il est certain qu'il est arrivé.	*It is certain that he has arrived.*
Il n'est point certain qu'il se soit blessé.	*It is not certain that he has hurt himself.*
Restez ici jusqu'à ce qu'il arrive.	*Remain here until he comes.*
Pourvu que vous finissiez à temps.	*Provided that you finish in time.*

Exercise 143.

Affaire, f. *affair;*	Fourn-ir, 2. *to furnish;*	Point, m. *point, degree;*
Ainsi, *thus;*	Se lev-er, 1. ref. *to rise;*	Pourvu que, *provided that;*
Créancier, m. *creditor;*	Linge, m. *linen;*	Régl-er, 1. *to regulate;*
Se couch-er, 1. ref. *to retire;*	Manqu-er, 1. *to want;*	Rest-er, 1. *to remain;*
Dire, 4. ir. *to say;*	Nécessaire, m. *necessaries;*	Satisfai-re, 4. ir. *to satisfy;*
Emprunt-er, 1. *to borrow;*	Ordre, m. *order;*	Tel, le, *such;*
	Oubli-er, 1. *to forget;*	

1. Que faut-il que je dise? 2. Il faut que vous disiez ce que vous avez entendu. 3. Ne faut-il pas que je finisse cette histoire? 4. Il n'est pas nécessaire que vous la finissiez. 5. N'est-il pas à propos que je satisfasse mes créanciers? 6. Il est à propos que vous le fassiez. 7. N'est-il pas juste que je vous paie ce que je vous ai emprunté? 8. Il est juste que vous me le payiez. 9. Se peut-il que votre frère ait oublié sa famille? 10. Il ne peut pas se faire qu'il l'ait oubliée. 11. Est-il certain que votre frère se soit oublié à un tel point? 12. Il est certain qu'il s'est oublié. 13. Il est bien fâcheux qu'il se soit oublié ainsi. 14. Resterez-vous jusqu'à ce que j'aie mis ordre à mes affaires? 15. Je resterai jusqu'à ce que vous les ayez réglées. 16. Ne faudra-t-il pas que je fournisse des provisions à cette famille? 17. Il faudra que vous lui en fournissiez, pourvu que vous en ayez. 18. Ne vaudra-t-il pas mieux que vous lui prêtiez de l'argent, que de le laisser manquer du nécessaire? 19. Il vaudra mieux que nous lui en prêtions. 20. Que faut-il que nous fassions? 21. Il faut que vous portiez ce linge chez moi. 22. N'est-il pas temps que je me couche? 23. Il est temps que vous vous couchiez. 24. Faut-il que je me lève? 25. Il faut que vous vous leviez.

Exercise 144.

1. What must our friend do? 2. He must remain at our house until I come. 3. What must our neighbor do? 4. He must put his

affairs in order. 5. Is it not right that you should pay your creditors? 6. It is right that I should pay them. 7. Is it time for your little boy to go to school? 8. It is time for him to go to school, it is ten o'clock. 9. Must I write to your correspondent to-day or to-morrow? 10. You must write to him to-morrow morning. 11. Is it not a pity that your brother has torn his cap (*casquette*)? 12. It is a pity that he has torn it. 13. Is it necessary for your mother to finish her letter? 14. It is not necessary that she finish it. 15. Is it certain that your son has forgotten his money? 16. It is certain that he has forgotten it. 17. It is by no means certain that he has forgotten it. 18. Must you furnish money to that mechanic? 19. I must furnish him some, he has none. 20. Whatever you may do you will not succeed (*réussir*). 21. Whatever your brother may say, nobody will believe him (*croire*, ir.). 22. Must I write to you? 23. You must write to me. 24. Do you wish me to be sick? 25. I do not wish you to be sick. 26. Do you require me to tell you that? 27. It is necessary that you tell me all. 28. Do you wish me to go to your house? 29. I wish you to go there. 30. Must I get up? 31. You must rise immediately (*à l'instant*). 32. Must your brother retire? 33. He must go to bed immediately. 34. It is time for him to go to bed, it is twelve o'clock.

LEÇON LXXIV. LESSON LXXIV.

USE OF THE SUBJUNCTIVE, CONTINUED.

1. The verbs croire, *to believe;* dire, *to say;* espérer, *to hope;* gager and parier, *to bet;* penser, *to think;* sentir, *to feel;* voir, *to see;* and others expressing affirmation or something certain and positive, are (when they have *que* after them) followed by the indicative present or future [§ 127, (2) Note].

Je pense, je crois, je dis qu'il viendra. *I think, I believe, I say that he will come.*

2. The above verbs, when used in the same connection, and conjugated negatively or interrogatively, are followed by the subjunctive, when the idea is very doubtful.

Je ne crois pas qu'il puisse venir. *I do not believe he will be able to come.*

3. A verb, preceded by another verb and by a relative pronoun, is

put in the subjunctive, while there is an idea of uncertainty, and in the indicative, when the idea is certain [§ 127, (2.) Note].

J'ai un homme qui me rendra service.	*I have a man who will oblige me.*
J'ai besoin d'un homme qui me rende service.	*I want a man who will (may) oblige me.*

4. A verb, preceded by a superlative relative, or by the words, *le seul, le premier, le dernier*, is put in the subjunctive [§ 127].

Voilà le seul chapeau que j'aie.	*That is the only hat I have.*
Voilà le meilleur homme que je connaisse.	*There is the best man I know.*

Résumé of Examples.

Je crois que le concert a eu lieu.	*I believe that the concert took place.*
Je ne pense pas que notre ami vienne.	*I do not think that our friend will come.*
J'espère que vous apprendrez cela par cœur.	*I hope that you will learn that by heart.*
Je ne pense pas qu'il puisse apprendre tout cela par cœur.	*I do not think that he can learn all that by heart.*
Je crois que ce marchand s'enrichit aux dépens d'autrui.	*I believe that this merchant grows rich at the expense of others.*
Je ne crois pas qu'il s'enrichisse à vos dépens.	*I do not believe that he enriches himself at your expense.*
Je ne crois pas que vous réussissiez à gagner votre vie.	*I do not believe that you will succeed in earning your living.*
J'ai une carafe qui contient un litre.	*I have a decanter which holds a litre.*
Je cherche une carafe qui contienne un litre.	*I seek a decanter which holds a litre.*
Je vous prête le meilleur chapeau que j'aie, à condition que vous me le rendiez demain.	*I lend you the best hat I have, on condition that you will return it to me to-morrow.*

Exercise 145.

S'asse-oir, 3. ir. ref. *to sit down;*	Fort, *strong;*	Rentr-er, 1. *to come in again;*
Compt-er, 1. *to depend;*	Litre, m. *litre, about a quart.*	Sorte, f. *kind;*
Cristal, m. *crystal;*	Négociant, m. *merchant;*	Suffi-re, 4. ir. *to suffice;*
Debout, *standing;*	Parasol, m. *parasol;*	Tanneur, m. *tanner;*
Dur-er, 1. *to wear, last;*	Portier, m. *porter;*	Tard-er, 1. *to tarry.*

1. Pensez-vous que ce drap dure longtemps? 2. Je crois qu'il durera bien, car il est fort. 3. Croyez-vous que notre portier tarde à rentrer? 4. Je crois qu'il ne tardera pas. 5. Désirez-vous que nous restions debout? 6. Je désire au contraire que vous vous asseyiez. 7. Croyez-vous que ces étudiants puissent apprendre cinq pages par cœur, en deux heures? 8. Je crois que c'est impossible. 9. Espérez-vous que notre ami arrive de bonne heure? 10. J'espère

qu'il arrivera bientôt. 11. Quelle sorte de carafe vous faut-il? 12. Il m'en faut une qui contienne un litre. 13. J'en ai une de cristal, qui contient deux litres. 14. Pensez-vous que ce négociant s'enrichisse à vos dépens? 15. Je sais qu'il s'enrichit aux dépens d'autrui. 16. Quel parasol pensez-vous me prêter? 17. Je pense vous prêter le meilleur que j'aie. 18. Le tanneur réussira-t-il à gagner sa vie? 19. Je ne crois pas qu'il y réussisse. 20. Pensez-vous que cet argent suffise à votre père? 21. Je crois qu'il lui suffira. 22. Croyez-vous que ces messieurs comptent sur moi? 23. Je sais qu'ils comptent sur vous. 24. Pensez-vous que le concert ait lieu aujourd'hui? 25. Je crois qu'il n'aura pas lieu.

EXERCISE 146.

1. Do you believe that the concert has taken place? 2. I believe that it has taken place. 3. Do you believe that your sister's dress will wear well? 4. I think that it will wear well, for the silk is very good. 5. Do you believe that our friend will succeed in earning a livelihood? 6. I believe he will succeed in it (*y*), for he is very diligent. 7. Do you think that the tanner grows rich at my expense? 8. I think that he enriches himself at the expense of others. 9. Does the merchant grow rich at my father's expense? 10. He grows rich at your expense. 11. What kind of a house must you have (*vous faut-il*)? 12. I must have a house which has ten rooms. 13. I have a good house which has twelve rooms. 14. What kind of a decanter do you seek? 15. I seek one which holds three litres. 16. I have one which holds two litres, I will lend it to you. 17. What coat will you send me? 18. I will send you the best I have, take care not to stain it. 19. Do you think that the student will learn all that by heart? 20. I do not think that he will learn it. 21. Do you believe (that) he will come? 22. I believe that he will come soon. 23. Do you think that your father depends upon me? 24. I know that he depends upon you. 25. Does not that gentleman depend upon me? 26. I think that he depends upon your brother. 27. Will the porter soon come in again? 28. I hope that he will not tarry long. 29. Will you not lend me your umbrella? 30. I will lend it to you with pleasure. 31. Does my brother remain standing? 32. He does not wish to sit down. 33. Do you wish me to sit down? 34. I wish you to remain standing. 35. I wish that he may come.

LEÇON LXXV. LESSON LXXV.

THE IMPERFECT AND PLUPERFECT OF THE SUBJUNCTIVE.

1. The terminations of the imperfect of the subjunctive are, in all the verbs, regular and irregular, of the four conjugations, *sse, sses, t, ssions, ssiez, ssent.*

2. The vowel preceding the *t* of the third person singular, always takes the circumflex accent.

3. CONJUGATION OF THE IMPERFECT OF THE SUBJUNCTIVE OF THE REGULAR VERBS.

Que je chant -asse	fin -isse	reç -usse	rend -isse
That I might sing	*might finish*	*might receive*	*might render*
Que tu parl -asses	chér -isses	aperç -usses	vend -isses
That thou mightest speak	*mightest cherish*	*mightest perceive*	*mightest sell*
Qu'il donn -ât	fourn -ît	perç -ût	tend -ît
That he might give	*might furnish*	*might gather*	*might tend*
Que nous cherch -assions	pun -issions	conç -ussions	entend -issions
That we might seek	*might punish*	*might conceive*	*might hear*
Que vous port -assiez	sais -issiez	d -ussiez	perd -issiez
That you might carry	*might seize*	*might owe*	*might lose*
Qu'ils aim -assent	un -issent	déç -ussent	mord -issent
That they might love	*might unite*	*might deceive*	*might bite*

4. This tense may be formed from the past definite, [L. 51] by changing, for the first conjugation, the final *i* of the first person singular of the past definite into *sse*, *sses*, etc., and adding *se*, *ses*, etc., to the same person in the other three conjugations. This rule has no exceptions.

J'allai, *j'allasse;* je finis, *je finisse.* *I went, I might go; I finished, I might finish.*

5. All the observations made Lesson 52, on the changes of the stem of the irregular verbs, in the past definite, apply equally to the imperfect of the subjunctive.

6. The pluperfect of the subjunctive is formed from the imperfect of the same mode, of one of the auxiliaries *avoir*, *être*, and the past participle of the verb.

Que j'eusse fini; que je fusse venu. *That I might have finished, that I might have come.*

7. All the rules given on the use of the subjunctive, in the three preceding lessons, apply, of course, to the imperfect and pluperfect of the mode.

8. In the same manner as the present or future of the indicative of the first part of a proposition, governs under the above-mentioned

rules, the verb of the second part, in the present or past of the subjunctive, so the imperfect and other past tenses of the indicative, and the two conditionals, govern the verb in the second part of the proposition, in the imperfect or pluperfect of the subjunctive.

Ne fallait-il pas que je lui parlasse?	*Was it not necessary that I should speak to him?*
Il faudrait que je lui donnasse ce livre.	*It would be necessary for me to give him that book.*

Résumé of Examples.

Voudriez-vous que je donnasse un coup de bâton à cet enfant?	*Would you wish me to give that child a blow with a stick?*
Je voudrais que vous tirassiez un coup de fusil sur cet oiseau.	*I would wish you to fire your gun upon that bird.*
Exigeriez-vous que nous revinssions de bonne heure?	*Would you require us to return early?*
Que voudriez-vous que ces hommes fissent?	*What would you wish those men to do?*
Que vouliez-vous que je fisse?	*What did you wish me to do?*
Il faudrait que j'eusse mon argent.	*It would be necessary for me to have my money.*
Je ne voulais pas que vous mourussiez de froid.	*I did not wish you to die with the cold.*
Elle craignait que vous ne mourussiez de misère et de faim.	*She feared lest you might die with want and hunger.*
Voudriez-vous que je jetasse un coup d'œil sur ces papiers?	*Would you wish me to cast a glance upon these papers?*

Exercise 147.

Bécasse, f. *woodcock;*	Ivrogne, m. *drunkard;*	Ressembl-er, 1. *to resemble;*
Bord, m. *shore;*	Lièvre, m. *hare;*	Rétablissement, m. *recovery;*
Charg-er, 1. *to load;*	Mer, f. *sea;*	Santé, f. *health;*
Coup, m. *blow;*	Neuf, ve, *new;*	Sort-ir, 2. ir. *to go out;*
Coup de fusil, m. *shot;*	Perdrix, f. *partridge;*	Suisse, *Switzerland;*
Coup d'œil, m. *glance;*	Poste, m. *post;*	Tir-er, 1. *to fire, shoot.*
Demi-usé, *half-worn;*	Se rend-re, 4. ref. *to repair;*	
Fouet, m. *whip;*		

1. Voudriez-vous que j'achetasse un habit à demi-usé? 2. Je voudrais que vous en achetassiez un neuf. 3. Voulait-on que ce soldat malade se rendît à son poste? 4. On voulait qu'il se rendît à son régiment. 5. Faudrait-il que je demeurasse au bord de la mer? 6. Il faudrait, pour le rétablissement de votre santé, que vous vous rendissiez en Suisse. 7. Ne pensez-vous pas que cet enfant ressemble à sa mère? 8. Je ne pense pas qu'il lui ressemble. 9. A qui ressemble-t-il? 10. Il ressemble à sa sœur aînée. 11. Consentiriez-vous que votre fille épousât cet ivrogne? 12. Voudriez-vous que nous mourussions de misère? 13. Je craignais que ces dames ne mourussent [§ 127, (3.) L. 72, 9.] de froid. 14. Ne voulez-vous pas tirer sur ce

lièvre? 15. Je tirerais sur cette bécasse, si mon fusil était chargé. 16. Combien de coups de fusil voudriez-vous que je tirasse? 17. Si vous aviez de la poudre, je voudrais que vous tirassiez sur cette perdrix. 18. Voulez-vous que je jette un coup d'œil sur cette lettre? 19. Je voudrais que vous la lussiez. 20. Que voudriez-vous que je fisse? 21. Je voudrais que vous fissiez attention à vos études. 22. Faudrait-il que je sortisse? 23. Il faudrait que vous restassiez à la maison. 24. Que voudriez-vous que je fisse à ce cheval? 25. Je voudrais que vous lui donnassiez des coups de fouet.

Exercise 148.

1. What would you have me do? 2. I would have you cast a glance upon this letter. 3. Would you wish me to give that dog blows with a stick? 4. I would wish you to give that horse blows with a whip. 5. Would you require us to return at five o'clock? 6. I would require you to return early. 7. Do you think that your brother resembles your father? 8. I do not think he resembles my father. 9. Whom do you think that he resembles? 10. I think he resembles my mother. 11. How many shots have you fired? 12. I have fired five shots at that woodcock. 13. Would you not have me fire at that partridge? 14. I would have you fire at that partridge, if your gun was loaded. 15. Where would it be necessary for me to dwell? 16. It would be necessary for you to dwell on the sea-shore. 17. Would you have me die with hunger? 18. I would not have you die of hunger. 19. Would you have your brother die with cold? 20. I would not have him die with cold or want. 21. What would you have your son do? 22. I would have him learn his lessons. 23. Would you have him learn German? 24. I would have him learn German and Spanish. 25. Have you fired (*sur*) at that hare? 26. I have not fired at that hare. 27. Would it be necessary for me to go out? 28. It would be necessary for you to go out. 29. Would it be necessary for me to remain here? 30. It would be necessary for you to go to church. 31. What did you wish? 32. I wished you to write to me. 33. Did you wish me to buy a coat half worn out? 34. I wished you to buy a good hat.

LEÇON LXXVI. LESSON LXXVI.

Regimen or government of verbs. (§ 129.)

1. Many verbs come together, in French, without prepositions, which are, in English, joined by them. Many others are connected, in

French, by prepositions different from those connecting the corresponding verbs in English. No satisfactory general rules can be given on this point. We have given, in the Second Part of this grammar, [§ 130, 131, 132] copious lists of the verbs in general use, with the prepositions which follow them, when they come before other verbs. We have also hitherto noted the prepositions usually placed after the verbs introduced in our lessons.

2. The student will recollect, that a verb following another verb (not *avoir* or *être*) or a preposition (not *en*) must be in the infinitive.

3. The following verbs, extracted from the list, § 130, although they in English, take a preposition before another verb, do not take one in French.

Aller, 1. ir. *to go*	Falloir, 3. ir. *to be necessary*	Savoir, 3. ir. *to know*
Compter, 1. *to intend*	Mener, 1. *to lead, to take, to conduct*	Souhaiter, 1. *to wish*
Courir, 2. ir. *to run*	Penser, 1. *to think*	Valoir mieux, 3. ir. *to be better*
Daigner, 1. *to deign*	Pouvoir, 3. ir. *to be able*	Venir, 2. ir. *to come*
Désirer, 1. *to desire*	Prétendre, 4. *to pretend*	Vouloir, 3. ir. *to wish, to will, to require, to desire.*
Devoir, 3. *to owe*	Préférer, 1. *to prefer*	
Envoyer, 1. ir. *to send*		
Espérer, 1. *to hope*		

Résumé of Examples.

Comptez-vous dîner avec nous?	*Do you intend to dine with us?*
Je vais dîner chez mon père.	*I am going to dine at my father's.*
Ne voulez-vous pas donner à manger à ce chien?	*Will you not feed that dog?*
Désirez-vous monter dans ma chambre?	*Do you wish to go up to my room?*
Je préfère descendre chez votre père.	*I prefer to go down to your father's.*
Demeure-t-il en haut, ou en bas?	*Does he live above, or below?*
Préférez-vous demeurer au rez-de-chaussée?	*Do you prefer to live on the ground floor?*
Je désire demeurer au premier étage.	*I wish to live in the first story.*
Nous préférons louer le second étage.	*We prefer to take the second story.*
Nous espérons louer une chambre au second.	*We hope to rent a room in the second story.*

Exercise 149.

Cabinet, m. *closet;*	En haut, *up stairs, above;*	Plaisir, m. *favor, pleasure;*
Compt-er, 1. *to cipher;*	Faisan, m. *pheasant;*	Salle, f. *parlor;*
Demain, *to-morrow;*	Jou-er, 1. *to play;*	Touch-er, 1. *to touch, play;*
Déjeûn-er, 1. *to breakfast;*	Lou-er, 1. *to rent, to let;*	Troisième, *third story;*
En bas, *down stairs, below;*	Pinc-er, 1. *to play,* (*lit. to pinch;*)	Violon, m. *violin.*

1. Combien de chambres comptez-vous louer? 2. Nous comptons louer une salle au rez-de-chaussée et deux cabinets au troisième. 3. Ne préférez-vous pas louer une chambre à coucher au second?

4. Nous préférons demeurer au rez-de-chaussée. 5. Ne pouvez-vous rester à dîner avec nous aujourd'hui? 6. Je vous remercie, je préfère venir demain. 7. M. votre père viendra-t-il demain déjeûner avec nous? 8. Il compte venir demain de bonne heure. 9. Que voulez-vous leur dire? 10. Je veux les prier de me faire ce plaisir. 11. Comptez-vous faire ce plaisir à mon frère? 12. J'espère le lui faire. 13. Préférez-vous demeurer en haut, ou en bas? 14. Nous préférons demeurer en bas. 15. Que pensez-vous faire de ce jeune faisan? 16. Nous pensons l'envoyer à M. votre beau-frère. 17. Ne savez-vous pas jouer du violon? 18. Je sais en jouer. 19. Mlle. votre cousine sait elle toucher le piano? 20. Elle sait toucher le piano et pincer la harpe. 21. Ne savez-vous pas écrire? 22. Nous savons lire, écrire, et compter. 23. Savez-vous jouer de la guitare? 24. Nous ne savons pas en jouer. 25. Nous souhaitons trouver un appartement au rez-de-chaussée.

Exercise 150.

1. Does your brother-in-law intend to rent the ground floor? 2. He intends to rent two rooms in the second story. 3. How many rooms does your son intend to take? 4. He intends to take two rooms in the second story. 5. Does he prefer to live on the second floor? 6. He prefers to live on the ground floor. 7. Does your father wish to come to dinner with us to-morrow? 8. He intends to come to-morrow, at two o'clock. 9. Do you prefer to live up stairs, or down stairs? 10. I prefer to live above. 11. Does your sister know how to play on the piano? 12. She knows how to play on the piano. 13. Where do you intend to live (*demeurer*)? 14. We intend to live at your father's. 15. Will you go up to my room? 16. I will go down to your father's. 17. Do you wish to live on the ground floor? 18. I wish to live on the second floor. 19. Is it necessary to stay here? 20. It is not necessary to stay here. 21. What do you think of doing with (*de*) your book? 22. I think of giving it to my son. 23. What do you wish me to say to that gentleman? 24. I wish to beg him to do me a favor. 25. Do you wish to send that pheasant to your mother? 26. I wish to send it to her, she is sick. 27. Cannot your sister play on the violin? 28. She cannot play on the violin, but she can play on the guitar. 29. Does your sister wish to live up stairs? 30. She prefers living down stairs. 31. Will you not do me that favor? 32. I will do it with pleasure. 33. Cannot your brother stay and dine with us to-day? 34. He has promised my father to come and dine with him. 35. Our friend knows how to read, write, and cipher.

LEÇON LXXVII. LESSON LXXVII.

GOVERNMENT OF VERBS, CONTINUED.

1. Many verbs, in French, are joined with other verbs following, by means of the preposition de, *of*, where the corresponding verbs, in English, either take no preposition, or one other than *of*. Besides *avoir besoin*, &c. [L. 21. R. 4.], the following verbs extracted from *list*, § 132, belong to this class:

Achever, *to finish*	Dispenser, *to dispense*	Négliger, *to neglect*
Brûler, *to burn, to long*	Empêcher, *to prevent*	Prier, *to beg*
Cesser, *to cease*	Éviter, *to avoid*	Promettre, *to promise*
Commander, *to command*	Se flatter, *to flatter one's self*	Proposer, *to propose*
Conseiller, *to advise*	Jurer, *to swear*	Refuser, *to refuse*
Défendre, *to forbid*	Manquer, *to fail*	Supplier, *to entreat*
Dire, *to say*	Menacer, *to threaten*	Trembler, *to tremble, to be in great fear*

RÉSUMÉ OF EXAMPLES.

Pourquoi n'achevez-vous pas d'apprendre ce métier?	*Why do you not finish learning that trade?*
Nous brûlons de continuer nos études.	*We burn (long) to continue our studies.*
Il ne cesse de nous tourmenter.	*He does not cease tormenting us.*
Me défendez-vous de faire du bien à cet homme?	*Do you forbid my doing good to that man?*
Ne négligez pas de lui faire une visite.	*Do not neglect paying him a visit.*
Me promettez-vous de faire une visite à mon ami?	*Do you promise me to pay a visit to my friend?*
Je vous prie d'aller tout-droit chez vous.	*I beg you will go straight home.*
Je vous conseille de venir par le chemin de fer.	*I advise you to come by the railroad.*
Ne manquez pas de lui faire mes compliments.	*Do not fail to present my compliments to him.*
L'avez-vous menacé de le frapper?	*Have you threatened to strike him?*
J'ai refusé de lui faire crédit.	*I refused to give him credit.*
Me proposez-vous de lui confier cet argent?	*Do you propose to me to trust him with this money?*
Je vous conseille de le lui confier.	*I advise you to trust him with it.*
J'évite de lui reprocher ses fautes.	*I avoid to reproach him with his faults.*

EXERCISE 151.

Arros-er, 1. *to water;*	Gard-er, 1. *to keep;*	Oubli-er, 1. *to forget;*
Arrosoir, m. *watering-pot;*	Jardinier, m. *gardener;*	Rend-re, 4. *to do, to render;*
Au contraire, *on the contrary;*	Lendemain, m. *next day, day after;*	Tout-droit, *straight;*
Corrig-er, 1. *to correct;*	Noël, m. *Christmas;*	Veille, f. *eve, day before;*
Faire part, *to communicate;*	Se rend-re, 4. ref. *to repair;*	Voie, f. *conveyance, way,* or *mode of travelling.*

1. Pourquoi ne cessez-vous pas de lire? 2. J'aurais tort de cesser de lire, avant de savoir ma leçon. 3. Avez-vous défendu à votre jardinier d'arroser ces fleurs? 4. Au contraire, je lui avais commandé de les arroser. 5. Pourquoi a-t-il négligé de le faire? 6. Parce qu'il a oublié d'apporter l'arrosoir. 7. Que désire faire M. F.? 8. Il brûle de continuer l'étude de la médecine. 9. N'avez-vous pas tort de faire des visites à ce monsieur? 10. J'aurais tort de le négliger. 11. N'avez-vous pas refusé de rendre ce service à votre ennemi? 12. J'aurais eu tort de refuser de le lui rendre. 13. Quelle voie nous avez-vous conseillé de prendre? 14. Je vous ai conseillé de prendre le bâteau à vapeur. 15. Avez-vous menacé de frapper cet enfant? 16. Je l'ai menacé de le corriger. 17. Avez-vous refusé de vendre des marchandises à mon frère? 18. J'ai refusé de lui en vendre à crédit. 19. Avez-vous dit à mon fils de se rendre à la maison? 20. Je l'ai prié d'y aller tout-droit. 21. Vous proposez-vous de venir la veille de Noël? 22. Nous nous proposons de venir le lendemain. 23. Votre compagnon se propose-t-il de garder le secret? 24. Il se propose de faire part de cela à tout le monde.

Exercise 152.

1. Have you forbidden my cousin to speak to the gardener? 2. I have not forbidden him to speak to him. 3. Has your mother ordered the gardener to water her roses (*roses*)? 4. She has ordered him to water them. 5. Has he forgotten to do it? 6. He has neglected to do it; he has not forgotten it. 7. What conveyance will you take to go to Paris? 8. I advise you to take the railroad. 9. Have you told (*à*) your son to take the steamboat? 10. No, sir; I have told him to take the stage (*diligence*, f.). 11. Is not your brother wrong to neglect paying a visit to his brother-in-law? 12. He is wrong to neglect it. 13. Does not that young German long to read that letter? 14. He longs to continue his studies. 15. Do you propose to trust him with that money? 16. I propose to trust him with it. 17. Do you neglect to reproach him with his faults? 18. I avoid to reproach him with them. 19. Have you threatened to punish your son? 20. I have threatened to strike him. 21. Do not fail to present my compliments to my sister's friends. 22. I will not fail, (*je n'y manquerai pas*). 23. Have you refused to sell him goods? 24. I have refused to sell him goods on credit. 25. Which mode of travelling do you advise me to take? 26. I advise you to take the railroad. 27. Do you forbid him to come? 28. I have forbidden his writing. 29. Have you failed to pay your gardener? 30. I have not failed to pay

him. 31. I have forgotten to pay you. 32. Do not neglect to write to me. 33. Tell him to go to my father. 34. Do not cease to work. 35. Tell him to come Christmas Eve. 36. I have told him to come the day after.

LEÇON LXXVIII. LESSON LXXVIII.

GOVERNMENT OF VERBS, CONTINUED.

1. Many French verbs reach their object by means of prepositions, while the corresponding English verbs govern their object directly, that is, without intervening prepositions. Other French verbs reach their object through prepositions different from those used in English. We give here a few verbs coming under those two classes, commencing with the first.

2. Verbs which have a preposition before a noun, in French, but have none in English.

Abuser de, *to abuse*	Jouir de, *to enjoy*	Plaire à, *to please*
S'approcher de, *to approach*	Manquer à, *to offend, to fail*	Se souvenir de, *to remember*
Convenir à, *to suit*	Médire de, *to slander*	Se servir de, *to use*
Déplaire à, *to displease*	Se méfier de, *to mistrust*	Ressembler à, *to resemble*
Désobéir à, *to disobey*	Obéir à, *to obey*	
Douter de, *to doubt*	Pardonner à, *to forgive*	Survivre à, *to survive*
Échapper à, *to escape*		

3. Verbs reaching their object through different prepositions in the two languages.

S'affliger de, *to grieve for*	Louer de, *to praise for*	Remercier de, *to thank for*
Féliciter de, *to congratulate on*, or *for*	Profiter de, *to profit by*	Rire de, *to laugh at*
Gémir de, *to grieve for*	Penser à, *to think of*	Rougir de, *to blush at*
S'informer de, *to inquire about*	Se passer de, *to do without*	Songer à, *to think of*

RÉSUMÉ OF EXAMPLES.

N'avez-vous pas abusé de notre patience ?	*Have you not abused our patience ?*
Nous en avons abusé.	*We have abused it.*
Vous avez désobéi à vos parents.	*You have disobeyed your parents.*
Vous pardonnerez à vos ennemis.	*You will forgive your enemies.*
Vous penserez constamment à vos devoirs.	*You will think constantly of your duties.*
Vous y penserez constamment.	*You will think of them constantly.*
Ne riez-vous pas de nos erreurs ?	*Do you not laugh at our mistakes ?*
Nous n'en rions point.	*We do not laugh at them.*
Ne ressemble-t-il pas à son père ?	*Does he not resemble his father.*

Exercise 153.

Arrangement, m. *arrangement;*
Circonstance, f. *circumstance;*
Conduite, f. *conduct;*
Complaisance, f. *kindness;*
Cœur, m. *heart;*
Devoir, m. *duty;*
Faute, f. *fault;*
S'informer, 1. ref. *to inquire;*
Malheur, m. *misfortune;*
Ne—plus, *no more;*
Nouvelle, f. *news;*
Parent, m. *relation;*
Peintre, m. *painter;*
Prochain, m. *neighbor;*
Sellier, m. *saddler;*
Succès, m. *success.*

1. Cet arrangement vous convient-il? 2. Il ne me convient pas, mais il convient à notre parent. 3. Cela ne déplait-il pas au peintre? 4. Votre conduite lui déplait beaucoup. 5. Ne craignez-vous pas d'abuser de la patience de votre ami? 6. Je crains d'en abuser. 7. Ne pensez-vous jamais à vos devoirs? 8. J'y pense tous les jours. 9. Avez-vous pensé à votre frère aujourd'hui? 10. J'ai pensé à lui, et je me suis souvenu de ses bontés. 11. A-t-il eu soin de son père, et lui a-t-il obéi? 12. Il lui obéit constamment. 13. Ne lui a-t-il jamais désobéi? 14. Il lui a désobéi plusieurs fois, mais il gémit de sa faute. 15. Ne les remerciez-vous pas de leur complaisance? 16. Je les en remercie de tout mon cœur. 17. Le sellier vous a-t-il félicité de votre succès? 18. Il m'en a félicité. 19. N'avez-vous pas ri de notre malheur? 20. Nous n'en avons pas ri, nous ne rions jamais des malheurs d'autrui. 21. Ne vous souvenez-vous pas des nouvelles que je vous ai apprises? 22. Je ne m'en souviens plus. 23. Votre père ne vous a-t-il pas défendu de médire de votre prochain? 24. Il me l'a défendu. 25. Nous nous sommes informés de toutes les circonstances de cette affaire.

Exercise 154.

1. Have you not abused your friend's kindness? 2. I have not abused his kindness, I have abused his patience. 3. Does not your conduct displease your parents? 4. My conduct does not please them. 5. Why have you not obeyed your father? 6. I have obeyed him (*lui*). 7. Have you not laughed at my mistakes? 8. I have not laughed at your mistakes. 9. Has the young man laughed at the painter's mistakes? 10. He has not laughed at his mistakes. 11. Has your saddler laughed at your cousin's misfortunes? 12. He has not laughed at his misfortunes. 13. Do you ever laugh at the misfortunes of others? 14. We never laugh at our neighbor's misfortunes. 15. Do you remember the lesson which you learnt yesterday? 16. I do not remember it (*en*). 17. Does that young lady resemble her mother? 18. She does not resemble her mother. 19. Have you thanked your friend for his kindness? 20. I have thanked him for it. 21. Has your mother forbidden you to read

that book? 22. She has forbidden it (*me l'a*). 23. Why do you not forgive your enemies? 24. I forgive them with all my heart. 25. Do you not think of your duties? 26. I think of them (*y*) every day. 27. Have you congratulated your friend? 28. I have congratulated him on his success. 29. Have you not slandered those gentlemen? 30. I never slander my neighbor. 31. Does that house suit you? 32. It suits me, but it does not suit my father. 33. Does that house suit the painter? 34. It suits him very well, but it is too small for me. 35. My father has forbidden my speaking to that gentleman.

LEÇON LXXIX. LESSON LXXIX.

REGIMEN OF ADJECTIVES. (§ 87.)

1. The regimen, or complement of an adjective, is generally a noun or a verb completing its signification. The regimen is usually connected with the adjective, by means of a preposition.

2. That preposition is often different, in French, from that connecting the corresponding English adjective with its regimen [§ 87, (1.) (3.)].

3. When an adjective follows the verb *être*, used unipersonally, the preposition *de* connects that adjective with its regimen [§ 87, (4.)].

Il est nécessaire de travailler pour vivre.	*It is necessary to labor in order to live.*

4. The following adjectives, extracted from lists, § 88, 89, 90, reach their regimen through prepositions different in French and English.

Amoureux de, *in love with*	Mécontent de, *displeased with*	Propre à, *fit for*
Chéri de, *beloved by*	Reconnaissant de, *grateful for*	Rebelle à, *rebellious towards*
Content de, *pleased with*	Rempli de, *filled with*	Bon pour, *kind towards*
Désolé de, *grieved for*	Bon à, *good for*	Insolent avec, *insolent towards*
Fâché de, *sorry for*	Cruel à, *cruel towards*	Poli envers, *polite to, or towards.*
Inquiet de, *uneasy about*	Exact à, *exact in*	
Ivre de, *intoxicated with*		

RÉSUMÉ OF EXAMPLES.

N'êtes-vous pas content de vos progrès?	*Are you not pleased with your progress?*
J'en suis fort content.	*I am very much pleased with it.*
Votre domestique est-il exact à remplir ses devoirs?	*Is your servant exact in fulfilling his duties?*

Avez-vous rempli de vin cette bouteille?	*Have you filled that bottle with wine?*
Avez-vous rempli d'argent votre bourse?	*Have you filled your purse with money?*
Je l'en ai remplie.	*I have filled it with it.*
Il est très facile de blâmer les actions d'autrui.	*It is very easy to blame the actions of others.*
Il est glorieux de mourir pour sa patrie.	*It is glorious to die for one's country.*
Il est plus agréable de voyager en été qu'en hiver.	*It is more agreeable to travel in summer than in winter.*

Exercise 155.

Abatt-re, 4. ir. *to cut down;*	Bois à brûler, m. *fire-wood;*	Nettoy-er, 1. *to clean;*
Achat, m. *purchase;*	Chagriné, e, *vexed;*	Peuple, m. *people;*
Arrach-er, 1. *to pull up;*	Encre, f. *ink;*	Pommier, m. *apple-tree;*
Aubergiste, m. *innkeeper;*	Fendre, *to cleave, split;*	Prunier, m. *plum-tree;*
Bourse, f. *purse;*	Gloire, f. *glory;*	Roi, m. *king;*
	Liberté, f. *liberty;*	Sci-er, 1. *to saw;*
		Tonneau, m. *cask.*

1. Ce héros n'était-il pas amoureux de la liberté et de la gloire? 2. Il en était amoureux. 3. Ce roi n'était-il pas chéri de son peuple? 4. Il en était chéri. 5. Ces négociants ne sont-ils pas contents de leur achat? 6. Ils n'en sont pas contents. 7. N'êtes-vous pas chagriné de ne pouvoir nous accompagner? 8. J'en suis désolé. 9. Savez-vous de quoi l'aubergiste a rempli ce tonneau? 10. Il l'a rempli de vin. 11. De quoi ferez-vous remplir cette bouteille, quand vous l'aurez fait nettoyer? 12. Elle est déjà remplie d'encre. 13. N'êtes-vous pas bien fâché d'avoir fait abattre vos pommiers? 14. J'en suis bien content, car ils n'étaient bons à rien. 15. N'est-il pas nécessaire de faire arracher ces pruniers? 16. Il n'est pas nécessaire de les faire arracher. 17. Est-il possible de fendre ce morceau de bois? 18. Il est possible de le fendre. 19. Êtes-vous exact à nettoyer vos habits? 20. J'y suis très exact. 21. De quoi avez-vous rempli votre bourse? 22. Je l'ai remplie d'argent. 23. Est-il nécessaire de faire scier votre bois à brûler? 24. Il est nécessaire de le faire scier. 25. N'êtes-vous pas reconnaissant des services qu'on vous rend? 26. J'en suis très reconnaissant.

Exercise 156.

1. Are you not grieved with having lost your money? 2. I am sorry that I have lost my purse. 3. With what will you fill that bottle? 4. I will have it filled with ink. 5. Is it not necessary to have our wood sawed? 6. It is necessary to have our fire-wood sawed. 7. Your garden is too small, is it not necessary to have some

plum-trees pulled out? 8. It is necessary to have some plum-trees cut down. 9. Have you filled your friend's purse with silver? 10. I have filled it with gold. 11. Are all your bottles filled with wine? 12. They are all filled with ink. 13. Are you sorry to have filled your bottles with ink? 14. I am glad to have filled them with ink, for I want ink. 15. Are you pleased with this book? 16. I am pleased with it. 17. Is that land good for any thing? 18. It is good for nothing. 19. Is that lady beloved by her children? 20. She is beloved by her friends, and by her children. 21. Are you grateful for those services? 22. I am grateful for them. 23. Is it not possible to split that piece of wood? 24. It is not possible to split it. 25. Is it agreeable to travel in winter? 26. It is not as agreeable to travel in winter as in summer. 27. It is easy to blame others. 28. Is it not glorious to die for one's country? 29. It is glorious to live and to die for one's country. 30. Have you filled the inkstand? (*encrier*). 31. I have filled it with ink. 32. Would it not be necessary to pull up all those trees? 33. It would not be necessary to pull them all up, for my garden is very large. 34. Henry the Fourth (*quatre*) was beloved by his people.

LEÇON LXXX. LESSON LXXX.

GOVERNMENT OF PREPOSITIONS, ETC. (§ 139.)

1. Some prepositions govern the nouns that follow them without the aid of other prepositions. Avant, *before* (*at an earlier period*); [(§ 142, (1.)] devant, *before* (*opposite place*); [§ 142, (1.)] derrière, *behind;* chez, *at the house of;* concernant, *touching;* excepté, *except;* outre, *besides;* selon, *according to;* voici, *here is;* voilà, *there is, etc.*, [§ 139, (1.)]

2. Others, being rather prepositional phrases, govern their object by means of the preposition *de*:—hors de, *out of;* loin de, *far from;* à fleur de, *even with;* à force de, *by dint of;* à l'égard de, *with regard to;* à l'insu de, *without the knowledge of, unknown to;* à raison de, *at the rate of;* au deça de, *this way of;* au delà de, *that way of*, [§ 139, 2.].

3. Others take à—quant à, *as far;* jusqu'à, *as far as, etc.* [§ 139, 3.].

4. Two or more verbs, adjectives, or prepositions may in French have a regimen in common, provided they govern in the *same* manner or case [§ 92, (1.) (2.) § 140, and § 133.].

Nous aimons et nous louons nos enfants.	*We love and praise our children.*
Ce jardin est utile et agréable à notre père.	*That garden is useful and agreeable to our father.*
Au dedans ou au dehors du royaume.	*Within or without the kingdom.*

5. When, however, two or more verbs, adjectives or prepositions coming together in the same sentence, do not govern their regimen in the *same* manner, they cannot have a regimen in common. The regimen must be repeated, or replaced by a pronoun, or another turn must be given to the sentence. The following sentences could not, therefore, be translated literally into French.

That man is useful to and loved by his family—I write to and receive letters from my brothers—To be exposed to or sheltered from the rain. We must say:

Cet homme est utile à sa famille, et il en est aimé.	*That man is useful to his family, and he is beloved by them.*
J'écris des lettres à mon frère, et j'en reçois de lui.	*I write letters to my brother, and receive some from him.*
Être exposé à la pluie, ou en être à l'abri.	*To be exposed to the rain, or to be sheltered from it.*

Utile and *aimé*, *écrire* and *recevoir*, *exposé* and *à l'abri*, take different regimens.

Résumé of Examples.

Nous sommes arrivés avant la bataille.	*We arrived before the battle.*
Vous vous asseyez toujours devant moi.	*You always sit before me.*
Les avez-vous placés sur la table?	*Have you placed them upon the table?*
Je les ai placés dessous.	*I have placed them under.*
Je les ai mis sous la chaise ou dessus.	*I have put them under the chair or upon it.*
Ils demeurent derrière notre maison.	*They lived behind our house.*
J'ai loué une chambre de derrière.	*I have rented a back room.*
Nous occupons le devant de la maison.	*We occupy the front of the house.*
Je les ai rencontrés derrière votre jardin.	*I met them behind your garden*
Vous avez acheté cette terre à l'insu de votre père.	*You have bought that estate without the knowledge of your father.*
J'ai payé le jardinier à raison de deux francs par jour.	*I paid the gardener at the rate of two francs per day.*

Exercise 157.

Assiette, f. *plate;*	Dessous, *under, under it;*	Hectolitre, m. *hectolitre,* 100 *litres;*
Coût-er, 1. *to cost;*		
Dedans, *inside, within;*	Dessus, *above, upon it;*	Plat, m. *dish;*
Dehors, *outside, without;*	S'enrich-ir, 2. *to become rich;*	Pomme de terre, f. *potato;*
Derrière, m. *back;*	Hors, *out;*	Sur, *upon, about.*
Devant, m. *front;*		

1. N'avez-vous pas fermé la porte de devant? 2. Nous l'avons fermée, mais nous n'avons pas fermé la porte de derrière. 3. Qui est arrivé avant moi? 4. Le monsieur qui est assis devant la fenêtre. 5. Qui demeure derrière votre maison? 6. Il n'y a point de maison derrière la nôtre. 7. Ne pensez-vous pas qu'à force de travailler, il s'enrichira? 8. Je ne crois pas qu'il s'enrichisse, s'il vend ses marchandises à si bon marché. 9. Apprend-il la musique à l'insu de ses parents? 10. Il l'apprend à leur insu. 11. Vous êtes-vous marié à l'insu de votre sœur? 12. Je me suis marié à son insu. 13. Notre ami n'est pas dans la maison, il est dehors. 14. Il n'est pas hors de la ville, il est dedans. 15. Avez-vous de l'argent sur vous? 16. Je n'ai pas d'argent sur moi. 17. Demeurez-vous sur le derrière, ou sur le devant de la maison? 18. Nous demeurons sur le devant. 19. La cuisinière a-t-elle mis les assiettes sur la table, ou dessous? 20. Elle a mis les assiettes, les plats, les cuillères, et les fourchettes sur la table. 21. Combien ces pommes de terre vous coûtent-elles? 22. Je les ai achetées à raison de cinq francs l'hectolitre. 23. Avez-vous fait réparer le dedans ou le dehors de la maison? 24. J'ai fait réparer l'intérieur et l'extérieur.

Exercise 158.

1. Have you bought that house without your father's knowledge? 2. I have bought it without his knowledge. 3. Have you forgotten to shut the front door? 4. I have shut the front door and the back door. 5. I have brought all my books, except two or three. 6. Does your brother occupy the front of your house? 7. He occupies the back. 8. Whom have you met behind that house? 9. I met nobody behind the house. 10. Does that gentleman live behind your house? 11. Nobody lives behind our house. 12. There is no house behind yours. 13. Have you a knife about you? 14. I have no knife about me. 15. Do you carry a knife about you? 16. I never carry a knife about me. 17. Has not your brother money about him? 18. He has no money about him. 19. Will you put these pencils upon the table, or under it? 20. I will put them in the drawer (*tiroir*). 21. How much have you given for that wheat? 22. I bought it at the rate of twenty-five francs the hectolitre. 23. Is that lady's house out of the city? 24. It is not out of the city; it is within. 25. Has not your sister placed the plates upon the table? 26. She has put the plates upon the table, and the spoons under it. 27. Have you had your house repaired? 28. I have had the inside repaired, but not the outside. 29. How much does that silk coat cost

you? 30. I have bought it at the rate of five francs the metre. 31. Did you marry without your father's knowledge? 32. I married without his knowledge. 33. Have you sold my books without my knowledge? 34. I sold them without your knowledge. 35. I sold them without my sister's knowledge.

LEÇON LXXXI. LESSON LXXXI.

THE DEMONSTRATIVE PRONOUN, CE. (§ 108.)

1. The pronoun *ce* answers to the English pronoun *it*, used before the verb *to be*, in such sentences as, *it is I, it is thou*, etc. The latter pronouns (*I, thou*, etc.) are rendered by *moi, toi, lui, elle, nous, vous, eux*, m., *elles*, f. The verb remains in the singular, except when the pronoun following it is in the third person plural, in which case it may be put in the plural or in the singular [§ 116, (2.)]. If the pronoun is followed by *qui*, the verb is better in the plural, and, if followed by *que*, in the singular.

C'est moi, c'est lui, c'est elle.	*It is I, it is he, it is she.*
Ce sont elles qui parlent.	*It is they who speak.*
C'est elles que nous cherchons.	*It is they whom we seek.*

2. If the relative pronoun *qui* and another verb follow *être*, this second verb must agree in number and person with the pronoun preceding the relative.

C'est vous qui avez fait cela.	*It is you who have done that.*
C'est nous qui avons déchiré cette soie.	*It is we who have torn that silk.*

3. *Ce* also renders the English pronoun *it*, used absolutely, but not unipersonally before the verb *to be* [§ 108, (5.)].

Ce fut en Allemagne qu'il trouva son ami.	*It was in Germany that he found his friend.*

4. Celui qui, celle qui, ceux qui, *m.*, celles qui, *f.*, are equivalent to the English pronouns, *he who, she who, they who*—celui que, celle que, ceux que, celles que, render *he whom*, etc.

Celui ou celle qui chante.	*He or she who sings.*

RÉSUMÉ OF EXAMPLES.

Est-ce vous qui nous avez averti de cela?	*Is it you who have warned us of this?*
C'est nous qui vous en avons averti.	*It is we who have warned you of it.*

Est-ce vous, mesdames, que nous avons rencontrées?	*Is it you, ladies, whom we have met?*
Ce n'est pas nous, c'est eux que vous avez vus.	*It is not we, it is they whom you have seen.*
Ce n'est pas vous, ce sont eux qui ont fait cela.	*It is not you, it is they who have done that.*
C'est en Angleterre que je vous ai vu.	*It is in England that I saw you.*
Connaissez-vous ces deux Portugais?	*Do you know those two Portuguese?*
Je connais celui qui parle à M. L.	*I know him who speaks to Mr. L.*

Exercise 159.

Appel-er, 1. *to call;*	Connaissance, f. *acquaintance;*	De temps en temps, *from time to time;*
A toute force, *by all means;*	Expliqu-er, 1. *to explain;*	Numéro, No., *number (of a series, street, etc.)*
Avert-ir, 1. *to warn;*	Guerre, f. *war;*	Phrase, f. *sentence;*
Blessure, f. *wound;*	De jour en jour, *from day to day;*	Prélud-er, 1. *to prelude.*
Combl-er, 1. *to overwhelm;*		

1. Est-ce vous, madame, qui avez appelé votre domestique? 2. Ce n'est pas moi qui l'ai appelé. 3. Est-ce vous, mon ami, qui voulez à toute force aller en Espagne? 4. Ce n'est pas moi, c'est mon cousin. 5. N'est-ce pas lui qui a averti ce matelot de son danger? 6. Ce n'est pas lui, c'est moi qui l'en ai averti. 7. Est-ce nous que vous attendez de jour en jour? 8. Ce n'est pas vous, c'est eux que j'attends. 9. Est-ce vous, madame, qui nous avez comblées de bienfaits? 10. Ce n'est pas moi, madame. 11. N'est-ce pas en Italie que vous avez fait connaissance avec lui? 12. Ce n'est pas en Italie, c'est en Russie. 13. Est-ce vous, mesdames, ou vos cousines, que nous avons vues au bal? 14. C'est nous, ce n'est pas nos cousines, que vous avez vues. 15. Ne connaissez-vous pas ces deux messieurs? 16. Je connais celui qui parle à Madame L. 17. Est-ce vous qui avez reçu une blessure à la guerre? 18. Ce n'est pas moi, c'est mon voisin. 19. N'est-ce pas vous qui nous avez expliqué cette phrase? 20. Est-ce vous, monsieur, qui demeurez au No. 18? 21. Ce n'est pas moi qui y demeure. 22. Entendez-vous ces musiciens? 23. J'entends celui qui chante. 24. Je n'entends pas bien celui qui joue. 25. Nous entendons ceux qui préludent.

Exercise 160.

1. Is it you, my friend, who have warned me of my danger? 2. It is not I who have warned you of it. 3. Is it they whom you expect from day to day? 4. It is not they whom we expect. 5. Is it you who have done this? 6. It is not we, it is you who have

done it. 7. Was it in England that you bought this hat? 8. It was not in England; it was in Germany. 9. Was it not in Russia that you became acquainted with him? 10. It was not in Russia; it was in Italy. 11. Was it you who were calling us? 12. It was not we; it was he. 13. Are you not acquainted with the two Poles who are reading? 14. I know the one who is near you. 15. Is that (*est-ce là*) the lady whom you expected? 16. It is not (she). 17. Is it you, gentlemen, who have loaded my brother with kindness? 18. It is not (we), sir; we have not the pleasure of knowing him. 19. Is it you who have been wounded in the (*au*) arm? 20. It is not (I). 21. Do you not hear those two ladies? 22. I do not hear the one who sings. 23. I hear the one who plays. 24. Was it you who came to our house this morning? 25. It was not I; I was in London then (*alors*). 26. Was it you, sir, who did us that favor? 27. It was not (I); it was my sister. 28. Was it your son who wished by all means to go to London? 29. It was not he; he is now in Germany. 30. Is it you who wrote that letter? 31. We have written no letter. 32. Who lives at (*au*) No. 20? 33. I live there (*c'est moi*). 34. Is it we whom you have seen? 35. It was not you whom I saw.

LEÇON LXXXII. LESSON LXXXII.

CE,—IDIOMATIC USE OF QUE.

1. The pronoun *ce* (and not the pronouns *il, elle*, etc.), must be used for *he, she, they*, coming before the verb *to be*, when that verb is followed by a noun, or an adjective used substantively, *preceded* by *the, a* or *an*, by *some* or *any* understood, or by a *possessive* or *demonstrative adjective*. When the word used in apposition with *ce* is plural, and in the third person, the verb is put in the plural, although *ce* remains unchanged [§ 108, (2.) (3.)].

C'est un Polonais.	*He is a Pole.*
Ce sont des Anglais.	*They are Englishmen.*
C'est cette dame qui m'a parlé de vous.	*It is that lady who spoke to me of you.*

2. *Ce* is used as the nominative of the verb *être*, in sentences like the following, and the conjunction *que* is used *idiomatically* after it. The verb in this case is not put in the plural.

Qu'est-ce que ces enfants?	*What are those children?*
Qu'est-ce que l'Italie?	*What is Italy?*
Qu'est-ce que le jardinage?	*What is gardening?*

3. *Que* is used idiomatically in a number of sentences. In the following it gives greater force to the expression.

Ce sont de bons livres que les vôtres?	*Yours are indeed good books.*
Je dis que oui; je crois que non.	*I say yes; I believe not.*

Résumé of Examples.

Qui sont ces messieurs qui parlent à M. L.?	*Who are the gentlemen who speak to Mr. L.?*
Ce sont mes cousins, qui viennent d'arriver.	*They are my cousins, who have just arrived.*
De quel pays sont ces marchands?	*Of what country are those merchants?*
Ce sont des Polonais, ils viennent d'arriver.	*They are Poles, they have just arrived.*
Ils ne sont pas polonais, ils sont russes.	*They are not Poles, they are Russians.*
Ce ne sont pas des Polonais, ce sont des Russes.	*They are not Poles, they are Russians.*
Qu'est-ce que la Touraine?	*What is Touraine?*
C'est le jardin de la France.	*It is the garden of France.*
Votre fenêtre ne donne-t-elle pas sur la rue?	*Does not your window look on the street?*
Non, c'est sur la cour qu'elle donne.	*No, it looks on the yard.*
Je crois que oui; je crois que non.	*I believe so; I believe not.*

Exercise 161.

Bris-er, 1. *to break;*	Étranger, e, *foreign;*	Soieries, f. p. *silks,*
Charron, m. *wheel-wright;*	Fenêtre, f. *window;*	Sucre, m. *sugar;*
Confitures, f. p. *preserves;*	Lyon, *Lyons;*	Suisse, *Swiss;*
Donn-er, 1. *to give, look;*	Mouchoir, m. *handkerchief;*	Surprend-re, 4. ir. *to catch, surprise;*
Écossais, e, *Scotch;*	Roue, f. *wheel;*	Vol-er, 1. *to steal.*

1. Connaissez-vous ces étrangers? 2. Oui, monsieur; ce sont les frères de notre voisin. 3. Ne sont-ils pas écossais? 4. Non, monsieur; ils sont suisses. 5. Ne sont-ce point des Écossais qui vous ont fait présent de cette casquette? 6. Non, monsieur; ce sont des Suisses. 7. N'est-ce pas votre domestique qui vous a volé du vin? 8. Ce n'est pas lui, c'est son frère. 9. N'est-ce pas lui qui a pris vos confitures? 10. Ce n'est pas lui, ce sont ses enfants. 11. Ne sont-ce pas là les enfants que vous avez surpris à voler votre sucre? 12. Ce sont leurs frères. 13. Ne sont-ils pas cousins? 14. Ils ne sont pas cousins, ils sont frères. 15. Qu'est-ce que ces soieries? 16. Ce sont des marchandises qu'on vient de nous envoyer. 17. N'est-ce pas une belle ville que Lyon? 18. C'est une grande et belle ville. 19. N'est-ce pas là le mouchoir que vous avez perdu? 20. Je crois que oui. 21. N'est-ce pas sur le jardin que donnent vos fenêtres? 22. Oui, monsieur; c'est sur le jardin qu'elles donnent. 23. N'est-ce

pas notre charron qui a fait cette roue? 24. Ce n'est pas lui qui l'a faite. 25. Ce sont nos amis qui l'ont brisée, et c'est le menuisier qui l'a faite.

Exercise 162.

1. Is that lady your friend's sister? 2. No, sir; she is a stranger. 3. Who are the two gentlemen who are speaking to your sister? 4. They are Swiss gentlemen. 5. Are those the gentlemen whom you have invited? 6. It is they (*eux*). 7. Do you not know that man? 8. I know him very well; he is the man who has stolen my wine. 9. What is Italy? 10. It is the garden of Europe. 11. Is not that the letter which you intended to carry to the post-office? 12. No, sir; it is another. 13. Is the city of Havre fine? 14. Yes, sir; Havre is truly a large and beautiful city. 15. Is not that the man whom you have caught stealing your fruit? 16. It is not, it is another. 17. Is not this the cap that you have bought? 18. Yes, sir; I believe so. 19. Do not the windows of your room look on the street? 20. No, madam; they look on the garden. 21. Do not the windows of your dining-room look on the yard (*cour*)? 22. No, sir; they look on the lake (*lac*). 23. Is it that little child who has taken your preserves? 24. It is his brother or his sister. 25. What are those engravings? 26. They are engravings which I bought in Germany. 27. Are these gentlemen Scotch? 28. They are not Scotch; they are Italian. 29. Are those ladies Scotch? 30. No; they are the Italian ladies who came yesterday. 31. What is Marseille? 32. It is one of the finest cities in (*de*) France. 33. Is it not your tailor who made that coat? 34. It is not he, it is an English tailor who made it. 35. It is your friend who broke my watch.

LEÇON LXXXIII. LESSON LXXXIII.

AGREEMENT OF THE VERB WITH ITS SUBJECT.

1. In French, as in other languages, when a verb has two subjects in the singular, it is generally put in the plural [§ 114, (2)].

L'oncle et la tante sont arrivés. *The uncle and aunt have arrived.*

2. When a verb has two or more subjects of different persons, it is put in the plural, and assumes the termination of the *first person* rather than that of the *second or third*, and the termination of the

second in preference to that of the *third*. A pronoun recapitulating[1] the others, is placed immediately before the verb.

Vous et moi nous irons demain à la chasse.	*You and I will go hunting to-morrow.*
Vous et lui vous irez demain à l'école.	*You and he will go to school to-morrow.*
Sa mère et moi nous avons écrit cette lettre.	*His mother and I have written that letter.*

3. The above examples will show, that, when a verb has several subjects, all of them pronouns, or partly pronouns and partly nouns, the words *moi, toi, lui, eux*, are used instead of *je, tu, il, ils* [§ 33, (10.) (11.)]

4. For further rules on this subject, see § 114 and 115, and also the next lesson.

5. Gêner corresponds in signification to the English *to trouble, to incommode, to disturb, to be in the way*, and *to hurt* (*in speaking of shoes and garments*). Se gêner means *to constrain*, or *trouble one's self.*

Est-ce-que je vous gêne?	*Am I in your way?*

RÉSUMÉ OF EXAMPLES.

Où irez-vous, votre frère et vous?	*Where will you go, your brother and you?*
Lui et moi, nous irons en Angleterre.	*He and I will go to England.*
Vous, elle et lui, vous achèterez du blé.	*You, she and he will buy wheat.*
Eux et moi, nous nous sommes fait mal à la tête.	*They and I have hurt our heads.*
Vous et lui, vous devriez vous prêter aux circonstances.	*You and he should adapt yourselves to circumstances.*
Lui et moi, nous vous gênerons sans doute.	*He and I will without doubt incommode you.*
Ma cousine et moi, nous craignons de vous gêner.	*My cousin and I fear to be in your way.*
Je ne me gêne jamais chez mes amis.	*I am never under constraint with my friends.*
Ne vous gênez pas; mettez-vous à votre aise.	*Be under no constraint; place yourself comfortably.*
Nous n'aimons pas à gêner les autres.	*We do not like to incommode others.*
Nous n'aimons pas à nous gêner.	*We do not like to incommode ourselves.*

EXERCISE 163.

A perte, *at a loss;*
A profit, *with a profit;*
Bras, *arm;*
Dérang-er, 1. *to disturb;*
Économe, *economical;*
Nullement, *by no means;*
Pardon, *excuse me;*
Persist-er, 1. *to persist;*
Place, f. *room;*
Prodigue, *prodigal, lavish;*
Se prêter, 1. ref. *to adapt one's self.*
Société, f. *company, society;*
Tous deux, *both.*

[1] This pronoun is sometimes omitted by the best French writers; see 2d Example, § 33, (10.)

1. Si nous restions plus longtemps ici, nous craindrions de vous gêner. 2. Vous ne nous gênez nullement; votre société nous est très agréable. 3. N'avez-vous pas été trop prodigues, vous et votre frère? 4. Lui et moi au contraire, nous avons été très économes. 5. N'avez-vous pas tort de gêner ce monsieur? 6. Nous n'avons nullement envie de le gêner. 7. Est-ce que mon bras vous gêne, monsieur? 8. Non, monsieur; nous avons assez de place, vous ne me gênez pas. 9. Ne devriez-vous pas vous prêter aux circonstances? 10. Nous faisons, elle et moi, notre possible pour nous y prêter. 11. Ce jeune homme persiste-t-il dans sa résolution? 12. Nous y persistons, lui et moi. 13. Persistez-vous tous deux à rester ici? 14. Nous y persistons tous deux. 15. Cet homme est-il gêné dans ses affaires (*uncomfortably situated, badly off*)? 16. Il était gêné dans ses affaires, il y a un an. 17. Ne vous gênez pas, monsieur. 18. Je ne me gêne jamais, monsieur. 19. Est-ce-que mon frère vous dérange? 20. Non, monsieur? il ne me dérange pas. 21. Je ne voudrais pas vous déranger. 22. Pardon, si je vous dérange. 23. Vous et votre associé vous avez vendu vos marchandises à perte. 24. Vous et moi nous vendons toujours à profit. 25. Votre père, votre frère, et moi nous avons acheté des marchandises.

Exercise 164.

1. Do we incommode you, my brother and I? 2. No, sir; you do not incommode us; we are very glad to see you. 3. Are you not afraid to disturb your friend? 4. We are afraid to disturb him, he has much to do. 5. Is my foot in your way, sir? 6. No, sir; your foot is not in my way. 7. Will you and your brother go to Germany this year? 8. We intend to go there, he and I. 9. He, you and I should write our lessons. 10. Should you not, you and your friends, adapt yourselves to circumstances? 11. We should do so, if it were possible. 12. Do I not disturb you, sir? 13. You do not disturb me by any means. 14. Does not my little boy disturb you? 15. He does not disturb me. 16. He disturbs nobody. 17. Does not your partner sell his goods at a loss? 18. He never sells at a loss. 19. He and I always sell at a profit. 20. Do you persist in your resolution? 21. Your friend and I persist in our resolution. 22. I never feel under constraint at your house. 23. Be under no constraint (make yourself at home). 24. Are you not wrong to incommode them? 25. I do not intend to incommode them. 26. We do not like to incommode ourselves (to put ourselves out of the way). 27. My little boy and I will, perhaps, be in your way. 28. No, sir;

we are very glad of your company. 29. Do I disturb you? 30. No, sir; you do not disturb us. 31. Do I disturb your father? 32. No, sir; you disturb no one. 33. Excuse me, sir, if I disturb you. 34. Have you not been very lavish? 35. No, sir; I assure you that your son and I have been very economical.

LEÇON LXXXIV. LESSON LXXXIV.

AGREEMENT OF THE VERB WITH ITS SUBJECT, CONTINUED.

1. When a verb is preceded by several nouns not connected, it agrees with the last only, provided the nouns are in some way synonymous, or the mind dwells more forcibly upon the last.

Son amour, sa tendresse pour ses enfants est connue de tout le monde.	*His love, his tenderness for his children, are known to every body.*
Vos amis, vos parents, Dieu vous récompensera.	*Your friends, your relatives, God will reward you.*

2. When two or more nouns are united by the conjunction *ou*, the verb agrees with the last only.

Charles ou George écrira à votre ami.	*Charles or George will write to your friend.*

3. When a noun and a pronoun, or two or more pronouns (not being all in the third person), are joined by *ou*, the verb is put in the plural.

Vous ou moi nous partirons demain.	*You or I will go to-morrow.*
Votre sœur ou vous vous irez à l'église.	*Your sister or you will go to church.*
Vous ou lui vous avez pu seuls commettre cette action.	*You or he alone have probably committed this act.*

4. When two nouns are joined by *ni* repeated, or when *ni l'un ni l'autre* is used as nominative to a verb, the verb is put in the plural, if the two nouns, or the two persons represented by *ni l'un ni l'autre*, perform or may perform the action together.

Ni l'un ni l'autre ne liront.	*Neither the one nor the other will read.*

5. When, however, only one at a time can perform the action, the verb is put in the singular.

Ni l'un ni l'autre ne sera nommé préfet de ce département.	*Neither the one nor the other will be appointed prefect of that department.*

Résumé of Examples.

Ni l'un ni l'autre n'ont trouvé le vin bon.	*Neither the one nor the other found the wine good.*
L'un et l'autre ont trouvé le dîner mauvais.	*Both found the dinner bad.*
Comment se trouvent messieurs vos frères?	*How do your brothers find themselves?*
Ni l'un ni l'autre ne se trouvent bien.	*Neither find themselves well.*
L'un et l'autre se trouvèrent au rendezvous.	*They both found themselves at the rendezvous.*
Ni l'un ni l'autre ne sera élu président.	*Neither will be elected president.*
L'un ou l'autre y trouvera à redire.	*One or the other will find fault with it.*
Lui ou vous vous avez trouvé quelque chose à redire à notre conduite.	*He or you have found something to blame in our conduct.*
Ni lui ni moi nous n'avons trouvé à redire à la conduite de vos enfants.	*Neither he nor I have found any fault with your children's conduct.*

Exercise 165.

Auteur, m. *author;*
Devoir, m. *duty;*
Écriture, f. *writing.*
Éli-re, 4. ir. *to elect;*
Expos-er, 1. *to expose;*
Intêret, m. *interest;*
Plutôt, *rather;*
Rempl-ir, 2. *to fulfil;*
Rôti, m. *roast meat;*
Secrétaire, m. *secretary;*
Trouv-er, 1. *to find, to like, to fancy;*
Se trouv-er, 1. ref. *to find one's self; to be present.*
Veiller, 1. *to watch;*
Vie, f. *life.*

1. Remplissez-vous bien votre devoir? 2. Nous ne le remplissons ni l'un ni l'autre. 3. Cherchent-ils l'un et l'autre à s'exposer? 4. Ni l'un ni l'autre ne cherchent à exposer leur vie (La Bruyère). 5. M. votre père et M^me^. votre mère, se trouvent-ils mieux aujourd'hui? 6. Ni l'un ni l'autre ne se trouvent mieux. 7. Avez-vous trouvé à redire à mon écriture ou à celle de mon secrétaire? 8. Je n'ai trouvé à redire ni à l'une ni à l'autre. 9. Cet auteur ne trouve-t-il pas à redire à tout? 10. Il trouve à redire à tous les livres. 11. Y trouvez-vous quelque chose à redire? 12. Ni lui ni moi nous n'y trouvons rien à redire. 13. Lui ou moi, nous veillerons à vos intêrets. 14. Ni lui ni moi nous ne cesserons de veiller à la conduite de votre fils. 15. Nous y veillerons plutôt que d'y trouver à redire. 16. Lui et moi nous nous trouvâmes ensemble au rendezvous. 17. Vous y trouverez-vous l'un ou l'autre? 18. Nous nous y trouverons l'un ou l'autre. 19. L'un ou l'autre sera-t-il élu président? 20. Ni l'un ni l'autre ne sera élu. 21. Comment trouvez-vous ce rôti? 22. Je le trouve excellent. 23. Je trouve ce livre bon. 24. Je ne le trouve pas bon. 25. Je trouve cela bien fait.

Exercise 166.

1. How do you like that book? 2. Neither my sister nor I like it. 3. Did your brothers find the dinner good? 4. Both found it

very good. 5. Did the professor find fault with your conduct? 6. He did not find fault with it. 7. Neither he nor my father find fault with my conduct. 8. Do they both watch over your conduct? 9. They both watch over my conduct, and over my interests. 10. Have you both fulfilled your duty? 11. We have fulfilled it. 12. Have you not both criticised my writing? 13. Neither has criticised it. 14. Do not your two sisters find themselves better to-day? 15. One finds herself better. 16. The other does not find herself so well. 17. Do not those ladies find fault with every thing? 18. They find fault with nothing. 19. Will either be elected prefect of the Department? 20. Neither will be elected. 21. How do you like this bread? 22. I find it very good. 23. Did your two friends arrive in time at the appointed place? 24. Neither was there in (*à*) time. 25. Do you find fault with that (*cela*)? 26. I do not find fault with it (*y*). 27. Will you both expose yourselves to this danger? 28. We will not expose ourselves to it. 29. Do you find fault with my secretary's conduct? 30. I do not find fault with it. 31. Do you find fault with his writing? 32. I find fault with it, for it is very bad. 33. Will you not watch over my interests? 34. My brother and I will watch over them. 35. We will not cease to watch over your interests.

LEÇON LXXXV. LESSON LXXXV.

AGREEMENT OF THE VERB WITH THE SUBJECT, CONTINUED.

1. A verb, having as its subject a general collective noun, [§ 3, (6.)] preceded by the article, agrees with the noun [§ 115, (1)].

La foule des pauvres est grande. *The crowd of the poor is great.*

2. A verb preceded by a partitive collective [§ 3, (6.)] takes the number of the noun following the collective, unless attention be particularly directed to the collective itself [§ 115, (2)].

Une foule de pauvres reçoivent des secours. *A crowd of poor people receive assistance.*

3. The words, la plupart, *most;* un nombre, *a number*, &c., and the adverbs of quantity, *peu, assez, beaucoup, plus, moins, trop, tant, combien*, belong to this class.

4. *Rester* is often used unipersonally in the sense of *to have left.* The adverbial expression *de reste* is often used in the same manner as the English word *left.*

Il me reste deux francs.	*I have two francs left*—or literally *There remains to me two francs.*
Nous avons cinquante écus de reste.	*We have fifty crowns left.*

5. Devenir (2. ir.) *to become*, with *être* as an auxiliary, corresponds in signification to the English *to become*, followed by *of*. It is also Englished by *to become*, or simply *to turn*.

Qu'est devenu votre frère?	*What has become of your brother?*
Il est en France, et est devenu avocat.	*He is in France and has turned lawyer.*

Résumé of Examples.

La plupart de mes heures sont consacrées au travail.	*Most of my hours are devoted to labor.*
La foule des humains est vouée au malheur.	*The mass of mankind is devoted to misfortune.*
La plus grande partie des voyageurs le disent, et le répètent.	*The greatest number of travellers say it, and repeat it.*
Ne vous reste-t-il que cela?	*Have you only that left?*
Voilà tout ce qu'il me reste.	*That is all that I have left.*
Je ne sais ce qu'ils sont devenus.	*I do not know what has become of them.*
Je ne sais ce que vous deviendrez.	*I do not know what will become of you.*

Exercise 167.

S'appliqu-er, 1. ref. *to apply;*
Apprenti, m. *apprentice;*
Aveugle, *blind;*
Bagatelle, f. *trifle;*
Boiteux, se, *lame;*
Chemin, m. *way, road;*
Désol-er, 1. *to desolate;*
Égar-er, 1. *to mislay;*
Emplettes, f. p. *purchases;*
État, m. *trade;*
Habile, *skilful;*
Maigre, *thin, lean;*
Naissance, f. *birth;*
Parent, m. *relation;*
Rue, f. *street;*
Savant, e, *learned.*

1. La plupart de vos parents ne sont-ils pas venus vous voir? 2. Beaucoup sont venus. 3. Que sont devenus les autres? 4. Je ne saurais vous dire ce qu'ils sont devenus. 5. Que deviendra ce jeune homme, s'il ne s'applique pas à l'étude? 6. Je ne sais pas ce qu'il deviendra. 7. Je sais qu'il ne deviendra jamais savant. 8. Combien de francs avez-vous de reste? 9. Il ne me reste qu'un franc. 10. Combien vous restera-t-il, quand vous aurez fait vos emplettes? 11. Il ne me restera qu'une bagatelle. 12. Cet apprenti est-il devenu habile dans son état? 13. Il y est devenu habile. 14. Ce monsieur est-il aveugle de naissance, ou l'est-il devenu? 15. Il l'est devenu. 16. Savez-vous ce que sont devenus ces jeunes gens? 17. Ils sont devenus médecins. 18. Ne savez-vous pas ce que sont devenus mes livres? 19. Ils sont égarés. 20. Ne deviendrez-vous pas boiteux, si vous marchez tant? 21. Je deviendrai boiteux et maigre. 22. La foule ne s'est-elle pas égarée dans ce bois? 23. La foule s'y est

égarée, et n'a pu retrouver son chemin. 24. Une nuée de barbares désolèrent le pays. (ACAD.) 25. Une foule de citoyens ruinés, remplissaient les rues de Stockholm. (VOLTAIRE.)

EXERCISE 168.

1. Have not most of your friends become rich? 2. Most of them have become poor. 3. Has not that young lady become learned? 4. I think that she will never become learned. 5. Is not the American army (*armée*) very small? 6. The American army is small, but most of the American soldiers are very brave (*braves*). 7. Can you tell me what has become of that gentleman? 8. I cannot tell you what has become of him. 9. Is your brother blind by birth (was your brother born blind)? 10. No, sir; he has become so. 11. Were you born lame? 12. No, sir; I became so three years ago (*il y a*). 13. Are not most of your hours devoted to play (*jeu*, m.)? 14. No, sir; they are devoted to study. 15. How much of your money have you left? 16. I have only twenty-five francs left. 17. Do you know how much I have left? 18. You have only a trifle left. 19. How much shall you have left to-morrow? 20. I shall only have six francs left. 21. I shall only have two francs left, when I have made my purchases. 22. What has become of your grammar? 23. I have mislaid it. 24. Do you know what has become of my hat? 25. You have left (*laissé*) it upon the table. 26. Will not that gentleman become blind? 27. He will not become blind, but lame. 28. Has your son become skilful in his trade? 29. He has not become skilful in it. 30. What has become of him? 31. He has lost his way in the wood. 32. Did the crowd lose its way? 33. Most of the soldiers lost their way. 34. A cloud of locusts (*sauterelles*) desolated our country.

LEÇON LXXXVI. LESSON LXXXVI.

REPETITION OF THE ARTICLE, POSSESSIVE ADJECTIVE.

1. The article, the demonstrative and the possessive adjectives, must be repeated, as before said, before every noun or adjective used substantively, which they determine [§ 80, 93, 21].

2. The prepositions *à*, *de*, and *en*, are repeated before every word which they govern [§ 141].

3. The verb quitter, *to leave* (*to quit*), is said of persons and places, and also of things, in the sense of *to abandon, to give up.*

Vous avez quitté vos parents et vos amis.	*You have left your relations and friends.*
Nous avons quitté nos études.	*We have discontinued our studies.*

4. Laisser, *to leave, to let,* is generally said of things. It is, however, said of persons in the sense of *to suffer to remain.*

Vous avez laissé votre livre sur la table.	*You left your book upon the table.*

The examples below will illustrate the use of those two verbs.

Résumé of Examples.

N'avez-vous pas quitté votre maison?	*Have you not left your house?*
J'ai quitté mon pays et mes parents.	*I have left my country and relations.*
J'ai laissé ma bibliothèque en Europe.	*I left my library in Europe.*
Ne voulez-vous pas laisser votre fils ici?	*Will you not leave your son here?*
Je n'aime pas à le quitter.	*I do not like to quit him.*
J'ai laissé votre lettre à son domestique.	*I left your letter with his servant.*
Mon père m'a laissé cinquante mille francs.	*My father left me fifty thousand francs.*
Les avez-vous laissés tranquilles?	*Have you let them alone?*
Je leur ai laissé le champ libre.	*I have left them a free choice (free room).*
Ce malade a quitté le lit.	*That sick man has left his bed.*
Votre frère a quitté le barreau.	*Your brother has left the bar.*
Je vous laisserai ce chapeau à ce prix.	*I will let you have that hat at that price.*

Exercise 169

A bon compte, *cheap;*	Mauvais, e, *bad;*	Pension, f. *boarding-school;*
Carte, f. *card;*	Moins, *less;*	Portier, m. *porter;*
Épée, f. *sword, army* (figuratively).	Noyau, m. *fruit-stone;*	Prix, m. *price;*
Habitude, f. *habit;*	Pourquoi, *why;*	Robe, f. *gown;*
Juge, m. *judge;*	Pavie, m. *clingstone peach;*	Service, m. *service, army.*

1. Vos oncles, vos cousins, et vos neveux, ont-ils quitté le commerce? 2. Ils ont quitté le commerce, et sont devenus médecins. 3. Le capitaine G. n'a-t-il pas quitté le service? 4. Il a quitté la France, mais il n'a pas quitté le service. 5. Où avez-vous laissé votre fils? 6. Je l'ai laissé dans une pension. 7. Est-il trop jeune pour quitter ses études? 8. Il est trop jeune, il n'a que douze ans. 9. A qui avez-vous laissé votre carte de visite? 10. Je l'ai laissée chez le portier. 11. Pourquoi ne le laissez-vous pas parler? 12. Parce qu'il est temps que nous vous quittions. 13. Me permettez-vous de lui

communiquer cela? 14. Je vous laisse le champ libre à cet égard. 15. Ce jeune homme n'a-t-il pas quitté ses mauvaises habitudes? 16. Il les a quittées. 17. M. L. n'a-t-il pas quitté la robe pour l'épée? 18. Oui, monsieur; il n'est plus juge, il est capitaine. 19. Ces pêches quittent-elles facilement le noyau? 20. Non, monsieur; ce sont des pavies. 21. Je vous laisse cet habit pour cinquante francs. 22. A quel prix me le laisserez-vous? 23. Je vous le laisserai pour dix francs. 24. Je vous le laisse à bon compte, je ne saurais vous le laisser à moins.

Exercise 170.

1. The son, daughter, and cousin, have left Paris. 2. My father, mother, and sister, have left me here. 3. Do you like to leave your country? 4. I do not like to leave my friends and country. 5. My parents do not like to leave me here, I am too young. 6. Why does not your brother let his son speak [L. 97, 4.]? 7. Because he has nothing to say. 8. Have you let him alone? 9. I have let him alone. 10. Why do you not let me alone? 11. I will let them alone. 12. Has your friend left his bed? 13. He has not yet left his bed, he is yet very sick. 14. Has Captain G. left the army? 15. He has not left the army. 16. Has not that gentleman left the army for the bar? 17. He has not left the army. 18. My friend has left the bar. 19. At what price will you let me have this silk? 20. I will let you have it at two francs a yard. 21. Can you not let me have it for less? 22. I let you have it cheap. 23. Will you let me have that book for twenty francs? 24. I will let you have it for twenty-two. 25. I could not let you have it for less. 26. With whom (*à qui*) have you left my book? 27. I left it with your sister. 28. Why did you not leave it with my servant? 29. Because he had left your house. 30. Do you like to leave your friends? 31. I do not like to leave them. 32. Where have you left your book? 33. I left it at my father's. 34. Has that merchant given up commerce? (*le commerce*). 35. He has not given it up. 36. Those peaches do not part easily from the stone, they are clingstone peaches.

LEÇON LXXXVII. LESSON LXXXVII.

REPETITION OF NOMINATIVE PRONOUNS, ETC.

1. The nominative pronouns *je*, *tu*, *il*, *elle*, *nous*, *vous*, *ils*, *elles*, must be repeated, when the first verb of the sentence is negative, and the second affirmative, when the verbs are in different tenses,

and when the different propositions are connected by conjunctions other than *et, ou, ni, mais* [§ 99. 2.]

Il ne lit pas; il écrit.	*He does not read; he writes.*
Elle ne viendra pas; elle est partie.	*She will not come; she is gone.*

2. The pronouns of the third person are *often* omitted before the second verb in cases not coming within the above rule. The other nominative pronouns are also, *sometimes*, omitted. We should not, however, advise the student to omit the latter pronouns. It is always correct to repeat the nominative pronouns.

3. The student will bear in mind, that the objective pronouns must *always* be repeated.

4. Connaître à, answers to the English expression, *to know by.*

Je le connais à sa démarche.	*I know him by his walk (carriage).*

5. Connaître de nom, de visage, de vue, mean *to know by name, by sight.*

6. Se connaître à quelque chose, or en quelque chose, corresponds in signification to the English expression, *to be a judge of something.*

Vous vous connaissez en pierreries.	*You are a judge of precious stones.*

Résumé of Examples.

Je le connais, je l'aime, et je lui rends justice. GRESSET.	*I know him, love him, and do justice to him.*
Il s'écoute, il se plaît, il s'adonise, il s'aime. J. B. ROUSSEAU.	*He listens to himself, is pleased with himself, adorns himself, loves himself.*
A quoi connaissez-vous ce monsieur?	*By what do you know that gentleman?*
Je le connais à son habit noir.	*I know him by his black coat.*
Je le connais de vue.	*I know him by sight.*
J'ai reconnu ma mère à la voix.	*I recognized my mother by her voice.*
A quoi vous connaissez-vous?	*Of what are you a judge?*
Je me connais en marchandises.	*I am a judge of goods.*
Je ne m'y connais pas.	*I am not a judge of it (of them).*
Il ne s'y connaît point du tout.	*He is not at all a judge of it (of them).*
Il s'y connaît mieux que moi.	*He is a better judge of it (of them), than I.*
Je m'y connais aussi bien que lui.	*I am as good a judge of it (of them), as he.*

Exercise 171.

Artisan, m. *mechanic;*	Étoffe, f. *fabric, cloth of different kinds;*	Gracieux, se, *graceful;*
Blond, e, *light;*	Fabricant, m. *manufacturer;*	Grain, m. *grain;*
Bouclé, e, *curled;*	Forgeron, m. *blacksmith;*	Orfèvre, m. *goldsmith;*
Chevelure, f. *head of hair;*	Gestes, m. p. *gestures;*	Œuvre, f. *work;*
Cheveux, m. p. *hair;*		Poésie, f. *poetry;*
		Tout, *quite.*

1. Ne reconnaissez-vous point votre amie? 2. Je la reconnais à sa chevelure blonde. 3. A quoi reconnaissez-vous cette demoiselle? 4. Je la reconnais à sa démarche gracieuse. 5. N'auriez-vous point connu votre ami à la voix? 6. Je l'y aurais reconnu. 7. A l'œuvre on connaît l'artisan (LA FONTAINE). 8. Ne le reconnaîtrez-vous point à ces marques? 9. Je l'y reconnaîtrai. 10. Cet orfèvre ne se connaît-il point à cela? 11. Il ne s'y connaît point du tout. 12. Vous y connaissez-vous aussi bien que le forgeron? 13. Je m'y connais tout aussi bien que lui. 14. Ne vous connaissez-vous point en poésie? 15. Je ne m'y connais guère. 16. Le fabricant se connaît-il aussi bien en étoffes qu'en grain? 17. Il se connaît beaucoup mieux à celles-là qu'à celui-ci. 18. Ne connaissez-vous pas ce monsieur à ses gestes véhéments? 19. Je le connais à ses cheveux bouclés. 20. Ne vous êtes-vous pas fait connaître (*told your name*)? 21. Je me suis fait connaître. 22. Ne nous ferons-nous pas connaître? 23. Vous vous ferez connaître. 24. Il se feront connaître par leurs vertus (*they will make themselves known*).

EXERCISE 172.

1. Do you not know that man? 2. Yes, sir; I know him by his large (*grand*) hat. 3. By what do you recognize me? 4. I recognize you by your walk. 5. Do you recognize my friend by his gestures? 6. No, sir; I recognize him by his black coat. 7. Do you know him well? 8. I know him by sight, but I have never spoken to him. 9. Are you a judge of iron? 10. No, sir; the blacksmith is a judge of iron. 11. By what will you know your book? 12. I shall know it by those marks. 13. Have you not known your friend by her voice? 14. No, madam; I knew her by her light hair. 15. Have you told your name? 16. I have not told my name. 17. Did you know your sister's friend by her curled hair? 18. I knew her by it. 19. Is the merchant a good judge of cloth? 20. He is a better judge than I. 21. Is he a better judge of it than the manufacturer? 22. He is quite as good a judge as he. 23. Is not the goldsmith as good a judge of precious stones as you? 24. He is a better judge of them than I. 25. Of what are you a judge? 26. I am a judge of nothing. 27. Are not your sisters good judges of poetry? 28. They are not at all judges of it. 29. Do you not know that young lady by her dress (*robe*)? 30. I know her by her graceful carriage. 31. Have they made themselves known? 32. They have made themselves known by their merit (*mérite*). 33. Is not the workman known by his work? 34. The workman is known by his work. 35. He is a judge of it.

LEÇON LXXXVIII. LESSON LXXXVIII.

QUELQUE, QUEL QUE, TOUT, ETC.

1. Quelque, *whatsoever*, *however*, *some*, *any*, followed by a noun takes the form of the plural. It is invariable, when it is followed by an adjective or an adverb [§ 97, (1.) 2. 3].

Quelques livres que vous ayez.	*Whatever books you may ha*
Quelque bons qu'ils soient.	*However good they may be.*

2. *Quel que*, followed by a verb, is written as two words, the first (*quel*) agreeing in gender and number with the nominative of that verb [§ 97, (1.) 1.].

Quelles que soient vos vertus.	*Whatever your virtues may be.*

3. The above examples show that *quelque—que*, and *quel—que*, govern the subjunctive.

4. *Tout* meaning *entirely*, *quite*, *nothing*, *but*, though an adverb, varies through euphony, before a feminine word, commencing with a consonant or an *h* aspirate.

L'espérance, *toute* trompeuse qu'elle est, sert au moins à nous mener à la fin de la vie par un chemin agréable. (LA BRUYÈRE.)	*Hope, deceitful as it is, serves at least to conduct us to the termination of life by an agreeable road.*

5. The word *gré* signifying *consent*, *will*, *meaning*, &c., forms a number of idioms.

Je lui sais [savoir, 3. ir.] bon gré de cette action.	*I am thankful to him* (i. e. *owe him good-will*) *for that action.*
Il nous sait mauvais gré de cela.	*He is displeased with us for that.*

RÉSUMÉ OF EXAMPLES.

Ne le ferez-vous pas de bon gré?	*Will you not do it willingly?*
Il s'est marié contre le gré de ses parents.	*He married against the will of his parents.*
Sa chevelure vole au gré du vent.	*His hair flies at the will of the wind.*
Je sais mauvais gré à votre frère de vouloir se mêler de mes affaires.	*I am displeased at your brother for wishing to interfere with my affairs.*
Je lui en sais bon gré.	*I am thankful to him for it.*
J'espère que vous ne me saurez pas mauvais gré, si je ne vous écris pas.	*I hope that you will not be displeased with me, if I do not write to you.*
C'est, à mon gré, le meilleur enfant du monde.	*He is, to my thinking, the best child in the world.*

Exercise 173.

Bon gré, mal gré, *willing or not willing;*
Chambre, f. *room;*
Gard-er, 1. *to keep;*
Lit, m. *bed;*
Malgré, *in spite of;*
Men-er, 1. *to take, to lead;*
Nou-er, 1. *to tie, to fasten;*
Obliger, 1. *to oblige;*
Offre, f. *offer;*
Recommand-er, 1. *to recommend;*
Partir, 2. ir. *to leave;*
Quitt-er, 1. *to leave:*
Secret, m. *secret;*
Silence, m. *silence;*
Suite, f. *consequence;*
Voler, 1. *to fly.*

1. Savez-vous mauvais gré à votre oncle de ce qu'il a dit? 2. Je ne lui en sais aucun mauvais gré (Voltaire). 3. Ne me sauriez-vous pas bon gré, si je vous menais avec moi? 4. Je vous en saurais le meilleur gré du monde. 5. Ne leur savez-vous pas bon gré d'avoir gardé ce secret? 6. Je leur sais bon gré de l'avoir gardé. 7. Ne leur avez-vous pas recommandé de garder le silence? 8. Je leur ai recommandé de le garder. 9. Ce malade garde-t-il encore le lit? 10. Il ne garde plus le lit, mais il est encore obligé de garder la chambre. 11. Votre chevelure est-elle bien nouée? 12. Non, monsieur; elle vole au gré du vent. 13. Garderez-vous votre domestique? 14. Je le garderai, il fait tout à mon gré. 15. Quelques offres qu'on lui fasse, il ne veut pas me quitter? 16. Quelque bonnes que soient ces dames, elles ne sont pas à mon gré. 17. Quelles que soient les suites de cette affaire, je vous sais bon gré de vos intentions? 18. Toute belle qu'elle est, elle n'est pas à mon gré. 19. L'avez-vous fait malgré vous? 20. Non, monsieur; je l'ai fait de bon gré. 21. Bon gré, mal gré, il partira. 22. Me garderez-vous le secret? 23. Je vous le garderai. 24. Il change d'opinion au gré des événements.

Exercise 174.

1. Will he marry against his father's consent? 2. He will not marry against his parents' consent. 3. Why are you displeased with me? 4. I am not displeased with you. 5. Is your little girl's hair tied? 6. It is not tied; it waves (*flotte*) with the wind. 7. What do you think of my book? 8. It is, in my opinion, the best book that I have read [L. 74, 3, 4]. 9. Will you not be displeased with me, if I do not come to-day? 10. I shall not be displeased with you. 11. Will you not read that letter? 12. However well written it may be, I will not read it. 13. Are those ladies handsome? 14. However handsome and good they may be, they do not strike my fancy. 15. Are you displeased with my brother? 16. No, sir; I am thankful to him for his intentions, whatever may be the consequences of his conduct. 17. Will you keep this secret (for me)? 18. I will keep it willingly. 19. Does your sister keep her

bed willingly? 20. She does not keep her room willingly. 21. Willingly or not, she must keep her room, when she is sick. 22. Will you keep silent on this point? 23. I will willingly. 24. I am thankful to you for your good intentions. 25. Are you thankful to him for this (*de cela*)? 26. I am thankful to him for it. 27. Will the judge keep his servant? 28. He will keep him. 29. Does he do his work to his fancy? 30. He does it to his fancy. 31. Is your brother obliged to keep in the house? 32. He is obliged to keep his bed. 33. Has he not left his room? 34. He has not yet left his room; he is too sick to leave it. 35. I should be under the greatest obligations in the world to you, if you would do this.

LEÇON LXXXIX. LESSON LXXXIX.

SERVIR, S'IL VOUS PLAÎT, ETC.

1. Servir [2. ir.] is used in French in the sense of the English expression *to help to.*

Que vous servirai-je?	*To what shall I help you?*
Nous servirai-je de la soupe?	*Shall I help you to some soup?*
Vous n'avez pas servi monsieur.	*You have not helped that gentleman.*

2. Je vous remercie, *I thank you*, said in answer to an offer, is in French a refusal. This phrase is never employed like the English expression, *I thank you for* (*this* or *that*), to signify a request. The French make use of other forms:—Oserai-je vous prier de ... Oserai-je vous demander ... Je vous prie de ... Je vous prierai de ... Je vous demanderai ...

Je vous demanderai une aile de cette volaille, un morceau de ce rôti?	*I will thank you for a wing of that fowl, a slice of that roast meat.*

3. S'il vous plaît, corresponds to the English, *if you please.* The verb is used unipersonally in that sentence, and in the following.

Comme il vous plaira.	*As you please.*
Il ne me plaît pas d'y aller.	*It does not suit* or *please me to go there.*
Que vous plaît-il?	*What would you please to have?*

4. Au plaisir de vous revoir, au revoir, adieu, jusqu'au revoir, mean, *till I have the pleasure of seeing you again, till I see you again*, etc.

RÉSUMÉ OF EXAMPLES.

Qu'aurai-je le plaisir de vous servir?	*To what shall I have the pleasure of helping you?*
Je vous demanderai un morceau de ce jambon.	*I will thank you*, or *I will trouble you for a slice of that ham.*

Vous offrirai-je un morceau de ce rôti?	*Shall I offer you a slice of this roast meat?*
Je vous remercie, monsieur; je prendrai de préférence une aile de cette volaille.	*I thank you, sir; I would prefer a wing of that fowl.*
N'a-t-on pas encore servi?	*Is not the dinner yet on the table?*
Je vous souhaite le bon soir.	*I wish you good evening.*
J'ai souhaité le bonjour à madame.	*I have wished the lady a good morning.*
Ayez la complaisance de vous asseoir.	*Have the goodness to sit down.*
Messieurs, ayez la complaisance d'entrer.	*Gentlemen, have the kindness to walk in.*

Exercise 175.

Adieu, m. *adieu;*	Grâce, f. *thanks;*	Pri-er, 1. *to beg, to desire;*
Aile, f. *wing;*	Jambon, m. *ham;*	Remercîment, m. *thanks;*
Attend-re, 4. *to wait for;*	Légume, m. *vegetable;*	Rôti, m. *roast meat;*
Bouilli, m. *boiled meat, beef;*	Mett-re, (se) ir. ref. 4. *to sit down;*	Soupe, f. *soup;*
Congé, m. *leave;*	Ortolan, m. *ortolan;*	Suffisamment, adv. *sufficiently;*
Cotelette, f. *cutlet;*	Perdrix, f. *partridge;*	Tranche, f. *slice.*

1. Monsieur, qu'aurai-je le plaisir de vous servir? 2. Je vous demanderai un morceau de ce jambon. 3. Je vous prie de servir ces messieurs. 4. Oserai-je vous demander un morceau de ce bouilli? 5. Vous offrirai-je un morceau de ce rôti? 6. Je vous rends grace, monsieur; j'en ai suffisamment. 7. Mademoiselle, aurai-je l'honneur de vous servir une aile de cette perdrix? 8. Je vous remercie, monsieur; je prendrai de préférence un de ces ortolans. 9. Monsieur, vous enverrai-je de la soupe? 10. Madame, je vous prie de servir mademoiselle. 11. Je vous en demanderai après. 12. Jean, présentez cette cotelette à monsieur. 13. Ces légumes sont délicieux. 14. Monsieur, je suis bien aise que vous les trouviez bons. 15. Monsieur, ne voulez-vous pas vous asseoir? 16. Mille remercîments, monsieur; mon père m'attend à la maison. 17. Ne leur avez-vous pas souhaité le bonjour? 18. Je leur ai souhaité le bon soir. 19. Leur avez-vous dit adieu? 20. J'ai dit adieu à mon frère. 21. J'ai pris congé d'eux. 22. Les avez-vous priés d'entrer? 23. Je les en ai priés. 24. Messieurs, on a servi. 25. Ayez la complaisance de vous mettre ici.

Exercise 176.

1. Madam, to what shall I help you? 2. I will trouble you for a slice of that ham. 3. Shall I send you a wing of this fowl? 4. No, sir; I thank you. 5. I thank you, sir (*s'il vous plaît, monsieur*). 6. Sir, shall I have the pleasure of helping you to a slice of this ham?

7. I thank you, sir; I would prefer a slice of the partridge. 8. Shall I offer you a little of this boiled meat? 9. I thank you, sir; I have some. 10. Madam, shall I send you a little of this soup? 11. Much obliged to you, sir [*see* No. 16, *in the above exercise*]. 12. Sir, will you have the goodness to help this young lady? 13. With much pleasure, sir. 14. John, take this soup to the gentleman. 15. These ortolans are delicious. 16. I am very glad that you like them. 17. Is the dinner on the table? 18. No, sir; it is not yet on the table. 19. It is too early. 20. Does it please you to go there? 21. It does not please me to go to his house; but I will go if you wish it. 22. Shall I go with you? 23. As you please. 24. Will not your friend sit down? 25. He is much obliged to you; he has not time to-day. 26. Have you wished your friend a good morning? 27. I wished him a good evening. 28. Have you not bid him farewell? 29. I have bid him farewell. 30. Have the goodness to sit down here. 31. I have taken leave of them. 32. I have taken leave of all my friends. 33. Madam, have the goodness to walk in. 34. We are much obliged to you, sir. 35. Our father is waiting for us at home.

LEÇON XC. LESSON XC.

TENIR, FAIRE TENIR, ETC.

1. The verb tenir [2. ir.], *to hold*, often corresponds in signification to the English verb *to keep;* tenir un hôtel, *to keep a hotel;* tenir table ouverte, *to keep open table;* tenir sa chambre propre, *to keep one's room clean;* tenir la porte, les fenêtres ouvertes, *to keep the door, the windows open;* tenir les yeux ouverts, fermés, *to keep one's eyes opened, shut;* tenir la tête droite, *to keep one's head upright;* tenir sa parole, *to keep one's word;* tenir compagnie à quelqu'un, *to stay* or *remain with some* or *any one.*

2. Tenir un langage singulier, tenir des propos.... des discours.... would be rendered in English by *to make use of singular language, to use peculiar expressions, to advance things,* &c.

Ce jeune homme tient des propos insensés. — *That young man says foolish things.*

3. *Tenir* is also used in the sense of *being attached to, to be tenacious of.*

Je tiens à mon argent, à la vie. — *I value* (i. e. *hold to*) *my money, my life.*

Je tiens à mon opinion. — *I am tenacious of my opinion.*

4. *Tenir* is also used of a *color* which is *fast* or *not.*

Cette couleur tiendra ou ne tiendra pas.	*This color is fast* (i. e. *holds*) *or not.*

5. *Faire tenir* is used in the sense of *to forward, to send.*

Faites-lui tenir cet argent, cette lettre.	*Forward him this money, this letter.*

6. *Se tenir* or *s'en tenir* conjugated reflectively, may often be rendered by *to remain, to abide by, to be satisfied with.*

Il se tient debout, assis.	*He remains standing, seated.*
Je m'en tiens à votre opinion.	*I am satisfied with your opinion.*

Résumé of Examples.

M. L. tient un hôtel superbe.	*Mr. L keeps a superb hotel.*
Votre petite fille ne tient pas sa chambre bien propre.	*Your little girl does not keep her room very clean.*
Pourquoi tenez-vous les portes ouvertes?	*Why do you keep the doors open?*
Il fait si chaud que nous tenons toutes les fenêtres ouvertes.	*It is so warm that we keep all the windows open.*
Tenez la tête droite, et les yeux ouverts.	*Keep your head upright, and your eyes open.*
Pourquoi ne tenez-vous pas votre parole?	*Why do you not keep your word?*
Tenez compagnie à votre sœur; elle est malade.	*Stay with your sister; she is sick.*
Votre ami tient des propos bien singuliers.	*Your friend makes use of very singular expressions.*
Vous tenez des discours bien légers.	*You use very light language.*
La couleur de votre drap tiendra-t-elle?	*Is the color of your cloth fast?*
Lui avez-vous fait tenir ce livre?	*Have you sent him that book?*
A quoi vous en tiendrez-vous?	*What will be your decision?*
Je m'en tiendrai à ce que j'ai dit.	*I shall abide by what I have said.*
Pourquoi se tient-il toujours debout?	*Why does he always remain standing?*
L'incrédule s'en tiendra-t-il au présent, qui doit finir demain?	*Will the unbeliever be satisfied with the present, which is to end to-morrow?*

MASSILLON.

Exercise 177.

Cocher, m. *coachman;*	Gens, pl. *people;*	Préfer-er, 1. *to prefer;*
Debout, *standing;*	Indisposé, e, *indisposed;*	Recommand-er, 1. *to recommend;*
Défend-re, 4. *to forbid;*	Insolent, e, *insolent;*	Regard-er, 1. *to look;*
De près, *closely;*	Lieu, m. *place;*	Rue, *street;*
En dehors, *out, outside;*	Lyon, *Lyons;*	Sav-oir, 3, ir. *to know;*
S'enrhumer, 1. ref. *to get a cold;*	Malade, *sick;*	Vie, f. *life.*
	Parfaitement, *perfectly;*	

1. Quel hôtel votre frère tient-il? 2. Il tient l'hôtel de l'Europe, rue de Lyon. 3. Votre petit garçon se tient-il bien propre? 4. Il se tient bien propre. 5. A quoi vous en tiendrez-vous? 6. Je m'en tiendrai à ce que je vous ai dit. 7. Ne savez-vous pas à quoi vous en tenir? 8. Je sais parfaitement à quoi m'en tenir. 9. Pourquoi vous tenez-vous debout? 10. Parce que nous n'avons pas le temps de nous asseoir. 11. N'avez-vous point défendu à ces jeunes gens de tenir de tels propos? 12. Je le leur ai défendu. 13. Votre cocher n'a-t-il pas tenu un langage bien insolent? 14. N'avez-vous pas peur de vous enrhumer, en tenant les portes ouvertes? 15. Nous préférerions les tenir fermées. 16. Votre maître vous recommande-t-il de tenir la tête droite? 17. Il me recommande de tenir les pieds en dehors. 18. Pourquoi votre ami ne vous tient-il pas compagnie? 19. Sa sœur est indisposée; il est obligé de rester avec elle. 20. Votre oncle ne vous a-t-il pas tenu lieu de père? 21. Il m'a tenu lieu de père et de mère. 22. Regarderez-vous de plus près à cette affaire? 23. Non, monsieur; je m'en tiendrai à ce que j'en sais. 24. Ce médecin ne tient-il pas à son opinion? 25. Il y tient plus qu'il ne tient à la vie de ses malades.

Exercise 178.

1. Does that gentleman keep open table? 2. He keeps a hotel in Paris. 3. Why do you keep the windows open? 4. We keep them open, because we are too warm. 5. Has not your friend kept his word? 6. He has kept his word; he always keeps his word. 7. Have you not told your scholar to keep his head upright? 8. I have told him to keep his head upright, and his eyes open. 9. Why do you not stay with your sister? 10. Because I have promised to go to my cousin's this morning. 11. Have you forbidden your little boy to make use of these expressions? 12. I have forbidden him. 13. Does he make use of insolent language? 14. He does not. 15. What will be your decision? 16. I will abide by what I told your father. 17. Have you forwarded that money to your friend? 18. I have not yet forwarded it to him. 19. Will you forward it to him to-morrow? 20. I will forward it to him, if I have an opportunity. 21. Why do you not keep standing? 22. Because I am weary. 23. Do you think that the color of your coat is fast? 24. I think that it is fast; it (*elle*) appears very good. 25. Will you not look closely into your brother's affairs? 26. I shall not look closely into them. 27. I will be satisfied with your opinion. 28. Are you not too tenacious of your opinion? 29. I am not too tenacious of

it. 30. Does not your physician adhere too tenaciously to his opinion? 31. He adheres to it. 32. Does that lady hold your mother's place? 33. She is a mother to me. 34. Our cousin is a father to us. 35. That physician does not value the life of his patient.

LEÇON XCI. LESSON XCI.

IDIOMATIC USE OF ÊTRE.

1. The verb *être* forms a great many idioms besides those which we have already mentioned: être en retard, *to be late, to tarry;* être en état, à même de, *to be able to;* être en peine de, *to be uneasy about;* être en vie, *to be alive, to live;* être en chemin pour, *to be on the way to;* être au fait, au courant de, *to be familiar with;* être à la veille de, *to be on the eve of;* être de trop, *to be unnecessary, to be in the way;* être bien avec, *to be on good terms with;* être brouillé avec, *to be on bad terms with;* être aux prises avec, *to be in open rupture, quarrel or battle with;* être d'avis, *to be of opinion*, etc.

2. Être, as already said [L. 47, 5.], is used in the sense of appartenir, *to belong.* It is also employed in the sense of *to behoove, to become.* In the latter sense, it takes generally the preposition *de* before another verb.

Est-ce à vous *de* lui faire des reproches?	*Does it become you to cast (make) reproaches upon him?*
C'est à vous *à* parler.	*It is your turn to speak.*

3. Y être is often used for *to be at home, to be in.*

Votre père y est-il?	*Is your father at home?*

RÉSUMÉ OF EXAMPLES.

Ne sommes-nous pas de trop ici?	*Are we not in the way here?*
Nous ne sommes pas bien avec nos parents.	*We are not on good terms with our relations.*
Nous sommes au courant de tout cela.	*We are familiar with all that.*
Je suis à même de satisfaire à sa demande.	*I am able to satisfy his demand.*
Nous sommes brouillés.	*We are not on good terms; we are at variance.*
Ma sœur est à la veille de se marier.	*My sister is on the eve of her marriage.*
Nous sommes d'avis que vous alliez lui faire des excuses.	*It is our opinion that you should go and apologize to him.*
Ce n'est pas à lui de nous reprocher notre bonté.	*It does not become him to reproach us with our kindness.*

A qui est-ce à lire?	*Whose turn is it to read?*
C'est à ma sœur à lire ce matin.	*It is my sister's turn to read this morning.*
Cette maison est à lui et à moi.	*That house is his and mine.*
Elle est à moi, elle est à lui.	*It is mine, it is his.*
Ces souliers ne sont pas à nous.	*These shoes are not ours.*
Ils appartiennent à notre frère.	*They belong to our brother.*
Ils lui appartiennent.	*They belong to him.*
Monsieur[1] n'y est pas.	*The gentleman is not at home.*
Madame y est.	*The lady is in.*

Exercise 179.

Achet-er, 1. *to buy;*	S'embarqu-er, 1. ref. *to embark;*	Part-ir, 2. ir. *to start, set out;*
Apparten-ir, 2. ir. *to belong;*	Gravure, f. *engraving;*	Propriétaire, m. *landlord; owner of the house.*
Arriv-er, 1. *to arrive;*	Hôte, m. *host;*	Punir, 2. *to punish;*
Correspondant, *correspondent;*	Libraire, m. *bookseller;*	Veille, f. *eve, day before;*
Craind-re, 4. ir. *to fear;*	Mois, m. *month;*	Vie, f. *life.*
Dev-oir, 3. *to owe, to be obliged;*	Montre, f. *watch;*	
	Mort, *dead; from* mourir, *to die;*	

1. Y a-t-il longtemps que vous êtes brouillés? 2. Il y a plus d'un mois que je suis brouillé avec lui. 3. Votre ami est-il encore en vie? 4. Non, monsieur; il y a dix ans qu'il est mort. 5. Votre correspondant est-il en chemin pour Paris? 6. Je crois qu'il doit être arrivé. 7. Ce jeune homme n'est-il pas en retard? 8. Oui, monsieur; il ne vient jamais à temps. 9. Ces gravures sont-elles à vous, ou à votre libraire? 10. Elles sont à moi; je viens de les acheter. 11. Ne craignez-vous pas d'être de trop ici? 12. Nous sommes trop bien avec notre hôte pour craindre cela. 13. A qui est-ce à aller chercher les livres? 14. C'est à moi à les aller chercher. 15. Est-ce à vous de le punir, quand il le mérite? 16. C'est à moi de le punir, car je lui tiens lieu de père. 17. Ces maisons n'appartiennent-elles pas à notre propriétaire? 18. Elles ne lui appartiennent pas. 19. Elles sont à notre correspondant. 20. A qui sont ces lettres? 21. Elles ne sont point à moi, elles sont à ma cousine. 22. Cette montre est à lui. 23. N'êtes-vous point à la veille de partir pour Londres? 24. Nous sommes à la veille de nous embarquer pour Cadiz. 25. Il y a longtemps que nous sommes aux prises.

Exercise 180.

1. Are you able to pay him? 2. I am not able to pay him; I have not received my money. 3. Are you on good terms with your

[1] *Monsieur, madame,* not followed by a name, are generally understood to mean the master and mistress of the house, the heads of the family.

bookseller? 4. I am not on good terms with him. 5. I am on bad terms with him. 6. How long have you been on bad terms with him? 7. It is more than a month. 8. Are you not able to satisfy my friend's demand? 9. I am able to satisfy it (*d'y satisfaire*). 10. Are you on your way to Naples? 11. No, sir; I am on my way to Rome. 12. Is not your physician on the eve of starting for Montpellier? 13. He is on the eve of starting for Paris. 14. Am I in the way here? 15. No, sir; you are not in the way. 16. Whose turn is it to speak? 17. It is my turn to speak and to read. 18. Is it my place (*à moi*) to make apologies to him? 19. It is your brother's place to apologize to him. 20. Does it become you to punish that child? 21. It behooves me to punish him. 22. Do you hold the place of a father towards him? 23. I hold the place of a father towards him. 24. Is that coat yours? 25. No, sir; it is not mine; it is my brother's. 26. Have you broken openly with him? 27. We have been quarrelling two months. 28. Is not that large house yours? 29. No, sir; it is not mine; it is my sister's. 30. Does it become your brother to reproach him with his kindness? 31. It does not become him to do it. 32. Whose turn is it to go and fetch the books? 33. It is my place to go and fetch them. 34. Is the gentleman in? 35. No, sir; the gentleman is not in; but the lady (of the house) is in.

LEÇON XCII. LESSON XCII.

AVANCER, RETARDER, ETC.

1. Avancer, retarder, correspond to the English verbs *to gain, to lose, to put forward, to put back*, in speaking of a watch or clock, etc. The preposition *de* is placed before the word expressing the variation.

Ma montre retarde d'une demi-heure.	*My watch is half an hour too slow.*
La mienne avance d'un quart d'heure.	*Mine is a quarter of an hour too fast.*
J'ai avancé cette horloge d'une demi-heure.	*I set that clock half an hour forward.*
Retardez votre montre de cinq minutes.	*Put your watch five minutes back.*

2. Mettre [4. ir.] à l'heure, means *to set right, to put right, to set.*

Mettez cette montre à l'heure. *Set that watch right.*

3. S'accorder, *to agree*, is said also of clocks, watches, etc.

Résumé of Examples.

Votre montre va-t-elle bien?	*Does your watch go well?*
Elle retarde d'une demi-heure par jour.	*It loses half an hour a day.*
Elle avance d'un quart d'heure par semaine.	*It gains a quarter of an hour a week.*
De combien avance-t-elle?	*How much does it gain?*
Je viens de mettre ma montre à l'heure.	*I have just set my watch right.*
Si votre montre retarde, pourquoi ne l'avancez-vous pas?	*If your watch loses, why do you not set it forward?*
Ma pendule avance, je viens de la retarder.	*My clock gains, I have just set it back.*
Quelle heure est-il à votre montre?	*What o'clock is it by your watch?*
Mon horloge sonne les heures et les demies.	*My clock strikes the hour and the half hour.*
J'ai oublié de la monter (*or* remonter).	*I have forgotten to wind it up.*
Votre montre est dérangée.	*Your watch is out of order.*
Il faudra la faire nettoyer.	*It will be necessary to have it cleaned.*
La sonnerie en est dérangée.	*The striking part is out of order.*
Votre pendule et ma montre ne s'accordent pas.	*Your clock and my watch do not agree.*
Les pendules à ressort vont mieux que les pendules à poids.	*Spring clocks go better than weight clocks.*
L'horloge a sonné deux heures.	*The clock has struck two.*

Exercise 181.

Aiguille, f. *hand;*
S'arrêt-er, 1. ref. *to stop;*
Balancier, m. *pendulum;*
Boîte, f. *watch-case;*
Cadran, m. *face, dial*
Cass-er, 1. *to break;*
Double, *double;*
Droit, e, *straight;*
Félé, e, *cracked;*
Juste, *right, correct;*
Matin, m. *morning;*
Perfection, f. *perfection;*
Plat, e, *flat, thin;*
Régl-er, 1. *to regulate;*
Répétition, (montre à) f. *repeater;*
Ressort, (grand) m. *mainspring;*
Secondes, (montre à) *watch with a second hand;*
Timbre, m. *bell of a clock;*
Vite, *quick, quickly.*

1. N'avez-vous pas une montre à répétition? 2. J'ai une montre d'or, à double boîte. 3. Va-t-elle mieux que la mienne? 4. Elle ne va pas bien, elle retarde d'une heure par jour. 5. Est-ce une montre à secondes? 6. C'est une montre à secondes et à cadran d'or. 7. Votre horloge ne sonne-t-elle pas? 8. Elle ne sonne plus, le timbre en est cassé. 9. Pourquoi ces pendules ne s'accordent-elles pas? 10. Parce que l'une avance et l'autre retarde. 11. N'avez-vous point cassé le grand ressort de votre montre? 12. Je l'ai cassé en la remontant. 13. Votre pendule est elle juste? 14. Oui, monsieur; elle est juste, je viens de la faire régler. 15. La sonnerie de cette pendule est-elle dérangée 16. La sonnerie en est dérangée, et le

timbre en est fêlé. 17. La petite aiguille de ma montre plate est cassée. 18. Le balancier de votre horloge n'est pas droit? 19. De combien votre pendule avance-t-elle? 20. Elle avance de cinq minutes par jour. 21. La perfection d'une pendule n'est pas d'aller vite, mais d'être réglée (DELILLE). 22. Votre montre s'arrête-t-elle souvent? 23. Elle s'arrête tous les matins. 24. Votre pendule s'est arrêtée.

EXERCISE 182.

1. Does your watch gain or lose? 2. It does not lose; it goes very well. 3. It loses twenty-five minutes a day. 4. Does your clock gain much? 5. It gains one hour a week. 6. How much does your son's gold watch lose? 7. It loses much; it loses one hour in (*en*) twenty-four (*heures*). 8. I have put it forward one hour. 9. I will put it back half an hour. 10. Does not your clock strike the half hour? 11. No, sir; it only strikes the hour. 12. Have you forgotten to wind up your repeater? 13. I have forgotten to wind it up, and it has stopped. 14. Is your silver watch out of order? 15. It is out of order, and it will be necessary to have it cleaned. 16. What o'clock is it by your watch? 17. It is three o'clock by my watch, but it gains. 18. How much does it gain a week? 19. It gains more than five minutes a day. 20. Is your watch right? 21. No, sir; it is not right; it is out of order. 22. Does your clock strike right? 23. It does not strike right; the striking part is out of order. 24. Have you broken the hands of your clock? 25. I have broken the hour hand and the dial. 26. Has the clock struck three? 27. It has struck twelve. 28. It has stopped. 29. Does it stop every morning? 30. It does not stop every morning; it stops every evening. 31. Your watch does not agree with mine. 32. Have you broken the main-spring of your brother's watch? 33. He has broken it in winding it up. 34. My brother's watch is right; he has had it cleaned and regulated.

LEÇON XCIII. LESSON XCIII.

SE DÉMETTRE, S'EMPARER, ETC.

1. Se démettre [4. ir.] le bras, le poignet, corresponds to the English expression *to dislocate one's arm, wrist, to put one's arm, wrist out of joint.* In this sense *se démettre* takes no preposition before its object.

Je me suis démis l'épaule.	***I have dislocated my shoulder.***

2. Se démettre, used in the sense of *to resign, to give up*, takes the preposition *de* before its object.

Il s'est démis de sa place.	*He has resigned his place.*

3. S'emparer, *to seize, to lay hold of*, takes *de* before its object.

Il s'est emparé de ce chapeau.	*He seized upon this hat.*

4. S'empêcher, *to prevent one's self, to forbear, to help*, takes *de* before another verb.

Je ne puis m'empêcher de rire.	*I cannot help laughing.*
Je ne puis m'en empêcher.	*I cannot help doing so.*

5. S'inquiéter answers to the English expression, *to be* or *become uneasy, to trouble one's self;* it takes *de* before its object, be this object noun, pronoun or verb.

Je ne m'inquiète pas de cela.	*I am not uneasy about that.*

6. Se comporter answers to the expressions *to behave, to deport one's self.*

7. S'attendre means *to await, to expect.* It takes *à* before its object.

Je ne m'attendais pas à cela.	*I did not expect that.*
Je ne m'y attendais pas.	*I did not expect it.*

Résumé of Examples.

Vous êtes-vous démis l'épaule?	*Have you dislocated your shoulder?*
Je me la suis démise [L. 45, 2. § 135].	*I dislocated it.*
Cette demoiselle s'est démis le poignet.	*That young lady has dislocated her wrist.*
Qui le lui a remis?	*Who set it for her?*
Le Dr. L. a remis l'épaule à ma sœur.	*Dr. L. set my sister's shoulder.*
Vous êtes-vous démis de votre place?	*Have you resigned your situation?*
Je m'en suis démis [§ 135, 7].	*I have resigned it.*
Nous ne pouvions nous empêcher de sourire, pendant ce récit.	*We could not help smiling, during that narration.*
Vous êtes-vous emparé de ce livre?	*Have you seized that book?*
Je m'en suis emparé.	*I laid hold of it.*
De quoi vous inquiétez-vous?	*Why do you trouble yourself?*
Je ne m'inquiète de rien.	*I trouble myself about nothing.*
Comment ce jeune homme se comporte-t-il?	*How does that young man behave?*
Il se comporte comme il faut.	*He behaves properly.*
Je ne m'attendais pas à une telle réponse.	*I did not expect such an answer.*
Je ne m'y attendais nullement.	*I did not expect it, by any means.*

Exercise 183.

A l'avenir, *in future*;
Bras, m. *arm*;
Cass-er, 1. *to break*;
Droit, e, *right*;
Durant, *during*;
Écritoire, f. *inkstand*;
Ennemi, m. *enemy*;
Gauche, *left*;
Mieux, *better*;
Monde (tout le), *every body*;
Obligé, *obliged*;
Pareil, le, *similar, such*;
Part, f. *part*;
Paysan, m. *peasant*;
Poignet, m. *wrist*;
Prusse, f. *Prussia*;
Séjour, m. *stay*;
Traitement, m. *treatment*;
Ville, f. *city*.

1. Ne vous étiez-vous pas démis le bras? 2. Je ne me l'étais pas démis; je me l'étais cassé. 3. Si vous alliez en Amérique, vous démettriez-vous de votre place? 4. Je serais obligé de m'en démettre? 5. Y a-t-il longtemps que votre cousin s'est démis de la sienne? 6. Il y a un mois qu'il s'en est démis. 7. L'ennemi s'est-il emparé de la ville? 8. Il s'en est emparé. 9. Votre fils se comportera-t-il mieux à l'avenir? 10. Il s'est très bien comporté durant son séjour en Prusse. 11. Vous attendiez-vous à un pareil traitement de sa part? 12. Je ne m'y attendais pas. 13. A quoi vous attendiez-vous? 14. Je m'attendais à être traité comme il faut. 15. Pourquoi vous êtes-vous moqué de lui? 16. Parce que je n'ai pu m'en empêcher. 17. Si vous laissiez votre écritoire ici, le paysan s'en emparerait-il? 18. Il s'en emparerait certainement. 19. Votre associé se comporte-t-il bien envers vous? 20. Il se comporte bien envers tout le monde. 21. Qui a remis le poignet à votre sœur? 22. Le Dr. G. le lui a remis. 23. M. votre père ne s'est-il pas démis le bras droit ce matin? 24. Il ne se l'est pas démis; il se l'est cassé ce matin à cinq heures.

Exercise 184.

1. Has not Dr. L. resigned his place? 2. He has not resigned it. 3. He would resign it, if he went to Germany. 4. Are you obliged to resign your place? 5. I am not obliged to resign it. 6. Has your cousin dislocated his arm? 7. He has not dislocated his arm, but his shoulder. 8. Who set it for him? 9. Doctor F. set it for him. 10. Has not your mother dislocated her wrist? 11. She has not dislocated her wrist; she has broken her arm. 12. Has the enemy seized the town? 13. The enemy has seized the town. 14. Will not some one lay hold of your hat, if you leave it here? 15. Some one will lay hold of it. 16. How has your son behaved this morning? 17. He behaved very well. 18. He always behaves properly. 19. Do you not trouble yourself uselessly (*inutilement*)? 20. I do not trouble myself at all (*du tout*). 21. Did you expect such treatment from (*de la part de*) your son? 22. I did not expect such treatment from him (*de sa part*). 23. Does that young lady behave

well towards her mother? 24. She behaves well towards every body. 25. Will you behave better in future? 26. We will behave well. 27. Have you broken your finger (*doigt*)? 28. I have broken my thumb (*pouce*). 29. Could you help going to sleep (*de dormir*)? 30. We could not help smiling. 31. My sisters could not help laughing. 32. Why are you uneasy? 33. Because my son does not behave well. 34. Did your father expect to be well treated? 35. He expected to be treated properly. 36. We did not expect such an answer.

LEÇON XCIV. LESSON XCIV.

N'IMPORTE, N'EST-CE PAS, ETC.

1. N'importe, an ellipsis of *il n'importe*, answers to the English expression *no matter, it does not matter, never mind.*

Donnez-moi un livre, n'importe lequel.	*Give me a book, no matter which.*

2. Qu'importe? answers to the English phrase *what matter? What does it matter?* When that expression is followed by a plural subject the verb *importer* is put in the plural.

Que nous importent leurs murmures?	*What do we care for their murmurs?*

3. N'est-ce pas? corresponds to the English expressions, *is it not? is he not, &c.? do they not?* following an assertion.

Il fait froid; n'est-ce pas?	*It is cold; is it not?*

4. N'est-ce pas? frequently precedes the assertion.

N'est-ce pas que votre frère est arrivé?	*Your brother is come; is he not?*

5. Regarder, *to look at*, is used in the sense of *to concern.*

Cela regarde votre frère.	*That concerns your brother.*

6. En vouloir à quelqu'un, à quelque chose, means *to have a design against* or *upon, a grudge against any one, to be angry with one on account of something.*

Il en veut à notre vie.	*He has a design against our life.*

RÉSUMÉ OF EXAMPLES.

Pourvu que vous veniez, n'importe par quel chemin.	*Provided you come, no matter which way.*
Pourvu qu'il le fasse, n'importe comment.	*Provided he does it, no matter how.*

Apportez-moi quelque chose, n'importe quoi.	*Bring me something, no matter what.*
J'en mourrai; n'importe	*I shall die through it; no matter.*
Il n'est pas satisfait; qu'importe?	*He is not satisfied with it; what matters it?*
Il refuse nos présents; qu'importe?	*He refuses our presents; what does it matter?*
Que nous importe cette affaire?	*What do we care for that affair?*
Que nous importe son arrivée?	*What is his arrival to us?*
Vous viendrez; n'est-ce pas?	*You will come; will you not?*
N'est-ce pas que vous viendrez?	
Est-ce que cela me regarde?	*Does that concern me? Is that anything to me?*
Cela ne regarde personne.	*That concerns nobody. That is nobody's business.*
Il en veut à nos biens.	*He has a design upon our property.*
Il en veut à nos amis.	*He has a grudge against our friends.*
Cela vous regarde-t-il?	*Is that your business?*

Exercise 185.

Accord-er, 1. *to grant;*	Effort, m. *effort;*	Pouv-oir, 3. ir. *to be able;*
Approuv-er, 1. *to approve;*	Hasard, m. *chance;*	Qualité, f. *quality;*
Auteur, m. *author;*	Loin, *far;*	Sang, m. *blood;*
Bien, *very;*	Se moqu-er, 1. ref. *to laugh at;*	Va, *from* aller, *to go,*
Condamn-er, 1. *to condemn;*	Murmure, m. *murmur;*	Velours, m. *velvet;*
Demande, f. *request;*	Peu, *little;*	Vers-er, 1. *to pour, shed;*
	Plainte, f. *complaint;*	Vil, e, *vile;*

1. Que vous apporterai-je de Londres? 2. Apportez-nous ce que vous pourrez, n'importe quoi. 3. Lui avez-vous dit d'apporter du velours? 4. Je lui ai dit d'en apporter, n'importe de quelle qualité. 5. Pourvu que quelqu'un vienne, n'importe qui. 6. Que m'importe qu'Arnaud m'approuve ou me condamne? (Boileau.) 7. Vous accorde-t-il votre demande? 8. Il refuse; qu'importe? 9. Est-il satisfait des efforts que vous avez faits? 10. Il n'en est pas satisfait; qu'importe? 11. Il n'a pas voulu nous recevoir; peu m'importe. 12. Qu'importent les plaintes et les murmures des auteurs, si le public s'en moque? (Féraud.) 13. Qu'importe qu'au hasard, un sang vil soit versé? (Racine.) 14. Cela vous regarde; n'est-ce pas? 15. Cela ne me regarde pas. 16. Cela ne regarde que moi. 17. Vous leur avez dit que ces affaires ne les regardaient pas; n'est-ce pas? 18. Vous m'en voulez; n'est-ce pas?—N'importe. 19. A qui en voulez-vous? 20. Nous n'en voulons à personne. 21. Nous ne vous en voulons pas. 22. Vous m'en voudrez; n'est ce pas? 23. En voulez-vous à la vie de votre ami? 24. Je n'en veux pas à sa vie. 25. Il m'en veut; qu'importe? 26. Va! César est bien loin d'en vouloir à sa vie? (Voltaire).

EXERCISE 186.

1. Which way will your brother come? 2. Provided he comes to-morrow, it does not matter which way. 3. Will he write to your brother? 4. He will not write to him; but it is no matter. 5. Will you not lend me a book? 6. Which book do you wish to have? 7. No matter which. 8. Shall I bring you some silk from Paris? 9. Bring me what you can; no matter what. 10. Does that concern your brother? 11. That does not concern him, but it concerns me. 12. Does he refuse to write to us? 13. He refuses to (*de*) write, but what does it matter? 14. Bring me a book, no matter which. 15. Your brother will come, will he not? 16. Has he been willing to receive your brother? 17. He has refused to receive him, but no matter. 18. He is pleased, is he not? 19. He is not pleased, but it is no matter. 20. Is that your business? 21. It is my business. 22. It is my brother's business. 23. I have told you that it is nobody's business. 24. Has that man a design against your father's life? 25. He has no design against his life, but he has a design upon his property. 26. Are you angry with us on that account? 27. I am not angry with you for this. 28. Have you a grudge against my friends? 29. I have no grudge against them. 30. That concerns you, does it not? 31. That concerns me. 32. Is that your business? 33. It is very warm this morning; is it not? 34. My sister will come this afternoon; will she not? 35. If she does not come, it does not matter. 36. What is her coming, to us?

LEÇON XCV. LESSON XCV.

MONDE, TOUT LE MONDE, GENS, ETC.

1. The word monde, *world*, is often used in French in a restricted sense. It has then the meaning of *people, company, retinue, servants*, etc. Tout le monde, is used for the English expression *everybody*.

Y avait-il beaucoup de monde à l'église?	*Were there many people at church?*
Se mettant à la tête de son monde, il ouvrit lui-même la porte. VOLTAIRE.	*Placing himself at the head of his people, he himself opened the door.*
Tout le monde le croit.	*Every body believes it.*

2. The word gens also means *people*, and is of the masculine gender; but, by a singular anomaly, the adjectives which precede *gens* are put in the feminine, while those which follow it must be in the masculine gender.

Ce sont les meilleures gens du monde.	*They are the best people in the world*
Ces gens sont fort dangereux.	*Those people are very dangerous.*

3. The words *tout, tel, quel, certain,* not preceding immediately the word *gens,* are put in the masculine, except when the word coming between is an adjective, having a different termination in the two genders.

Tous ces gens là étaient-ils chrétiens? PASCAL.	*Were all those people Christians?*
Tous ces gens là sont sottement ingénieux. J. J. ROUSSEAU.	*All those people are foolishly ingenious.*

4. The words *tout, tel, quel, certain,* are put in the feminine when they precede immediately the word *gens,* or are separated from it by an adjective having a different termination in the feminine.

Quelles gens êtes-vous? Quelles sont vos affaires? (RACINE.)	*What people are you? What is your business?*
Quelles bonnes et dignes gens!	*What good and worthy people!*

RÉSUMÉ.	EXAMPLES.
Après s'être fait craindre de tout le monde, il craignit tout le monde aussi. FLÉCHIER.	*After having inspired every body with fear, he feared every body.*
Il dit du mal de tout le monde.	*He slanders every body.*
Tout le monde le dit.	*Every body says so.*
Avez-vous amené beaucoup de monde?	*Have you brought many people?*
Le monde n'est pas encore arrivé.	*The company has not yet come.*
Il n'y avait pas grand monde.	*There were not many people there.*
Il y a du monde avec lui.	*There is some person with him.*
Il a congédié tout son monde.	*He has discharged all his servants (people).*
Ce capitaine a tout son monde.	*That captain has all his crew.*
Voilà de sottes gens.	*Those are foolish people.*
Il s'arrête chez les premières bonnes gens qu'il trouve. BOISTE.	*He stops with the first good people that he finds.*
Il y a à la ville, comme ailleurs, de fort sottes gens, des gens fades, oisifs, désoccupés. LA BRUYÈRE.	*There are in the city, as elsewhere, very silly people, tedious, idle, unemployed people.*
Quels braves gens!	*What worthy people!*
Quelles viles et méchantes gens!	*What vile and wicked people!*

EXERCISE 187.

S'accommoder, 1. ref. *to put up with, to agree with;*
Attend-re, 4. *to await, to expect;*
Bord (à), *on board;*
Campagne, f. *country;*
Démél-er, 1. *to settle, arrange;*
Dès que, *as soon as;*
Équipage, m. *crew;*
Éveill-er, 1. *to awake;*
Gens d'épée, *military men;*
Gens de lettres, *men of letters;*
Gens de robe, *lawyers;*
Patron, m. *patron saint;*
Perd-re, 4. *to lose;*
Rassembl-er, 1. *to bring together;*
Reven-ir, 2. ir. *to return;*
Salon, m. *drawing-room;*
Serv-ir, 2. ir. *to serve;*
Terre, f. *land, shore;*
Voyag-er, 1. [§ 49.] *to travel.*

1. Avez-vous rassemblé beaucoup de monde chez vous? 2. Il n'est venu que peu de monde. 3. A quelle heure servira-t-on le dîner aujourd'hui? 4. On le servira, dès que notre monde sera venu. 5. Le capitaine a-t-il tout son équipage à bord? 6. Non, monsieur; il a envoyé du monde à terre. 7. Vos gens se lèvent-ils de bonne heure? 8. Il faut que tous les jours, j'éveille tout mon monde (RACINE). 9. Les Moscovites perdirent trois fois plus de monde que les Suédois (VOLTAIRE). 10. Où est madame votre mère? 11. Elle est dans le salon, il y a du monde avec elle (*company*). 12. Tout le monde peut voyager comme moi (X. DE MAISTRE). 13. Ainsi va le monde. 14. Elle attend pour quitter le monde, que le monde l'ait quittée (FLÉCHIER). 15. Vos gens sont-ils revenus de la campagne? 16. Nous attendons nos gens aujourd'hui. 17. Y a-t-il ici une société de gens de lettres? 18. Non, monsieur; il n'y a qu'une société de gens de robe. 19. Connaissez-vous ces braves gens? 20. Je crois que ce sont des gens d'épée. 21. Tels sont les gens aujourd'hui. 22. Telles gens, tels patrons (LA BRUYÈRE). 23. Tous mes gens sont malades. 24. Il faut savoir s'accommoder de toutes gens (L'ACADÉMIE). 25. Que pouvez-vous avoir à démêler avec de telles gens?

EXERCISE 188.

1. Are there many people at your brother's? 2. There are not many people there. 3. Does that young man slander every body? 4. He slanders nobody. 5. Have you brought many people with you? 6. We have brought but few people with us. 7. Is there company with your mother? 8. There is no company with her. 9. Who has told you that? 10. Every body says so. 11. Has the company come? 12. The company has not yet come. 13. Has your mother discharged two servants (*domestiques*)? 14. She has discharged all her people. 15. Do you know those people? 16. I know them very well; they are very worthy people. 17. When he travels, he stops always with good people. 18. Are there foolish people here? 19. There are foolish people everywhere (*partout*). 20. Do you awake your people every morning? 21. Yes, sir; I must awake them every day. 22. What can your brother have to settle with those people? 23. They are the best people in the world. 24. Were there many people at church this morning? 25. There were not many people there. 26. Are your people sick? 27. Yes, sir; all my people are sick. 28. There is here a society of learned men. 29. There are in Paris several societies of lawyers. 30. What

worthy people! 31. What good people! 32. Do you expect your people to-day? 33. We expect them this evening. 34. So goes the world. 35. Has your captain all his crew? 36. He has all his crew on board.

LEÇON XCVI. LESSON XCVI.

EN, USED TO EXPRESS PROPERTY, ETC.

1. When property or possession is affirmed of things inanimate, the relation of possession is often expressed by the relative pronoun *en* [§ 95, (5.)].

Voilà un bel arbre; le fruit en est excellent.	*That is a fine tree; its fruit is excellent.*

2. When, however, the inanimate possessor is the subject of the same clause, the possessive adjective is used [§ 95, (4.)].

Cet arbre a perdu son fruit.	*That tree has lost its fruit.*

3. Entendre, *to hear*, is used in the sense of *to understand*. It is also used reflectively. It means then, *to be understood, to understand one's self*, or *one another*, or *to agree with one another*. It means also, *to be expert in any thing*. In this latter sense it takes à before its regimen. This regimen is at times replaced by the pronoun *y*.

Comment entendez-vous cela?	*How do you understand that?*
Cela s'entend.	*That is understood.*
Il s'entend aux affaires.	*He is expert in business.*

4. Se faire entendre corresponds to the English, *to make one's self understood, to make one's self heard.*

Nous nous sommes fait entendre.	*We made ourselves understood.*

5. Taire [4. ir.] means *to conceal, to keep to one's self.* Se taire, *to be silent.*

Taisez-vous. Taisons-nous.	*Be silent (hold your tongue). Let us be silent.*
Dites-lui de se taire.	*Tell him to be silent.*

RÉSUMÉ OF EXAMPLES.

L'auteur d'un bienfait est celui qui en reçoit les plus doux fruits. DUCLOS.	*The author of a good deed is the one who receives its sweetest fruits.*
Votre jardin est magnifique; les arbres en sont superbes.	*Your garden is magnificent; its trees are very beautiful.*

La vie a ses plaisirs et ses peines.	*Life has its pleasures and its troubles.*
L'étude a ses charmes.	*Study has its charms.*
Entendez-vous bien le latin?	*Do you understand Latin well?*
Cet avoué n'entend rien aux affaires.	*That attorney has no knowledge of business.*
Il ne s'y entend pas.	*He is not expert in this.*
Je lui ai donné à entendre qu'il était de trop ici.	*I gave him to understand that he was in the way here.*
Qu'entendez-vous par là?	*What do you mean by that?*
Il y avait tant de bruit, que nous n'avons pu nous faire entendre.	*There was so much noise, that we could not make ourselves heard.*
Taisez le premier, ce que vous voulez qu'on taise. LATIN MAXIM.	*Keep to yourself, that which you would wish to have kept secret.*
Pourquoi ne vous taisez-vous pas?	*Why are you not silent?*
Nous l'avons fait taire.	*We made him hold his tongue (silenced him).*

EXERCISE 189.

Agrément, m. *pleasure;*	Chirurgien, m. *surgeon;*	Manche, f. *sleeve;*
Avantage, m. *advantage;*	Consent-ir, 2. ir. *to consent;*	Mêl-er, 1. *to mix;*
Basque, f. *skirt of a coat;*	Court, e, *short;*	Muet, te, *dumb, mute,*
Brave, *worthy;*	Force, f. *force, power;*	Pays, m. *country;*
	Fort, *very;*	Raison, f. *reason;*
		Réuss-ir, 2. *to succeed.*

1. Est-ce un habit neuf que votre fils porte? 2. C'est un habit neuf; le drap en est très fin. 3. Les manches n'en sont-elles pas trop courtes? 4. Je crois que les manches en sont trop courtes et les basques trop longues. 5. La campagne n'a-t-elle pas ses avantages? 6. J'aime la campagne; j'en connais les avantages. 7. Paris a ses agréments. 8. J'aime Paris; j'en connais les agréments. 9. Ce chirurgien s'entend-il à la médecine? 10. Il n'y entend rien du tout. 11. Entendez-vous la médecine? 12. Je ne m'y entend pas. 13. Je ne l'entends pas. 14. Je n'y entends rien. 15. Avez-vous réussi à vous faire entendre? 16. Nous n'y avons pas réussi. 17. Mon voisin est un brave homme, et je m'entends fort bien avec lui. 18. Faire taire certaines gens est un plus grand miracle que de faire parler les muets. (BALZAC). 19. Savez-vous de quel pays est cet homme? 20. Il tait son pays et sa naissance. 21. Par la force de la raison, elle apprit l'art de parler et de se taire (FLÉCHIER). 22. Voulez-vous vous taire, impertinente? vous venez toujours mêler vos impertinences à toutes choses (MOLIÈRE). 23. Qui se tait consent (PROVERB).

EXERCISE 190.

1. Have you a very good garden? 2. We have a very large one, but its soil (*terre*, f.) is not good. 3. Is your brother's coat new? 4. He has a new coat, but its sleeves are too short. 5. Are not its

skirts too long? 6. No, sir; its skirts are too short. 7. Have you not heard that preacher (*prédicateur*)? 8. There was so much noise that I could not hear him. 9. Does not the country have its pleasures? 10. The country has its pleasures. 11. Does not your brother like the city? 12. He likes the country; he knows its pleasures. 13. What does your brother mean by that? 14. He means what he says. 15. Is your father expert in business? 16. My father has no knowledge of business. 17. Does that young man understand English well? 18. He understands French and English very well. 19. Do you agree well with your partner? 20. My partner is an honest man [§ 86.]; I agree very well with him. 21. Does that young man conceal his age? 22. He conceals his age and his country. 23. Does your father understand medicine? 24. He does not understand it. 25. He has no knowledge of it. 26. Be silent, my child. 27. Tell that child to be silent. 28. Silence gives consent. 29. Will you not be silent? 30. What have you given him to understand? 31. We gave him to understand that study has its charms. 32. Have you silenced him? 33. Yes, sir; we silenced him. 34. Tell him to be silent. 35. I have already (*déjà*) told him to be silent. 36. Let us be silent.

LEÇON XCVII. LESSON XCVII.

THE PRESENT PARTICIPLE.—THE VERBAL ADJECTIVE.

1. The present participle is invariable, and ends always in *ant*. It expresses action, not situation. It cannot be rendered into English by an adjective, but is rendered by the participle present, or by the present of the indicative, preceded by a relative pronoun. The present participle has often, or may have a regimen. [§ 64.]

Ces hommes, prévoyant le danger, s'enfuirent.	*Those men, foreseeing the danger fled.*

2. The part of the verb used after the preposition *en* is always the present participle.

En écrivant, en lisant.	*In writing, in reading.*

3. When the word ending in *ant*, is used to express the qualities, properties, or moral or physical situation of a noun, it is a verbal adjective, and assumes, in its termination, the gender and number of the noun which it qualifies. It must in this case be rendered into English by an adjective.

Ces hommes sont prévoyants.	*Those men are cautious, provident.*

4. The verbs entendre, *to hear;* faire, *to cause, to make;* laisser, *to let,* etc., followed by another verb completing their meaning, are not in French separated from that verb. In the corresponding sentences in English, the two verbs are usually separated by other words.

J'ai laissé tomber mon couteau.	*I have let my knife fall (dropped).*
J'ai entendu dire cela.	*I have heard that said.*

Résumé of Examples.

Je connais des personnes, dormant d'un sommeil si profond, que le bruit de la foudre ne les réveillerait pas. BESCHER.	*I know persons sleeping (who sleep) so profoundly, that the noise of thunder would not awake them.*
Les eaux dormantes sont meilleures pour les chevaux que les eaux vives. BUFFON.	*Sleeping (still) waters are better for horses than living waters.*
Nous avons trouvé cette femme mourante.	*We found that woman dying.*
Cette femme, mourant dans la crainte de Dieu, ne craignait point la mort.	*That woman, dying in the fear of God, did not fear death.*
On est heureux en se contentant de peu.	*One is happy in contenting one's self with little.*
Avez-vous laissé passer ce voleur?	*Have you let that thief pass?*
Je l'ai laissé passer.	*I let him pass.*
Pourquoi avez-vous fait faire un habit?	*Why have you had a coat made*
Je n'ai pas fait faire d'habit.	*I have had no coat made.*
J'ai laissé tomber quelque chose.	*I let something fall.*
Lui avez-vous entendu dire cela?	*Have you heard him say that?*
Je le lui ai entendu dire.	*I heard him say it.*
Je l'ai entendu dire.	*I heard it said.*
Je l'ai entendu dire à ma sœur.	*I heard my sister say it.*

Exercise 191.

S'appliqu-er, 1. ref. *to apply;*	Essayer, 1. *to try;*	Pleuv-oir, 3. ir. *to rain;*
Besoin, m. *want;*	Se hât-er, 1. ref. *to hasten;*	Prévenant, e, *obliging;*
Changement, m. *alteration;*	Lecture, f. *reading;*	Preven-ir, 2. ir. *to anticipate;*
Difficulté, f. *difficulty;*	Obligeant, e, *obliging;*	Répét-er, 1. *to repeat;*
Émouss-er, 1. *to blunt;*	Plai-re, 4. ir. *to please;*	Suivant, e, *following;*
Empêcher, 1. *to prevent;*	Plume, f. *pen;*	Suiv-re, 4. ir. *to follow;*
	Pointe, f. *point;*	Voyant, e, *bright, showy.*

1. Ma cousine est-elle aussi obligeante que la vôtre? 2. Elle est aussi obligeante, et bien plus charmante que la mienne. 3. Vos enfants sont-ils prévénants? 4. Mes enfants, prévénant tous mes besoins ne me laissent rien à désirer. 5. Lisez bien attentivement les pages suivantes. 6. Ces demoiselles, suivant l'exemple de leur mère, s'appliquent à la lecture. 7. Les couleurs voyantes ne me plaisent point. 8. Mes sœurs, voyant qu'il allait pleuvoir, se hâtèrent de re-

venir. 9. Qu'avez-vous laissé tomber? 10. J'ai laissé tomber ma plume; la pointe en est émoussée. 11. Les avez-vous fait parler? 12. Je les ai fait parler, mais avec difficulté. 13. Avez-vous fait faire des changements dans votre maison? 14. J'y en ai fait faire. 15. A quoi en avez-vous fait faire? 16. J'en ai fait faire à la salle à manger et au salon. 17. Avez-vous laissé passer cet homme? 18. Je n'ai pas essayé de l'en empêcher. 19. A qui (*whom*) avez-vous entendu dire cela? 20. Je l'ai entendu dire à mon père. 21. Je le lui ai entendu repéter. 22. Il vous l'a entendu dire. 23. Il vous a vu faire cela. 24. Il vous l'a vu faire. 25. Je l'ai vu passer.

EXERCISE 192.

1. Are still waters good for horses? 2. Buffon says that they are better for horses than living waters. 3. Are your sisters cautious? 4. They are not very cautious. 5. My sisters, foreseeing that it was going to rain, brought their umbrellas. 6. What have you let fall? 7. I have let my knife and book fall. 8. Do very bright colors please your brother? 9. Very bright colors do not please him. 10. Have you read the following pages? 11. Have you seen the dying woman? 12. Your sister, dying in the fear of God, was very happy. 13. Your sister, following your example, applied herself to study. 14. Have you made them read? 15. I made them read and write. 16. I made my brother write. 17. I have had a book bound (*relier*). 18. Has your father had alterations made in his house? 19. He has had some made in it. 20. In which room has he had some made? 21. He has had some made in my brother's room. 22. Whom have you heard say that? 23. I heard my sister say it. 24. Have you heard him say that? 25. I have not heard him say it. 26. Have you seen my father pass? 27. I have not seen him pass. 28. I have heard him speak. 29. Make him speak. 30. Let it fall. 31. Do not let it fall. 32. What has your brother dropped? 33. He has dropped nothing. 34. Whom have you heard say that? 35. I heard your brother say it. 36. I have heard you repeat it. 37. We have seen you do that.

LEÇON XCVIII. LESSON XCVIII.

PRACTICAL RÉSUMÉ OF THE RULES ON THE PAST PARTICIPLE.—I.

The participle past is VARIABLE under any of the following conditions:

1. When employed as an adjective; in which case it agrees in gender and number with the *noun* which it qualifies.

Des livres imprimés.	*Printed books.*
Ces femmes paraissent bien abattues.	*Those women appear very dejected.*

2. When used in the formation of the tenses of passive verbs; when it always agrees with the *subject* of the proposition.

Elles sont bien reçues de tout le monde.	*They are well received by every body.*

3. When employed in forming the compound tenses of neuter verbs having *être* as an auxiliary; in which place, as in the preceding case, it agrees with the *subject* or *nominative.*

Votre sœur est partie ce matin.	*Your sister went away this morning.*

4. When employed in forming the tenses of active verbs having *avoir* as an auxiliary; in which connection it agrees not with the *subject,* but with the *direct object* or *regimen,* provided that *object precedes* it.

Les maisons que nous avons achetées.	*The houses which we have bought.*

5. When used along with *être* in the formation of the compound tenses of reflective verbs, wherein the reflective pronoun is the *direct object;* in which position it agrees with that *pronoun* or *direct object.*

Ces dames se sont flattées.	*Those ladies have flattered themselves.*

6. When used along with *être* (as in Rule 5.) in the formation of the compound tenses of those reflective verbs, in which the reflective pronoun is not the direct, but the indirect object of the proposition; in which event it agrees with the *direct object,* provided (as in Rule 4.) that object *precedes* it.

Les histoires qu'elles se sont racontées.	*The stories which they related to each other.*

7. When forming part of a compound tense of a verb governing a succeeding infinitive, it is at the same time preceded by a direct object, which is represented as performing the action denoted by the infinitive; in which condition it agrees with that *direct object.*

Les dames que j'ai entendues chanter.	*The ladies whom I heard sing (singing).*

8. When, in a sentence containing the pronoun *en,* the participle is preceded by another *object* or *regimen* which is *direct;* in which case it agrees with that *direct object.*

Je les en ai avertis.	*I have warned them of it.*
Vous les en avez informés.	*You have informed them of it*

Résumé of Examples.

Vous avez des livres bien reliés.	*You have well bound books.*
Vos filles sont estimées.	*Your daughters are esteemed.*
Ces terres sont bien labourées.	*Those lands are well ploughed.*
Mes voisines sont tombées d'accord.	*My neighbours have come to an understanding.*
Elles sont venues nous trouver.	*They came to us.*
La victoire que nous avons remportée.	*The victory which we have gained.*
Les champs que vous avez labourés.	*The fields which you have ploughed.*
Vous vous êtes repentis de votre faute.	*You have repented (you) of your fault.*
Elle s'est souvenue de sa promesse.	*She remembered her promise.*
Les soldats que j'ai vus passer.	*The soldiers whom I saw passing.*
Les musiciennes que j'ai entendues jouer.	*The musical ladies whom I heard playing.*
L'indiscrétion que nous nous sommes reprochée.	*The indiscretion with which we reproached one another.*
Les événements qu'elles se sont racontés.	*The events which they related to one another.*
Les fruits que j'en ai reçus.	*The fruits which I received from it.*
Les nouvelles que j'en ai apportées.	*The news which I brought from it.*

Exercise 193.

A l'ordinaire, *as usual;*	Fleur, f. *flower;*	Se reproch-er, 1. ref. *to reproach one's self;*
Avert-ir, 2. *to warn;*	Malade, *sick person;*	Sérieux, se, *serious;*
Boue, f. *mud;*	Merveille (à), *wonderfully, perfectly;*	Souri-re, 4. ir. *to smile;*
Coutume, (de), *usually, usual;*	Parven-ir, 2. ir. *to succeed;*	Suivant, *according to;*
Cueill-ir, 2. *to gather;*	Se port-er, 1. *to be, to do;*	Tomb-er, 1. *to fall;*
Déchiffr-er, 1. *to decipher;*	Plus tôt, *sooner, earlier;*	Tomb-er d'accord, *to come to an understanding;*
Décourag-er, 1. *to discourage;*	Ri-re, 4. ir. *to laugh;*	Trouv-er, 1. *to find;*
		Vol-er, 1. *to steal.*

1. Cette demoiselle ne se trouve-t-elle pas bien fatiguée? 2. Elle est fatiguée et découragée. 3. Votre sœur est-elle allée à l'église suivant sa coutume? 4. Ma mère et ma sœur y sont allées. 5. Votre sœur est-elle revenue plus tôt que de coutume? 6. Elle est revenue plus tard qu'à l'ordinaire. 7. Cette pauvre malade est-elle tombée? 8. Elle est tombée dans la boue. 9. Ma mère est-elle parvenue à déchiffrer ma lettre? 10. Elle n'y est pas parvenue. 11. Quelles fleurs avez-vous cueillies? 12. Les fleurs que j'ai trouvées sont plus belles que celles que vous m'avez envoyées. 13. Votre cousine ne s'est-elle pas bien portée? 14. Elle s'est portée à merveille. 15. De quel livre vous êtes-vous servie, mademoiselle? 16. Je me suis servie du vôtre. 17. Nous nous sommes servies des nôtres. 18. Quelles fautes votre fils s'est-il reprochées? 19. Les fautes qu'il s'est reprochées ne sont pas sérieuses. 20. Les avez-vous vus

rire? 21. Je les ai vus sourire. 22. Les avez-vous vus voler des fruits? 23. Je les ai vus voler des pommes. 24. Les avez-vous avertis de leurs fautes? 25. Je les en ai avertis. 26. Je ne les en ai pas avertis.

Exercise 194.

1. Are your books well bound? 2. They are well bound, and well printed. 3. Did not your little girl find herself discouraged? 4. She found herself tired, but not discouraged. 5. Have your sisters come to an understanding? 6. They have not come to an understanding. 7. My brothers have come to an understanding. 8. Who came to you? 9. Your friends came to us. 10. Has not your sister gone to church? 11. My sister has gone to church as usual. 12. Did your sister return sooner than usual? 13. My sister returned later than usual. 14. Are the fields which you have ploughed, large? 15. The fields which I have bought are very large. 16. Where are the gentlemen whom you saw pass? 17. The ladies whom I heard sing are in their room. 18. Did your poor sister fall? 19. Did that poor sick woman fall in the mud? 20. Did your sister succeed in reading that book? 21. She succeeded in reading it. 22. Have you warned your sisters of their danger? 23. I have warned them of it. 24. I have not warned them of it. 25. What pen has your mother used? 26. She has used mine. 27. Have not those young ladies used my book? 28. They have not used it. 29. Has your mother been well? 30. She has been perfectly well. 31. Has she remembered her promise? 32. She has remembered it. 33. Have you seen those boys laugh? 34. I have seen them smile. 35. Have you seen them play? 36. I have heard them play.

LEÇON XCIX. LESSON XCIX.

PRACTICAL RÉSUMÉ OF THE RULES ON THE PAST PARTICIPLE.—II.

The participle past is INVARIABLE:

1. In active verbs, when the *direct regimen* follows the participle.

Mes nièces ont étudié leurs leçons.	*My nieces have studied their lessons*
Elles ont négligé leurs études.	*They have neglected their studies.*

2. In neuter verbs conjugated with *avoir*.

Mes cousines ont disparu.	*My cousins have disappeared.*
Les cinq heures qu'elles ont dormi.	*The five hours which they have slept.*

In the latter sentence, the word *pendant* is understood after *heures*.

Les cinq heures *pendant lesquelles* elles ont dormi.	*The five hours during which they slept.*

3. In unipersonal verbs, whether conjugated with *être* or with *avoir*.

Les chaleurs qu'il a fait cette année.	*The heat there has been this year.*
Il est arrivé bien des malheurs.	*Many misfortunes have happened.*

4. In reflective or pronominal verbs, of which the second pronoun is an *indirect regimen*, when no *direct regimen* precedes.

Elle s'est proposé de partir.	*She proposed to herself to leave.*

5. When the participle precedes an infinitive, and is preceded by a *direct regimen*, and this *direct regimen* is not the *actor*, but the *object acted upon*. In this case the infinitive is generally rendered in English by the passive voice.

Les chansons que j'ai entendu chanter.	*The songs which I heard (being) sung*

6. When the *direct regimen* preceding a participle, is not the *object* of this particple, but of a verb following.

La régle que je vous ai conseillé d'étudier.	*The rule which I advised you to study.*

7. The participle of faire, *fait*, followed by an infinitive, is always invariable.

Je les ai fait raccommoder.	*I have had them mended.*

8. After the pronoun, *en*, when no *direct regimen* precedes.

Vous a-t-on donné des fleurs?	*Have they given you flowers?*
On m'en a donné.	*They have given me (some) of them.*

RÉSUMÉ OF EXAMPLES.

Elles nous ont donné de bons conseils.	*They have given us good advice.*
Elles nous en ont donné.	*They have given us some.*
Les trois lieues qu'il a couru.	*The three leagues which he ran.*
Les années que ces édifices ont duré.	*The years that those edifices have lasted.*
La belle journée qu'il a fait hier!	*What a beautiful day it was yesterday!*
C'est la plus belle fête qu'il y ait eu.	*It is the finest feast that there has been.*
Il s'est présenté deux de vos amis.	*There appeared two of your friends.*
Ces demoiselles se sont nui.	*Those young ladies have injured one another.*
Les Asiatiques se sont fait une espèce d'art de l'éducation de l'éléphant.	*The Asiatics have made the education of the elephant a kind of art.*

Elle s'est imaginé l'idée de pouvoir réussir.	*She conceived the idea that she might succeed.*
Les fruits que j'ai vu voler.	*The fruits which I saw being stolen.*
Les soldats blessés que j'ai vu porter.	*The wounded soldiers whom I saw (being) carried.*
La chanson que j'ai entendu chanter.	*The song which I heard sung.*
Les pommes que je vous ai défendu de manger.	*The apples which I forbade you to eat.*
Je les ai fait partir.	*I obliged them to leave.*
Elles m'ont apporté des oranges.	*They have brought me oranges.*
Elles m'en ont apporté.	*They have brought me (some) of them.*

Exercise 195.

Auberge, f. *inn;*	Jou-er, 1. *to play;*	Nuit, f. *night;*
Bien, m. *good;*	Habill-er, 1. *to dress;*	Pièce, f. *piece;*
Dernier, e, *last;*	Dorm-ir, 2. *to sleep;*	Racont-er, 1. *to relate;*
Disparaît-re, 4. ir. *to disappear;*	Lion-d'Or, m. *Golden Lion;*	Reven-ir, 2. ir. *to return;*
Enterr-er, 1. *to bury;*	Mort, e, *dead;*	Soieries, *silk goods, silks.*

1. Quelle auberge vous a-t-on recommandée? 2. On m'a recommandé l'auberge du Lion-d'Or. 3. Quelles nouvelles avez-vous apportées? 4. J'ai apporté des nouvelles agréables. 5. Vos voisines sont-elles habillées? 6. Elles ne sont pas encore habillées. 7. Ont-elles bien dormi, la nuit dernière? 8. Elles n'ont pas bien dormi. 9. Quand sont-elles arrivées? 10. Elles sont arrivées à quatre heures et demie. 11. Ont-elles dormi plus de cinq heures? 12. Les six heures qu'elles ont dormi leur ont fait beaucoup de bien. 13. Vos sœurs se sont-elles amusées? 14. En jouant, elles se sont fait mal au bras. 15. Se sont-elles raconté notre conversation? 16. Elles se la sont racontée. 17. Vos amies ont-elles disparu? 18. Elles n'ont pas disparu; elles sont revenues chez elles. 19. Les soldats que vous avez vus partir, sont-ils revenus? 20. Il sont morts; je les ai vu enterrer. 21. Ne les avez-vous pas fait étudier? 22. Je les ai fait lire. 23. Avez-vous apporté des soieries? 24. Je n'en ai pas apporté. 25. Les soieries que j'en ai apportées sont superbes.

Exercise 196.

1. Have you not recommended my nieces? 2. I have recommended them. 3. Have you brought me good oranges? 4. I have brought you some. 5. Have you given any to my daughters? 6. I have given them some. 7. I would have given them some, if I had had many. 8. Have you not neglected your studies? 9. I have not neglected them; I never neglect them. 10. The years which that church has lasted, speak in favor (*en faveur*) of the architect. 11. The ten miles which he has run, have fatigued him. 12. Have

your sisters injured each other? 13. They have flattered themselves. 14. Did my friends present themselves? 15. There came three of your sisters. 16. What did they imagine? 17. They conceived the idea of reading Tasso (*Le Tasse*). 18. Have you seen them (m.) steal my apples? 19. I saw them steal your peaches. 20. Have you heard them (f.) sing? 21. I have heard them sing. 22. The songs which I heard sung, are not new. 23. I found in your room the books which I had forbidden you to take. 24. The peaches which I have forbidden you to eat, are not ripe (*mûres*). 25. Have you seen those soldiers? 26. I saw them pass last week. 27. I saw them carried to the hospital (*à l'hôpital*) this morning. 28. Have you brought oranges from France? 29. I brought some. 30. The oranges which I brought from it (*en*) are good. 31. Have you brought silk goods? 32. I have brought some. 33. I have brought none. 34. Are the silk goods which you brought from that place, good? 35. I brought but two pieces.

LEÇON C. LESSON C.

EXAMPLES ILLUSTRATING THE VARIOUS USES OF THE PRINCIPAL CONJUNCTIONS.

A MOINS QUE.

Il n'en fera rien, *à moins que* vous ne lui parliez.

He will do nothing of the kind, unless *you speak to him.*

A moins que vous ne preniez bien votre temps, vous n'en viendrez pas à bout.

Unless *you choose your time well, you will not accomplish it.*

Quel indigne plaisir peut avoir l'avarice?
Et que sert d'amasser, *à moins qu'*on ne jouisse? BOURSAULT.

What unworthy pleasure can avarice offer?
What is the use of hoarding up unless *we enjoy?*

AUSSI.

Aussi, ils n'ont aucune force pour le posséder sûrement. PASCAL.

Therefore, *they have no strength to possess it safely.*

Ma douleur serait trop médiocre, si je pouvais la dépeindre; *aussi* je ne l'entreprendrai pas.
MME. DE SÉVIGNÉ.

My grief would be too trifling if I could depict it, so that *I will not undertake it.*

AU RESTE.

C'est ce qu'il y a de plus sage; *au reste*, c'est aussi ce qu'il y a de plus juste. MARMONTEL.

This is the wisest way; besides *it is also the most just.*

CAR.

Voila les périls, voici le moyen de les éviter; *car* enfin, le bras de Dieu n'est pas raccourci. MASSILLON.

Those are the dangers, this is the way of avoiding them; for *finally, the influence of God is not less powerful.*

Le peuple se figure une félicité imaginaire dans les situations élevées, où il ne peut atteindre, et il croit (*car* tel est l'homme), que tout ce qu'il ne peut avoir, c'est cela même qui est le bonheur qu'il cherche. MASSILLON.

The people picture to themselves an imaginary happiness in elevated stations which they cannot reach, and they believe (for *such is man*), *that all that which they cannot obtain, forms that very happiness which they seek.*

COMME—QUE.

Comme l'ambition n'a pas de frein, et *que* la soif des richesses nous consume tous, il en résulte, que le bonheur nous fuit, à mesure que nous le cherchons. TH. CORNEILLE.

As *ambition has no limits, and* as *the thirst of riches devours us all, the result is, that happiness avoids us, as we proceed in our search after it.*

DONC.

Votre maître vous aime; *donc* vous devez l'aimer.

Your master loves you; therefore, *you should love him.*

Je suis, *donc*, un témoin de leur peu de puissance. RACINE.

I am, therefore, *a witness of their want of power.*

Et d'où peut *donc* venir ce changement extrême? VOLTAIRE.

Whence, therefore, *can this extreme change proceed?*

Si ce n'est toi, c'est *donc* ton frère. —Je n'en ai pas.—C'est *donc* quelqu'un des tiens. LA FONTAINE.

If it is not you, then *it is your brother.—I have none.*—Then *it must be some one of your family.*

Allons *donc!* répondit-on, et la transaction n'eut pas lieu. DE CUSSY.

Well then! *replied they, and the affair did not take place.*

DE MÊME QUE.

De même que le soleil brille sur la terre, *de même* le juste brillera dans les cieux. L'ACADÉMIE.

As *the sun shines upon the earth*, so *will the just shine in heaven.*

ET.

C'est être faible *et* timide que d'être inaccessible *et* fier. MASSILLON.

To be inaccessible and *proud, is to be weak* and *timid.*

Une famille vertueuse est un vaisseau tenu pendant la tempête par deux ancres, la religion *et* les mœurs. CHATEAUBRIAND.

A virtuous family is a vessel strengthened during the tempest by two anchors, religion and *morals.*

Quel carnage de toutes parts!
On égorge à la fois les enfants, les vieillards,
Et la sœur et le frère,
Et la fille et la mère,
Le fils dans les bras de son père.
RACINE, *Esther.*

What carnage on all sides!
They murder at once the children, the old men, the sister, and *the brother, the daughter* and *the mother, the son in the arms of his father.*

LORSQUE—QUAND.

Lorsque l'innocence habitait la terre. BOSSUET.

When *innocence inhabited the earth.*

Quand vous me haïriez, je ne m'en plaindrais pas. RACINE.

If *even you hated me, I would not complain.*

Quand nous n'aurions égard qu'au repos seul de notre vie, *quand* nous n'aurions point d'autre intérêt ici-bas que de nous préparer des jours heureux, quel bonheur de prévenir d'avance, et d'étouffer dans leur naissance tant de passions violentes. MASSILLON.

If *even we considered merely the repose of our lives,* if *even we had no other interest here than to prepare for ourselves happy days, what happiness it would be, to prevent beforehand, to stifle in their birth, so many violent passions.*

MAIS.

C'était déjà la puissance impériale, qu'on lui a vue depuis, *mais* avec l'assentiment universel des peuples, avec des formes moins royales, *mais* plus dignes peut-être. THIERS.

It was already the imperial power, of which we have since seen him possessed, but *with the consent of the people, with forms less regal,* but *perhaps more worthy.*

L'harmonie ne frappe pas simplement l'oreille, *mais* l'esprit. BOILEAU.

Harmony does not only strike the ear, but *the mind.*

C'est un parti sage à la guerre de se tenir sur la défensive, *mais* ce n'est pas le plus brillant. LA ROCHEFOUCAULD.

To keep on the defensive is a wise resolution in war, but *it is not the most brilliant.*

Il n'y a point de *mais* qui tienne; je ne donnerai point ma fille à un muet. BRUÉYS.

There is no but *in the matter; I will not give my daughter to a mute.*

NI.

Heureux celui qui sait se contenter de peu! Son sommeil n'est troublé *ni* par les craintes, *ni* par les désirs honteux de l'avarice. TRAD. D'HORACE.

Happy is he who can content himself with little! His sleep is disturbed neither *by the fear,* nor *by the shameful desires of avarice.* TRANSL. OF HORACE.

Vous perdez ainsi la confiance de vos amis, sans les avoir rendus *ni* meilleurs *ni* plus habiles. VOLTAIRE.

You lose thus the confidence of your friends, without having rendered them either *better* or *more skilful.*

On n'est jamais si heureux, *ni* si malheureux qu'on se l'imagine. LA ROCHEFOUCAULD.

We are never so happy nor *so unhappy as we fancy.*

Cette loi sainte ne connaît plus, *ni* pauvre, *ni* riche, *ni* noble, *ni* roturier, *ni* maître, *ni* esclave. MASSILLON.

That holy law knows no longer either *poor* or *rich, noble* or *plebeian, master* or *slave.*

OR.

Or sus, mettons-nous à l'ouvrage.

Now then, *let us go to work.*

Or ça, Gil Blas, me dit-il un jour, le temps de ton enfance est passé. LE SAGE.

Now then, *Gil Blas, said he to me one day, the time of your childhood is over.*

OU.

La fortune, soit bonne *ou* mauvaise, soit passagère *ou* constante, ne peut rien sur l'âme du sage. MARMONTEL.

Fortune, be it good or *bad, be it transient* or *constant, has no power over the soul of the wise.*

La liberté de publier ses pensées, *ou* la liberté de la presse, doit être réglée sur la liberté même d'agir. B. DE ST. PIERRE.

The liberty of publishing one's thoughts, or *the liberty of the press, should be regulated upon the liberty of action itself.*

PARCE QUE.

Les grands hommes entreprennent de grandes choses, *parce qu'*elles sont grandes, et les fous *parce qu'ils* les croient faciles. VAUVENARGUES.

Great men undertcke great things because *they are great, and fools,* because *they believe them easy.*

Là tout est beau, *parce que* tout est vrai. J. J. ROUSSEAU.

Every thing there is beautiful, because *every thing is true.*

POURTANT.

Le style le moins noble a *pourtant* sa noblesse. BOILEAU.

The least elevated style has, nevertheless, *its elevation.*

PUISQUE.

Pourquoi le demander, *puisque* vous le savez? RACINE.

Why ask about it, since *you know it?*

Ne vous lassez jamais d'examiner les causes des grands changements, *puisque* rien ne servira jamais tant à votre instruction. BOSSUET.

Never be weary of examining into the causes of great changes, since *nothing will ever be of so much service to your instruction.*

Puisque vous le voulez, je vais changer de style. BOILEAU.

Since *you will have it so, I will change my style.*

QUE.

Jamais on ne vit un si grand exemple, *que* le courage n'est point incompatible avec la mollesse. VOLTAIRE.

Never was such a striking example seen, that *courage is not incompatible with effeminacy.*

A quoi vous servira d'avoir de l'esprit, si vous ne l'employez pas, et *que* vous ne vous appliquez pas? BOSSUET.

Of what use will be your wit, if you do not employ it, and do not apply yourselves?

Toutefois, *que* sert-il de me justifier? RACINE.

However, what *is the use of justifying myself?*

Qu'il fasse ce qu'il lui plaira.

Let him do what he pleases.

Sais-tu quelque chose de plus?

Do you know any thing more?

Oh! *que* oui. BRUÉYS.

That I do!

C'est une maladie d'esprit, *que* de souhaiter des choses impossibles. FÉNELON.

Wishing for impossible things, is a disease of the mind.

La véritable conversion du cœur fait autant aimer Dieu *qu'*on a aimé les créatures. PASCAL.

The true conversion of the heart makes us love God as *much* as *we have loved the creatures.*

Crois-tu *que* dans son cœur, il ait juré ta mort? RACINE.

Do you believe that *he has sworn your death in his heart?*

Ce n'est pas *que* j'eusse mieux fait que vous. MME. DE SÉVIGNÉ.

Il a fallu *que* mes malheurs m'aient instruit, pour m'apprendre ce que je ne voulais pas croire. FÉNELON.

It is not that *I might have done better than you.*

It was necessary that *my misfortunes should instruct me, to teach me what I would not believe.*

QUOIQUE.

Quoique Dieu et la nature aient fait tous les hommes égaux, en les formant d'une même boue, la vanité humaine ne peut souffrir cette égalité. BOSSUET.

Although *God and nature have made all men equal, in forming them from the same earth, human vanity cannot bear that equality.*

SI.

Si vous le vouliez, nous partirions ensemble.

Si vous le prenez sur ce ton, je me retire.

Nul empire n'est sûr, *s'*il n'a l'amour pour base. RACINE.

*S'*il le faut, nous partirons.

Votre esprit a toujours en réserve quelque *si*, quelque *mais*. DESTOUCHES.

If *you wished it, we would go together.*

If *you go on in this way, I withdraw.*

No empire is safe, unless *it has affection for its basis.*

If *it must be so, we will go.*

Your mind has always in reserve some if, *some* but.

SINON.

Ils répondirent, qu'il fallait rétablir l'équilibre européen rompu; qu'il fallait le rétablir *sinon* sur le continent, où il était tout à fait détruit, au moins sur l'Océan. THIERS.

They replied, that it was necessary to re-establish the disturbed European balance; that it was necessary to restore it, if not *on the continent, where it was entirely destroyed, at least on the Ocean.*

SOIT—QUE.

*Soit qu'*il le fasse, *soit qu'*il ne le fasse pas.

Un mal funeste et contagieux se répandit dans les principales villes de la Normandie; *soit que* l'intempérie des saisons eut laissé dans les airs quelque maligne impression, *soit qu'un* commerce fatal eût apporté des pays éloignés, avec de fragiles richesses, des semences de maladie et de mort, *soit que* l'ange de Dieu eût étendu la main pour frapper cette malheureuse province. FLÉCHIER.

Whether *he does it*, whether *he does it not.*

A fatal and contagious disease spread in the principal cities of Normandy; be it *that the inclemency of the season had left in the air some malignant impression*, be it *that a fatal commerce had brought from distant countries, with perishable riches, the seeds of disease and death*, be it *that the angel of God had stretched forth his hand to smite that unfortunate province.*

EXERCISES IN COMPOSING.

The words in the following lists are given, as before intimated (page 103), as *suggestive* of thought. In conducting the exercise, the Teacher selects a particular word, as *Relieur* (Bookbinder), and

requires each pupil to compose a French sentence containing this term. The pupil is duly notified that he is at liberty to take *any* thought suggested by the word, and to produce a sentence of *any* form found in any of the foregoing Lessons; regard being had all along to all the Rules, Notes, Exceptions, etc., that may bear upon the case. Thus, adopting as a model the sentence, *Votre marchand est bien obligeant* (Lesson 17, Résumé); *Le Danois a-t-il quelques pommes?* (Lesson 18, Rule 7); *Connaissez-vous le Docteur L.?* (Lesson 30, Résumé); *Ce monsieur est-il peintre?* etc., etc., let him endeavor to produce others of the like kind.

A little practice will render the exercise both easy and interesting. It will soon come to be easy to incorporate not only *one*, but *two*, *three* or more of the words taken from the lists.

Le Temps et ses Divisions. 1. Time and its Divisions.

Un siècle,	an age, a century.	Midi,	noon.
Un an, une année,	a year.	L'après-midi,	the afternoon.
Une saison,	a season.	Le soir,	the evening.
Un mois,	a month.	La nuit,	the night.
Une quinzaine,	a fortnight.	Minuit,	midnight.
Une semaine,	a week.	Aujourd'hui,	to-day.
Un jour,	a day.	Demain,	to-morrow.
Une heure,	an hour.	Après-demain,	the day after to-morrow.
Une demi-heure,	half an hour.	Hier,	yesterday.
Un quart d'heure,	a quarter of an hour.	Avant-hier,	the day before yesterday.
Une minute,	a minute.	La veille,	the day before.
Une seconde,	a second.	Le lever du soleil,	sunrise.
Le matin,	the morning.	Le coucher du soleil,	sunset.
La matinée,	the forenoon.		

Les Saisons. 2. The Seasons.

Le printemps,	the spring.	L'automne, (tonn)	the autumn.
L'été,	the summer.	L'hiver,	the winter.

Les Mois. 3. The Months.

Janvier,	January.	Juillet,	July.
Février,	February.	Août, (oo)	August.
Mars, (Marss)	March.	Septembre,	September.
Avril,	April.	Octobre,	October.
Mai,	May.	Novembre,	November.
Juin,	June.	Décembre,	December.

Les Jours. 4. The Days.

Dimanche,	Sunday.	Jeudi,	Thursday.
Lundi,	Monday.	Vendredi,	Friday.
Mardi,	Tuesday.	Samedi,	Saturday.
Mercredi,	Wednesday.	Tous les jours,	every day

5.

Les Principaux Pays.		The Principal Countries.
L'Afrique,	Africa.	L'Helvétie, (see) Helvetia.
L'Algérie,	Algeria, Algiers.	La Hongrie, Hungary.
L'Allemagne,	Germany.	L'Inde, India.
L'Amérique,	America.	Les Indes Occidentales, West Indies.
L'Angleterre,	England.	Les Indes Orientales, East Indies.
L'Autriche,	Austria.	L'Irlande, Ireland.
L'Arabie,	Arabia.	L'Islande, (iss) Iceland.
L'Asie,	Asia.	Le Japon, Japan.
La Bavière,	Bavaria.	La Judée, Judea.
La Belgique,	Belgium.	Le Mexique, Mexico.
La Bohême,	Bohemia.	La Moscovie, Muscovy.
Le Brésil,	Brazil.	Naples, Naples.
La Bretagne, (Grande),	Great Britain.	La Normandie, Normandy.
Le Canada,	Canada.	La Norvège, Norway.
Le Bas Canada,	Lower Canada.	La Palestine, Palestine.
Le Haut Canada,	Upper Canada.	Les Pays-Bas, the Netherlands.
La Castille,	Castile.	Le Piémont, Piedmont.
Le Chili,	Chili.	Le Pérou, Peru.
La Chine,	China.	La Perse, Persia.
La Corse,	Corsica.	La Pologne, Poland.
Le Danemarc,	Denmark.	La Prusse, Prussia.
L'Écosse,	Scotland.	La Russie, Russia.
L'Égypte,	Egypt.	La Sardaigne, Sardinia.
L'Espagne,	Spain.	La Savoie, Savoy.
L'Europe,	Europe.	La Saxe, Saxony.
Les États-Unis,	the United States.	La Sicile, Sicily.
La France,	France.	La Suède, Sweden.
Galles, (Le Pays de)	Wales.	La Suisse, Switzerland.
La Gaule,	Gaul.	La Syrie, Syria.
La Grèce,	Greece.	La Turquie, Turkey.
Le Hanovre,	Hanover.	Le Würtemberg, Wurtemberg.

6.

Nations.		Nations.	
Un Africain,	an African.	Un Écossais,	a Scotchman.
Un Algérien,	an Algerine.	Un Égyptien,	an Egyptian.
Un Allemand,	a German.	Un Européen,	a European.
Un Américain,	an American.	Un Français,	a Frenchman.
Un Anglais,	an Englishman.	Un Gallois,	a Welchman.
Un Arabe,	an Arab.	Un Gaulois,	a Gaul.
Un Asiatique,	an Asiatic.	Un Grec,	a Greek.
Un Autrichien,	an Austrian.	Un Hanovérien,	a Hanoverian.
Un Bavarois,	a Bavarian.	Un Helvétien,	a Helvetian.
Un Belge,	a Belgian.	Un Hongrois,	a Hungarian.
Un Bohémien,	a Bohemian.	Un Indien,	an Indian.
Un Brésilien,	a Brazilian.	Un Irlandais,	an Irishman.
Un Breton,	a Breton.	Un Islandais,	an Icelander.
Un Canadien,	a Canadian.	Un Japonais,	a Japanese.
Un Castillan,	a Castilian.	Un Juif,	a Jew.
Un Chilien,	a Chilian.	Un Mexicain,	a Mexican.
Un Chinois,	a Chinese.	Un Moscovite,	a Muscovite.
Un Corse,	a Corsican.	Un Napolitain,	a Neapolitan.
Un Danois,	a Dane.	Un Normand,	a Norman.

Un Norvégien,	a Norwegian.
Un Parisien,	a Parisian.
Un Péruvien,	a Peruvian.
Un Persan,	a Persian.
Un Piémontais,	a Piedmontese.
Un Polonais,	a Pole.
Un Prussien,	a Prussian.
Un Russe,	a Russian.
Un Sarde,	a Sardinian.
Un Savoyard,	a Savoyard.
Un Saxon,	a Saxon.
Un Sicilien,	a Sicilian.
Un Suédois,	a Swede.
Un Suisse,	a Swiss.
Un Syrien,	a Syrian.
Un Turc,	a Turk.
Un Wurtembergeois	a Wurtembergian.

7. Professions et Métiers. — Professions and Trades.

Un acteur,	an actor.
Un apothicaire,	an apothecary.
Un artiste,	an artist.
Un aumonier,	a chaplain.
Un auteur,	an author.
Un avocat,	a barrister.
Un avoué,	an attorney.
Un banquier,	a banker.
Un barbier,	a barber.
Un berger,	a shepherd.
Un bijoutier,	a jeweller.
Une blanchisseuse,	a washerwoman.
Un bottier,	a bootmaker.
Un boucher,	a butcher.
Un boulanger,	a baker.
Un brasseur,	a brewer.
Une brodeuse,	an embroiderer.
Un carrossier,	a coachmaker.
Un chapelier,	a hatter.
Un charbonnier	a coal-man.
Un charcutier	a pork butcher.
Un charlatan,	a quack.
Un charretier,	a cartman.
Un charron,	a waggonmaker.
Un chaudronnier,	a coppersmith.
Un chirurgien,	a surgeon.
Un cordier,	a ropemaker.
Un cordonnier,	a shoemaker.
Un corroyeur,	a currier.
Un coutelier,	a cutler.
Une couturière,	a seamstress.
Un couvreur,	a slater, tiler.
Un curé,	a vicar.
Un dentiste,	a dentist.
Un drapier,	a draper.
Un ébéniste,	a cabinetmaker.
Un ecclésiastique,	a clergyman.
Un épicier,	a grocer.
Un évêque,	a bishop.
Un faucheur,	a mower.
Un fermier,	a farmer.
Un fripier,	a fripperer.
Une fruitière,	a fruit-woman.
Un gantier,	a glover.
Un graveur,	an engraver.
Un horloger,	a clock or watchmaker.
Un instituteur,	a schoolmaster.
Une institutrice,	a schoolmistress.
Un imprimeur,	a printer.
Un jardinier,	a gardener.
Un joaillier,	a jeweller.
Un libraire,	a bookseller.
Un maçon,	a mason, a bricklayer.
Un maître d'école,	a schoolmaster.
Un manouvrier,	a day-laborer.
Un marchand de chevaux,	a horse-dealer.
Un maquignon,	
Un maréchal ferrant,	a farrier, shoeing-smith.
Un maréchal,	a blacksmith.
Un médecin,	a physician.
Un menuisier,	a joiner.
Un moissonneur,	a reaper.
Un musicien,	a musician.
Un naturaliste,	a naturalist.
Un négociant,	a merchant.
Un opticien,	an optician.
Un orateur,	an orator.
Un orfèvre,	a gold and silver smith.
Le pape,	the pope.
Un parfumeur,	a perfumer.
Un pâtre,	a shepherd, herdsman.
Un peintre,	a painter.
Un perruquier,	a hairdresser.
Un philosophe,	a philosopher.
Un poissonnier, Une poissonnière,	a fishmonger.
Un prédicateur,	a preacher.
Un prêtre,	a priest.
Un raffineur de sucre, de sel,	a sugar, salt refiner.
Un ramoneur de cheminées,	a chimney-sweeper.
Un relieur,	a bookbinder.
Un savetier,	a cobbler.
Un sculpteur,	a sculptor.

Un sellier,	a saddler.	Un tisserand,	a weaver.
Un serrurier,	a locksmith.	Un tonnelier,	a cooper.
Un tailleur,	a tailor.	Un tourneur,	a turner.
Un tapissier,	an upholsterer.	Un vitrier,	a glazier.
Un teinturier,	a dyer.	Un voiturier,	a cartman.

L'Homme. 8. Man.

Les ancêtres,	the ancestors.	Un fils,	a son.
Un arrière-petit-fils,	a great-grand-son.	Le futur,	the bridegroom.
		La future,	the bride.
Un beau-fils,	a son-in-law, step-son.	Un gendre,	a son-in-law.
Un beau-frère,	a brother-in-law.	Un grand-père,	a grandfather.
Un beau-père,	a father-in-law, step-father.	Une grand'mère,	a grandmother.
		Un jeune homme,	a young man.
Une belle-fille,	a daughter-in-law, step-daughter.	Une jeune fille,	a young woman, girl.
Une belle-mère,	a mother-in-law, step-mother.	La jeunesse,	youth.
		Un jumeau, une jumelle,	a twin.
Une belle-sœur,	a sister-in-law.	Un mari,	a husband.
Un bisaïeul,	a great-grandfather.	Une marraine,	a godmother.
Une bru,	a daughter-in-law.	La naissance,	the birth.
Le cousin, / La cousine,	the cousin.	Une nourrice,	a nurse.
		Un nouveau marié,	a bridegroom.
Le cousin germain, / La cousine germaine,	the first cousin.	Une nouvelle mariée,	a bride.
		L'oncle,	the uncle.
Les descendants,	the descendants.	Un orphelin, / Une orpheline,	an orphan.
L'enfance,	childhood.		
Un époux, / Une épouse,	a consort.	Un parrain,	a godfather.
		Un petit-fils,	a grand-son,
Une famille,	a family.	Une petite-fille,	a grand-daughter.
Une femme,	a woman, wife.	La tante,	the aunt.
Les fiançailles, *f. p.*	betrothing.	Un veuf,	a widower.
Le fiancé, la fiancée,	the betrothed.	Une veuve,	a widow.
Une fille,	a girl, a daughter.	La vieillesse,	old age.

Le Corps Humain. 9. The Human Body.

Une artère,	an artery.	L'épaule,	the shoulder.
La barbe,	the beard.	L'épine (du dos),	the spine.
La bouche,	the mouth.	Les favoris,	the whiskers.
Le bras,	the arm.	Le foie,	the liver.
Le cervelle,	the brain.	Le front,	the forehead.
La chair,	the flesh.	Les gencives,	the gums.
Les cils,	the eyelashes.	Le genou,	the knee.
Le cœur,	the heart.	La gorge,	the throat.
Le corps,	the body.	Les hanches,	the hips.
Le côté,	the side.	La jambe,	the leg.
Une côte,	a rib.	La joue,	the cheek.
Le cou,	the neck.	La langue,	the tongue.
Le coude,	the elbow.	La lèvre,	the lip.
Le crâne,	the skull.	Un membre,	a limb.
La cuisse,	the thigh.	Le menton,	the chin.
Le doigt,	the finger.	La moëlle,	the marrow.
Le dos,	the back.	Une moustache,	a moustache.

Un muscle,	a muscle.
Un nerf,	a nerve.
Le nez,	the nose.
Un ongle	a nail.
Un orteil, / Un doigt du pied,	a toe.
Un os,	a bone
L'ouïe,	the hearing.
Le palais,	the palate
La paupière,	the eyelid.
La peau,	the skin.
Le pouce,	the thumb.
Les poumons,	the lungs.
La prunelle,	the pupil of the eye.
La rate,	the spleen.
Les reins,	the loins.
Le sang,	the blood.
Le sein,	the bosom.
Les sourcils,	the eyebrows.
Un squelette,	a skeleton.
Le talon,	the heel.
Le teint,	the complexion.
Les tempes,	the temples.
La tête,	the head.
Un trait,	a feature.
Une veine,	a vein.
Le visage,	the face.
La vue,	the sight.

10. Maladies, Infirmités, etc. — Maladies, Infirmities, etc.

Une attaque,	an attack, fit.
Du baume,	balsam.
Le bégaiement,	stammering.
Une blessure,	a wound.
La cécité,	blindness.
Un chancre,	a cancer.
Une cicatrice,	a scar.
La colique,	colic.
Une contusion,	a bruise.
La crampe,	cramp.
Une dislocation,	a dislocation.
Un émétique,	an emetic.
Une enflure,	a swelling.
Un enrouement,	a hoarseness.
Une entorse,	a sprain.
L'épilepsie,	epilepsy.
Un évanouissement,	fainting.
La fièvre,	fever.
La fièvre nerveuse,	nervous fever.
La fièvre scarlatine,	scarlet fever.
La goutte,	gout.
Une guérison,	a cure.
L'hydropisie,	dropsy.
Une indisposition,	an indisposition.
Louche, adj.	squinting.
Un malaise,	an indisposition.
La migraine,	the head-ache.
Le mutisme,	dumbness.
De l'onguent, m.	pommade, f. salve.
Une ordonnance,	a prescription.
La petite-vérole,	the small-pox.
La pulmonie,	consumption.
Un remède,	a remedy.
Un rhume,	a cold.
La rougeole,	the measles.
Une saignée,	a bleeding.
La surdité,	deafness.
Une toux,	a cough.
Un ulcère,	an ulcer.
Un vertige,	dizziness.

11. Habillements. — Articles of Dress.

Une agrafe,	a clasp.
Une aiguille,	a needle.
Une aiguille de cheveux,	a hair-pin.
Une bague,	a ring.
Des bas,	stockings.
Du basin,	dimity.
De la batiste,	cambric.
De la bijouterie,	jewelry.
Un bonnet,	a cap.
Une boucle,	a buckle.
Une boucle,	a lock of hair, curl.
Des boucles d'oreilles,	ear-rings.
Une bourse,	a purse.
Un bracelet,	a bracelet.
Des bretelles,	braces, suspenders.
Une brosse,	a brush.
Une brosse à dents,	a tooth-brush.
Un caleçon, m. s.	drawers.
Une ceinture,	a sash, belt, band.
Des chaussons,	socks.
Du cirage,	blacking.
Des ciseaux,	scissors.
Une coiffure,	a head-dress.
Un collet,	a collar.
Un collier,	a necklace.
Du coton,	cotton.
Une cravate,	a cravat.
Du crêpe,	crape.
De la dentelle,	lace.
Un diamant,	a diamond.
De la doublure,	lining.
Un écrin,	a casket, jewel-box.

Une épée,	a sword.
Des éperons,	spurs.
Une épingle,	a pin.
Un étui, m.	a needle-case.
Un éventail,	a fan.
Un flacon,	a smelling-bottle.
La fourrure,	the fur.
Un frac,	a dress coat.
La frange,	the fringe.
La garniture,	the trimming.
Un gilet,	a vest, waistcoat.
Du grenat,	garnet.
Des guêtres,	gaiters.
Un habit,	a coat.
De l'ivoire,	ivory.
Du linge,	linen.
Des lunettes,	spectacles.
La manche,	the sleeve.
De la mousseline,	muslin.
Un pantalon, m. sing.	pantaloons.
Un parapluie,	an umbrella.
Un parasol,	a parasol.
Un peigne,	a comb.
Des pendants-d'oreilles,	ear-pendants.
Une perle,	a pearl.
Une poche,	a pocket.
De la pommade,	pomatum.
Une redingote,	a great coat.
Une robe,	a dress, robe.
Une robe de chambre,	a dressing-gown.
Du satin,	satin.
De la soie,	silk.
Un soulier,	a shoe.
Un tablier,	an apron.
Du taffetas,	taffeta.
Du velours,	velvet.
Une veste,	a vest.
Un voile,	a veil.

12. La Ville, la Maison, etc. — Town, House, etc.

Une antichambre,	an antechamber.
Une ardoise,	a slate.
Un arsenal,	an arsenal.
Un banc,	a bench, seat.
Une barrière,	a gate.
La bibliothèque,	the library.
Un bourg,	a borough, small town.
La bourse,	the exchange.
Une brique,	a brick.
La capitale,	the capital city, metropolis.
Un carillon,	a chime of bells.
Une caserne,	a barrack.
Une cave,	a cellar.
Une chambre,	a chamber, room.
Une chambre à coucher,	a bedroom.
Une chapelle,	a chapel.
Un château,	a country-house, villa.
Une chaumière,	a hut, cottage.
De la chaux,	lime.
Une cheminée,	a chimney.
Un cimetière,	a burying-ground, church-yard.
Une cloche,	a bell.
Une cloche d'église,	a church-bell.
Un clocher,	a church-steeple.
Une clochette,	a small bell.
Un cloître,	a cloister.
Une cour,	a yard, court.
Un couvent,	a convent.
Une cuisine,	a kitchen.
La douane,	the custom-house.
Une écurie,	a stable.
Les environs,	the environs, neighborhood.
Un escalier,	stairs.
Un étage,	a story, a floor.
Un faubourg,	a suburb.
Une fenêtre,	a window.
Une ferme,	a farm.
Une fontaine,	a fountain, well.
Un four,	an oven.
La gouttière,	the gutter.
Un grand chemin, Une grand'route,	a highway.
Une grange,	a barn.
Un grenier,	a garret.
Une haie,	a hedge.
Un hameau,	a hamlet.
Un hôpital,	an hospital.
L'hôtel de ville,	the guildhall, city-hall, town-hall.
Un meuble,	a piece of furniture.
Des meubles,	furniture.
La monnaie,	the mint.
Un mur, Une muraille,	a wall.
Un palais,	a palace.
Une paroisse,	a parish.
Le pavé,	the pavement.
Une pépinière,	a nursery of trees.
Une persienne,	a blind, open shutters.
Un plafond,	a ceiling.
Une planche,	a board.

Le plancher, the floor.
Un poêle, a stove.
Une pompe, a pump.
Un pont, a bridge.
Une porte, a door, gate.
La poste, the post, post-office.
Une poutre, a beam.
Une prairie, / Un pré, a meadow.
Une prison, a prison.
Un puits, a well.
Un quartier, a quarter.
Une rampe, / d'escalier, a balustrade of a staircase.
Un rez-de-chaussée, a ground-floor.
La sacristie, the vestry,
Une salle, a parlor, sitting-room.
Une salle à manger, a dining-room.
Un salon, a drawing-room, hall.
Une serre, a conservatory.
Une serre-chaude, a hot-house.
Une serrure, a lock.
Une sonnette, a bell.
Un théâtre, a theatre.
Un toît, a roof.
Une tour, a tower.
Une tuile, a tile.
Un verger, an orchard.
Un verrou, a bolt.
Un vestibule, a hall, entry.
La vigne, le vignoble, the vineyard.
Un village, a village.
Un volet, a window-shutter.
Une voute, a vault.

13.

MEUBLES, ETC. FURNITURE, ETC.

Une allumette, a match.
Une allumette chimique, a friction-match.
De l'amadou, tinder.
Une armoire, a cup-board.
Une assiette, a plate.
Un baril, a cask, barrel.
Un bassin, a bowl, washbowl.
Une bassinoire, a warming-pan.
Un berceau, a cradle.
Une boîte à fusil, a tinder-box.
Une bougie, a taper.
Une bouilloire, a kettle.
Un briquet, a fire-steel.
Un cadre, a frame.
Une cafetière, a coffee-pot.
Un candélabre, a chandelier.
Une casserole, a saucepan.
Une cassette, a box, casket.
Une chandelle, a candle.
Du charbon de bois, charcoal.
Du charbon de terre, stone-coal.
Une chaudière, a boiler.
Un coffre, a chest.
Une commode, a chest of drawers.
Une corbeille, a basket.
Un couteau, a knife.
Un crible, a sieve.
Une cruche, a pitcher.
Une cuiller, *or* cuillère, a spoon.
Un cuvier, a tub.
Un drap, a sheet.
Une écumoire, a skimmer.
Un entonnoir, a funnel.
Un essuie-main, a towel.
Un fer à repasser, a smoothing iron.
Une fourchette, a fork.
Un fourgon, a poker.
Un foyer, a hearth.
Une lampe, a lamp.
Une lanterne, a lantern.
Un lit, a bed.
Un lit de plume, a feather bed.
Une lumière, a light.
Un lustre, a sconce.
Un marchepied, a footstool.
Un mortier, a mortar.
Les mouchettes, the snuffers.
Un moutardier, a mustard-pot.
Une nappe, a tablecloth.
Un oreiller, a pillow.
Un panier, a basket.
Un paravent, a screen.
Une peinture, a painting, a picture.
Une pelle, a shovel.
Une pierre à fusil, a flint.
Les pincettes, the tongs.
Une poêle, a frying-pan.
La poivrière, the pepper-box.
Un pot, a kettle.
Un pupitre, a desk.
Une salière, a saltcellar.
Du savon, soap.
Un seau, a pail.
Une serviette, a napkin.
Un sofa, a sofa.
Une soucoupe, a saucer.
Un soufflet, bellows.
Une soupière, a soup-tureen.
Un sucrier, a sugar-dish.

Une table,	a table.
Un tableau,	a picture.
Une tablette,	a shelf.
Un tapis,	a carpet.
Une tasse,	a tea-cup.
Une théière,	a tea-pot.
Un tire-bouchon,	a cork-screw.
Un tiroir,	a drawer.
Un traversin,	a bolster.
Des ustensiles de cuisine.	kitchen utensils.
Un verre,	a glass.

14. Plats, etc. — Dishes, etc.

Du bœuf,	beef.
Du bouilli,	boiled beef, boiled meat.
Du bouillon,	broth.
Une caille,	a quail.
Un canard,	a duck.
Des confitures, f. p.	preserves.
Une cotelette,	a cutlet.
Un dindon,	a turkey.
Un gigot de mouton,	a leg of mutton.
Un jambon,	ham.
Un lapin,	a rabbit.
Un lièvre,	a hare.
Du mouton,	mutton.
Un œuf,	an egg.
Une omelette,	an omelet.
Un pâté,	a pie.
Une perdrix,	a patridge.
Du porc,	pork.
Du poulet,	chicken.
Des rafraîchissements,	refreshments.
Du rôti,	roast meat.
Une saucisse,	a sausage.
De la soupe,	soup.
De la soupe maigre,	vegetable soup.
Une tarte,	a tart.
Du veau,	veal.
Du vermicelle,	vermicelle.
De la volaille,	fowl.

15. Légumes, Grain, etc. — Vegetables, Grain, etc.

De l'ail, m., pl. aulx or aux,	garlic.
Des asperges,	asparagus.
De l'avoine,	oats.
Une betterave,	a beet.
Du blé,	wheat.
Une carrotte,	a carrot.
Du céleri,	celery.
Du cerfeuil,	chervil.
Un champignon,	a mushroom.
Un chou,	a cabbage.
Un choufleur,	a cauliflower.
Un concombre,	a cucumber.
Du cresson,	cress.
Des épinards,	spinage.
Des fèves,	beans.
Un grain,	a kernel.
Une herbe,	an herb.
De la laitue,	lettuce.
Des lentilles,	lentils.
Du maïs,	maize.
Du millet,	millet.
Des navets,	turnips.
Des ognons,	onions.
De l'orge,	barley.
De l'oseille,	sorrel.
Un panais,	a parsnip.
Du persil,	parsley.
Une plante,	a plant.
Des pois,	peas.
Une pomme de terre,	a potato.
Une racine,	a root.
Un radis,	a radish (turnip).
Du raifort,	horse-radish.
Une rave,	a radish (long).
Du riz,	rice.
De la salade,	salad.
De la sauge,	sage.
Du seigle,	rye.
Du thym,	thyme.
Une truffe,	a truffle.

16. Arbres Fruitiers, Fruits. — Fruit Trees, Fruits.

Un abricot,	an apricot.
Un abricotier,	an apricot-tree.
Une amande,	an almond.
Un amandier,	an almond-tree.
Un ananas,	a pineapple.
Une aveline,	a filbert.
Une châtaigne,	a chestnut.
Un châtaignier,	a chestnut-tree.
Un citron,	a citron, lemon.
Un citronnier,	a lemon-tree.
Un coing,	a quince.
Une datte,	a date.
Une figue,	a fig.
Un figuier,	a fig-tree.

Une fraise,	a strawberry.	Une orange,	an orange.
Une framboise,	a raspberry.	Un oranger,	an orange-tree.
Un framboisier,	a raspberry-bush.	Une pavie,	a clingstone peach.
Une groseille,	a gooseberry, currant.	Une pêche,	a peach.
Un groseiller,	a currant, or gooseberry bush.	Un pêcher,	a peach-tree.
Un melon,	a melon.	Une poire,	a pear.
Une mure,	a mulberry.	Un poirier,	a pear-tree.
Un murier,	a mulberry-tree.	Une pomme,	an apple.
Une nêfle,	a medlar.	Un pommier,	an apple-tree.
Une noisette,	a hazel-nut.	Une prune,	a plum.
Une noix,	a nut.	Un prunier,	a plum-tree.
Un noyer,	a nut-tree.	Du raisin,	grapes.
		Une vigne,	a grape vine.

17. Arbres Forestiers. — Forest Trees.

Un bouleau,	a birch.	Un orme,	an elm.
Un buisson,	a bush.	Un peuplier,	a poplar.
Un chêne,	an oak.	Un rameau,	a bough.
L'écorce,	the bark.	Un sapin,	a pine.
Un érable,	a maple.	Un saule,	a willow.
Un frêne,	an ash.	Un tilleul,	a linden-tree.
Un hêtre,	a beech.	Un tremble,	an aspen.
Un mélèse,	a larch.	Un tronc,	a trunk.

18. Fleurs, etc. — Flowers, etc.

Une auricule,	an auricula.	Un œillet,	a pink.
Un chardon,	a thistle.	Une ortie,	a nettle.
Du chèvre-feuille,	honeysuckle.	Un pavot,	a poppy.
Une giroflée,	a gillyflower.	Une pensée,	a forget-me-not.
Une jacinthe,	a hyacinth.	Un pied d'alouette,	a larkspur.
Du jasmin,	jessamine.	Une primevère,	a cowslip.
Un lis,	a lily.	Une rose,	a rose.
Une marguerite,	a daisy.	Un tournesol,	a sunflower.
Une mauvaise herbe,	a weed.	Une tulipe,	a tulip.
Un myrte,	a myrtle.	Une violette,	a violet.

19. Oiseaux. — Birds.

Un aigle,	an eagle.	Un corbeau,	a raven.
Une aile,	a wing.	Une corneille,	a crow.
Une alouette,	a lark.	Un coucou,	a cuckoo.
Un autour,	a hawk.	Un cygne,	a swan.
Une autruche,	an ostrich.	Un dindon,	a turkey.
Le bec,	the beak.	Un faisan,	a pheasant.
Une bécasse,	a woodcock.	Un geai,	a jackdaw.
Une bécassine,	a snipe.	Une grive,	a thrush.
Une bergeronnette,	a wagtail.	Un héron,	a heron.
Une caille,	a quail.	Une hirondelle,	a swallow.
Un canard,	a duck.	Une linotte,	a linnet.
Un canari,	a canary-bird.	Un merle,	a blackbird.
Un chardonneret,	a goldfinch.	Une oie,	a goose.
Une chauve-souris,	a bat.	Un oiseau de proie,	a bird of prey.
Une cigogne,	a stork.	Un paon,	a peacock.
Une colombe,	a dove.	Un passereau,	a sparrow.

Un perroquet,	a parrot.	Un roitelet,	a wren.
Une perdrix,	a partridge.	Un rossignol,	a nightingale.
Une pie,	a magpie.	Un rouge-gorge,	a redbreast.
Un pigeon,	a pigeon.	Un serin,	a canary-bird.
Une poule,	a hen.	Une tourterelle,	a turtle-dove.
Un poulet,	a chicken.	Un vautour,	a vulture.

QUADRUPÈDES. **20.** QUADRUPEDS.

Un agneau,	a lamb.	Un lièvre,	a hare.
Un blaireau,	a badger.	Un lion,	a lion.
Un castor,	a beaver.	Un loup,	a wolf.
Un cerf, (cer)	a stag.	Une mule,	a mule
Un chamois,	a chamois.	Un ours,	a bear
Une chèvre,	a goat.	Un poulain,	a colt.
Un chevreuil,	a roebuck.	Un pourceau,	a hog, swine.
Un écureuil,	a squirrel.	Un renard,	a fox.
Un furet,	a ferret.	Un singe,	a monkey.
Un hérisson,	a hedgehog.	Une taupe,	a mole.
Un lapin.	a rabbit.	Un tigre,	a tiger.

POISSONS. **21.** FISHES.

Une anguille,	an eel.	Un merlan,	a whiting.
Une baleine,	a whale.	Une morue,	a codfish.
Un brochet,	a pike.	Une perche,	a perch.
Une carpe,	a carp.	Un requin,	a shark.
Une chevrette,	a shrimp.	Un saumon,	a salmon.
Une écrevisse,	a crawfish.	Une sole,	a sole.
Un esturgeon,	a sturgeon.	Une tanche,	a tench.
Un hareng,	a herring.	Une tortue,	a turtle.
Un hareng saur,	a red herring.	Une truite,	a trout.
Un homard,	a lobster.	Un turbot,	a turbot.

INSECTES, ETC. **22.** INSECTS, ETC.

Une abeille,	a bee.	Un lézard,	a lizard.
Une araignée,	a spider.	Un limaçon,	a snail.
Une chenille,	a caterpillar.	Une mouche,	a fly.
Une cigale,	a grasshopper.	Un papillon,	a butterfly.
Une couleuvre,	an adder.	Une puce,	a flea.
Un cousin,	a gnat.	Une punaise,	a bug.
Un crapaud,	a toad.	Une sangsue,	a leech.
Un escarbot,	a beetle.	Une sauterelle,	a locust.
Une fourmi,	an ant.	Un serpent,	a serpent.
Une grenouille,	a frog.	Une teigne,	a moth.
Un grillon,	a cricket.	Un ver,	a worm.
Une guêpe,	a wasp.	Une vipère,	a viper.

OUTILS, ETC. **23.** TOOLS, ETC.

Une alène,	an awl.	Une carabine,	a rifle.
Les balances,	scales.	Une charrue,	a plough.
Une bêche,	a spade.	Un chevalet,	an easel.
Une brosse,	a brush.	De la cire,	wax.
Une brouette,	a wheelbarrow.	Une cognée,	a hatchet.
Un cachet,	a seal.	De la colle,	glue.

Un compas,	compasses.	Un marteau,	a hammer.
Un échafaudage,	a scaffold.	Une meule,	a grindstone.
Une échelle,	a ladder.	Un pain à cacheter,	a wafer.
Une enclume,	an anvil.	Une pelle,	a shovel.
Un étau,	a vice.	Une pince,	a crowbar.
Une faucille,	a sickle.	Un pinceau,	a brush, pencil.
Une faux,	a scythe.	Une poulie,	a pulley.
Un fléau,	a flail.	Un rabot,	a plane.
Un fusil,	a gun.	Un rouleau,	a roller.
Une hache,	an axe.	Une sablière,	a sand-box.
Un hameçon,	a fishhook.	Une scie,	a saw.
Une herse,	a harrow.	Une serrure,	a lock.
Une houe,	a hoe.	Des tenailles,	pincers.
Une ligne,	a line.	Une truelle,	a trowel.
Une lime,	a file.	Une vis,	a screw

ABRÉVIATIONS.

A. P. A protester.
A. S. P. Accepté sous protêt.
A. S. P. C. Accepté sous protêt, pour à-compte.
B^on^. Baron.
C^er^. Chevalier.
C^te^. Comte.
C^tesse^. Comptesse.
D^r^. Docteur.
D^r^. M^n^. Docteur-médecin.
E. Est.
J.-C. Jésus-Christ.
LL. AA. II. Leurs Altesses Impériales.
LL. AA. RR. Leurs Altesses Royales.
LL. AA. SS. Leurs Altesses Sérénissimes.
LL. Em. Leurs Éminences.
LL. Ex. Leurs Excellences.
LL. HH. Leurs Hautesses.
LL. MM. Leurs Majestés.
LL. MM. II. Leurs Majestés Impériales.
LL. MM. RR. Leurs Majestés Royales.
M. ou M^r^. Monsieur.
M^e^. ou M^tre^. Maître.
M. A. Maison assurée.
M. A. C. I. Maison assurée contre l'incendie.
M^d^. Marchand.
M^de^. Marchande.

ABBREVIATIONS.

To be protested.
Accepted under protest.
Accepted under protest, on account.
Baron.
Chevalier, knight, sir.
Count.
Countess.
Doctor.
Doctor of medicine.
East.
Jesus Christ.
Their Imperial Highnesses.
Their Royal Highnesses.
Their Most Serene Highnesses.
Their Eminences.
Their Excellencies.
Their Highnesses.
Their Majesties.
Their Imperial Majesties.
Their Royal Majesties.
Sir, Mr.
Master.
House insured.
House insured against fire.
Dealer, shopkeeper, m.
Dealer, shopkeeper, f.

M^lle. Mademoiselle.	*Miss.*
M^gr. Monseigneur.	*My lord.*
M^is. Marquis.	*Marquis.*
M^ise. Marquise.	*Marchioness.*
MM. Messieurs.	*Messrs. Gentlemen.*
M^me. Madame.	*Madam. Mrs.*
Mst. Manuscrit.	*Manuscript.*
N. B. Nota bene	*Nota bene.*
N. D. Notre-Dame.	*Our Lady.*
N.-N.-E. Nord-nord-est.	*North-north-east.*
N.-N.-O. Nord-nord-ouest.	*North-north-west.*
N^t. Négociant.	*Merchant*, m.
N^te. Négociante.	*Merchant*, f.
N^o. Numéro.	*Number.*
N. S. Notre-Seigneur.	*Our Lord.*
N. S. J.-C. Notre-Seigneur Jésus-Christ.	*Our Lord Jesus Christ.*
O. Ouest.	*West.*
% Pour cent.	*Per cent.*
O.-N. Ouest-nord.	*West-north.*
O.-S. Ouest-sud.	*West-south.*
P. S. Post-scriptum.	*Postscript.*
R. P. Révérend père.	*Reverend father.*
S. Sud.	*South.*
S. A. I. Son Altesse Impériale.	*His or Her Imperial Highness.*
S. A. R. Son Altesse Royale.	*His or Her Royal Highness.*
S. A. S. Son Altesse Sérénissime.	*His Most Serene Highness.*
S.-E. Sud-est.	*South-east.*
S. Em. Son Éminence.	*His Eminence.*
S. Ex. Son Excellence.	*His Excellency.*
S. G. Sa Grandeur.	*His Grace* (to a Bishop).
S. H. Sa Hautesse.	*His Highness* (the Turkish Emperor).
S. M. Sa Majesté.	*His or Her Majesty.*
S. M. B. Sa Majesté Britannique.	*His or Her Britannic Majesty.*
S. M. C. Sa Majesté Catholique.	*His Catholic Majesty.*
S. M. I. Sa Majesté Impériale.	*His Imperial Majesty.*
S. M. R. Sa Majesté Royale.	*His Royal Majesty.*
S. M. S. Sa Majesté Suédoise.	*His Swedish Majesty.*
S. M. T. C. Sa Majesté Très Chrétienne.	*His Most Christian Majesty.*
S. M. T. F. Sa Majesté Très Fidèle.	*His Most Faithful Majesty.*
S.-O. Sud-ouest.	*South-west.*
S. P. Saint Père.	*Holy Father.*
SS. PP. Les Saints Pères.	*The Holy Fathers.*
S. S. Sa Sainteté.	*His Holiness.*
S.-S.-E. Sud-sud-est.	*South-south-east.*
S.-S.-O. Sud-sud-ouest.	*South-south-west.*

FASQUELLE'S

NEW FRENCH COURSE.

PART SECOND.

§ 1.—Parts of Speech.

(1.) There are, in French, ten sorts of words or parts of speech:

Nouns or Substantives,	Participles,
Articles,	Adverbs,
Adjectives,	Prepositions,
Pronouns,	Conjunctions,
Verbs,	Interjections.

(2.) These are divided into variable, and invariable words.

(3.) The variable words are those the termination of which admits of various changes; by these changes, various modifications of meaning are expressed. The variable words are of six kinds:

The Noun,	The Pronoun,
The Article,	The Verb,
The Adjective,	The Participle.

(4.) The invariable words are those the termination of which never changes:

The Adverb,	The Conjunction,
The Preposition,	The Interjection.

(5.) All variable parts of speech have two numbers: the *singular*, which denotes but one, and the *plural*, which denotes more than one.

(6.) All variable parts of speech, except the verb, have two genders: the *masculine* and the *feminine*.

§ 2.—Cases.

The cases adopted by French grammarians are:

(1.) The *nominatif* or *sujet*; answering to the nominative or subject of the English, and to the nominative of the Latin.

(2.) The *régime direct*, or direct object of the English, accusative of the Latin.

(3.) The *régime indirect*, indirect object of the English, answers to the oblique cases of the Latin, the genitive, dative, and ablative.

§ 3.—The Noun or Substantative.

(1.) The *noun* or *substantive* is a word which serves to name a person or a thing; as Jean, *John;* maison, *house.*

(2.) There are two sorts of nouns: *proper* and *common.*

(3.) A proper noun is applied to a particular person, or thing; as, Napoléon, *Napoleon;* Paris, *Paris.*

(4.) A common noun belongs to a whole class of objects; as, livre, *book;* homme, *man.*

(5.) Some common nouns, although singular in number, present to the mind the idea of several persons or things, forming a collection; they are for this reason denominated *collective* nouns; as, troupe, *troop;* peuple, *people.*

(6.) Collective nouns are general, or partitive; *general,* when they represent an entire collection; as, l'armée des Français, *the army of the French: partitive,* when they represent a partial collection; as, une troupe de soldats français, *a troop of French soldiers.*

(7.) A common noun composed of several words, as, chef-d'œuvre, *masterpiece;* avant-coureur, *forerunner,* is called a compound noun.

(8.) Of the two properties of nouns, *gender* and *number,* we shall commence with the first.

§ 4.—Gender.

(1.) There are in the French language, only two genders: the masculine and the feminine.

(2.) The masculine belongs to men, and animals of the male kind, as, Charles, *Charles;* lion, *lion.*

(3.) The feminine gender belongs to women, and animals of the female kind; as, Sophie, *Sophia;* lionne, *lioness.*

(4.) Through imitation—often on account of derivation, often without any real motive—the masculine and feminine genders have been given, in French, to the names of inanimate objects; thus, papier, *paper,* is masculine, and plume, *pen,* is feminine.

§ 5.—Rules for determining Gender by the Meaning.

Masculine.

(1.) Male beings; as, homme, *man;* lion, *lion.*

(2.) Objects to which male qualities are attributed: ange, *angel;* génie, *genius* (a spirit); soleil, *sun.*

(3.) The names of the seasons: le printemps, *the spring,* etc.; and of the months, janvier, *January;* février, *February,* etc.

Feminine.

(1.) Female beings: as, femme, *woman;* lionne, *lioness.*

(2.) Objects to which female qualities are attributed: fée, *fairy;* lune, *moon.*

(3.) Virtues: la charité, *charity;* except courage, *courage;* mérite, *merit,* which are masc.

(4.) Vices: la méchanceté, *wickedness;* except l'orgueil, *pride,* masc.

Masculine.	*Feminine.*
(4.) The days of the week: lundi, *Monday;* mardi, *Tuesday*, etc.	(5.) Festivals: la Saint Jean, i.e. la fête de St. Jean, *St. John's day;* la Chandeleur, *Candlemas;* except Noël, *Christmas*, masc.
(5.) The names of the cardinal points and the winds: as, l'est, *the East;* l'ouest, *the West*, etc. [See exceptions opposite.]	Bise, *a poetical term for North wind.* Tramontane, *a term applied on the Mediterranean to the North wind.* Brise, *breeze;* moussons, *trade-winds.*
(6.) The names used in the French decimal system: as, centime (*hundredth part of a franc*); kilogramme (1000 *grammes, about two pounds*); mètre, etc.	
(7.) Metals: le fer, *iron;* l'acier, *steel*, etc.	
(8.) Colors: le vert, *green;* le jaune, *yellow.*	
(9.) The names of empires and kingdoms when ending with a consonant: le Danemarc, *Denmark;* le Brésil, *Brazil.*	(6.) The names of countries when ending in *e* mute: la France, l'Espagne, l'Amérique, etc.
	Exc. Bengale, Hanovre, Mexique, Péloponèse.
(10.) Mountains: le Jura, *Mount Jura;* le Puy-de-Dome,[1] *the Puy de Dome;* le Cénis, le St. Bernard, *Mount Cenis, Mount St. Bernard.*	(7.) Chains of mountains in the plural: les Alpes, *the Alps;* les Pyrénées, *the Pyrenees;* les Voges, les Cévennes, etc.
(11.) The names of rivers when ending with a consonant: le Rhin, *the Rhine;* le Nil, *the Nile.*	(8.) The names of rivers when ending with *e* mute: la Seine, *the Seine;* la Loire, *the Loire.*
	Exc. Le Rhône, *the Rhone;* le Danube, le Tibre, le Cocyte, masc.
(12.) Trees, shrubs: le chêne, *the oak;* le frêne, *the ash;* le rosier, *the rose-bush.* [Exceptions opposite.]	(9.) Aubépine, *hawthorn;* bourdaine, *black alder;* épine, *thorn;* hièble, *dwarf-elder;* ronce, *brier;* yeuse, *ilex.*
(13.) The name of a language: as, le français, *French;* l'allemand, *German*, etc.	
(14.) The letters of the alphabet: un a, *an a;* un z, *a z.*	
(15.) Compound words formed of a verb and of a noun, either masculine or feminine, or of a pronoun and a verb: porte-feuille, *pocket-book;* rendez-vous, *rendez-vous.*	(10.) Garde-robe, *wardrobe;* perce-neige, *spring-crocus;* perce-feuille, *hare's-ear.*

[1] The word Puy, from the Celtic *puech*, mountain, is applied to a number of places in France: Puy-en-Velay; Puy-notre-Dame, etc.

Masculine.	*Feminine.*
(16.) Nouns, pronouns, verbs, etc., used substantively: le boire et le manger, *eating and drinking.*	
(17.) Numbers—cardinal, ordinal, and proportional—used substantively: le dix, *the tenth;* le neuvième, *the ninth;* le tiers, *the third.* [Exceptions opposite.]	(11.) Moitié, *half;* and all numbers ending with *aine;* douzaine, *dozen;* centaine, *hundred,* etc.

§ 6.—GENDER, BY THE TERMINATION.

(1.) The exceptions to the masculine will be found opposite the termination, in the feminine column; and the exceptions to the feminine, in the masculine column, also opposite.

(2.) *Consonants.*

B

Masculine Terminations.			*Feminine Terminations.*		
Termination.	*Example.*	*English.*	*Termination.*	*Example.*	*English.*
EB	Horeb,	*Mount Horeb.*			
UB	radoub,	*refitting a ship.*			
MB	plomb.	*lead.*			

C

AC	sac,	*sack.*			
EC	bec,	*beak.*			
IC	mastic,	*putty.*			
OC	soc,	*ploughshare.*			
UC	duc,	*duke.*			
NC	tronc,	*trunk.*			
RC	clerc,	*clerk.*			
SC	fisc,	*revenue.*			

D

ED	pied,	*foot.*			
ID	nid,	*nest.*			
OD	tripod,	*tripod.*			
UD	Talmud,	*Talmud.*			
ND	marchand,	*merchant.*			
RD	bord,	*border.*			

F

EF	chef,	*chief.*		Exc.—clef, *key;* nef, *ship, nave;* soif, *thirst.*	
IF	suif,	*tallow.*			
UF	œuf,	*egg.*			
RF	cerf,	*stag.*			

G

NG	rang,	*rank.*			

K

CK	arack,	*arrack.*			

L

Masculine Terminations.			*Feminine Terminations.*
AL	bal,	*ball.*	
EL	sel,	*salt.*	
IL	soleil,	*sun.*	
OL	sol,	*soil.*	
UL	calcul,	*calculation.*	

M

AM	Adam,	*Adam.*	
EM	harem,	*harem.*	
IM	daim,	*deer.*	Exc.—faim, *hunger;* malefaim, *excessive hunger.*
OM	nom,	*name.*	
UM	parfum,	*perfume.*	

N

AN	cadran,	*dial.*	
EN	examen,	*examination.*	
IN	raisin,	*grape.*	Exc.—fin, *end;* main, *hand.*
ON	*not preceded by* is *or* gi, si, ti, xi.		Exc.—chanson, *song;* cuisson, *baking;* contrefaçon, *counterfeiting;* façon, *mode;* moisson, *harvest;* moussons, *trade-winds;* rançon, *ransom.*
	bâton,	*stick.*	
	gazon,	*turf.*	
	blason,	*blazon.*	
	bison, *bison;* horizon, *horizon;* oison, *gosling;* poison, *poison;* tison, *firebrand.*		ISON maison, *house.* [Exceptions opposite.]
			GION région, *region.*
			SION pension, *pension.*
	bastion, *bastion;* bestion, *figure-head of a ship.*		TION question, *question.*
			XION réflexion, *reflection.*

P

AP	drap,	*cloth.*	
OP	galop,	*gallop.*	
UP	coup,	*blow.*	

Q

OQ	coq-d'Inde, *turkey.*		

R

AR	char,	*car.*	
ER	fer,	*iron.*	Exc.—cuiller, *spoon;* mer, *sea.*
IR	plaisir,	*pleasure.*	chair, *flesh.*
OR	or,	*gold.*	
UR	*not preceded by* e		Exc.—tour, *tower,* cour *court.*
	azur,	*azure.*	
	bonheur, *happiness;* cœur, *heart;* chœur, *chorus;* dénominateur, *denominator;* déshonneur, *dishonor;* équateur, *equator;* extérieur,		EUR chaleur, *heat.* hauteur, *height.* [Exceptions, opposite.]

R—Continued.

Masculine Terminations.			*Feminine Terminations.*
	exterior; honneur, *honor;* intérieur, *interior;* labeur, *labor;* malheur, *misfortune;* multiplicateur, *multiplier;* pleurs, *tears;* régulateur, *regulator;* ventilateur, *ventilator.*		EUR—Continued. [Exceptions opposite.]

S

AS	bras,	*arm.*	
ÈS	grès,	*sandstone.*	Exc.
IS	souris,	*smile.*	amaryllis, *amaryllis;* brebis, *sheep;* fois, *time;* souris, *mouse;* vis, *screw;* oasis, *oasis.*
OS	os,	*bone.*	
US	blocus,	*blockade.*	
PS	temps,	*weather.*	
RS	vers,	*verse.*	

T

AT	climat,	*climate.*	Exc.
ET	arrêt,	*arrest.*	forêt, *forest.*
IT	lit,	*bed.*	nuit, *night.*
OT	cachot,	*dungeon.*	dot, *dower.*
UT	bout,	*end.*	
NT	pont,	*bridge.*	dent, *tooth;* gent, *people;* jument, *mare.*
RT	tort,	*wrong.*	part, *share;* la plupart, *the most.*

X

AX	climax,	*climax.*	
EX	silex,	*silex.*	
IX	prix,	*price.*	Exc.—croix, *cross;* noix, *nut;* paix, *peace;* voix, *voice;* perdrix, *partridge;* poix, *pitch.*
UX	courroux,	*anger.*	Exc.—chaux, *lime;* faux, *scythe;* toux, *cough.*
NX	lynx,	*lynx.*	

Z

AZ	gaz,	*gas.*
EZ	nez,	*nose.*
IZ	riz,	*rice.*

(3.) *Vowels.*

A

A	acacia,	*acacia*	Exc.—vinula, *a sort of caterpillar;* sepia, *sepia.*

E

A complete classification of nouns ending in *e* mute (a majority of which are feminine) would be, from its length, of little practical use to the student, who would find it easier to apply to his dictionary than to such list. We will give here the principal terminations, classing them

according to their gender, and placing the exceptions under the examples given for the terminations, instead of putting them, as hitherto, in the opposite column.

Masculine Terminations.

ABE astrolabe, *astrolab.*
Exc.—Souabe, *Suabia;* syllabe, *syllable.*

ACLE miracle, *miracle.*
Exc.—débacle, *breaking up of the ice;* macle, *a mineral.*

ACRE sacre, *consecration.*
Exc.—nacre, *mother of pearl.*

AGE courage, *courage.*
Exc.—image, *image;* rage, *rage;* page, *page of a book;* cage, *cage;* nage, *swimming;* plage, *beach.*

AIRE salaire, *salary.*
Exc.—affaire, *affair;* aire, *floor;* glaire, *white of egg;* grammaire, *grammar;* paire, *pair;* jugulaire, *jugular-vein;* haire, *hair-cloth;* chaire, *pulpit;* serpentaire, *snake-root;* pariétaire, *pellitory;* and a few other names of plants.

ARE hectare, *hectare* (a measure).

ASTRE cadastre, *register.*

AUME chaume, *thatch.*
Exc.—paume, *tennis.*

É not immediately preceded by *t* or *ti:* abrégé, *abridgment.*

ÉGE collége, *college.*
Exc.—Norvége, *Norway.*

ÈME carême, *Lent.*
Exc.—crême, *cream;* brême, *bream;* birême, trirême, *galley with two or three rows of oars.*

ÊTRE prêtre, *priest.*
Exc.—fenêtre, *window;* guêtre, *gaiter.*

EURRE beurre, *butter.*

IDRE cidre, *cider.*

Feminine Terminations.

ACE grâce, *grace.*
Exc.—espace, *space,*

ADE parade, *parade.*
Exc. — stade, *stadium;* grade, *grade.*

AIE haie, *hedge.*

ANCE importance, *importance.*

ANSE danse, *dance.*

ASSE masse, *mass.*
Exc. — Parnasse, *Parnassus.*

ÉE nuée, *cloud.*
Exc. — apogée, *apogee;* athée, *atheist;* camée, *cameo;* colisée, *coliseum;* coryphée, *coryphæus;* empyrée, *highest heaven;* lycée, *lyceum;* mausolée, *mausoleum;* musée, *museum;* hyménée, *marriage;* périgée, *perigee;* pygmée, *pygmy;* trochée, *trochee;* trophée, *trophy;* spondée, *spondee;* scarabée, *scarabee.*

EINE baleine, *whale,*

ENCE cadence, *cadence.*
Exc.—silence, *silence.*

ENNE antienne, *anthem.*
Exc.—renne, *reindeer*

ENSE offense, *offence.*

ESSE tristesse, *sadness.*

IE charpie, *lint.*
Exc.—génie, *genius;* périhélie, *perihelion;* incendie, *conflagration;* parapluie, *umbrella;* pavie, *clingstone peach.*

IÈRE chaudière, *boiler.*

INE doctrine, *doctrine.*

IQUE pratique, *practice.*

IVE rive, *shore.*

ISSE coulisse, *sliding-shutter.*

LLE paille, *straw.*
Exc.—intervalle, *interval;*

Masculine Terminations.

ISME prisme, *prism.*
ISQUE risque, *risk.*
Exc.—bisque, *soup.*
ISTE ébéniste, *cabinet-maker.*
Exc.—batiste, *cambric;* liste, *list;* piste, *track.*
UGE refuge, *refuge.*
USTE arbuste, *shrub.*

Feminine Terminations.

libelle, *libel;* vermicelle, *vermicelli;* violoncelle, *violoncello;* chèvrefeuille, *honey-suckle;* portefeuille, *pocket-book;* vaudeville, *vaudeville.*
OSSE bosse, *bunch.*
Exc.—colosse, *colossus;* carrosse, *coach.*
PPE nappe, *table-cloth.*
RRE *not preceded by* u.
terre, *land.*
Exc.—lierre, *ivy;* parterre, *flower-garden;* tonnerre, *thunder;* paratonnerre, *lightning rod;* verre, *glass.*
TIÉ amitié, *friendship.*
TTE patte, *paw.*
Exc.—amulette, *amulet;* squelette, *skeleton.*
URE nature, *nature,*
USE excuse, *excuse.*
UVE cuve, *tub.*

I

I midi, *noon.*
Exc.—foi, *faith;* fourmi, *ant;* après-midi, *afternoon;* loi, *law;* merci, *mercy.*

U

U revenu, *revenue.*
Exc.—bru, *daughter-in-law;* vertu, *virtue;* glu, *bird-lime;* eau, *water;* peau, *skin;* tribu, *tribe.*

§ 7.—Nouns Masculine in one acceptation, and Feminine in the other.

	Masculine.		*Feminine.*
Aide,	*assistant.*	Aide,	*assistance.*
Aigle,	*eagle.*	Aigle,	*standard.*
Aune,	*alder.*	Aune,	*ell.*
Barbe,	*Barbary horse.*	Barbe,	*beard.*
Carpe,	*wrist (anatomy).*	Carpe,	*carp.*
Cartouche,	*ornaments (sculpture).*	Cartouche,	*cartridge.*
Couple,	*male and female.*	Couple,	*a pair, a brace, two.*
Crêpe,	*crape.*	Crêpe,	*pancake.*
Délice (sing.),	*delight.*	Délices (pl.),	*delights.*

	Masculine.		*Feminine.*
Espace,	*space.*	Espace,	*leading (in printing).*
Exemple,	*example.*	Exemple,	*writing-copy.*
Faux,	*forgery.*	Faux,	*scythe.*
Foret,	*drill.*	Forêt,	*forest.*
Greffe,	*office of clerk of a court.*	Greffe,	*graft.*
Héliotrope,	*sun flower.*	Héliotrope,	*a mineral.*
Hymne,	*classical chant.*	Hymne,	*Christian hymn.*
Livre,	*book.*	Livre,	*pound.*
Manche,	*handle.*	Manche,	*sleeve,*
Mémoire,	*memoir, bill.*	Mémoire,	*memory.*
Mode,	*mode, (grammar,) system.*	Mode,	*fashion.*
Moule,	*mould, model.*	Moule,	*shell-fish.*
Mousse,	*cabin boy.*	Mousse,	*moss.*
Œuvre, (m. & f.)	*work.*	Œuvres,	*literary works.*
Office,	*divine service.*	Office,	*pantry.*
Ombre,	*a game.*	Ombre,	*shadow, spectre.*
Orgue (sing.),	*organ.*	Orgues (pl.),	*organ.*
Palme,	*hand, a measure.*	Palme,	*the advantage.*
Panache,	*plume.*	Panache,	*pea-hen.*
Parallèle,	*comparison.*	Parallèle,	*parallel line.*
Pendule,	*pendulum.*	Pendule,	*clock.*
Période,	*acme, height.*	Période,	*period, epoch.*
Pivoine,	*a bird.*	Pivoine,	*a flower.*
Plane,	*plane-tree.*	Plane,	*joiner's tool.*
Platine,	*platina.*	Platines,	*small metallic plates.*
Poêle,	*stove, pall.*	Poêle,	*frying-pan.*
Poste,	*place, office.*	Poste,	*post-office.*
Prétexte,	*pretence.*	Prétexte,	*a Roman robe.*
Régale,	*organ-pipe.*	Régale,	*right of receiving the revenues of a vacant bishopric.*
Remise,	*hackney-coach.*	Remise,	*carriage-house.*
Serpentaire,	*constellation.*	Serpentaire,	*dragon-wort.*
Solde,	*balance of account.*	Solde,	*pay.*
Somme,	*nap, sleep.*	Somme,	*sum.*
Souris,	*smile.*	Souris,	*mouse.*
Tour,	*tour, turn, trick.*	Tour,	*tower.*
Vague,	*space, emptiness*	Vague,	*wave.*
Vase,	*vase, vessel.*	Vase,	*mire, slime.*
Voile,	*veil.*	Voile,	*sail.*

§ 8.—Formation of the Plural of Nouns.

(1.) The plural in French, as in English, is formed by the addition of *s* to the singular.

Singular.	*Plural.*
maison, *house*	maisons, *houses.*
ville, *town;*	villes, *towns.*

(2.) *First exception.*—Nouns ending in the singular with *s*, *x*, or *z*, have the same form in the plural.

Singular.	*Plural.*
fils, *son*;	fils, *sons.*
voix, *voice*;	voix, *voices.*
nez, *nose*;	nez, *noses.*

(3.) *Second exception.*—Nouns ending in the singular with *au* and *eu*, take *x* in the plural.

Singular.	*Plural.*
chapeau, *hat*;	chapeaux, *hats*;
feu, *fire*;	feux, *fires.*

(4.) *Third exception.*—The following nouns ending in *ou* take *x* in the plural.

Singular.	*Plural.*
bijou, *jewel*;	bijoux, *jewels.*
caillou, *pebble*;	cailloux, *pebbles.*
chou, *cabbage*;	choux, *cabbages.*
genou, *knee*;	genoux, *knees.*
hibou, *owl*;	hiboux, *owls.*
joujou, *plaything*;	joujoux, *playthings.*

(5.) *Fourth exception.*—The following nouns ending in *ail*, change that termination into *aux* in the plural.

Singular.	*Plural.*
bail, *lease*;	baux, *leases.*
corail, *coral*;	coraux, *corals.*
émail, *enamel*;	émaux, *enamels.*
soupirail, *air-holes*;	soupiraux, *air-holes.*
sous-bail, *under-lease*;	sous-baux, *under-leases.*
travail, *labor*;	travaux, *labors.*

(6.) *Fifth exception.*—The following nouns form their plural irregularly.

Singular.	*Plural.*
ail, *garlic.*	aux.
bétail, *cattle.*	bestiaux.

(7.) *Sixth exception.*—Nouns ending in the singular with *al*, change that termination into *aux* in the plural.[1]

Singular.	*Plural.*
général, *general*;	généraux, *generals.*
cheval, *horse*;	chevaux, *horses.*
mal, *evil*;	maux, *evils.*

(8.) Ciel, œil, aïeul, travail, have two plurals.

Singular.		*Plural.*	
ciel,	*heaven*;	cieux,	*heavens.*
ciel,	*tester of a bed*; / *sky of a picture*;	ciels,	*testers of beds.* / *skies of pictures.*

[1] Bal, *ball*; carnaval, *carnival*; chacal, *jackal*; régal, *treat*, follow the general rule

œil, *eye;*	yeux, *eyes.*
œil-de-bœuf, *oval window*	œils-de-bœuf, *oval windows.*
aïeul, *ancestor;*	aïeux, *ancestors.*
aïeul, *grandfather;*	aïeuls, *grandfathers.*
travail, *labor;*	travaux, *labors.*
travail, *trave;*	travails, *traves.*

§ 9.— PLURAL OF COMPOUND NOUNS.

(1.) When two nouns form a compound substantive, both take the plural ending.

Singular.	*Plural.*
chef-lieu, *chief place;*	chefs-lieux, *chief places.*
lieutenant-colonel, *lieutenant-colonel;*	lieutenants-colonels, *lieutenant-colonels.*

(2.) When a compound noun is formed of two substantives joined by a preposition, the first only takes the plural ending.

Singular.	*Plural.*
arc-en-ciel, *rainbow;*	arcs-en-ciel, *rainbows.*
chef-d'œuvre, *masterpiece;*	chefs-d'œuvre, *masterpieces.*

The words tête-à-tête and coq-à-l'âne (*an incongruous discourse*), remain unchanged in the plural.

(3.) When a noun and an adjective form a compound noun, both are varied in the plural.

Singular.	*Plural.*
gentilhomme, *nobleman;*	gentilshommes, *noblemen.*
porte-cochère, *carriage-door;*	portes-cochères, *carriage-doors.*
basse-cour, *poultry-yard;*	basses-cours, *poultry-yards.*

(4.) For the sake of euphony, the mark of the plural[1] is omitted in the adjective of the following compound words.

Singular.	*Plural.*
grand'mère, *grandmother;*	grand'mères, *grandmothers.*
grand'messe, *high-mass;*	grand'messes, *high-masses.*

(5.) The words, monsieur, *sir, Mr., gentleman;* madame, *madam,* or *Mrs.*, mademoiselle, *miss,* form their plural as follows.

Singular.	*Plural.*
monsieur, *sir,* etc.;	messieurs, *sirs, gentlemen.*
madame, *madam,* etc.;	mesdames, *ladies,* etc.
mademoiselle, *miss,* etc.;	mesdemoiselles, *young ladies,* etc.

(6.) In words composed of a noun and a verb, a preposition, or an adverb, the noun takes the form of the plural; provided, however, there is plurality in the idea.

Singular.	*Plural.*
passe-port, *passport;*	passe-ports, *passports.*
avant-garde, *vanguard;*	avant-gardes, *vanguards.*

[1] The mark of the feminine also.

(7.) Compound nouns of which the second word indicates plurality, take *s* in the singular and plural.

Singular.	*Plural.*
cure-dents, *a tooth-pick;*	cure-dents, *tooth-picks.*
casse-noisettes, *nut-crackers;*	casse-noisettes, *nut-crackers.*

(8.) Words composed of two verbs, or of a verb joined to an adverb, or a preposition, are invariable.

Singular.	*Plural.*
passe-partout, *master-key;*	passe-partout, *master-keys.*
pour-boire, *coachman's fee;*	pour-boire, *coachman's fees.*

§ 10.—Nouns which have no Plural.

(1.) The names of metals considered in themselves: as, or, *gold;* argent, *silver;* plomb, *lead;* étain, *pewter;* fer, *iron;* cuivre, *copper;* vif-argent, *quicksilver.*

(2.) Aromas: such as baume, *balsam;* encens, *incense,* etc.

(3.) The names of virtues and vices, and some names relating to physical and moral man: as, la jeunesse, *youth;* la beauté, *beauty;* la bonté, *goodness;* le courage, *courage.*

(4.) Adjectives used substantively: as, le beau, *the beautiful;* l'utile, *the useful,* etc.

§ 11.—Nouns which have no Singular in the sense here given.

Arrhes,	*earnest money.*	Entraves,	*difficulties.*
Annales,	*annals.*	Fiançailles,	*betrothing.*
Appas,	*charms.*	Funérailles,	*funeral.*
Arrérages,	*arrears.*	Frais,	*expenses, costs.*
Arrêts (être aux),	*to be under arrest.*	Gages,	*wages.*
Assises,	*assizes.*	Gens,	*people.*
Broussailles,	*brushwood.*	Lunettes,	*spectacles.*
Catacombes,	*catacombs.*	Mœurs,	*manners.*
Ciseaux,	*scissors.*	Mouchettes,	*snuffers.*
Confins,	*confines.*	Pierreries,	*jewels, diamonds.*
Denrées, Vivres,	*provisions.*	Pincettes,	*tongs.*
Décombres,	*ruins.*	Pleurs,	*tears.*
Étrennes,	*New Year's presents.*	Semailles,	*seeding time.*
Environs, Alentours,	*environs.*	Ténèbres,	*darkness.*
		Tenailles,	*pincers.*
		Vitraux,	*window-glass.*

§ 12.—Proper Names.

(1.) Proper names, when not used figuratively, are invariable, even when preceded by the plural article, *les.*[1]

L'Espagne s'honore d'avoir produit les deux *Sénèque.* — *Spain prides itself on having given birth to the two Senecas.*

Raynouard.

[1] Often used by the French before the names of celebrated individuals. See second example.

Les *Locke*, les *Montesquieu*, les *J. J. Rousseau*, en se levant en Europe, appelèrent les peuples modernes à la liberté. CHATEAUBRIAND.

Locke, Montesquieu, J. J. Rousseau, as they arose in Europe, called upon modern nations to claim their liberty.

(2.) When proper names are used figuratively, they take the form of the plural.

La France a eu ses *Césars* et ses *Pompées*. NOËL ET CHAPSAL.

France has had its Cæsars and Pompeys.

That is, generals like Pompey and Cæsar.

Un coup d'œil de Louis enfantait des *Corneilles*. DELILLE.

A glance from Louis produced Corneilles.

That is, poets like Corneille.

§ 13.—THE ARTICLE.

(1.) The article is a word prefixed to a noun, or to a word used substantively, to determine the extent of its signification.

(2.) Modern French grammarians recognize only one article,

(3.) This article, contracted with the preposition *de*, is often used before a word in a partitive sense. [§ 78.]

(4.) The words *un*, masc., *une*, fem., answering to the indefinite article *a* or *an* in English, are now, very properly,[1] classed with the numeral adjectives. We shall, however, for the sake of convenience, devote a few lines to them under this head.

(5.) The article *le*, *the*, is *la* for the feminine, and *les* for the plural.

(6.) The article is subject to two kinds of changes: *elision* [§ 146] and *contraction*.

(7.) Elision is the suppression of the letters *e*, *a*, *i*,[2] which are replaced by an apostrophe ['] before a vowel, or an *h* mute [see Lesson 3, (10)]: thus,

l'esprit, *the mind*,	instead of	le esprit,
l'amitié, *the friendship*,	"	la amitié.
l'homme, *the man*,	"	le homme.
l'humanité, *humanity*,	"	la humanité.

(8.) Contraction is the union of the article *le*, *les*, with one of the prepositions, *à*, *de*. Thus we say by contraction:

au livre, *to the book*,	instead of	à le livre.
aux fruits, *to the fruits*,	"	à les fruits.
du livre, *of the book*,	"	de le livre.
des fruits, *of the fruits*,	"	de les fruits.

[1] No difference can be made in rendering English into French, between *a* and *one*, so that in French, *un* homme, means *a man*, or *one man*. The other numeral adjectives might, with as much propriety, have been called articles as this word *un*.

[2] See § 146.

(9.) The contractions *au, du*, are not used before masculine words commencing with a vowel, or an *h* mute, nor before feminine words.

à l'homme,	*to the man.*
à l'ami,	*to the friend.*
de l'homme,	*of the man.*
de l'ami,	*of the friend.*

(10.) The article used before words taken in a partitive sense [§ 78, (1)], comes in connection or contraction with the preposition *de*. It is rendered in English by *some* or *any*, expressed or understood.

du pain, m.	*bread, some bread,*	or *of the* bread	(*a part of*).
de l'argent, m.	*money, some money,*	*of the* money	(*a part of*).
de la viande, f.	*meat, some meat,*	*of the* meat	(*a part of*).
de l'argenterie, f.	*silver-plate, some silver-plate,*	*of the* silver-plate	(*a part of*).
des livres, m.	*books, some books,*	*of the* books	(*a part of*).

(11.) The English indefinite article, *a* or *an*, is rendered in French by *un* for the masculine, and *une* for the feminine. When those words are connected with the preposition *de*, the *e* of the preposition is elided.

Masculine.	*Feminine.*
un homme, *a man.*	une femme, *a woman.*
d'un homme, *of* or *from a man.*	d'une femme, *of* or *from a woman.*
à un homme, *at* or *to a man.*	à une femme, *at* or *to a woman.*

Résumé of the above Observations.

le, before a masculine word,	*commencing with a consonant,*	*the.*
la, before a feminine word,		
l', before a word of either gender,	*commencing with a vowel or h mute,*	
les, for the plural, *in all cases.*		
du, before a masculine word,	*commencing with a consonant,*	*of the, from the some, any.*
de la, before a feminine word,		
de l', before a word of either gender,	*commencing with a vowel or h mute.*	
des, for the plural, *in all cases.*		
au, before a masculine word,	*commencing with a consonant,*	*at* or *to the*
à la, before a feminine word,		
à l', before a word of either gender,	*commencing with a vowel or h mute.*	
aux, for the plural, *in all cases.*		
un, before a masculine noun,		*a, an, one.*
une, before a feminine noun,		
d'un, before a masculine noun,		*of* or *from a, an, one.*
d'une, before a feminine noun,		
à un, before a masculine noun,		*at* or *to a, an, one.*
à une, before a feminine noun.		

Le père et *la* mère sont *au* désespoir. B. DE ST. PIERRE.

The father and mother are in despair.

*L'*amitié dans nos cœurs verse *un* bonheur paisible. DEMOUSTIER.

Friendship pours a peaceful happiness into our hearts.

*L'*honneur *aux* grands cœurs est plus cher que *la* vie. CORNEILLE.

Honor is dearer than life in noble hearts.

Les filles et *les* garçons chantèrent en chœur. B. DE ST. PIERRE.

The boys and girls sang in chorus.

Sur *les* rives *du* Gange, on voit fleurir *l'*ébène. DELILLE.

On the banks of the Ganges, we see the ebony in bloom.

La violette se cache timidement, *au* milieu *des* filles *de l'*ombre. DELEUZE.

The violet conceals herself timidly, in the midst of the daughters of the shade.

Le remords se réveille *au* cri *de la* nature. DE BELLOY.

Remorse is aroused by the cry of nature.

La moitié *des* humains vit *aux* dépens *de l'*autre. DESTOUCHES.

The half of mankind lives at the expense of the other.

§ 14–1.—THE ADJECTIVE.

(1.) The adjective serves to denote the quality or manner of being of the noun.

(2.) Adjectives are of two sorts: *qualifying adjectives*, and *determining adjectives*.

(3.) We call *qualifying adjectives* those which add to the idea of the object that of a quality proper to it; as, bon, *good;* noble, *noble;* courageux, *courageous.*

(4.) *Determining adjectives* are those which add to the idea of the object that of a particular limitation or determination; as, quelque, *some;* tout, *all;* autre, *other;* mon, *my;* nul, *no;* un, *one;* deux, *two.*

§ 14–2.—QUALIFYING ADJECTIVES.

(1.) These adjectives may express qualities: 1. Simply; 2. With comparison; 3. Carried to a very high degree. Thence the three degrees of qualification: the positive, the comparative, and the superlative.

(2.) The positive is nothing but the adjective in its simplest signification:

Moi, je suis à Paris *triste, pauvre, reclus.* BOILEAU.

At Paris, I am sad, poor, and secluded.

(3.) The comparative is the adjective expressing a comparison between two or several objects. There is, then, between the objects compared, a relation of *equality*, *superiority*, or *inferiority*.

(4.) The comparison of equality expresses a quality in the same degree in the objects compared. It is formed[1] by placing aussi, *as*, or

[1] In French, adjectives cannot be compared, as in English, by means of changes in the termination. With the exception of meilleur, *better;* moindre, *less;* and pire, *worse*, all comparisons must be formed by means of adverbs.

autant, *as much*, before the adjective, and the conjunction que, *as*, after it:

L'Allemagne est *aussi* peuplée que la France. VOLTAIRE.	*Germany is as populous as France.*
A leur tête est le chien, superbe *autant qu*'utile. DELILLE.	*At their head stands the dog, as noble as useful.*

5. The relation or comparison of superiority expresses a quality in a higher degree in one object than in another. This comparison is formed by placing plus, *more*, before the adjective, and que, *than*, after it:

Les actions sont *plus* sincères *que* les paroles. MLLE. DE SCUDÉRY.	*Actions are more sincere than words.*
Le pied du cerf est *mieux* fait *que* celui du bœuf. BUFFON.	*The foot of the stag is better formed than that of the ox.*

(6.) The comparison of inferiority expresses a quality in a lower degree in one object than in another. It is formed by placing moins, *less*, before the adjective, and que, *than*, after it:

Le naufrage et la mort sont *moins* funestes *que* les plaisirs qui attaquent la vertu. FÉNELON.	*Shipwreck and death are less fatal than those pleasures which attack virtue.*

(7.) We have only three adjectives which are comparatives of themselves: meilleur, *better*;[1] moindre, *less*; pire, *worse*.

Meilleur, instead of *plus bon*, which is never used in the sense of *better*:

Il n'est *meilleur* ami ni parent que soi-même. LA FONTAINE.	*We have no better friend, no better relation than ourselves.*

[1] Mieux, *better*; pis, *worse*; moins, *less*. The English words *better*, *worse*, *less*, are sometimes adverbs, and when they are so, should be rendered by the several words placed at the commencement of this note. A practical way of determining the nature of those words in English is:

1. To change the word *better* into the expression "*in a better manner*." If this change may be made without changing the sense, the word *better* is an adverb, and must be rendered by *mieux*:

He reads better (in a better manner) than his brother.	Il lit *mieux* que son frère.

2. If you change *worse* into "*in a worse manner*," it should be translated *pis*, or more elegantly, *plus mal*:

He reads worse (in a worse manner) than his brother.	Il lit *pis* (plus mal) que son frère.

3. When you may substitute "*a smaller amount* or *quantity*" for the word *less*, it should be rendered *moins*:

He reads less (a smaller amount) than his brother.	Il lit *moins* que son frère.

Pire, instead of *plus mauvais*, which may however be used:

Le remède est parfois *pire* que le mal. LENOBLE.	*The remedy is at times worse than the evil.*

Moindre, instead of *plus petit*, an expression also in use:

Ce n'est pas être petit que d'être *moindre* qu'un grand. BOISTE.	*Being less than great is not being small.*

(8.) The *superlative*, or third degree of qualification, expresses the quality carried to a very high, or to the highest degree; thence there are two sorts of superlatives: the relative and the absolute.

(9.) The superlative relative marks a very high or the highest degree *relatively*, or with comparison. It is formed by placing, le, la, les, *the;* mon, *my;* ton, *thy;* son, *his;* notre, *our;* votre, *your;* leur, leurs, *their*, before the comparative of superiority or inferiority.

Un bienfait reçu est *la plus sacrée* de toutes les dettes. MME. NECKER.	*A benefit received is the most sacred of all debts.*
La probité reconnue est *le plus sûr* de tous les serments. (THE SAME.)	*Acknowledged probity is the most secure of all oaths.*

(10.) The words *le plus, le moins*, must be repeated before every adjective.

Ce sont les livres *les plus* agréables, *les plus* universellement lus, et *les plus* utiles. BERNARDIN DE ST. PIERRE.	*These books are the most agreeable, the most universally read, and the most useful.*

(11.) The superlative absolute expresses also a very high degree, but absolutely, without comparison. It is formed by placing before the adjective one of these words, *très, fort, infiniment, extrêmement*, etc.

Il y a à la ville, comme ailleurs, de *fort* sottes gens. LA BRUYÈRE.	*There are in cities, as elsewhere, very silly people.*
Je vous prie de croire que je ne songe qu'à vous, et que vous m'êtes *extrêmement chère.* MME. DE SÉVIGNÉ.	*I beg you to believe that you are my only thought, and that you are extremely dear to me.*

§ 15.—GENDER AND NUMBER OF ADJECTIVES.

(1.) The adjective has, of itself, neither gender nor number; it must assume the gender and number of the noun to which it belongs.

(2.) The termination of the adjective varies according to the gender and number of the noun which it qualifies or determines.

Un homme *prudent*,	Une femme *prudente.*
A prudent man.	*A prudent woman.*
Des hommes *prudents*,	Des femmes *prudentes.*
Prudent men.	*Prudent women.*

§ 16.—Formation of the Feminine of Adjectives.

(1.) All adjectives ending with *e* mute, remain unchanged in the feminine.

Masculine.	*Feminine.*
Un homme *agréable.*	Une femme *agréable.*
An agreeable man.	*An agreeable woman.*
Un mur *solide.*	Une maison *solide.*
A strong (solid) wall.	*A strong (solid) house.*

(2.) Adjectives not ending in *e* mute, form their feminine by the addition of *e.*

Masculine.	*Feminine.*
Un garçon *diligent.*	Une fille *diligente.*
A diligent boy.	*A diligent girl.*
Un homme *poli.*	Une dame *polie.*
A polite man.	*A polite lady.*

(3.) Exceptions.

			Mas.	*Fem.*	
Adjectives ending in EL	*Change those terminations for the feminine into*	ELLE,	tel,	telle,	*such.*
EIL		EILLE,	pareil,	pareille,	*like.*
EN		ENNE,	ancien,	ancienne,	*ancient.*
ET		ETTE,	muet,	muette,	*mute.*
ON		ONNE,	bon,	bonne,	*good.*
F		VE,	neuf,	neuve,	*new.*
S		SSE,	gras,	grasse,	*fat.*
X		SE,	heureux,	heureuse,	*happy.*

(4.) The following, although ending with these terminations, form their feminine otherwise.

complet,	*complete,*	*make in the feminine*	complète.
concret,	*concrete,*		concrète.
discret,	*discreet,*		discrète.
inquiet,	*uneasy,*		inquiète.
secret,	*secret,*		secrète.
replet,	*replete,*		replète.
mauvais,	*bad,*	*follow the general rule and make in the feminine.*	mauvaise.
niais,	*silly,*		niaise.
ras,	*close-shorn,*		rase.
doux,	*soft, sweet,*	*make in the feminine*	douce.
faux,	*false,*		fausse.
préfix,	*prefixed,*		préfixe.
roux,	*reddish,*		rousse.
tiers,	*third,*		tierce.

(5.) Adjectives ending in *eur*, as also some substantives of the same termination, have three several modes of forming the feminine:

1*st.* Those which are derived from the participle present of a

French verb by dropping *ant*, and substituting *eur*, change the final letter (*r*) into *se*, as

Pres. Part.		*Masculine.*		*Feminine.*
dans*ant*,	whence	dans*eur*;	and thence	dans*euse*.
tromp*ant*,		tromp*eur*;	"	tromp*euse*.

Here, however, note that *chanteur*, when signifying *a professional singer*, takes for the feminine *cantatrice*. Like anomalies appear in the following:

ambassadeur, *ambassador*, bailleur, *lessor*, chasseur, *hunter*, demandeur, *plaintiff*, défendeur, *defendant*, devineur, *guesser*, enchanteur, *enchanter*, gouverneur, *governor*, pécheur, *sinner*, serviteur, *servant*,	*make in the feminine*	ambassadrice, bailleresse. chasseresse. demanderesse. défenderesse. devineresse. enchanteresse. gouvernante. pécheresse. servante.

2*d*. Those ending in *teur* and derived from the Latin, and consequently, not falling under the Rule (1*st*) just given, form the feminine by changing *teur* into *trice*; as,

Masculine.	*Feminine.*
acteur, *actor*,	actrice, *actress*.
admirateur, *admirer*,	admiratrice, *admirer*.

Exceptions to Rule 1st, however, are the following:

débiteur, *debtor*, exécuteur, *executor*, inspecteur, *inspector*, inventeur, *inventor*, persécuteur, *persecutor*,	*make in the feminine*	débitrice. exécutrice. inspectrice. inventrice. persécutrice.

3*d*. Those ending in *érieur*, also *majeur*, *mineur*, *meilleur*, follow the general rule, that is, add *e* to form the feminine; as,

extérieur, *exterior*, supérieur, *superior*, majeur, *of age*, *major*, mineur, *minor*, meilleur, *better*,	*make in the feminine*	extérieure. supérieure. majeure. mineure. meilleure.

(6.) Adjectives, as also nouns, indicating occupation chiefly exercised by men, are alike in the masculine and the feminine; as,

auteur, *author*, littérateur, *literary person*.

(7.) The following adjectives having two forms for the masculine, form their feminine as follows:

Masculine before a consonant.	*Masculine before a vowel or h mute.*	*Feminine.*	
beau,	bel,	belle,	*handsome.*
fou,	fol,	folle,	*foolish.*
mou,	mol,	molle,	*soft.*
nouveau,	nouvel,	nouvelle,	*new.*
vieux,	vieil,	vieille.	*old.*

Irregular Adjectives.

(8.) The following adjectives form their feminine irregularly:

Masculine.	*Feminine.*
absous, *absolved,*	absoute.
bénin, *benign,*	bénigne.
blanc, *white,*	blanche.
caduc, *decrepit, infirm,*	caduque.
coi, *quiet,*	coite.
dissous, *dissolved,*	dissoute.
favori, *favorite,*	favorite.
frais, *fresh,*	fraîche.
franc, *free, frank.*	franche.
gentil, *pretty, genteel,*	gentille.
grec, *Grecian, Greek,*	grecque.
hébrew, *Hebrew,*	hébraïque, *used only of the Hebrew tongue.*
jouvenceau (obsolete), *a stripling,*	jouvencelle.
jumeau, *twin,*	jumelle.
long, *long, slow,*	longue.
maître, *master, masterly,*	maîtresse.
malin, *cunning, malignant,*	maligne.
mulâtre, *mulatto,*	mulâtre *or* mulâtresse.
muscat, *muscat,*	muscade.
nul, *null, none,*	nulle.
oblong, *oblong,*	oblongue.
public, *public,*	publique.
résous, *resolved, changed,*	résolue.
sec, *dry, barren,*	sèche.
sot, *silly,*	sotte.
traître, *traitor, treacherous,*	traîtresse.
turc, *Turkish,*	turque.
vieillot, *oldish,*	vieillotte.

(9.) The following have no feminine:

artisan, *mechanic.*	partisan, *partisan.*
châtain, *chestnut color.*	témoin, *witness.*
dispos, *active.*	*vélin,* vellum, of vellum.

§ 17.—Formation of the Plural of Adjectives.

(1.) *General Rule.*—The plural of adjectives is formed by the addition of *s* to the masculine, or to the feminine termination.

Masculine.		*Feminine.*	
Singular.	*Plural.*	*Singular.*	*Plural.*
grand, *great*,	grands;	grande,	grandes.
petit, *small*,	petits;	petite,	petites.

(2.) This rule has no exceptions, with regard to the feminine termination.

(3.) With regard to the masculine termination, it is subject to the three following exceptions:

First Exception.—Adjectives ending in the singular with *s* or *x*, do not change their form in the plural.

Singular.	*Plural.*
heureux, *happy*,	heureux.
doux, *sweet, soft*,	doux.

Second Exception.—Adjectives having in the singular the termination *eau*, form their plural masculine by the addition of *x*.

Singular.	*Plural.*
beau, *handsome, beautiful*,	beaux,
jumeau, *twin*,	jumeaux.
nouveau, *new*,	nouveaux.

Third Exception.—Adjectives ending in *al*, form their plural masculine by changing *al* into *aux*.

Singular.	*Plural.*
libéral, *liberal*,	libéraux.
national, *national*,	nationaux.
rural, *rural*,	ruraux.

We quote from Bescherelle's *Grammaire Nationale*, those adjectives ending in *al*, which follow the general rule.

Singular.	*Plural.*
amical, *friendly.*	amicals.
bancal, *bandy-legged*,	bancals.
fatal, *fatal*,	fatals.
final, *final*,	finals.
frugal, *frugal*,	frugals.
filial, *filial*,	filials.
glacial, *frozen, icy*	glacials.
initial, *initial*,	initials.
labial, *labial*,	labials.
matinal, *early*,	matinals.
médial, *medial*,	médials.
naval, *naval*,	navals.
pascal, *paschal*,	pascals.
pénal, *penal*,	pénals.
théatral, *theatrical*,	théatrals.

§ 18.—Agreement of Adjectives with Nouns.

(1.) The adjective must agree, in gender and number, with the noun or pronoun which it qualifies:

Masculine.		*Feminine.*	
Singular.	*Plural.*	*Singular.*	*Plural.*
le *beau* jardin,	les *beaux* jardins;	la *belle* maison,	les *belles* maisons.
the fine garden,	*the fine gardens;*	*the fine house,*	*the fine houses.*
le *grand* livre,	les *grands* livres;	la *grande* carte,	les *grandes* cartes.
the large book,	*the large books;*	*the large map,*	*the large maps.*

(2.) This agreement must take place, not only when the adjective immediately precedes or follows the noun or pronoun, but also when it is separated by other words:

Masculine.

Singular.—Plaise à Dieu de te rendre assez *bon* pour mériter la vie *heureuse!* FÉNELON.

May God render thee sufficiently good to deserve the blessed life.

Plural.—Jamais, en quoi que ce puisse être les méchants ne sont *bons* à rien de bon. J. J. ROUSSEAU.

The wicked are never, in any circumstances, fitted (good) to perform any thing good.

Feminine.

Singular.—L'honneur de passer pour *bonne* l'empêchait de *se* montrer *mauvaise.* MARIVAUX.

The honor of passing for good prevented her showing herself bad.

Plural.—Loin de nous raidir contre les inclinations qui sont *bonnes,* il faut les suivre pour servir Dieu. MME. DE MAINTENON.

Far from resisting our good inclinations, we should follow them in order to serve God.

(3.) When an adjective relates to two or more substantives, whether in the singular or the plural, and all of the same gender, it must agree with the nouns in gender, and be put in the plural:

Le riche et l'indigent, l'imprudent et le sage,
Sujets à même loi, subissent même sort. J. J. ROUSSEAU.

The rich and the poor, the imprudent and the wise, being subject to the same law, experience the same fate.

(4.) When the words which the adjective qualifies are of different genders, the adjective must be put in the masculine plural:

Je tâche de rendre *heureux,* ma femme, mon enfant, et même mon chat, et mon chien. BERNARDIN DE ST. PIERRE.

I try to render happy, my wife, my child, and even my cat, and my dog.

L'ordre et l'utilité *publics* ne peuvent être le fruit du crime. MASSILLON.

Public order and utility cannot be the fruits of crime.

For special rules on this point, see § 83.

§ 19.—Determining or Determinative Adjectives.

There are four sorts of determining adjectives—the demonstrative, the possessive, the numeral, and the indefinite.

§ 20.—Demonstrative Adjectives.

(1.) The demonstrative adjectives are used, when an object is to be particularly specified or pointed out. They are never, in French, used substantively, that is, without the nouns which they determine:

Singular.

Masculine.—Ce, *this* or *that*, placed *before a word commencing with a consonant.*
Cet, *this* or *that*, placed *before a word commencing with a vowel or an* h *mute.*
Feminine.—Cette, *this* or *that*, placed *before all sorts of nouns.*

Plural.

Ces, *for both genders.*

Examples.

Masculine Singular.		*Feminine Singular.*	
ce soldat,	*this* or *that soldier.*	cette femme,	*this* or *that woman.*
cet ami,	*that* or *this friend.*	cette épée,	*that* or *this sword.*
cet homme,	*this* or *that man.*	cette harpe,	*this* or *that harp.*

Plural.

ces hommes, *these* or *those men;* ces femmes, *these* or *those women.*

Voyez *ce* papillon échappé du tombeau;
Sa mort fut un sommeil, et sa tombe un berceau. Delille.

See that butterfly escaped from the tomb: his death was a slumber, and his tomb a cradle.

. . . . *Cet* admirable don,
L'instinct, sans doute est loin de l'auguste raison. (The same.)

That admirable gift, instinct, is doubtless far beneath majestic reason.

Là, *cette* jeune plante en vase disposée,
Dans sa coupe élégante accueille la rasée. (The same.)

There that young plant prepared as a vase, receives the dew in its elegant cup.

Ces honneurs que le vulgaire admire,
Réveillent-ils les morts au sein de monuments? Soulé.

Do these honors, admired by the vulgar, awake the dead from their sepulchres?

(2.) When is it necessary to make, in French, a difference similar to that existing between the English words *this* and *that*, the adverbs *ci* and *là* must be placed after the noun.

ce livre-ci, *this book* (here),
ces livres-ci, *these books,*

ce livre-là, *that book* (there).
ces livres-là, *those books.*

§ 21.—Possessive Adjectives.

(1.) The possessive adjectives, which are always joined to a noun, relate to possession or property; they are:

Singular.		*Plural,*	
Masculine.	*Feminine.*	*for both genders.*	
mon,	ma,	mes,	*my.*
ton,	ta,	tes,	*thy.*
son,	sa,	ses,	*his, her, its.*
notre,	notre,	nos,	*our.*
votre,	votre,	vos,	*your,*
leur,	leur,	leurs,	*their.*

(2.) In French, these adjectives take the gender and number of the object possessed, and not, as in English, those of the possessor.

Masc. sing.	*Fem. sing.*	*Pl. both genders.*
mon frère, *my brother,*	ma sœur, *my sister,*	mes cousins, *my cousins.*
ton livre, *thy book,*	ta plume, *thy pen,*	tes maisons, *thy houses.*
son papier, *his* or *her paper,*	sa table, *his* or *her table.*	ses habits, *his* or *her clothes.*
notre cheval, *our horse,*	notre vache, *our cow,*	nos prairies, *our meadows,*
votre lit, *your bed,*	votre chaise, *your chair,*	vos crayons, *your pencils.*
leur foin, *their hay,*	leur paille, *their straw,*	leurs fermes, *their farms.*

Sobriété dans toute chose,
Mon ami, c'est l'art de jouir.
DU TREMBLAY.

Sobriety in all things, is, my friend, the true enjoyment.

Ma main de quelque fleur esquisse la peinture. CASTEL.

My hand sketches the picture of some flower.

Mes sens sont glacés d'effroi.
J. B. ROUSSEAU.

My senses are frozen with fear.

De *son* propre artifice on est souvent victime.
COLIN D'HARLEVILLE.

One is often the victim of his own artifice.

A *sa* vocation chaque être doit répondre. FR. DE NEUFCHATEAU.

Every being should fulfil his vocation.

Il faut de *ses* amis endurer quelque chose. MOLIÈRE.

We must bear something from our friends.

Notre vie est une maison,
Y mettre le feu c'est folie.
NIVERNAIS.

Our life is a house; to set it on fire is folly.

Vos mailles se rompront sous la charge pesante. CASTEL.

Your meshes will break under the heavy burden.

Leurs fleurs suivront mes pas, en récréant ma vue. (THE SAME.)

Their flowers will follow my steps, and please my sight.

(3.) The adjectives mon, *my;* ton, *thy;* son, *his* or *her,* are used instead of ma, ta, sa, before feminine words commencing with a vowel, or an *h* mute, in order to prevent the meeting of two vowels, or of a vowel and an *h* mute; thus we say,

mon épée *my sword, and never* ma épée.
ton épouse, *thy wife, instead of* ta épouse.
son armée, *his army, but never* sa armée.

C'en est fait, *mon* heure est venue. — *All is over, my hour is come.*
BOILEAU.

(4.) The possessive adjectives must be repeated before every noun.

Mon frère, ma sœur, et mes cousins sont à Paris. — *My brother, sister, and cousins are at Paris.*

§ 22.—NUMERAL ADJECTIVES.

(1.) There are two kinds of numeral adjectives: the cardinal and the ordinal.

(2.) The cardinal numbers indicate simply the number or quality, without any reference to order: as, un, *one;* deux, *two,* etc.

(3.) The ordinal numbers mark the order or rank which persons and things occupy: as, premier, *first;* second, *second,* etc.

We shall, for the purposes of comparison, place the cardinal and ordinal numbers in parallel columns.

(4.) *Cardinal Numbers.*		(5.) *Ordinal Numbers.*	
un, *feminine* une,	*one.*	premier, *feminine* première,	*first.*
deux,	2	deuxième *or* second, *f.* seconde,	2d.
trois,	3	troisième,	3d.
quatre,	4	quatrième,	4th.
cinq,	5	cinquième,	5th.
six,	6	sixième,	6th.
sept,	7	septième,	7th.
huit,	8	huitième,	8th.
neuf,	9	neuvième,	9th.
dix,	10	dixième,	10th.
onze,	11	onzième,	11th.
douze,	12	douzième,	12th.
treize,	13	treizième,	13th.
quatorze,	14	quatorzième,	14th.
quinze,	15	quinzième,	15th.
seize,	16	seizième,	16th.
dix-sept,	17	dix-septième,	17th.
dix-huit,	18	dix-huitième,	18th.
dix-neuf,	19	dix-neuvième,	19th.
vingt,	20	vingtième,	20th.
vingt et un,	21	vingt et unième,	21st.
vingt-deux, &c.,	22	vingt-deuxième, &c.,	22d.
trente,	30	trentième,	30th.
trente et un,	31	trente et unième,	31st.
trente-deux, &c.,	32	trente-deuxième,	32d.
quarante,	40	quarantième,	40th.
quarante et un,	41	quarante et unième,	41st.
quarante-deux, &c.,	42	quarante-deuxième,	42d.
cinquante,	50	cinquantième,	50th.
cinquante et un,	51	cinquante et unième,	51st.
cinquante-deux, &c.,	52	cinquante-deuxième,	52d.
soixante,	60	soixantième,	60th.
soixante et un,	61	soixante et unième,	61st.
soixante-deux, &c.,	62	soixante-deuxième,	62d.

Cardinal Numbers.		*Ordinal Numbers.*	
soixante-dix,	70	soixante-dixième,	70th.
soixante-onze,	71	soixante-onzième,	71st.
soixante-douze,	72	soixante-douzième,	72d.
soixante-treize,	73	soixante-treizième,	73d.
soixante-quatorze,	74	soixante-quatorzième	74th.
soixante-quinze,	75	soixante-quinzième	75th.
soixante-seize,	76	soixante-seizième,	76th.
soixante-dix-sept,	77	soixante-dix-septième,	77th.
soixante-dix-huit,	78	soixante-dix-huitième,	78th
soixante-dix-neuf,	79	soixante-dix-neuvième,	79th.
quatre-vingts,	80	quatre-vingtième,	80th.
quatre-vingt-un,	81	quatre-vingt-unième,	81st.
quatre-vingt-deux,	82	quatre-vingt-deuxième,	82d.
quatre-vingt-dix,	90	quatre-vingt-dixième,	90th.
quatre-vingt-onze,	91	quatre-vingt-onzième,	91st.
quatre-vingt-douze, &c.,	92	quatre-vingt-douzième,	92d.
cent,	100	centième,	100th.
cent-un,	101	cent-unième,	101st.
deux cents,	200	deux centième,	200th.
deux cent-un,	201	deux cent-unième,	201st.
trois cents,	300	trois centième,	300th.
trois cent-un,	301	trois cent-unième,	301st.
mille,	1000	millième,	1000th.
deux mille,	2000	deux millième,	2000th.
deux mille cinquante,	2050	deux mille cinquantième,	2050th.
un million,	1,000,000	millionième,	1,000,000th.

§ 23.—Variations of the Cardinal Numbers.

(1.) The following cardinal numbers vary:

(2.) Un, *one, a,* or *an,* takes the gender of the noun to which it is prefixed:

un livre, *a book; une* feuille, *a leaf.*

When used substantively, *un* takes, at times, the form of the plural.

Masc. Les *uns* et les autres, *These and those,*
Fem. Les *unes* et les autres, (*The ones and the others*).

(3.) *Vingt* and *cent,* when multiplied by one number, and not followed by another, take the form of the plural:

quatre-*vingts, eighty;* six *cents, six hundred.*

L'homme vit *quatre-vingts* ans, le chien n'en vit que dix. Buffon. *Man lives eighty years, the dog only ten.*

On m'apporta chez moi, douze *cents* francs. J. J. Rousseau. *They brought me, at my house, twelve hundred francs.*

(4.) *Vingt* and *cent,* however, when multiplied by one number, and

followed by another, or if not followed by a number, used to indicate a particular epoch, do not take the form of the plural.

quatre-*vingt*-cinq hommes,	*eighty-five men.*
cinq *cent*-deux hommes,	*five hundred and two men.*
Charlemagne fut proclamé empereur d'Occident, le jour de Noël, en huit *cent.* VOLTAIRE.	*Charlemagne was proclaimed emperor of the West, Christmas-day, in the year eight hundred.*

(5.) Mille—(*thousand.*) For the date of the year, reckoned from the commencement of the Christian era to the year two thousand of the same, we use the abbreviated form, *mil.*

L'an *mil* huit cent cinquante,	*The year one thousand eight hundred and fifty.*

(6.) With regard to the years which have *preceded* our era, and those which will *follow* our present *thousand*, we write the full form, *mille.*

La première irruption des Gaulois, eut lieu sous le règne de Tarquin, environ l'an du monde trois *mille* quatre cent-seize. VERTOT.	*The first irruption of the Gauls took place under the reign of Tarquin, about the year of the world* 3416.

(7.) Million, billion, take the plural form.

§ 24.—MISCELLANEOUS OBSERVATIONS ON THE CARDINAL NUMBERS.

(1.) In French, in computing from twenty to thirty, thirty to forty, &c., the larger number must always precede the smaller. We may not say, as often in English, *one* and *twenty*, but always *vingt et un*, *vingt-deux*, &c.

(2.) The conjunction *et*, after vingt, trente, &c., is only used before *un:* thus we say vingt et un, *twenty* (and) *one*, and simply vingt-deux, *twenty-two*, &c.

(3.) The word *one* frequently precedes in English the words *hundred* and *thousand;* it must not be rendered in French. We say:

mille hommes,	*one thousand men.*
cent francs,	*one hundred francs.*

(4.) When the words *cent* and *mille* are used substantively before the name of objects generally reckoned or sold by the hundred or thousand in number or in weight, the word *un* may be placed before them, the name of the object being preceded by the preposition *de.*

Un cent, un mille, (millier) de briques,
One hundred, one thousand (of) bricks.
Un cent (un quintal) de sucre,
One hundred (weight) of sugar.

(5.) The words septante, *seventy;* octante, *eighty;* and nonante, *ninety,* are now nearly obsolete, being used only in a few provinces of France. They are, as may be seen in the preceding table, replaced by the awkward expressions, *soixante-dix,* sixty-ten; *quatre-vingts,* four-*twenties* (four score); *quatre-vingt-dix,* four-score-ten, etc.

(6.) Before the words onze, *eleven,* and onzième, *eleventh,* the article is not elided. We say *le onze, le onzième, la onzième.* In pronunciation, the *s* of the plural article *les* is silent when this article precedes *onze* or *onzième.*

§ 25.—Observations on the Ordinal Numbers.

(1.) It will be seen that the ordinal numbers, with the exception of *premier* and *second,* are formed from the cardinal—

1. By the change of *f* into *vième* in *neuf;*
2. By the change of *e* into *ième* in those ending with that vowel;
3. By the addition of *ième* in those ending with a consonant;
4. Cinq requires *uième* to make *cinquième,* fifth.

(2.) All ordinal adjectives may take the form of the plural.

(3.) *Premier* and *second* alone vary for the feminine, and make *première, seconde.*

(4.) *Unième* (*first*) is only used in composition with *vingt, trente,* etc.

(5.) *Second, deuxième* (*second*)—*Deuxième* supposes a series, a continuation; *second* merely indicates the order:

1st. We may say of a work which has four or more volumes:

J'ai le *deuxième* (or *le second*) volume de cet ouvrage. — *I have the second volume of that work.*

2d. In speaking of a work which has only two volumes, we should say:

J'ai le *second* (not *le deuxième*) volume du dictionnaire de Bescherelle. — *I have the second volume of Bescherelle's Dictionary.*

3d. Under the ordinal numbers may be placed the following words, which are often used substantively:

Trentenaire,	*thirty,*	*of thirty*	*years'*	*duration;*
Quarantenaire,	*forty,*	*of forty*	"	"
Cinquantenaire,	*fifty years old,*	*of fifty*	"	"
Sexagénaire,	*sexagenarian,*	*of sixty*	"	"
Septuagénaire,	*septuagenarian,*	*of seventy*	"	"
Octogénaire,	*octogenarian,*	*of eighty*	"	"
Nonagénaire,	*nonogenarian,*	*of ninety*	"	"
Centenaire,	*centenarian,*	*of one hundred*	"	"

4th. Trentenaire and quarantenaire are law terms:

Possession trentenaire, quarantenaire. — *Thirty, forty years' possession.*

5th. Of the others, sexagénaire, septuagénaire, and octogénaire only are in frequent use:

Un octogénaire plantait, etc. — *A man eighty years old was planting trees.*
LA FONTAINE.

§ 26.—RULES.

(1.) In speaking of the days of the month, the French use the cardinal, not the ordinal number:

le *deux* mars, — *the second of March.*
le *dix-sept* avril, — *the seventeenth of April.*

L'ouverture des États-généraux eut lieu le *cinq* mai, 1789. THIERS. — *The opening of the States-general took place on the fifth of May*, 1789.

(2.) We must, however, say:

le *premier* (not *l'un*) juin, — *the first of June.*

(3.) The cardinal numbers are also employed in speaking of sovereigns and princes:

Charles *dix*, — *Charles the Tenth.*
Louis *dix-huit*, — *Lewis the Eighteenth.*

Louis *onze* avait trente-huit ans, quand il monta sur le trône. ANQUETIL. — *Lewis the Eleventh was thirty-eight years old, when he ascended the throne.*

La mort de Grégoire *sept* n'éteignit pas le feu qu'il avait allumé. VOLTAIRE. — *The death of Gregory the Seventh did not extinguish the fire which he had kindled.*

(4.) We must say, however,

Henri *premier*, — *Henry the First.*

(5.) *Deux* and *second* are, in this case, used indifferently:

Charles *deux*, Charles *second*, — *Charles the Second.*

(6.) In speaking of Charles the Fifth, of Germany, and of the Pope Sixtus the Fifth, the obsolete word *quint* (fifth) is used.

Charles-*quint*, — *Charles the Fifth.*
Sixte-*quint*, — *Sixtus the Fifth.*

We shall, in order to render reference easier, place here some observations on nouns and adverbs of number.

§ 27.—NUMERAL NOUNS.

(1.) The numeral nouns in use with the French are:

unité,	*unit;*	trentaine,	*thirty;*
couple, paire,	*couple, pair;*	quarantaine,	*two score;*
trio,	*trio, three;*	cinquantaine,	*fifty;*
demi-douzaine,	*half dozen;*	soixantaine,	*sixty;*
huitaine,	*eight days;*	quatre-vingtaine,	*eighty;*
neuvaine,	*nine (nine days of prayer);*	1 centaine,	*hundred;*
		deux centaines, &c.,	*two hundred;*
dizaine,	*ten, half a score;*	1 millier,	*one thousand;*
douzaine,	*dozen;*	deux milliers,	*two thousand;*
quinzaine,	*fifteen, fortnight;*	1 myriade,	*a myriad;*
vingtaine,	*score, twenty;*	1 million,	*a million;*

(2.) The termination *aine* signifies sometimes *nearly*, and when added to words of number is equivalent to the English *some*, in cases like the following: I have *some* twenty books, *i. e.*, about twenty books. J'ai une *vingtaine* de livres.

§ 28.—Fractional Numerals.

un quart,	*one quarter;*	un cinquième,	*one fifth;*
deux quarts,	*two quarters;*	deux cinquièmes,	*two fifths;*
trois quarts,	*three quarters;*	un sixième, etc.,	*one sixth, etc.;*
le tiers,	*the third;*	un dixième, etc.,	*one tenth, etc.;*
deux tiers,	*two thirds;*	un centième,	*one hundredth;*
la moitié,	*the half;*	un millième,	*one thousandth;*

(1.) It will be seen that, with the exception of tiers, quart and moitié, these numbers take the form of the ordinal numerals. They may, therefore, take the form of the plural when necessary.

(2.) The word *demi*, when used adjectively and preceding the noun is invariable.

une *demi*-heure, f.,	*half an hour.*
une *demi*-aune, f.	*half an ell.*

(3.) When coming after the noun to denote an *additional* half, it agrees in gender with the noun.

une heure et *demie*,	*one hour and a half;*
une aune et *demie*,	*one ell and a half.*

(4.) When used substantively, *demi* may take the form of the plural.

Cette horloge sonne les heures et les *demies*.	*That clock strikes the hours and the half-hours.*

§ 39.—Ordinal Adverbs.

(1.) Premièrement,	*first; in the first place;*	Quatrièmement,	*fourthly;*
		Cinquièmement,	*fifthly;*
		Sixièmement,	*sixthly;*
Deuxièmement, Secondement,	*secondly;*	Septièmement,	*seventhly;*
		Dixièmement,	*tenthly.*
Troisièmement,	*thirdly;*		

(2.) These, like adverbs of manner, are formed by the addition of *ment* to the feminine form of the adjective.

§ 30.—Indefinite Adjectives.

(1.) The indefinite adjectives are used when anything is to be represented or referred to in a general or indefinite manner. They are,

aucun,	*not any, not one;*	quel,	*what;*
chaque,	*every, each;*	quelconque,	*whatever;*
même,	*same;*	quelque,	*some;*
nul,	*no;*	tel,	*such;*
plusieurs,	*several;*	tout,	*all.*

(2.) AUCUN is generally followed by a noun, with which it must agree. It is followed by *ne* when it comes before a verb.

aucun homme, *no man;* — *aucune* femme, *no woman.*

Aucun chemin de fleurs *ne* conduit à la gloire. LA FONTAINE. — *No flowery path leads to glory.*

On méprise tous ceux qui *n'*ont *aucune* vertu. LA ROCHEFOUCAULD. — *All those who have no virtue are despised.*

(3.) *Aucun* is by the French authors sometimes used in the plural.

Ils ne peuvent souffrir aucun empire légitime, ne mettent *aucunes* bornes à leurs attentats. MONTESQUIEU. — *They can bear no legitimate dominion, set no bounds to their crimes.*

Aucun and *nul* should be put in the plural, only before such words as are not used in the singular, or have in the singular a different acceptation.

(4.) CHAQUE is of both genders, and is used only in the singular. It always precedes the noun, and cannot be separated from it by an adjective or by a preposition. It should never be used without a noun.

Chaque âge a ses plaisirs, *chaque* état a ses charmes. DELILLE. — *Every age has its pleasures, every situation its charms.*

(5.) MÊME, placed before the noun, has the sense of *same*, in English. Placed after the noun, it means, generally, *himself, herself, itself* or *themselves.* It may often be rendered by the word *even.* When *même* is an adjective it may take the form of the plural, but does not vary on account of gender.

c'est la *même* vertu; it is the same virtue. — c'est la vertu *même;* *it is virtue itself.*

Le peuple et les grands n'ont ni les *mêmes* vertus, ni les *mêmes* vices. VAUVENARGUES. — *The people and the great have neither the same virtues nor the same vices.*

Les écorces *mêmes* des végétaux sont en harmonie avec les températures de l'atmosphère. BERNARDIN DE ST. PIERRE. — *The bark even of vegetables is in harmony with the temperature of the atmosphere.*

(6.) It is at times difficult to distinguish *même* an adjective, from *même* an adverb, which is invariable. [See § 97, (2,) (3.)]

(7.) NUL is a stronger negative than *aucun.* It agrees in gender and number with the noun which it qualifies. Like *aucun*, when relating to the subject of the sentence, it requires *ne* before the verbs.

Nul homme n'est heureux; *nulle* chose ne peut le rendre tel. BOISTE. — *No man is happy; nothing can render him so.*

Nulle paix pour l'impie; il la cherche, elle le fuit. RACINE. — *No peace for the impious; he seeks it, it avoids him.*

(8). *Nul* is sometimes used alone, in the sense of *no one*:

Nul n'est content de sa fortune, ni mécontent de son esprit. MME. DESHOULIÈRES.

No one is pleased with his fortune, nor displeased with his own wit.

(9.) PLUSIEURS is, of course, always in the plural. It does not vary its form:

Il faut bien qu'il y ait *plusieurs* raisons d'ennui, quand tout le monde est d'accord pour bailler. FLORIAN.

There must necessarily be several reasons for ennui, when all agree in yawning.

(10.) QUEL takes the gender and number of the noun to which it relates. It is sometimes immediately followed by its noun, from which it may be separated by one or several words:

Quel tableau ravissant présentent les campagnes! DELILLE.

What a delightful picture the country offers!

Quelle invisible force a soumis l'univers? L. RACINE.

What invisible hand has conquered the universe?

Quels sons harmonieux, *quels* efforts ravissants,
De la reconnaissance égalent les accents?

What harmonious sounds, what ravishing strains, equal the voice of gratitude?

(11.) QUELCONQUE is always placed after the noun, and varies only for the plural:

Toutes les jouissances sont précédées d'un travail *quelconque*. MME. CAMPAN.

All enjoyments are preceded by some sort of exertion.

Deux points *quelconques* étant donnés . . . THE ACADEMY.

Two points of some kind being given

(12.) QUELQUE in the sense of *some* (*a certain number*), or *whatever*, agrees in number with the noun:

Il y a du mérite sans élévation, mais il n'y a point d'élévation sans *quelque* mérite. LA ROCHEFOUCAULD.

There is merit without elevation, but there is no elevation without some merit.

Quelques vains lauriers que promette la guerre,
On peut être héros sans ravager la terre. BOILEAU.

Whatever vain laurels war may promise, one may be a hero without ravaging the earth.

(13.) Quelque having the sense of *about* or *some* or *however*, is invariable:

Quel âge avez-vous? Vous avez bon visage! Eh! *quelque* soixante ans. RACINE, *les Plaideurs*.

How old are you? You look well. Oh! some sixty years.

Alexandre perdit *quelque* trois cents hommes, quand il vainquit Porus. D'ABLANCOURT.

Alexander lost some three hundred men, when he vanquished Porus.

Quelque méchants que soient les hommes, ils n'oseraient paraître ennemis de la vertu. LA ROCHEFOUCAULD.

However wicked men may be, they do not dare to appear enemies of virtue.

(14.) TEL makes in the feminine *telle;* in the plural masculine, *tels;* in the plural feminine *telles.* It agrees with the noun which it qualifies:

tel livre, *such book;* *telle* lettre, *such letter;*
tels livres, *such books;* *telles* lettres, *such letters.*

(15.) TOUT meaning every, is of course always in the singular but varies for the feminine:

Tout citoyen doit servir son pays; le soldat de son sang, le prêtre de son zèle. LA MOTTE.
Every citizen should serve his country; the soldier with his blood, the priest with his zeal.

En *toute* chose, il faut considérer la fin. LA FONTAINE.
In every thing, we must consider the end.

(16.) *Tout,* in the sense of *all,* agrees in gender and number with the noun to which it relates:

tout l'argent, *all the money;* *toute* la toile, *all the cloth.*

Il était au-dessus de *tous* ces vains objets qui forment *tous* les désirs et *toutes* les espérances des hommes. MASSILLON.
He was above all those vain objects which form all the desires and all the hopes of men.

See § 97 (5).

§ 31.—THE PRONOUN.

(1.) The pronoun, in French, as in other languages, is a word used to represent the noun, in order to prevent its too frequent repetition.

(2.) The pronoun serves also to designate the parts which each person or thing takes in speech. This part is called *person.*

(3.) There are three persons: the first, or that which speaks; the second, or that spoken to; the third, or that spoken of.

(4.) There are five sorts of pronouns:

The personal; The demonstrative;
The possessive; The relative;
The indefinite.

§ 32.—THE PERSONAL PRONOUNS.

(1.) The personal pronouns are so called because they seem to designate the three persons more especially than the other pronouns. These pronouns are:

	Nominative Form.		*Reflective Form.*	
	Singular.	*Plural.*	*Singular.*	*Plural.*
1.	je, *I;*	nous, *we;*	me, *myself;*	nous, *ourselves;*
2.	tu, *thou;*	vous, *you, ye;*	te, *thyself;*	vous, *yourselves;*
3.	il, *he, it,* m.; elle, *she, it,* f.;	ils, m. *they;* elles, f. *they.*	se, soi, *himself; herself; itself;*	se, *themselves;*

(2.) *Direct regimen, or Accusative.*

	When placed before the verb.		When placed after a verb.	
	Singular.	*Plural.*	*Singular.*	*Plural.*
1.	me, *me;*	nous, *us;*	moi, *me;*	nous, *us;*
2.	te, *thee;*	vous, *you;*	toi, *thee;*	vous, *you;*
3.	le, *him, it,* m.; la, *her, it,* f.;	les, *them;* both gend.	le, *him, it,* m.; la, *her, it,* f.;	les, *them,* both gend.

(3.) *Indirect regimen, or Dative.*

When placed before the verb.

Singular.		*Plural.*
1. me,	*to me;*	nous, *to us;*
2. te,	*to thee;*	vous, *to you;*
3. lui,	*to him; to her; to it;*	leur, *to them;* (both genders).

When placed after the verb.

Singular.			*Plural.*		
moi,	à moi,	*to me;*	nous,	à nous,	*to us;*
toi,	à toi,	*to thee;*	vous,	à vous,	*to you;*
lui,	à lui, à elle,	*to him; to her;*	leur,	à eux, m. à elles, f.	*to them.*

(4.) *Indirect regimen; Genitive and Ablative.*

Always placed after the verb.

Singular.			*Plural.*		
de moi,	*of* or	*from me;*	de nous,	*of* or	*from us;*
de toi,	"	*thee;*	de vous,	"	*you;*
de lui,	"	*him;*	d'eux,	"	*them,* m.;
d'elle,	"	*her;*	d'elles,	"	*them,* f.

§ 33.—Remarks on the Personal Pronouns.

(1.) The French, as well as the English, use the second person plural for the second person singular, in addressing one person.

(2.) The second person singular, however, is used, as in English, in addressing the Supreme Being:

Grand Dieu! *tes* jugements sont remplis d'équité. Des Barreaux.

Great God! thy judgments are full of equity.

(3.) It is also used in poetry, or to give more energy to the diction.

O mon souverain roi! *O my sovereign king!*
Me voici donc tremblante et seule devant *toi.* Racine, *Esther.*

Here I am trembling and alone before thee.

(4.) It is used by parents to children, and also among intimate friends.

(5.) The pronoun *il* is used unipersonally, in the same manner as the English pronoun *it.*

il pleut, *it rains;* *il* gèle, *it freezes.*

(5.) Observe, that the personal pronouns of the third person are not used for the indirect regimen to represent inanimate objects.

The relative pronouns EN, *of or from it* [§ 39 (17)], Y, *to it* [§ 39 (18)] are used instead of the personal pronouns. Thus, in speaking of a *house*, we do not say, Je *lui* ajouterai une aile, *I will add a wing to it*. We must say:

J'*y* ajouterai une aile;	*I will add a wing to it (thereto).*

In speaking of an author, we may say:

Que pensez-vous *de lui*?	*What do you think of him?*

But in speaking of his book, we should say:

Qu'*en* pensez-vous?	*What do you think of it (thereof)?*

(6.) The word *même*, plural *mêmes*, may be used after the pronoun in the sense of *self, selves*.

le roi *lui-même*.	*the king himself.*
la reine *elle-même*.	*the queen herself.*
les princes *eux-mêmes*.	*the princes themselves.*
les princesses *elles-mêmes*.	*the princesses themselves.*

(7.) The pronouns, *moi, toi, lui, eux*, are often used after the verb, to give greater force to a nominative pronoun of the same person, in those cases where the emphasis is placed on the nominative in English, or where the auxiliary *do* is used.

je le dis, *moi*,	*I say so*, or *I do say so.*
il le dit, lui,	*he says so*, or *he does say so.*

(8.) The same pronouns, *moi, toi, lui, eux*, are used instead of the nominative pronouns, *je, tu, il, ils*, for the English pronouns, *I, thou, he, they*, when those pronouns are employed without a verb in an answer, when they are used by themselves, or have a verb understood after them.

Qui est arrivé ce matin? *Moi*.	*Who arrived this morning? I.*
Lui et *moi*. *Vous* et *eux*.	*He and I. You and they.*
Vous écrivez mieux que *lui*.	*You write better than he.*
Vous lisez aussi bien que *moi*.	*You read as well as I.*

(9.) The same pronouns are used in exclamations, and in those cases where the English pronouns, *I, thou*, etc., are followed by the relative pronoun *who;* also after *c'est, c'était*, etc.

Moi, lui céder!	*I, yield to him!*
Eux, aller à Londres!	*They, go to London!*
Moi qui suis malade.	*I who am sick.*
Lui qui est officier.	*He who is an officer.*
Eux qui sont savants.	*They who are learned.*
C'est *moi*; c'est *lui*.	*It is I; it is he.*
Ce sont *eux*.	*It is they.*

Pénélope, sa femme, et *moi* qui suis son fils, nous avons perdu l'espérance de le revoir. FÉNELON.	*Penelope his wife, and I who am his son, have lost the hope of seeing him again.*

(10.) These same pronouns are also used instead of the nominatives, *je, tu*, etc., when the verb has several subjects which are all

pronouns or partly nouns and partly pronouns. The verb may then be immediately preceded by a pronoun in the plural, representing in one word all the preceding subjects.

Votre père et *moi*, nous avons été longtemps ennemis l'un de l'autre. FÉNELON.
Your father and I were a long time enemies.

Rica et *moi* sommes peut-être les premiers. MONTESQUIEU.
Rica and I are perhaps the first.

(11.) The recapitulating pronoun and the verb sometimes come first in the sentence.

Nous avons, *vous* et *moi*, besoin de tolérance. VOLTAIRE.
You and I have need of tolerance.

(12.) The reflective pronoun SE, *himself*, etc., is used for both genders, and for both numbers; for persons and for things; and always accompanies a verb.

Les yeux de l'amitié *se* trompent rarement. VOLTAIRE.
The eyes of friendship are seldom deceived (deceive themselves).

(13.) The same pronoun has sometimes a reciprocal and sometimes a reflective meaning, according to the context:

ils *se* flattent, *they flatter themselves.*
ils *se* flattent, *they flatter one another, each other.*

(14.) SOI, *himself, itself*, etc., is of both genders and numbers, and is applied to persons and things. It is used in general and indeterminate sentences; having commonly an indefinite pronoun for the nominative:

On a souvent besoin d'un plus petit que *soi*. LA FONTAINE.
We have often need of one more humble than ourselves.

Il dépend toujours de *soi* d'agir honorablement. GIRAULT-DUVIVIER.
It is always in our power to act honorably.

Être trop mécontent de *soi* est une faiblesse. MME. DE SABLÉ.
To be too much displeased with one's self is a weakness.

For additional rules on the personal pronouns, see Syntax, § 98, and following.

§ 34.—POSSESSIVE PRONOUNS.

(1.) The possessive pronouns which are formed from the personal pronouns, represent, in the radical part, the *possessor*, while in termination they always agree with the thing possessed. Some relate to one person, some to several.

(2.) POSSESSIVES RELATING TO ONE PERSON.

The object possessed being in the—

Singular.		*Plural.*		
Masculine.	*Feminine.*	*Masculine.*	*Feminine.*	
1. le mien,	la mienne,	les miens,	les miennes,	*mine;*
2. le tien,	la tienne,	les tiens,	les tiennes,	*thine;*
3. le sien,	la sienne,	les siens,	les siennes,	*his, hers, its.*

(3.) TWO OR MORE PERSONS:

The object possessed being in the—

Singular.		*Plural.*	
Masculine.	*Feminine.*	*Mas. and Fem.*	
le nôtre,	la nôtre,	les nôtres,	*ours;*
le vôtre,	la vôtre,	les vôtres,	*yours;*
le leur,	la leur,	les leurs,	*theirs.*

§ 35.—REMARKS ON THE POSSESSIVE PRONOUNS.

(1.) It may be seen from the above table that, as before said, the termination of the possessive pronoun agrees in gender and number with the object possessed.

Votre canif et *le mien*,
Your penknife and mine.

Votre plume et *et la mienne.*
Your pen and mine.

Vos frères et les *miens.*
Your brothers and mine.

Vos sœurs et les *miennes.*
Your sisters and mine.

On voit les maux d'autrui, d'un autre œil que les *siens.* CORNEILLE.
We see the misfortunes of others, differently from our own.

Les ministres du roi sentent que leur gloire, comme *la sienne*, est dans le bonheur national. BERNARDIN DE ST. PIERRE.
The ministers of the king feel that their glory, like his own, is in national happiness.

(2.) These pronouns should relate to a noun previously expressed. This rule is often violated in mercantile correspondence:

J'ai reçu *la vôtre* en dâte du, etc., *I received yours dated the, etc.*

is incorrect. It should read thus:

J'ai reçu votre lettre en dâte du, etc. *I received your letter dated, etc.*

(3.) These pronouns may, however, be used absolutely when we mean thereby our family, our relatives, or intimate friends.

Moi, j'ai les *miens*, la cour, le peuple à contenter. LA FONTAINE.
I have my family or *friends, the court, the people to please.*

Malheureux qui porte chez les *siens* le glaive et les flambeaux. COLARDEAU.
Wretched is he who carries among his fellow-citizens the sword and the torch.

C'est à nous à payer pour les crimes des *nôtres.* RACINE.
We must bear the penalty of the crimes of our family or *people.*

(4.) *Le mien* and *le tien* are also used absolutely as the word *mine* and *thine* in English, in the sense of possession, property:

Et *le mien* et *le tien*, deux frères pointilleux. BOILEAU.
And mine and thine, two punctilious brothers.

Le tien et *le mien*, sont les sources de toutes les divisions et de toutes les querelles. GIRAULT-DUVIVIER.
Mine and thine (meum and tuum) are the sources of all divisions and quarrels.

§ 36.—DEMONSTRATIVE PRONOUNS.

Singular.			*Plural.*		
Masculine.	*Feminine.*		*Masculine.*	*Feminine.*	
celui,	celle,	{ *this, that,*	ceux,	celles,	{ *these; those;*
celui-ci,	celle-ci,	*this,*	ceux-ci,	celles-ci,	*these;*
celui-là,	celle-là,	*that,*	ceux-là,	celles-là,	*those.*

ce, *it, they.*

Absolute Demonstrative Pronouns.

ceci, *this,* } not used in the plural.
cela, *that,* }

§ 37.—REMARKS ON THE DEMONSTRATIVE PRONOUNS.

(1.) The demonstrative pronouns *celui, celle,* etc., assume the gender and number of the nouns which they represent.

Je ne connais d'avarice permise que *celle* du temps.
STANISLAS LECZINSKY.

Methinks no avarice is allowable unless it be that of time.

Les seules louanges que le cœur donne, sont *celles* que la bonté s'attire. MASSILLON.

The only praises which the heart gives, are those which goodness deserves.

(2.) These pronouns are sometimes used absolutely before *qui, que, dont,* etc., in the same manner as the English personal pronouns *he, they,* etc., before *who, whom,* etc.

Celui qui rend un service doit l'oublier; *celui qui* le reçoit, s'en souvenir. BARTHÉLEMY.

He who renders a service should forget it; he who receives it should remember it.

Aimer *ceux qui* vous haïssent, *ceux qui* vous persécutent, c'est la charité du chrétien; c'estl'esprit de la religion BOURDALOUE.

To love those who hate you, those who persecute you, is the charity of the Christian; it is the spirit of religion.

(3.) *Celui-ci, celle-ci,* etc.; *celui-là, celle-là,* are used when it is desirable to denote the comparative proximity or remoteness expressed in English by the words *this* and *that.*

celui-ci, *this one.* celui-là, *that one.*

(4.) *Celui-ci, celui-là,* etc., are often used to express contrast or comparison. They are then equivalent to the English expressions *the former, the latter; this one, that one.*

Un magistrat intègre et un brave officier, sont également estimables; *celui-là* fait la guerre aux ennemis domestiques, *celui-ci* nous protège contre les ennemis extérieurs.
GIRAULT-DUVIVIER.

An upright magistrate and a brave officer are equally estimable; the former makes war against domestic enemies, the latter protects us against foreign enemies.

Tel est l'avantage ordinaire
Qu'ont sur la beauté les talents:
Ceux-ci plaisent dans tous les temps;
Celle-là n'a qu'un temps pour plaire.
VOLTAIRE.

Such is the ordinary advantage which talents possess over beauty; the former please at all times; the latter has but one time to please.

(5.) *Ceci, cela*, have no plural, and are used only of things. They do not refer to a word expressed before, but serve to point out objects:

prenez *ceci, take this.* donnez-moi *cela, give me that.*

J'ai déjà dit ce qu'il faut faire, quand un enfant veut avoir *ceci* et *cela.* J. J. ROUSSEAU.

I have already said what should be done, when a child will have this and that.

(6.) *Ce*, a pronoun, must not be confounded with the demonstrative adjective *ce*. The pronoun *ce* is often used without an antecedent, as the nominative of the verb *être* in the same manner as the English pronoun *it:*

c'est moi, *it is I.* c'est vous, *it is you.*

Ce n'est plus le jouet d'une flamme servile;
C'est Pyrrhus; *c'est* le fils et le rival d'Achille. RACINE.

It is no longer the sport of an unworthy flame;
It is Pyrrhus; it is the son and the rival of Achilles.

For particular rules on this pronoun, see § 108.

§ 38.—RELATIVE PRONOUNS.

(1.) The relative pronouns are so named on account of the intimate relation which they have to a noun or pronoun which precedes, and of which they recall the idea. The noun or pronoun so preceding the relative pronoun is called the antecedent.

(2.) TABLE OF THE RELATIVE PRONOUNS.

qui, *who, which*; (sujet, *nominat.*) de qui, *of, from whom,* } Régime indirect, *genitive and ablative.*
que, *whom, which*; (rég. direct, *acc.*) dont, *of, from whom, which*; }

à qui, *to whom*; (régime indirect, *dative.*)

lequel, *who, which*; composed of the article *le* and *quel.*

Singular.		*Plural.*		
Masculine.	*Feminine.*	*Masculine.*	*Feminine.*	
lequel,	laquelle,	lesquels,	lesquelles,	*who, which;*
duquel,	de laquelle,	desquels,	desquelles,	*of, from, which.*
auquel,	à laquelle	auxquels,	auxquelles,	*to which.*

y, *to it, of it*, etc. en, *of it, of them*, etc.

quoi, *what, which, why*, etc.

§ 39.—REMARKS ON THE RELATIVE PRONOUNS.

(1.) QUI, *who, which*, is generally the subject or nominative. It is used for both genders and numbers, for persons and for things. (See No. 6 of this §.)

(2.) When used for things, *qui* cannot be preceded by a preposition. Its use, in this respect, is restricted to the nominative.

(3.) It is used relatively and absolutely.

(4.) It is used relatively when it has an antecedent expressed.

Le premier *qui* fut roi, fut un père adoré. AUBERT.
The first who became king, was an adored father.

L'amour avidement croit tout ce *qui* le flatte. RACINE.
Love believes eagerly all that flatters it.

(5.) It is used absolutely when it has no antecedent expressed. It then offers to the mind a vague and indeterminate idea. It is rendered in English by *he who, she who, they who.*

Qui veut parler sur tout, souvent parle au hasard. ANDRIEUX.
Who (he who) wishes to speak on every subject, speaks often at random.

Lâche, *qui* veut mourir, courageux *qui* peut vivre. RACINE, Jun.
He who wishes to die is a coward; he who can support life has courage.

Qui ne fait des heureux, n'est pas digne de l'être.
He who does not render others happy, is not worthy to be so.

(6.) *Qui* is also used absolutely when it is interrogative. It may then be nominatif or régime:

qui parlo? *who speaks?* *qui* voyez-vous? *whom do you see?*

(7.) QUE, *whom, what, which,* stands generally for the régime direct. This pronoun is used for persons and things. It is of both genders and numbers:

les lettres *que* j'ai, *the letters which I have.*
les hommes *que* j'ai vus, *the men whom I have seen.*

(8.) It is relative when it has an antecedent:

La gloire prête un charme aux horreurs *qu*'on affronte. DELAVIGNE.
Glory lends a charm to the horrors which we face.

Des lois *que* nous suivons, la première est l'honneur. VOLTAIRE.
Of the laws which we follow, the first is honor.

(9.) It is absolute when it has no antecedent, and signifies quelle chose? *what thing?* quoi? *what?*

que voulez-vous? *what will you (have)?*
que dit-on? *what do people say?*

(10.) QUOI, *what,* is invariable, and said only of things. It may be used absolutely and relatively:

j'ignore ce *à quoi* il pense, *I am ignorant of what he thinks.*

In the above sentence it is relative, being preceded by its antecedent *ce.*

(11.) Quoi, when absolute, means quelle chose, *what thing?* and is used mostly in interrogative and doubtful sentences:

Il y a dans cette affaire je ne sais *quoi,* que je n'entends pas. L'ACADÉMIE.
There is in that affair I know not what, which I do not understand.

Il y avait je ne *sais quoi* dans ses yeux perçants, qui me faisait peur. FÉNELON.
There was I know not what, in his piercing eyes, which inspired me with fear.

(12.) DONT, *of whom, of which, whose*, is used for both genders and numbers, for persons and for things. It is always employed relatively, and is, therefore, always preceded by an antecedent:

Un plaisir *dont* on est assuré de se repentir, ne peut jamais être tranquille. MME. DE LA VALLIÈRE.

A pleasure of which we are sure to repent, can never be a peaceful one.

Il faut plaindre le sort du prince infortuné, *dont* le cœur endurci n'a jamais pardonné. CHÉNIER.

We must pity the fate of that unfortunate prince, whose hardened heart has never forgiven.

(13.) Dont is preferable to de qui, *of whom*, and duquel, *of which*. When, however, the pronoun has the sense of *from whom*, i. e., when used to denote a transfer, *de qui* is better:

Le libraire *de qui* j'ai reçu ces livres.

The bookseller from whom I have received these books.

(14.) LEQUEL, LAQUELLE, LESQUELLES, *who, which*, should only be used in the nominative, and in the direct regimen, in order to avoid ambiguity. They may relate to persons or things:

C'est un effet de la divine Providence, *lequel* attire l'admiration de tout le monde. BUSSI-RABUTIN.

It is an act of divine Providence, which (act) attracts the admiration of every one.

(15.) *Lequel*, preceded by a preposition—that is, *duquel, auquel, dans lequel*, &c., must always be used for things in the indirect regimen. The word *qui*, as has been mentioned above, cannot relate to things in the oblique cases:

Un livre curieux serait celui *dans lequel* on ne trouverait pas un mensonge. NAPOLÉON.

That would be a curious book in which not a falsehood were found.

La Seine, dans le lit *de laquelle* viennent se jeter l'Yonne, la Marne, et l'Oise.

The Seine, in the bed of which the Yonne, the Marne, and the Oise empty themselves.

(16.) Lequel, in all its modifications, may be used absolutely or interrogatively:

lequel? *which one?* duquel? *of which one?*

lequel voyez-vous? *which one do you see?*

(17.) EN, *of it, of them*. This pronoun is of both genders and numbers, and relates almost always to animals and things. It is often used for the English words, *some, any*, when employed absolutely, or even when understood. It is also used as an indirect regimen in relation to things, and sometimes, but not often, in relation to persons [§ 92 (2)], instead of the personal pronouns *lui, elles, eux, elles*. [§ 103, Rule 1.]

Vous *en* parlez, *you speak of it.* J'*en* ai, *I have some of it.*

La fortune a son prix; l'imprudent *en* abuse,
L'hypocrite *en* médit, et l'honnête homme *en* use. DELILLE.

Fortune has its worth; the imprudent abuses it, the hypocrite speaks evil of it, and the worthy man uses it.

Les limites des sciences sont comme l'horizon; plus on *en* approche, plus elles reculent. MME. NECKER.

The limits of science are like the horizon, the more we approach (them) the more they recede.

La vie est un dépôt confié par le ciel;
Oser *en* disposer, c'est être criminel. GRESSET.

Life is a trust confided by heaven; to dare to dispose of it, is a crime.

(18.) Y, *to it, to them, thereto, of it*, etc. This relative pronoun, of both genders and numbers, is used instead of *à lui, à elle, en lui*, etc. It is used of things, and also adverbially in the sense of *there*.

J'*y* pense, *I think of it.* J'*y* donne mes soins, *I devote my care to it.*

J'ai connu le malheur, et j'*y* sais compâtir. GUICHARD.

I have known misfortune, and I can sympathize with it.

N'*y* songeons plus, cher Paulin; plus j'*y* pense,
Plus je sens chanceler ma cruelle constance. RACINE.

Let us think no more of this, dear Paulin; the longer I think of it, the more I feel my cruel constancy waver.

Vous avez peu de bien; joignez *y* ma fortune. DORAT.

You have but little property; join my fortune to it.

En quelque pays que j'aie été, j'*y* ai vécu comme si j'eusse dû *y* passer ma vie. MONTESQUIEU.

In whatever country I have been, I lived (there) as if I was to spend my life in it.

(19.) Although numerous instances may be found in which French authors have used *y* with regard to persons, these are licenses which it is not desirable to imitate.

§ 40.—INDEFINITE PRONOUNS.

(1.) The indefinite pronouns indicate persons and things without particularizing them; they are—

autrui,	*others.*	quiconque,	*whoever,*
chacun,	*every one.*	l'un l'autre,	*one another*
on,	*one, people, they.*	l'un et l'autre,	*both.*
personne,	*no one, nobody.*	tel,	*such.*
quelqu'un,	*some one, somebody.*	tout,	*every thing, all.*

§ 41.—REMARKS ON THE INDEFINITE PRONOUNS.

(1.) AUTRUI, *others.* This pronoun is applied only to persons. It has no change of form for gender or number, and is used only as an indirect regimen.

L'honnête homme est discret; il remarque les défauts d'*autrui*, mais il n'en parle jamais. ST. ÉVREMOND.

The gentleman is discreet; he observes the defects of others, but never alludes to them.

Ne fais point *à autrui* ce que tu ne voudrais pas qu'on te fît.

Do not unto others that which thou wouldst not like to be done unto thee.

(2.) CHACUN, *every one, each one.* When this pronoun is absolute, and means *every one, everybody*, it is invariable.

Le sens commun n'est pas chose commune,	*Common sense is no common thing, though every one believes he*
Chacun pourtant, croit en avoir assez. VALAINCOURT.	*has enough of it.*
Chacun est prosterné devant les gens heureux. DESTOUCHES.	*Every one bows before the fortunate.*

(3.) When *chacun* is used relatively, it may take the form of the feminine.

Chacune de nous (des femmes) se prétendait supérieure aux autres en beauté. MONTESQUIEU.	*Every one of us (women) thought herself superior in beauty to the others.*

(4.) ON (*one, people, they*) is always in the nominative; and although always construed with a verb in the third person singular, it conveys most generally the idea of plurality. It is commonly used in indefinite sentences.

On dit, *people say, they say, it is said.*	*On* parle, *somebody speaks, etc.*
On garde sans remords ce qu'*on* acquiert sans crime. CORNEILLE.	*We (one, people) keep without remorse that which we (one, people) acquire without crime.*
On relit tout Racine; *on* choisit dans Voltaire. DELILLE.	*We (people, they) read again and again all Racine; we (etc.) select in Voltaire.*
On ne surmonte le vice qu'en le fuyant. FÉNELON.	*We conquer vice only by avoiding it.*

(5.) *On*, coming immediately after the words *et, si, ou,* and *qui*, is generally preceded by the article *l'*, used for euphony.

Ce que *l'on* conçoit bien, s'exprime clairement. BOILEAU.	*That which we understand well, we express clearly.*
C'est d'un roi que *l'on* tient cette maxime auguste,	*It is from a king that we derive this august maxim, that one is only*
Que jamais *on* n'est grand, qu'autant que *l'on* est juste. BOILEAU.	*great in proportion as he is just.*

(6.) PERSONNE, *no one, nobody*, used as an indefinite pronoun, is always masculine and singular. When used as nominative to a verb expressed, it is followed by *ne*.

Il n'est *personne* qui ne cherche à se rendre heureux.—*Chinese thought.*	*There is no one who does not seek to render himself happy.*
Personne ne veut être plaint de ses erreurs. VAUVENARGUES.	*No one wishes to be pitied on account of his mistakes.*

NOTE.—The word *personne*, used as a *noun*, and meaning a particular person, is of the feminine gender.

(7.) QUELQU'UN, *somebody, some one, any one, anybody*, used absolutely, is invariable.

Envier *quelqu'un* c'est s'avouer son inférieur. MLLE. DE L'ESPINASSE.

To envy any one is confessing one's self his inferior.

Quelqu'un a-t-il jamais douté sérieusement de l'existence de Dieu? GIRAULT-DUVIVIER.

Has any one ever had serious doubts of the existence of God?

(8.) *Quelqu'un*, used relatively, changes for gender and number. It has then the sense of *some of, some one of.*

Connaissez-vous *quelqu'une* de ces dames, *quelques-uns* de ces messieurs? GIRAULT-DUVIVIER.

Do you know any one of those ladies, any of those gentlemen?

(9.) QUICONQUE, *whoever, whosoever*, is generally masculine, and has no plural. It is only said of persons:

Quiconque flatte ses maîtres, les trahit. MASSILLON.

Whoever flatters his masters, betrays them.

Quiconque est capable de mentir, est indigne d'être compté au nombre des hommes. FÉNELON.

Whoever is capable of falsehood is unworthy to be counted among the number of men.

Quiconque est soupçonneux, invite la trahison. VOLTAIRE.

Whoever is suspicious, invites treachery.

(10.) L'UN L'AUTRE, *one another, each other, the one and the other.* This pronoun makes in the feminine *l'une l'autre*, and in the plural *les uns les autres, les unes les autres:*

Tout le monde se confisait *l'un à l'autre* cette confidence. RULHIÈRES.

Every body confided one to another this communication.

Tout le peuple suivit Virginie, *les uns* par curiosité, *les autres* par considération pour Icilius. VERTOT.

All the people followed Virginia, some through curiosity, some through respect for Icilius.

Il y a deux sortes de ruines; *l'une* l'ouvrage du temps, *l'autre* l'ouvrage des hommes. CHATEAUBRIAND.

There are two sorts of ruins; one the work of time, the other the work of men.

(11.) L'UN ET L'AUTRE, LES UNS ET LES AUTRES, *both.* This expression may be used of persons and things:

La Condamine a parcouru *l'un et l'autre* hémisphère.[1] BUFFON.

La Condamine travelled over both hemispheres.

L'un et l'autre consul suivaient ses étendards. CORNEILLE.

Both consuls followed his standards.

Sous l'une et l'autre époque, il périt un très grand nombre de citoyens. BARTHÉLEMY.

At both epochs, a large number of citizens perished.

Ils se réunissaient *les uns et les autres* contre l'ennemi commun. GIRAULT-DUVIVIER.

They united with one another against the common enemy.

(12.) TEL, TELLE, *such, many a person, many*, is an indefinite pronoun in the following and in similar sentences:

[1] The noun is in the singular, because the word *hémisphère* is understood after the word *l'un*. This rule is observed by the best French authors.

Tel donne, à pleines mains, qui n'oblige personne. CORNEILLE.

Many a one may give bountifully, without obliging any one.

Tel brille au second rang, qui s'éclipse au premier. VOLTAIRE.

Many a person may shine in the second rank, who is eclipsed in the first.

Tel est pris qui croyait prendre. LA FONTAINE.

Many are caught while attempting to catch others.

Telle, sans aucun attrait pour la retraite, se consacre au Seigneur par pure fierté. MASSILLON.

Many [*a nun*] *for whom retreat has no attractions, consecrates herself to the Lord through mere pride.*

Tels que l'on croit d'inutiles amis, dans le besoin rendent de bons services. BOURSAULT.

Many friends whom we think useless, render us in our need valuable services.

(13.) *Tel*, in connection with monsieur, madame, etc., as *monsieur un tel, madame une telle*, Mr., Mrs. such-a-one is used substantively.

(14.) TOUT, *every one, every thing.* This word, employed absolutely, is invariable.

A la seule vertu, sois sûr que *tout* prospère. F. DE NEUFCHATEAU.

Be assured that it is with virtue alone, that every thing prospers.

Tout n'est pas Caumartin, Bignon, ni d'Aguesseau. BOILEAU.

Every one is not Caumartin, Bignon, nor d'Aguesseau.

Son grand génie embrassait *tout*. BOSSUET.

His great genius embraced every thing.

§ 42.—VERBS.

(1.) The verb is that part of speech which expresses an action done or suffered by the subject, or simply indicates the condition of the subject.

(2.) The subject or nominative of a verb is the person or thing doing the action, or being in the condition expressed by the verb. It replies to the question *qui est-ce qui? who?* for persons; and *qu'est-ce qui? which? what?* for things.

(3.) Verbs admit two kinds of regimen; the *direct regimen* and the *indirect regimen.*

(4.) The *direct regimen*, or immediate object, is that which completes in a direct manner the signification of a verb; that is to say, without the aid of any other intermediate word. It answers to the question *qui? whom?* for persons, and *quoi? what?* for things.

(5.) The *indirect regimen*, or remote object, is that which completes the signification of the verb by means of an intermediate word, such as the prepositions *à, de, pour, avec, dans*, etc.—à qui? *to whom?* de qui? *of* or *from whom?* pour qui? *for whom?* avec qui? etc., for persons; and à quoi? *to what?* de quoi? *of* or *from what?* etc., for things.

(6.) Verbs are regular, irregular, or defective. § 44, (2).

§ 43.—Different Sorts of Verbs.

(1.) There are five sorts of verbs: active, passive, neuter, reflective or pronominal, and unipersonal.

(2.) The active verb is that which expresses an action performed by the subject, and having some person or thing for its object. The object is the direct regimen of the verb.

(3.) Every French verb after which *quelqu'un*, some one, *quelque chose*, something, may be placed, is an active verb. Thus, in the following sentences, *protéger*, *changer*, *chanter*, etc., are active verbs, because we may say *protéger quelqu'un*, to protect some one; *changer quelque chose*, to change something.

Dieu *protège* l'innocence. RACINE.	*God protects innocence.*
L'habit *change* les mœurs. VOLTAIRE.	*Dress changes the manners.*
Les cygnes ne *chantent* pas leur mort. BUFFON.	*Swans do not sing their death.*

(4.) The passive verb is the contrary of the active verb. The active verb presents the subject as performing an action immediately directed towards an object; whereas the passive verb presents the subject as suffering or receiving an action. The passive verb is composed of the past participle of an active verb and the auxiliary *être*, to be. (See § 54.)

Nos campagnes *sont fertilisées* par la pluie. L'ACADÉMIE.	*Our fields are fertilized by the rain.*
Il *était guidé* par la force de son génie. MASSILLON.	*He was guided by the force of his genius.*
Les petits esprits *sont* trop *blessés* des petites choses. ROCHEFOUCAULD.	*Little minds are too much vexed with trifles.*

(5.) The neuter verb marks, like the active verb, an action performed by the subject; but this action can only reach the object indirectly; that is, by means of a preposition. Hence it is, that the neuter verb never has a direct regimen, and that the words *quelqu'un* and *quelque chose* cannot be placed after it. A neuter verb can never be used in the *passive voice*.

Socrate passa le dernier jour de sa vie à *discourir* de l'immortalité de l'âme. L'ACADÉMIE.	*Socrates spent the last day of his life in discoursing upon the immortality of the soul.*
Le feu qui semble éteint, *dort* souvent sous sa cendre. CORNEILLE.	*The fire which seems extinct, sleeps often under its ashes.*
Les Platéens citèrent les Lacédémoniens à *comparaître* devant les Amphictyons. LE GENDRE.	*The Plateans cited the Lacedemonians to appear before the Amphictyons.*

(6.) The reflective or pronominal verb is conjugated with two pro-

nouns of the same person; *je me, tu te, il se, nous nous, vous vous, ils se.* (See § 56.)

Je me flatte, *I flatter myself.*

Vous vous félicitez, *you congratulate yourselves.*

Il ne faut pas *se flatter:* les plus expérimentés ont fait des fautes capitales. BOSSUET.

We should not flatter ourselves: the most experienced have committed capital errors.

Les peuples *se féliciteront* d'avoir un roi qui lui ressemble. MASSILLON.

The nations will congratulate themselves upon having a king who resembles him.

Il ne faut pas permettre à l'homme de *se mépriser* entièrement. BOSSUET.

We should not allow a man to despise himself entirely.

(7.) The unipersonal verb can only be used in the third person singular: Il pleut, *it rains;* il gèle, *it freezes;* il tonne, *it thunders.*

Pour bien juger les grands, *il faut* les approcher. AUBERT.

To judge properly of the great, it is necessary to approach them.

Il faut rendre meilleur le pauvre qu'on soulage. SAINT-LAMBERT.

We should (it is necessary to) improve the poor whom we relieve.

(8.) There are two verbs called auxiliary, because they serve to conjugate all others. They are—avoir, *to have;* and être, *to be.*

§ 44.—CONJUGATIONS.

(1.) The French verbs are divided into four large classes or conjugations:

1st. The first conjugation comprises all verbs of which the present of the infinitive ends in ER; as PARLER, *to speak;* AIMER, *to love,* etc.

2d. The second conjugation embraces all those of which the infinitive ends in IR; as CHÉRIR, *to cherish;* PUNIR, *to punish,* etc.

3d. The third conjugation contains all the verbs, which, in the infinitive end in OIR; such as RECEVOIR, *to receive;* POUVOIR, *to be able,* etc.

4th. The fourth conjugation comprises all the verbs terminating with RE in the infinitive; as RENDRE, *to render;* PRENDRE, *to take,* etc.

(2.) The verbs are again divided into *regular, irregular,* and *defective:*

1st. The *regular* verbs are those which, in all their tenses, are conjugated like the *model verb* of the conjugation to which they belong.

2d. The *irregular* verbs are those which are not, in all their tenses, conjugated like the *model verb.*

3d. The *defective* verbs are those which want certain tenses or persons.

§ 45.—MODES AND TENSES.

(1.) There are six modes; the INDICATIVE, the CONDITIONAL, the IMPERATIVE, the SUBJUNCTIVE, the INFINITIVE, and the PARTICIPLE:

1st. The *indicative,* whatever may be the tense, indicates or declares in a positive, absolute manner: j'abandonne, *I abandon;* j'ai abandonné, *I have abandoned;* j'abandonnerai, *I will abandon.*

2d. The *conditional* indicates a condition or a supposition: j'abandonnerais si....*I would abandon if*....

3d. The *imperative* is used to express a command, prayer, or exhortation: abandonnez cet enfant, *abandon that child.*

4th. The *subjunctive* is used after propositions expressing doubt, contingency, or necessity: il est douteux que je l'abandonne, *it is not certain that I may abandon him.*

5th. The *infinitive* presents the signification of the verb in an unlimited manner: abandonner ses enfants, *to abandon one's children.*

6th. The *participle*, while retaining the power of the verb, at the same time partakes of the nature of an adjective: abandonnant ses parents, *abandoning his relatives;* abandonné de ses enfants, *abandoned by his children.*

(2.) The indicative has eight tenses:

1st. The present:	je parle,	*I speak;* je donne, *I give.*
2d. The simultaneous past, or imperfect:	je parlais,	*I was speaking.*
3d. The past definite:	je parlai,	*I spoke, I did speak.*
4th. The past indefinite:	j'ai parlé,	*I have spoken;* j'ai donné, *I have given.*
5th. The past anterior:	j'eus parlé,	*I had spoken.*
6th. The pluperfect:	j'avais parlé,	*I had been speaking.*
7th. The future absolute:	je parlerai,	*I shall, will speak.*
8th. The future anterior:	j'aurai parlé,	*I shall have spoken.*

(3.) The conditional has two tenses:

1st. The present or future,	je parlerais,	*I should, would speak.*
2d. The past,	j'aurais parlé,	*I should have spoken.*

(4.) The imperative has one tense:

	parle,	*speak.*

(5.) The subjunctive has four tenses:

1st. The present or future,	que je parle,	*that I may speak.*
2d. The imperfect,	que je parlasse,	*that I might speak.*
3d. The past,	que j'aie parlé,	*that I may have spoken.*
4th. The pluperfect,	que j'eusse parlé,	*that I might have spoken.*

(6.) The infinitive has two tenses:

1st. The present relative,	parler,	*to speak.*
2d. The past,	avoir parlé,	*to have spoken.*

(7.) The participle has three tenses:

1st. The present relative,	parlant,	*speaking.*
2d. The past active,	ayant parlé,	*having spoken.*
3d. The past or passive,	parlé,	*spoken.*

(8.) Tenses are simple or compound.

1. *Simple*, when they are expressed in a single word: je parle, *I speak.*

2. *Compound*, when they require the assistance of the verb avoir or être: j'ai parlé, *I have spoken;* je suis arrivé, *I have arrived.*

§ 46.—Use of the Auxiliary Verbs, Avoir and Être.

(1.) The auxiliary *avoir* is used:

1. In the conjugation of its own compound tenses: j'ai eu, *I have had.*

2. In the conjugation of the compound tenses of the verb être: j'ai été, *I have been.*

3. In the compound tenses of the active verbs: j'ai aimé, *I have loved.*

4. In the compound tenses of most neuter verbs expressing an action: j'ai marché, *I have walked.* [See exceptions to this rule (3.) below.]

5. It is also used in the conjugation of verbs which are always unipersonal: il a plu, *it has rained;* il a grêlé, *it has hailed,* etc.

(2.) The verb *être* is used in the conjugation of:

1. All the tenses of passive verbs: je suis aimé, *I am loved.*

2. The compound tenses of all reflective or pronominal verbs: je me suis flatté, *I have flattered myself;* je me suis promené, *I have walked.*

3. The compound tenses of the following neuter verbs, though the same express action:

aller,	*to go;*	naître,	*to be born;*
arriver,	*to arrive;*	tomber,	*to fall;*
choir,	*to fall;*	venir,	*to come;*
décéder,	*to decease;*	parvenir,	*to succeed;*
mourir,	*to die;*	devenir,	*to become;*
		revenir,	*to return.*

4. A few unipersonal verbs, which are not always, but occasionally such: il lui *est* arrivé un malheur, *a misfortune has happened to him.*

(3.) A certain number of neuter verbs: as—

accourir,	*to run towards;*	entrer,	*to enter;*
disparaître,	*to disappear;*	sortir,	*to go out;*
croître,	*to grow;*	passer,	*to pass;*
cesser,	*to cease;*	partir,	*to depart;*
périr,	*to perish;*	vieillir,	*to grow old;*
monter,	*to mount, to ascend;*	grandir,	*to grow;*
descendre,	*to go down;*	rester,	*to remain, to dwell,*

take sometimes *avoir*, and sometimes *être.*

1. They take *avoir*, when we have in view the action expressed by the verb;

2. And *être*, when situation or condition is the principal idea which we wish to express:

Examples.

With avoir.	*With* être.
Elle *a* disparu subitement.	Elle *est* disparue depuis quinze jours.
She disappeared suddenly.	*She has been gone a fortnight.*

La fièvre *a* cessé hier.

The fever ceased yesterday.

La fièvre *est* cessée depuis quelque temps.

It is some time since the fever ceased.

Le baromètre *a* descendu de plusieurs degrés en peu d'heures.

The barometer went down several degrees in a few hours.

Il *est* descendu depuis une heure.

He has been down one hour.

Il *a* passé en Amérique en tel temps.

He went to America at such a time.

Les chaleurs *sont* passées.

The heat is passed.

Le trait *a* parti avec impétuosité. L'ACADÉMIE.

The dart went with impetuosity.

Les troupes *sont* partis depuis six mois. L'ACADÉMIE.

The troops have been gone six months.

Le sang *avait* cessé de couler. BOISTE.

The blood had ceased to flow.

Ce grand bruit *est* cessé. MME. DE SÉVIGNÉ.

That great noise is over (has ceased.)

(4.) Rester and demeurer, when meaning *to dwell, to reside*, take the auxiliary *avoir*; when they mean *to remain, to be left*, they take *être*:

AVOIR.

J'*ai* resté plus d'un an en Italie. MONTESQUIEU.

I resided more than a year in Italy

Il *a* demeuré deux ans à la campagne. L'ACADÉMIE.

He lived (dwelt) two years in the country.

ÊTRE.

Elle donnerait pour vous sa vie, le seul bien qui lui *soit* resté. MARMONTEL.

She would give for you, her life, the only possession which remains to her.

Deux cents hommes *sont* demeurés sur le champ de bataille. L'ACADÉMIE.

Two hundred men remained on the field of battle.

(5.) Échapper, *to escape, to pass unnoticed, to be forgotten*, takes the auxiliary *avoir*. In the sense of, *to say inadvertently*, it takes *être*.

AVOIR.

Cette différence ne m'*a* pas échappé. ROUSSEAU.

That difference has not escaped me.

J'ai retenu le chant, les vers m'*ont* échappé. VOLTAIRE.

I retained the tune, but the verses have escaped my memory.

ÊTRE.

Ce mot *m'est* échappé; pardonnez-ma franchise. VOLTAIRE.

That word escaped my lips; excuse my frankness.

Excusez les fautes qui pourront *m'être* échappées. BOILEAU.

Excuse the faults which I may have committed inadvertently.

(6.) Convenir, *to become, to suit*, takes *avoir*. When it is used in the sense of *agreeing*, or *settling upon a price* for an article, it takes *être*.

Cette maison *m'a* convenu.

That house suited me.

Nous *sommes* convenus du prix. L'ACADÉMIE.

We agreed upon the price.

§ 47.—Paradigms of the Auxiliary Verbs.

To familiarize the student with the frequent use made by the French, of the indefinite pronoun *on* [§ 41, (4.)], we have introduced it in our conjugation of the verbs.

(1.) AVOIR, *TO HAVE*.—AFFIRMATIVELY.

Indicative Mod

SIMPLE TENSES.		COMPOUND TENSES.	
PRESENT.		PAST INDEFINITE.	
J'ai,	*I have*	J'ai eu,	*I have had*
Tu as,	*thou hast*	Tu as eu,	*thou hast had*
Il a,	*he has*	Il a eu,	*he has had*
On a,	*one has, people have*	On a eu,	*one has had*
Nous avons,	*we have*	Nous avons eu,	*we have had*
Vous avez,	*you have*	Vous avez eu,	*you have had*
Ils ont,	*they have*	Ils ont eu,	*they have had*
IMPERFECT.		PLUPERFECT.	
J'avais,	*I had, was having*, or *I used to have*	J'avais eu,	*I had had*
Tu avais,	*thou hadst*	Tu avais eu,	*thou hadst had*
Il avait,	*he had*	Il avait eu,	*he had had*
On avait,	*one had, people had*	On avait eu,	*one had had*
Nous avions,	*we had*	Nous avions eu,	*we had had*
Vous aviez,	*you had*	Vous aviez eu,	*you had had*
Ils avaient,	*they had*	Ils avaient eu,	*they had had*
PAST DEFINITE.		PAST ANTERIOR.	
J'eus,	*I had*, or *did have*	J'eus eu,	*I had had*
Tu eus,	*thou hadst*, etc.	Tu eus eu,	*thou hadst had*
Il eut,	*he had*	Il eut eu,	*he had had*
On eut,	*one had*, etc.	On eut eu,	*one had had*
Nous eûmes,	*we had*	Nous eûmes eu,	*we had had*
Vous eûtes,	*you had*	Vous eûtes eu,	*you had had*
Ils eurent,	*they had*	Ils eurent eu,	*they had had*
FUTURE.		FUTURE ANTERIOR.	
J'aurai,	*I shall* or *will have*	J'aurai eu,	*I shall, will have had*
Tu auras,	*thou wilt have*	Tu auras eu,	*thou shalt have had*
Il aura,	*he will have*	Il aura eu,	*he will have had*
On aura,	*one will have*	On aura eu,	*one will have had*
Nous aurons,	*we shall have*	Nous aurons eu,	*we will have had*
Vous aurez,	*you will have*	Vous aurez eu,	*you will have had*
Ils auront,	*they will have*	Ils auront eu,	*they will have had*

Conditional Mode.

SIMPLE TENSES. PRESENT.		COMPOUND TENSES. PAST.	
J'aurais,	*I should have*	J'aurais eu,	*I should have had*
Tu aurais,	*thou couldst have*	Tu aurais eu,	*thou wouldst have had*
Il aurait,	*he would have*	Il aurait eu,	*he should have had*
On aurait,	*one would have*	On aurait eu,	*one should have had*
Nous aurions,	*we would have*	Nous aurions eu,	*we should have had*
Vous auriez,	*you would have*	Vous auriez eu,	*you should have had*
Ils auraient,	*they would have*	Ils auraient eu,	*they should have had*

Imperative Mode.

Aie,	*have thou*
Qu'il ait,	*let him have*
Qu'on ait,	*let one, people, them, have*
Ayons,	*let us have*
Ayez,	*have ye* or *you*
Qu'ils aient,	*let them have*

Subjunctive Mode.

PRESENT.			PAST.	
Que j'aie,	*that I may*	*have*	Que j'aie eu,	*that I may* *have had*
Que tu aies,	*that thou mayest*		Que tu aies eu,	*that thou mayest*
Qu'il ait,	*that he may*		Qu'il ait eu,	*that he may*
Qu'on ait,	*that one may*		Qu'on ait eu,	*that one may*
Que nous ayons,	*that we may*		Que nous ayons eu,	*that we may*
Que vous ayez,	*that you may*		Que vous ayez eu,	*that you may*
Qu'ils aient,	*that they may*		Qu'ils aient eu,	*that they may*

IMPERFECT.			PLUPERFECT.	
Que j'eusse,	*that I might*	*have*	Que j'eusse eu,	*that I might* *have had*
Que tu eusses,	*that thou mightest*		Que tu eusses eu,	*that thou mightest*
Qu'il eût,	*that he might*		Qu'il eût eu,	*that he might*
Qu'on eût,	*that one might*		Qu'on eût eu,	*that one might*
Que nous eussions,	*that we might*		Que nous eussions eu,	*that we might*
Que vous eussiez,	*that you might*		Que vous eussiez eu,	*that you might*
Qu'ils eussent,	*that they might*		Qu'ils eussent eu,	*that they might*

Infinitive Mode.

PRESENT.		PAST.	
Avoir,	*to have*	Avoir eu,	*to have had*

Participle.

PRESENT.		COMPOUND.	
Ayant,	*having*	Ayant eu,	*having had*

PAST OR PASSIVE.

Eu, *had*

(2.) AVOIR, *TO HAVE:* CONJUGATED NEGATIVELY.

Indicative Mode.

SIMPLE TENSES.		COMPOUND TENSES.		
PRESENT.		PAST INDEFINITE.		
Je n'ai pas,	*I have not*	Je n'ai pas eu,	*I have*	*not had*
Tu n'as pas,	*thou hast not*	Tu n'as pas eu,	*thou hast*	
Il n'a pas,	*he has not*	Il n'a pas eu,	*he has*	
On n'a pas,	*one has not*	On n'a pas eu,	*one has*	
Nous n'avons pas,	*we have not*	Nous n'avons pas eu,	*we have*	
Vous n'avez pas,	*you have not*	Vous n'avez pas eu,	*you have*	
Ils n'ont pas,	*they have not*	Ils n'ont pas eu,	*they have*	
IMPERFECT.		PLUPERFECT.		
Je n'avais pas,	*I had not*	Je n'avais pas eu,	*I had*	*not had*
Tu n'avais pas,	*thou hadst not*	Tu n'avais pas eu,	*thou hadst*	
Il n'avait pas,	*he had not*	Il n'avait pas eu,	*he had*	
On n'avait pas,	*one had not*	On n'avait pas eu,	*one had*	
Nous n'avions pas,	*we had not*	Nous n'avions pas eu,	*we had*	
Vous n'aviez pas,	*you had not*	Vous n'aviez pas eu,	*you had*	
Ils n'avaient pas,	*they had not*	Ils n'avaient pas eu,	*they had*	
PAST DEFINITE.		PAST ANTERIOR.		
Je n'eus pas,	*I had not*	Je n'eus pas eu,	*I had*	*not had*
Tu n'eus pas,	*thou hadst not*	Tu n'eus pas eu,	*thou hadst*	
Il n'eut pas,	*he had not*	Il n'eut pas eu,	*he had*	
On n'eut pas,	*one had not*	On n'eut pas eu,	*one had*	
Nous n'eûmes pas,	*we had not*	Nous n'eûmes pas eu,	*we had*	
Vous n'eûtes pas,	*you had not*	Vous n'eûtes pas eu,	*you had*	
Ils n'eurent pas,	*they had not*	Ils n'eurent pas eu,	*they had*	
FUTURE.		FUTURE ANTERIOR.		
Je n'aurai pas,	*I shall not*	Je n'aurai pas eu,	*I shall*	*not have had*
Tu n'auras pas,	*thou wilt not*	Tu n'auras pas eu,	*thou shalt*	
Il n'aura pas,	*he will not*	Il n'aura pas eu,	*he will*	
On n'aura pas,	*one will not*	On n'aura pas eu,	*one will*	
Nous n'aurons pas,	*we shall not*	Nous n'aurons pas eu,	*we will*	
Vous n'aurez pas,	*you shall not*	Vous n'aurez pas eu,	*you will*	
Ils n'auront pas,	*they will not*	Ils n'auront pas eu,	*they will*	

Conditional Mode.

PRESENT.			PAST.		
Je n'aurais pas,	*I should*	*not have*	Je n'aurais pas eu,	*I should*	*not have had*
Tu n'aurais pas,	*thou wouldst*		Tu n'aurais pas eu,	*thou shouldst*	
Il n'aurait pas,	*he would*		Il n'aŭrait pas eu,	*he would*	
On n'aurait pas,	*one would*		On n'aurait pas eu,	*one would*	
Nous n'aurions pas,	*we would*		Nous n'aurions pas eu,	*we would*	
Vous n'auriez pas,	*you would*		Vous n'auriez pas eu,	*you would*	
Ils n'auraient pas,	*they would*		Ils n'auraient pas eu,	*they would*	

Imperative Mode.

N'aie pas,	*have not*
Qu'il n'ait pas,	*let him not have*
Qu'on n'ait pas,	*let one not have*
N'ayons pas,	*let us not have*
N'ayez pas,	*have not ye* or *you*
Qu'ils n'aient pas,	*let them not have*

Subjunctive Mode.

SIMPLE TENSES.

PRESENT.

Que je n'aie pas, *that I may*
Que tu n'aies pas, *that thou mayest*
Qu'il n'ait pas, *that he may*
Qu'on n'ait pas, *that one may*
Que nous n'ayons pas, *that we may*
Que vous n'ayez pas, *that you may*
Qu'ils n'aient pas, *that they may*

} *not have*

IMPERFECT.

Que je n'eusse pas, *that I might*
Que tu n'eusses pas, *that thou mightest*
Qu'il n'eût pas, *that he might*
Qu'on n'eût pas, *that one might*
Que nous n'eussions pas, *that we might*
Que vous n'eussiez pas, *that you might*
Qu'ils n'eussent pas, *that they might*

} *not have*

COMPOUND TENSES.

PAST.

Que je n'aie pas eu, *that I may*
Que tu n'aies pas eu, *that thou mayest*
Qu'il n'ait pas eu, *that he may*
Qu'on n'ait pas eu, *that one may*
Que nqus n'ayons pas eu, *that we may*
Que vous n'ayez pas eu, *that you may*
Qu'ils n'aient pas eu, *that they may*

} *not have had*

PLUPERFECT.

Que je n'eusse pas eu, *that I might*
Que tu n'eusses pas eu, *that thou mightest*
Qu'il n'eût pas eu, *that he might*
Qu'on n'eût pas eu, *that one might*
Que nous n'eussions pas eu, *that we might*
Que vous n'eussiez pas eu, *that you might*
Qu'ils n'eussent pas eu, *that they might*

} *not have had*

Infinitive Mode.

PRESENT.		PAST.	
Ne pas avoir,	*not to have*	N'avoir pas eu,	*not to have had*

Participle.

PRESENT.		COMPOUND.	
N'ayant pas,	*not having*	N'ayant pas eu,	*not having had*

Past or Passive.

Pas eu, *Not had*

(3.) AVOIR,—INTERROGATIVELY.

INDICATIVE MODE.

SIMPLE TENSES. PRESENT.		COMPOUND TENSES. PAST INDEFINITE.		
Ai-je?	*have I?*	Ai-je eu?	*have I*	*had?*
As-tu?	*hast thou?*	As-tu eu?	*hast thou*	
A-t-il?[1]	*has he?*	A-t-il eu?	*has he*	
A-t-on?[1]	*has one?*	A-t-on eu?	*has one*	
Avons-nous?	*have we?*	Avons-nous eu?	*have we*	
Avez-vous?	*have you?*	Avez-vous eu?	*have you*	
Ont-ils?	*have they?*	Ont-ils eu?	*have they*	
IMPERFECT.		**PLUPERFECT.**		
Avais-je?	*had I?*	Avais-je eu?	*had I*	*had?*
Avais-tu?	*hadst thou?*	Avais-tu eu?	*hadst thou*	
Avait-il?	*had he?*	Avait-il eu?	*had he*	
Avait-on?	*had one?*	Avait-on eu?	*had one*	
Avions-nous?	*had we?*	Avions-nous eu?	*had we*	
Aviez-vous?	*had you?*	Aviez-vous eu?	*had you*	
Avaient-ils?	*had they?*	Avaient-ils eu?	*had they*	
PAST DEFINITE.		**PAST ANTERIOR.**		
Eus-je?	*had I?*	Eus-je eu?	*had I*	*had?*
Eus-tu?	*hadst thou?*	Eus-tu eu?	*hadst thou*	
Eut-il?	*had he?*	Eut-il eu?	*had he*	
Eut-on?	*had one?*	Eut-on eu?	*had one*	
Eûmes-nous?	*had we?*	Eûmes-nous eu?	*had we*	
Eûtes-vous?	*had you?*	Eûtes-vous eu?	*had you*	
Eurent-ils?	*had they?*	Eurent-ils eu?	*had they*	
FUTURE.		**FUTURE ANTERIOR.**		
Aurai-je?	*shall I have?*	Aurai-je eu?	*shall I*	*have had?*
Auras-tu?	*shalt thou have?*	Auras-tu eu?	*shalt thou*	
Aura-t-il?	*will he have?*	Aura-t-il eu?	*shall he*	
Aura-t-on?	*shall one have?*	Aura-t-on eu?	*shall one*	
Aurons-nous?	*shall we have?*	Aurons-nous eu?	*shall we*	
Aurez-vous?	*will you have?*	Aurez-vous eu?	*shall you*	
Auront-ils?	*shall they have?*	Auront-ils eu?	*shall they*	

CONDITIONAL MODE.

PRESENT.		PAST.		
Aurais-je?	*should I have?*	Aurais-je eu?	*should I*	*have had?*
Aurais-tu?	*shouldst thou have?*	Aurais-tu eu?	*wouldst thou*	
Aurait-il?	*should he have?*	Aurait-il eu?	*would he*	
Aurait-on?	*would one have?*	Aurait-on eu?	*should one*	
Aurions-nous?	*would we have?*	Aurions-nous eu?	*should we*	
Auriez-vous?	*should you have?*	Auriez-vous eu?	*should you*	
Auraient-ils?	*should they have?*	Auraient-ils eu?	*would they*	

[1] See Lesson 4, Rule 6.

Imperative Mode.

Sois,	*be thou*
Qu'il soit,	*let him be*
Qu'on soit,	*let one be*
Soyons,	*let us be*
Soyez,	*be ye* or *you*
Qu'ils soient,	*let them be*

Subjunctive Mode.

SIMPLE TENSES.		COMPOUND TENSES.	
PRESENT.		PAST.	
Que je sois,	*that I may be*	Que j'aie été,	*that I may have been*
Que tu sois,	*that thou mayest be*	Que tu aies été,	*that thou mayest have been*
Qu'il soit,	*that he may be*	Qu'il ait été	*that he may have been*
Qu'on soit,	*that one may be*	Qu'on ait été,	*that one may have been*
Que nous soyons,	*that we may be*	Que nous ayons été,	*that we may have been*
Que vous soyez,	*that you may be*	Que vous ayez été,	*that you may have been*
Qu'ils soient,	*that they may be*	Qu'ils aient été,	*that they may have been*
IMPERFECT.		PLUPERFECT.	
Que je fusse,	*that I might be*	Que j'eusse été,	*that I might have been*
Que tu fusses,	*that thou mightest be*	Que tu eusses été,	*that thou mightest have been*
Qu'il fût,	*that he might be*	Qu'il eût été,	*that he might have been*
Qu'on fût,	*that one might be*	Qu'on eût été,	*that one might have been*
Que nous fussions,	*that we might be*	Que nous eussions été,	*that we might have been*
Que vous fussiez,	*that you might be*	Que vous eussiez été,	*that you might have been*
Qu'ils fussent,	*that they might be*	Qu'ils eussent été,	*that they might have been*

Infinitive Mode.

PRESENT.		PAST.	
Être,	*to be*	Avoir été,	*to have been*

Participle.

PRESENT.		COMPOUND.	
Étant,	*being*	Ayant été,	*having been*

Past or Passive.

Été, *been*

§ 48.—Regular Verbs.

FIRST CONJUGATION,—ENDING IN *ER*.

MODEL VERB.

CHANTER, *TO SING*.

INDICATIVE MODE.

SIMPLE TENSES.		COMPOUND TENSES.	
PRESENT.		PAST INDEFINITE.	
Je chante,	*I sing*	J'ai chanté,	*I have sung*
Tu chantes,	*thou singest*	Tu as chanté,	*thou hast sung*
Il chante,	*he sings*	Il a chanté,	*he has sung*
On chante,	*one sings*	On a chanté,	*one has sung*
Nous chantons,	*we sing*	Nous avons chanté,	*we have sung*
Vous chantez,	*you sing*	Vous avez chanté,	*you have sung*
Ils chantent,	*they sing*	Ils ont chanté,	*they have sung*
IMPERFECT.		PLUPERFECT.	
Je chantais,	*I was singing*, or *I used to sing*	J'avais chanté,	*I had*
Tu chantais,	*thou wast singing*	Tu avais chanté,	*thou hadst*
Il chantait,	*he was singing*	Il avait chanté,	*he had*
On chantait,	*one was singing*	On avait chanté,	*one had*
Nous chantions,	*we were singing*	Nous avions chanté,	*we had*
Vous chantiez,	*you were singing*	Vous aviez chanté,	*you had*
Ils chantaient,	*they were singing*	Ils avaient chanté,	*they had*
			been singing
PAST DEFINITE.		PAST ANTERIOR.	
Je chantai,	*I sang* or *did sing*	J'eus chanté,	*I had sung*
Tu chantas,	*thou sangest*	Tu eus chanté,	*thou hadst sung*
Il chanta,	*he sang*	Il eut chanté,	*he had sung*
On chanta,	*one sang*	On eut chanté,	*one had sung*
Nous chantâmes,	*we sang*	Nous eûmes chanté,	*we had sung*
Vous chantâtes,	*you sang*	Vous eûtes chanté,	*you had sung*
Ils chantèrent,	*they sang*	Ils eurent chanté,	*they had sung*
FUTURE.		FUTURE ANTERIOR.	
Je chanterai,	*I shall* or *will sing*	J'aurai chanté,	*I will*
Tu chanteras,	*thou will sing*	Tu auras chanté,	*thou shalt*
Il chantera,	*he will sing*	Il aura chanté,	*he will*
On chantera,	*one will sing*	On aura chanté,	*one will*
Nous chanterons,	*we shall sing*	Nous aurons chanté,	*we shall*
Vous chanterez,	*you will sing*	Vous aurez chanté,	*you will*
Ils chanteront,	*they will sing*	Ils auront chanté,	*they shall*
			have sung

CONDITIONAL MODE.

PRESENT.		PAST.	
Je chanterais,	*I should, would sing*	J'aurais chanté,	*I should*
Tu chanterais,	*thou shouldst sing*	Tu aurais chanté,	*thou wouldst*
Il chanterait,	*he should sing*	Il aurait chanté,	*he would*
On chanterait,	*one should sing*	On aurait chanté,	*one would*
Nous chanterions,	*we would sing*	Nous aurions chanté,	*we would*
Vous chanteriez,	*you would sing*	Vous auriez chanté,	*you would*
Ils chanteraient,	*they would sing*	Ils auraient chanté,	*they would*
			have sung

Imperative Mode.

Chante,	*sing thou*
Qu'il chante,	*let him sing*
Qu'on chante,	*let one sing*
Chantons,	*let us sing*
Chantez,	*sing ye* or *you*
Qu'ils chantent,	*let them sing*

Subjunctive Mode.

SIMPLE TENSES.

PRESENT.

Que je chante,	*that I may sing*
Que tu chantes,	*that thou mayest sing*
Qu'il chante,	*that he may sing*
Qu'on chante,	*that one may sing*
Que nous chantions,	*that we may sing*
Que vous chantiez,	*that you may sing*
Qu'ils chantent,	*that they may sing*

IMPERFECT.

Que je chantasse,	*that I might sing*
Que tu chantasses,	*that thou mightest sing*
Qu'il chantât,	*that he might sing*
Qu'on chantât,	*that one might sing*
Que nous chantassions,	*that we might sing*
Que vous chantassiez,	*that you might sing*
Qu'ils chantassent,	*that they might sing*

COMPOUND TENSES.

PAST.

Que j'aie chanté,	*that I may*	*have sung*
Que tu aies chanté,	*that thou mayest*	*have sung*
Qu'il ait chanté,	*that he may*	*have sung*
Qu'on ait chanté,	*that one may*	*have sung*
Que nous ayons chanté,	*that we may*	*have sung*
Que vous ayez chanté,	*that you may*	*have sung*
Qu'ils aient chanté,	*that they may*	*have sung*

PLUPERFECT.

Que j'eusse chanté,	*that I might*	*have sung*
Que tu eusses chanté,	*that thou mightest*	*have sung*
Qu'il eût chanté,	*that he might*	*have sung*
Qu'on eût chanté,	*that one might*	*have sung*
Que nous eussions chanté,	*that we might*	*have sung*
Que vous eussiez chanté,	*that you might*	*have sung*
Qu'ils eussent chanté,	*that they might*	*have sung*

Infinitive Mode.

PRESENT.		PAST.	
Chanter,	*to sing*	Avoir chanté,	*to have sung*

Participle.

PRESENT.		COMPOUND.	
Chantant,	*singing*	Ayant chanté,	*having sung*

PAST OR PASSIVE.

Chanté, *sung*

§ 49.—Remarks on the Peculiarities of some Verbs of the First Conjugation.

(1.) In verbs ending in *ger*, in order to retain the soft pronunciation of the *g*,[1] the *e* of the infinitive is preserved, whenever the *g* would come before *a*, or *o*:

Nous mangeons,	*we eat;*	instead of	*nous mangons;*
Je mangeai,	*I did eat;*	"	*je mangai;*
Jugeant,	*judging;*	"	*jugant.*

(2.) In verbs ending in *yer*, the *y* is changed into *i*, before *e*, *es*, *ent*, and *e* (*not accented*), followed by *r* and one or more vowels:

Je paie,	*I pay;*	instead of	*je paye;*[2]
Ils essaient,	*they try;*	"	*ils essayent;*
Je paierai,	*I will pay;*	"	*je payerai.*

(3.) In verbs terminating in *cer*,[3] to preserve to the *c* its soft pronunciation, a cedilla (ç) is put under it, when it comes before *a* or *o*:

Commençant,	*commencing;*	instead of	*commencant;*
Nous plaçons,	*we place;*	"	*nous placons;*

(4.) In verbs ending in *eter* and *eler*, the *t* or *l* of the infinitive is doubled, when it comes before *e*, *es*, *ent* and *e* (*not accented*), followed by *r* and one or more vowels:

J'appelle,	*I call;*	instead of	*j'appele;*
Je jetterai,	*I will throw;*	"	*je jeterai;*
J'appellerais,	*I would call;*	"	*j'appelerais.*

(5.) The following verbs form exceptions to the last rule:

Acheter,	*to buy;*	Décolleter,	*to uncover the throat;*
Bourreler,	*to torment;*	Etiqueter,	*to ticket;*
Congeler,	*to congeal;*	Geler,	*to freeze;*
Colleter,	*to collar;*	Harceler,	*to teaze;*
Coqueter,	*to coquet;*	Peler,	*to peel;*
Déceler,	*to detect;*	Suracheter,	*to over buy;*
Dégeler,	*to throw;*		

In the above verbs, when the *t* or *l* comes before *e*, *es*, *ent*, or *e* (*not accented*) followed by *r* and one or more vowels, a grave accent (`) is put over the *e*, which precedes the *t* or *l*:

Je pèle,	*I peel;*	Je pèlerai,	*I will peel;*
J'achète,	*I buy;*	J'achèterai,	*I will buy;*

(6.) A grave accent is also used in verbs ending in

ecer, emer, ener, ever:

[1] See Lesson 3, 9.

[2] Some French authors, however, retain the *y* in verbs of this class.

[3] This rule applies also to *o* and *u* in verbs of the third conjugation, ending in *cevoir*, Je reçois, *I receive;* J'aperçois, *I perceive.*

and the acute accent of the infinitive of those ending in

écer,	égler,	éler,	érer,
ébrer,	égner,	émer,	éter,
écher,	égrer,	éner,	étrer,
éder,	éguer,	équer,	

is changed into a grave one, when the consonant following the first *e* of these terminations, comes before *e*, *es*, *ent*, and *e* (*not accented*), followed by *r* and one or more vowels:

Je sème,	*I sow;*	Je mène,	*I lead;*
Je célébrerai,	*I will celebrate;*	Il règnera,	*he will reign.*

(7.) In the tables of peculiar, irregular, defective, and unipersonal verbs, we will place a model verb of each class embraced in the preceding remarks, and also include, in the same table, the names of the principal verbs coming under these remarks, with reference to the models.

§ 50.—REGULAR VERBS.—CONTINUED.

SECOND CONJUGATION,—ENDING IN *IR*.

MODEL VERB.

FINIR, *TO FINISH*

INDICATIVE MODE.

SIMPLE TENSES.		COMPOUND TENSES.	
PRESENT.		PAST INDEFINITE.	
Je finis,	*I finish*	J'ai fini,	*I have finished*
Tu finis,	*thou finishest*	Tu as fini,	*thou hast finished*
Il finit,	*he finishes*	Il a fini,	*he has finished*
On finit,	*one finishes*	On a fini,	*one has finished*
Nous finissons,	*we finish*	Nous avons fini,	*we have finished*
Vous finissez,	*you finish*	Vous avez fini,	*you have finished*
Ils finissent,	*they finish*	Ils ont fini,	*they have finished*
IMPERFECT.		PLUPERFECT.	
Je finissais,	*I was finishing*, or *used to finish*	J'avais fini,	*I had finished*
Tu finissais,	*thou wast finishing*	Tu avais fini,	*thou hadst finished*
Il finissait,	*he was finishing*	Il avait fini,	*he had finished*
On finissait,	*one was finishing*	On avait fini,	*one had finished*
Nous finissions,	*we were finishing*	Nous avions fini,	*we had finished*
Vous finissiez,	*you were finishing*	Vous aviez fini,	*you had finished*
Ils finissaient,	*they were finishing*	Ils avaient fini,	*they had finished*
PAST DEFINITE.		PAST ANTERIOR.	
Je finis,	*I finished, did finish*	J'eus fini,	*I had finished*
Tu finis,	*thou didst finish*	Tu eus fini,	*thou hadst finished*
Il finit,	*he finished*	Il eut fini,	*he had finished*
On finit,	*one did finish*	On eut fini,	*one had finished*
Nous finîmes,	*we finished*	Nous eûmes fini,	*we had finished*
Vous finîtes,	*you finished*	Vous eûtes fini,	*you had finished*
Ils finirent,	*they finished*	Ils eurent fini,	*they had finished*

SIMPLE TENSES.		COMPOUND TENSES.		
FUTURE.		FUTURE ANTERIOR.		
Je finirai,	*I shall finish*	J'aurai fini,	*I shall have*	*finished*
Tu finiras,	*thou wilt finish*	Tu auras fini,	*thou wilt have*	
Il finira,	*he will finish*	Il aura fini,	*he shall have*	
On finira,	*one will finish*	On aura fini,	*one shall have*	
Nous finirons,	*we shall finish*	Nous aurons fini,	*we shall have*	
Vous finirez,	*you will finish*	Vous aurez fini,	*you will have*	
Ils finiront,	*they will finish*	Ils auront fini,	*they shall have*	

CONDITIONAL MODE.

PRESENT.		PAST.		
Je finirais,	*I would finish*	J'aurais fini,	*I should*	*have finished*
Tu finirais,	*thou shouldst finish*	Tu aurais fini,	*thou wouldst*	
Il finirait,	*he would finish*	Il aurait fini,	*he might*	
On finirait,	*one might finish*	On aurait fini,	*one should*	
Nous finirions,	*we would finish*	Nous aurions fini,	*we would*	
Vous finiriez,	*you might finish*	Vous auriez fini,	*you might*	
Ils finiraient,	*they should finish*	Ils auraient fini,	*they should*	

IMPERATIVE MODE.

Finis,	*finish thou*
Qu'il finisse,	*let him finish*
Qu'on finisse,	*let one finish*
Finissons,	*let us finish*
Finissez,	*finish ye* or *you*
Qu'ils finissent,	*let them finish.*

SUBJUNCTIVE MODE.

PRESENT.			PAST.		
Que je finisse,	*that I may*	*finish*	Que j'aie fini,	*that I may*	*have finished*
Que tu finisses,	*that thou mayest*		Que tu aies fini,	*that thou mayest*	
Qu'il finisse,	*that he may*		Qu'il ait fini,	*that he may*	
Qu'on finisse,	*that one may*		Qu'on ait fini,	*that one may*	
Que nous finissions,	*that we may*		Que nous ayons fini,	*that we may*	
Que vous finissiez,	*that you may*		Que vous ayez fini,	*that you may*	
Qu'ils finissent,	*that they may*		Qu'ils aient fini,	*that they may*	

IMPERFECT.			PLUPERFECT.		
Que je finisse,	*that I might*	*finish*	Que j'eusse fini,	*that I might*	*have finished*
Que tu finisses,	*that thou mightest*		Que tu eusses fini,	*that thou mightest*	
Qu'il finît,	*that he might*		Qu'il eût fini,	*that he might*	
Qu'on finît,	*that one might*		Qu'on eût fini,	*that one might*	
Que nous finissions,	*that we might*		Que nous eussions fini,	*that we might*	
Que vous finissiez,	*that you might*		Que vous eussiez fini,	*that you might*	
Qu'ils finissent,	*that they might*		Qu'ils eussent fini,	*that they might*	

INFINITIVE MODE.

SIMPLE TENSES.		COMPOUND TENSES.	
PRESENT.		PAST.	
Finir,	*to finish*	Avoir fini,	*to have finished*

PARTICIPLE.

PRESENT.		COMPOUND.	
Finissant,	*finishing*	Ayant fini,	*having finished*

PAST OR PASSIVE.

Fini, *finished*

§ 51.—REGULAR VERBS,—CONTINUED.

THIRD CONJUGATION,—ENDING IN

MODEL VERB.

RECEVOIR, *TO RECEIVE.*

INDICATIVE MODE.

SIMPLE TENSES.		COMPOUND TENSES.	
PRESENT.		PAST INDEFINITE.	
Je reçois,[1]	*I receive*	J'ai reçu,	*I have received*
Tu reçois,	*thou receivest*	Tu as reçu,	*thou hast received*
Il reçoit,	*he receives*	Il a reçu,	*he has received*
On reçoit,	*one receives*	On a reçu,	*one has received*
Nous recevons,	*we receive*	Nous avons reçu,	*we have received*
Vous recevez,	*you receive*	Vous avez reçu,	*you have received*
Ils reçoivent,	*they receive*	Ils ont reçu,	*they have received*
IMPERFECT.		PLUPERFECT.	
Je recevais,	*I was receiving*, or *I used to receive*	J'avais reçu,	*I had received*
Tu recevais,	*thou wast receiving*	Tu avais reçu,	*thou hadst received*
Il recevait,	*he was receiving*	Il avait reçu,	*he had received*
On recevait,	*one was receiving*	On avait reçu,	*one had received*
Nous recevions,	*we were receiving*	Nous avions reçu,	*we had received*
Vous receviez,	*you were receiving*	Vous aviez reçu,	*you had received*
Ils recevaient,	*they were receiving*	Ils avaient reçu,	*they had received*
PAST DEFINITE.		PAST ANTERIOR.	
Je reçus,	*I received* or *did receive*	J'eus reçu,	*I had received*
Tu reçus,	*thou receivedst*	Tu eus reçu,	*thou hadst received*
Il reçut,	*he received*	Il eut reçu,	*he had received*
On reçut,	*one received*	On eut reçu,	*one had received*
Nous reçûmes,	*we received*	Nous eûmes reçu,	*we had received*
Vous reçûtes,	*you received*	Vous eûtes reçu,	*you had received*
Ils reçurent,	*they received*	Ils eurent reçu,	*they had received*

or *been receiving*

[1] See note 2, § 49, (3.) Also, § 52.

SIMPLE TENSES.		COMPOUND TENSES.		
FUTURE.		FUTURE ANTERIOR.		
Je recevrai,	*I shall receive*	J'aurai reçu,	*I shall have*	*received*
Tu recevras,	*thou wilt receive*	Tu auras reçu,	*thou wilt have*	
Il recevra,	*he shall receive*	Il aura reçu,	*he will have*	
On recevra,	*one shall receive*	On aura reçu,	*one will have*	
Nous recevrons,	*we shall receive*	Nous aurons reçu,	*we shall have*	
Vous recevrez,	*you will receive*	Vous aurez reçu,	*you will have*	
Ils recevront,	*they will receive*	Ils auront reçu,	*they will have*	

CONDITIONAL MODE.

PRESENT.		PAST.		
Je recevrais,	*I should receive*	J'aurais reçu,	*I should*	*have received*
Tu recevrais,	*thou wouldst receive*	Tu aurais reçu,	*thou wouldst*	
Il recevrait,	*he should receive*	Il aurait reçu,	*he might*	
On recevrait,	*one might receive*	On aurait reçu,	*one would*	
Nous recevrions,	*we should receive*	Nous aurions reçu,	*we should*	
Vous recevriez,	*you might receive*	Vous auriez reçu,	*you might*	
Ils recevraient,	*they should receive*	Ils auraient reçu,	*they might*	

IMPERATIVE MODE.

Reçois,	*receive thou*
Qu'il reçoive,	*let him receive*
Qu'on reçoive,	*let one receive*
Recevons,	*let us receive*
Recevez,	*receive ye* or *you*
Qu'ils reçoivent,	*let them receive*

SUBJUNCTIVE MODE.

PRESENT.			PAST.		
Que je reçoive,	*that I may*	*receive*	Que j'aie reçu,	*that I may*	*have received*
Que tu reçoives,	*that thou mayest*		Que tu aies reçu,	*that thou mayest*	
Qu'il reçoive,	*that he may*		Qu'il ait reçu,	*that he may*	
Qu'on reçoive,	*that one may*		Qu'on ait reçu,	*that one may*	
Que nous recevions,	*that we may*		Que nous ayons reçu,	*that we may*	
Que vous receviez,	*that you may*		Que vous ayez reçu,	*that you may*	
Qu'ils reçoivent,	*that they may*		Qu'ils aient reçu,	*that they may*	
IMPERFECT.			PLUPERFECT.		
Que je reçusse,	*that I might*	*receive*	Que j'eusse reçu,	*that I might*	*have received*
Que tu reçusses,	*that thou mightest*		Que tu eusses reçu,	*that thou mightest*	
Qu'il reçût,	*that he might*		Qu'il eût reçu,	*that he might*	
Qu'on reçût,	*that one might*		Qu'on eût reçu,	*that one might*	
Que nous reçussions,	*that we might*		Que nous eussions reçu,	*that we might*	
Que vous reçussiez,	*that you might*		Que vous eussiez reçu,	*that you might*	
Qu'ils reçussent,	*that they might*		Qu'ils eussent reçu,	*that they might*	

INFINITIVE MODE.

SIMPLE TENSES.		COMPOUND TENSES.	
PRESENT.		PAST.	
Recevoir,	*to receive*	Avoir reçu,	*to have received*

PARTICIPLE.

PRESENT.		COMPOUND.	
Recevant,	*receiving*	Ayant reçu,	*having received*

PAST OR PASSIVE.

Reçu, *received*

§ 52.—REMARKS.

(1.) In the verbs of this conjugation, ending in *cevoir*, in order to preserve to the c its soft pronunciation, a cedilla (ç) is put under it, when it comes before *a, o, u* :—

Je reçois, *I receive;* J'aperçois, *I perceive.*

(2.) There are only seven regular verbs in this conjugation. They are:—

Apercevoir,	*to perceive;*	Percevoir,	*to collect duties, taxes;*
Concevoir,	*to conceive;*	Recevoir,	*to receive;*
Décevoir,	*to deceive;*	Redevoir,	*to owe again.*
Devoir,	*to owe;*		

§ 53.—REGULAR VERBS.—CONTINUED.

FOURTH CONJUGATION,—ENDING IN *RE.*

MODEL VERB.

VENDRE, *TO SELL.*

INDICATIVE MODE.

PRESENT.		PAST INDEFINITE.	
Je vends,	*I sell*	J'ai vendu,	*I have sold*
Tu vends,	*thou sellest*	Tu as vendu,	*thou hast sold*
Il vend,	*he sells*	Il a vendu,	*he has sold*
On vend,	*one sells*	On a vendu,	*one has sold*
Nous vendons,	*we sell*	Nous avons vendu,	*we have sold*
Vous vendez,	*you sell*	Vous avez vendu,	*you have sold*
Ils vendent,	*they sell*	Ils ont vendu,	*they have sold*

IMPERFECT.		PLUPERFECT.	
Je vendais,	*I was selling* or *used to sell*	J'avais vendu,	*I had sold* or *been selling*
Tu vendais,	*thou wast selling*	Tu avais vendu,	*thou hadst sold*
Il vendait,	*he was selling*	Il avait vendu,	*he had sold*
On vendait,	*one was selling*	On avait vendu,	*one had sold*
Nous vendions,	*we were selling*	Nous avions vendu,	*we had sold*
Vous vendiez,	*you were selling*	Vous aviez vendu,	*you had sold*
Ils vendaient,	*they were selling*	Ils avaient vendu,	*they had sold*

SIMPLE TENSES.		COMPOUND TENSES.	
PAST DEFINITE.		PAST ANTERIOR.	
Je vendis,	*I sold* or *did sell*	J'eus vendu,	*I had sold*
Tu vendis,	*thou soldest*	Tu eus vendu,	*thou hadst sold*
Il vendit,	*he sold*	Il eut vendu,	*he had sold*
On vendit,	*one sold*	On eut vendu,	*one had sold*
Nous vendîmes,	*we sold*	Nous eûmes vendu,	*we had sold*
Vous vendîtes,	*you sold*	Vous eûtes vendu,	*you had sold*
Ils vendirent,	*they sold*	Ils eurent vendu,	*they had sold*
FUTURE.		FUTURE ANTERIOR.	
Je vendrai,	*I shall sell*	J'aurai vendu,	*I shall have sold*
Tu vendras,	*thou wilt sell*	Tu auras vendu,	*thou wilt have sold*
Il vendra,	*he will sell*	Il aura vendu,	*he shall have sold*
On vendra,	*one will sell*	On aura vendu,	*one will have sold*
Nous vendrons,	*we will sell*	Nous aurons vendu,	*we shall have sold*
Vous vendrez,	*you will sell*	Vous aurez vendu,	*you will have sold*
Ils vendront,	*they will sell*	Ils auront vendu,	*they shall have sold*

CONDITIONAL MODE.

PRESENT.		PAST.		
Je vendrais,	*I should sell*	J'aurais vendu,	*I should*	*have sold*
Tu vendrais,	*thou wouldst sell*	Tu aurais vendu,	*thou wouldest*	
Il vendrait,	*he might sell*	Il aurait vendu,	*he might*	
On vendrait,	*one would sell*	On aurait vendu,	*one should*	
Nous vendrions,	*we should sell*	Nous aurions vendu,	*we should*	
Vous vendriez,	*you might sell*	Vous auriez vendu,	*you should*	
Ils vendraient,	*they would sell*	Ils auraient vendu,	*they should*	

INDICATIVE MODE.

Vends,	*sell thou*
Qu'il vende,	*let him sell*
Qu'on vende,	*let one sell*
Vendons,	*let us sell*
Vendez,	*sell ye* or *you*
Qu'ils vendent,	*let them sell*

SUBJUNCTIVE MODE.

PRESENT.		PAST.		
Que je vende,	*that I may sell*	Que j'aie vendu,	*that I may*	*have sold*
Que tu vendes,	*that thou mayest sell*	Que tu aies vendu,	*that thou mayest*	
Qu'il vende,	*that he may sell*	Qu'il ait vendu,	*that he may*	
Qu'on vende,	*that one may sell*	Qu'on ait vendu,	*that one may*	
Que nous vendions,	*that we may sell*	Que nous ayons vendu,	*that we may*	
Que vous vendiez,	*that you may sell*	Que vous ayez vendu,	*that you may*	
Qu'ils vendent,	*that they may sell*	Qu'ils aient vendu,	*that they may*	

SIMPLE TENSES.		COMPOUND TENSES.		
IMPERFECT.		PLUPERFECT.		
Que je vendisse,	*that I might sell*	Que j'eusse vendu,	*that I might*	have sold
Que tu vendisses,	*that thou mightest sell*	Que tu eusses vendu,	*that thou mightest*	have sold
Qu'il vendît,	*that he might sell*	Qu'il eût vendu,	*that he might*	have sold
Qu'on vendît,	*that one might sell*	Qu'on eût vendu,	*that one might*	have sold
Que nous vendissions,	*that we might sell*	Que nous eussions vendu,	*that we might*	have sold
Que vous vendissiez,	*that you might sell*	Que vous eussiez vendu,	*that you might*	have sold
Qu'ils vendissent,	*that they might sell*	Qu'ils eussent vendu,	*that they might*	have sold

INFINITIVE MODE.

PRESENT.		PAST.	
Vendre,	*to sell*	Avoir vendu,	*to have sold*

PARTICIPLE.

PRESENT.		COMPOUND.	
Vendant,	*selling*	Ayant vendu,	*having sold*

PAST OR PASSIVE.

Vendu, *sold*

§ 54.—CONJUGATION OF A PASSIVE VERB.

ÊTRE AIMÉ, *TO BE LOVED.*

INDICATIVE MODE.

PRESENT.

Je suis aimé, *m.* aimée, *f.*	*I am loved*
Tu es aimé *or* aimée,	*thou art loved*
Il est aimé,	*he is loved*
Elle est aimée,	*she is loved*
On est aimé,	*one is loved*
Nous sommes aimés *or* aimées,	*we are loved*
Vous êtes aimés *or* aimées,	*you are loved*
Ils sont aimés, *m.*	*they are loved*
Elles sont aimées, *f.*	*they are loved*

IMPERFECT.

J'étais aimé, *m.* aimée, *f.*	*I was loved, was being loved*	or used to be loved
Tu étais aimé *or* aimée,	*thou wast loved, wast being loved*	or used to be loved
Il était aimé,	*he was loved, was being loved*	or used to be loved
Elle était aimée,	*she was loved, was being loved*	or used to be loved
On était aimé,	*one was loved, was being loved*	or used to be loved
Nous étions aimés *or* aimées,	*we were loved, were being loved*	or used to be loved
Vous étiez aimés *or* aimées,	*you were loved, were being loved*	or used to be loved
Ils étaient aimés, *m.*	*they were loved, were being loved*	or used to be loved
Elles étaient aimées, *f.*	*they were loved, were being loved*	or used to be loved

PAST DEFINITE.

Je fus aimé, *m.* aimée, *f.*	*I was loved*
Tu fus aimé *or* aimée,	*thou wast loved*
Il fut aimé,	*he was loved*
Elle fut aimée,	*she was loved*
On fut aimé,	*one was loved*
Nous fûmes aimés *or* aimées,	*we were loved*
Vous fûtes aimés *or* aimées,	*you were loved*
Ils furent aimés, *m.*	*they were loved*
Elles furent aimées, *f.*	*they were loved*

PAST INDEFINITE.

J'ai été aimé *or* aimée,	*I have been loved*
Tu as été aimé *or* aimée,	*thou hast been loved*
Il a été aimé,	*he has been loved*
Elle a été aimée,	*she has been loved*
On a été aimé,	*one has been loved*
Nous avons été aimés *or* aimées,	*we have been loved*
Vous avez été aimés *or* aimées,	*you have been loved*
Ils ont été aimés, *m.*	*they have been loved*
Elles ont été aimées, *f.*	*they have been loved*

PAST ANTERIOR.

J'eus été aimé, *m.* aimée, *f.*	*I had been loved*
Tu eus été aimé *or* aimée,	*thou hadst been loved*
Il eut été aimé,	*he had been loved*
Elle eut été aimée,	*she had been loved*
On eut été aimé,	*one had been loved*
Nous eûmes été aimés *or* aimées,	*we had been loved*
Vous eûtes été aimés *or* aimées,	*you had been loved*
Ils eurent été aimés, *m.*	*they had been loved*
Elles eurent été aimées, *f.*	*they had been loved*

PLUPERFECT.

J'avais été aimé *or* aimée,	*I had been loved*
Tu avais été aimé *or* aimée	*thou hadst been loved*
Il avait été aimé,	*he had been loved*
Elle avait été aimée,	*she had been loved*
On avait été aimé,	*one had been loved*
Nous avions été aimés *or* aimées,	*we had been loved*
Vous aviez été aimés *or* aimées,	*you had been loved*
Ils avaient été aimés, *m.*	*they had been loved*
Elles avaient été aimées, *f.*	*they had been loved*

FUTURE.

Je serai aimé, *m.* aimée, *f.*	*I shall* or *will be loved*
Tu seras aimé *or* aimée,	*thou shalt* or *wilt be loved*
Il sera aimé,	*he shall* or *will be loved*
Elle sera aimée,	*she shall* or *will be loved*
On sera aimé,	*one shall* or *will be loved*
Nous serons aimés *or* aimées,	*we shall* or *will be loved*
Vous serez aimés *or* aimées,	*you shall* or *will be loved*
Ils seront aimés, *m.*	*they shall* or *will be loved*
Elles seront aimées, *f.*	*they shall* or *will be loved*

FUTURE ANTERIOR.

J'aurai été aimé, *m.* aimée, *f.*	*I shall, will have been loved*
Tu auras été aimé *or* aimée,	*thou shalt, wilt have been loved*
Il aura été aimé,	*he shall, will have been loved*
Elle aura été aimée,	*she shall, will have been loved*
On aura été aimé,	*one shall, will have been loved*
Nous aurons été aimés *or* aimées,	*we shall, will have been loved*
Vous aurez été aimés *or* aimées,	*you shall, will have been loved*
Ils auront été aimés, *m.*	*they shall, will have been loved*
Elles auront été aimées, *f.*	*they shall, will have been loved*

CONDITIONAL MODE.

PRESENT.

Je serais aimé, *m.* aimée, *f.*	*I should, would, could, might be loved*
Tu serais aimé *or* aimée,	*thou shouldst, couldst, mightest be loved*
Il serait aimé,	*he would* or *might be loved*
Elle serait aimée,	*she might be loved*
On serait aimé,	*one could be loved*
Nous serions aimés *or* aimées,	*we should* or *would be loved*
Vous seriez aimés *or* aimées,	*you would* or *might be loved*
Ils seraient aimés, *m.*	*they might* or *should be loved*
Elles seraient aimées, *f.*	*they might, could, should be loved*

PAST.

J'aurais été aimé, *m.* aimée, *f.*	*I should, would have been loved*
Tu aurais été aimé *or* aimée,	*thou wouldst have been loved*
Il aurait été aimé,	*he would have been loved*
Elle aurait été aimée,	*she would have been loved*
On aurait été aimé,	*one would have been loved*
Nous aurions été aimés *or* aimées,	*we might have been loved*
Vous auriez été aimés *or* aimées,	*you would have been loved*
Ils auraient été aimés, *m.*	*they might have been loved*
Elles auraient été aimées, *f.*	*they should* or *might have been loved*

IMPERATIVE MODE.

Sois aimé, *m.* aimée, *f.*	*be thou loved*
Qu'il soit aimé,	*let him be loved*
Qu'elle soit aimée,	*let her be loved*
Qu'on soit aimé,	*let one be loved*
Soyons aimés *or* aimées,	*let us be loved*
Soyez aimés *or* aimées,	*be ye* or *you loved*
Qu'ils soient aimés, *m.*	*let them be loved*
Qu'elles soient aimées, *f.*	*let them be loved*

SUBJUNCTIVE MODE.

PRESENT.

Que je sois aimé, *m.* aimée, *f.*	*that I may be loved*
Que tu sois aimé *or* aimée,	*that thou mayest be loved*
Qu'il soit aimé,	*that he may be loved*
Qu'elle soit aimée,	*that she may be loved*
Qu'on soit aimé,	*that one may be loved*
Que nous soyons aimés *or* aimées,	*that we may be loved*
Que vous soyez aimés *or* aimées,	*that you may be loved*
Qu'ils soient aimés,	*that they may be loved*
Qu'elles soient aimées,	*that they may be loved*

IMPERFECT.

Que je fusse aimé, *m.* aimée, *f.*	*that I might be loved*
Que tu fusses aimé *or* aimée,	*that thou mightest be loved*
Qu'il fût aimé,	*that he might be loved*
Qu'elle fût aimée,	*that she might be loved*
Qu'on fût aimé,	*that one might be loved*
Que nous fussions aimés *or* aimées,	*that we might be loved*
Que vous fussiez aimés *or* aimées,	*that you might be loved*
Qu'ils fussent aimés, *m.*	*that they might be loved*
Qu'elles fussent aimées, *f.*	*that they might be loved*

PAST.

Que j'aie été aimé, *m.* aimée, *f.*	*that I may have been loved*
Que tu aies été aimé *or* aimée,	*that thou mayest have been loved*
Qu'il ait été aimé,	*that he may have been loved*
Qu'elle ait été aimée,	*that she may have been loved*
Qu'on ait été aimé,	*that one may have been loved*
Que nous ayons été aimés *or* aimées,	*that we may have been loved*
Que vous ayez été aimés *or* aimées,	*that you may have been loved*
Qu'ils aient été aimés, *m.*	*that they may have been loved*
Qu'elles aient été aimées, *f.*	*that they may have been loved*

PLUPERFECT.

Que j'eusse été aimé, *m.* aimée, *f.*	*that I might have been loved*
Que tu eusses été aimé *or* aimée,	*that thou mightest have been loved*
Qu'il eût été aimé,	*that he might have been loved*
Qu'elle eût été aimée,	*that she might have been loved*
Qu'on eût été aimé,	*that one might have been loved*
Que nous eussions été aimés *or* aimées,	*that we might have been loved*
Que vous eussiez été aimés *or* aimées,	*that you might have been loved*
Qu'ils eussent été aimés,	*that they might have been loved*
Qu'elles eussent été aimées,	*that they might have been loved*

INFINITIVE MODE.

PRESENT.

Être aimé, *m.* aimée, *f.*	*to be loved*

PAST.

Avoir été aimé, *m.* aimée, *f.*	*to have been loved*

PARTICIPLE.

PRESENT.

Étant aimé, *m.* aimée, *f.*	*being loved*

COMPOUND.

Ayant été aimé, *m.* aimée, *f.*	*having been loved*

PAST.

Été aimé, *m.* aimée, *f.*	*been loved*

§ 55.—Rule.

There is only one conjugation for passive verbs. It is formed of the auxiliary *être* in all its tenses, simple and compound, and the participle past of the active verb which we wish to conjugate in the passive voice. See § 43, (4).

§ 56.—Conjugation of Reflective Verbs [§ 43, (6.)].

Model Verb.

SE FLATTER, *TO FLATTER ONE'S SELF.*

Indicative Mode.

PRESENT.

Je me flatte,	*I flatter myself*
Tu te flattes,	*thou flatterest thyself*
Il se flatte,	*he flatters himself*
On se flatte,	*one flatters himself* or *one's self*
Nous nous flattons,	*we flatter ourselves*
Vous vous flattez,	*you flatter yourselves*
Ils se flattent,	*they flatter themselves*

IMPERFECT.

Je me flattais,	*I was flattering* or *used to flatter myself*
Tu te flattais,	*thou wast flattering thyself*
Il se flattait,	*he was flattering himself*
On se flattait,	*one was flattering one's self, himself*
Nous nous flattions,	*we were flattering ourselves*
Vous vous flattiez,	*you were flattering yourselves*
Ils se flattaient,	*they were flattering themselves*

PAST DEFINITE.

Je me flattai,	*I flattered* or *did flatter myself*
Tu te flattas,	*thou didst flatter thyself*
Il se flatta,	*he flattered himself*
On se flatta,	*one flattered one's self, himself*
Nous nous flattâmes,	*we flattered ourselves*
Vous vous flattâtes,	*you flattered yourselves*
Ils se flattèrent,	*they flattered themselves*

PAST INDEFINITE.

Je me suis flatté, *m.* flattée, *f.*	*I have flattered myself*
Tu t'es flatté *or* flattée,	*thou hast flattered thyself*
Il s'est flatté,	*he has flattered himself*
Elle s'est flattée,	*she has flattered herself*
On s'est flatté,	*one has flattered himself* or *one's self*
Nous nous sommes flattés *or* flattées,	*we have flattered ourselves*
Vous vous êtes flattés *or* flattées,	*you have flattered yourselves*
Ils se sont flattés, *m.*	*they have flattered themselves*
Elles se sont flattées, *f.*	*they have flattered themselves*

PAST ANTERIOR.

Je me fus flatté, *m.* flattée, *f.*	*I had flattered myself*
Tu te fus flatté *or* flattée,	*thou hadst flattered thyself*
Il se fut flatté,	*he had flattered himself*
Elle se fut flattée,	*she had flattered herself*
On se fut flatté,	*one had flattered himself, one's self*
Nous nous fûmes flattés *or* flattées,	*we had flattered ourselves*
Vous vous fûtes flattés *or* flattées,	*you had flattered yourselves*
Ils se furent flattés, *m.*	*they had flattered themselves*
Elles se furent flattées, *f.*	*they had flattered themselves*

PLUPERFECT.

Je m'étais flatté, *m.* flattée, *f.*	*I had flattered myself*
Tu t'étais flatté *or* flattée,	*thou hadst flattered thyself*
Il s'était flatté,	*he had flattered himself*
Elle s'était flattée,	*she had flattered herself*
On s'était flatté,	*one had flattered himself, one's self*
Nous nous étions flattés *or* flattées,	*we had flattered ourselves*
Vous vous étiez flattés *or* flattées,	*you had flattered yourselves*
Ils s'étaient flattés, *m.*	*they had flattered themselves*
Elles s'étaient flattées, *f.*	*they had flattered themselves*

FUTURE.

Je me flatterai,	*I shall* or *will flatter myself*
Tu te flatteras,	*thou shalt* or *wilt flatter thyself*
Il se flattera,	*he shall* or *will flatter himself*
On se flattera,	*one will flatter himself, one's self*
Nous nous flatterons,	*we will flatter ourselves*
Vous vous flatterez,	*you will flatter yourselves*
Ils se flatteront,	*they will flatter themselves.*

FUTURE ANTERIOR.

Je me serai flatté, *m.* flattée, *f.*	*I shall have flattered myself*
Tu te seras flatté *or* flattée,	*Thou wilt have flattered thyself*
Il se sera flatté,	*He will have flattered himself*
Elle se sera flattée,	*She will have flattered herself*
On se sera flatté,	*One will have flattered himself*
Nous nous serons flattés *or* flattées,	*We will have flattered ourselves*
Vous vous serez flattés *or* flattées,	*You will have flattered yourselves*
Ils se seront flattés, *m.*	*They will have flattered themselves*
Elles se seront flattées, *f.*	*They will have flattered themselves*

CONDITIONAL MODE.

PRESENT.

Je me flatterais,	*I should, would, could, might flatter myself*
Tu te flatterais,	*thou wouldst flatter thyself*
Il se flatterait,	*he would flatter himself*
On se flatterait,	*one would flatter himself, one's self*
Nous nous flatterions,	*we would flatter ourselves*
Vous vous flatteriez,	*you would flatter yourselves*
Ils se flatteraient,	*they would flatter themselves*

PAST.

Je me serais flatté, *m.* flattée, *f.*	*I should, would, could, might have flattered myself*
Tu te serais flatté *or* flattée,	*thou wouldst have flattered thyself*
Il se serait flatté,	*he would have flattered himself*
Elle se serait flattée,	*she would have flattered herself*
On se serait flatté,	*one would have flattered one's self*
Nous nous serions flattés *or* flattées,	*we might have flattered ourselves*
Vous vous seriez flattés *or* flattées,	*you would have flattered yourselves*
Ils se seraient flattés, *m.*	*they would have flattered themselves*
Elles se seraient flattées, *f.*	*they would have flattered themselves*

IMPERATIVE MODE.

Flatte-toi,	*flatter thyself*
Qu'il se flatte,	*let him flatter himself*
Qu'on se flatte,	*let one flatter one's self, himself*
Flattons-nous,	*let us flatter ourselves*
Flattez-vous,	*flatter yourselves*
Qu'ils se flattent,	*let them flatter themselves*

SUBJUNCTIVE MODE.

PRESENT.

Que je me flatte,	*that I may flatter myself*
Que tu te flattes,	*that thou mayest flatter thyself*
Qu'il se flatte,	*that he may flatter himself*
Qu'on se flatte,	*that one may flatter himself*
Que nous nous flattions,	*that we may flatter ourselves*
Que vous vous flattiez,	*that you may flatter yourselves*
Qu'ils se flattent,	*that they may flatter themselves*

IMPERFECT.

Que je me flattasse,	*that I might flatter myself*
Que tu te flattasses,	*that thou mightest flatter thyself*
Qu'il se flattât,	*that he might flatter himself*
Qu'on se flattât,	*that one might flatter himself*
Que nous nous flattassions,	*that we might flatter ourselves*
Que vous vous flattassiez,	*that you might flatter yourselves*
Qu'ils se flattassent,	*that they might flatter themselves*

PAST.

Que je me sois flatté, *m.* flattée, *f.*	*that I may have flattered myself*
Que tu te sois flatté *or* flattée,	*that thou mayest have flattered thyself*
Qu'il se soit flatté,	*that he may have flattered himself*
Qu'elle se soit flattée,	*that she may have flattered herself*
Qu'on se soit flatté,	*that one may have flattered himself*
Que nous nous soyons flattés *or* flattées,	*that we may have flattered ourselves*
Que vous vous soyez flattés *or* flattées,	*that you may have flattered yourselves*
Qu'ils se soient flattés, *m.*	*that they may have flattered themselves*
Qu'elles se soient flattées, *f.*	*that they may have flattered themselves*

PLUPERFECT.

Que je me fusse flatté, *m.* flattée, *f.*	*that I might have flattered myself*
Que tu te fusses flatté *or* flattée,	*that thou mightest have flattered thyself*
Qu'il se fût flatté,	*that he might have flattered himself*
Qu'elle se fût flattée,	*that she might have flattered herself*
Qu'on se fût flatté,	*that one might have flattered himself*
Que nous nous fussions flattés *or* flattées,	*that we might have flattered ourselves*
Que vous vous fussiez flattés *or* flattées,	*that you might have flattered yourselves*
Qu'ils se fussent flattés, *m.*	*that they might have flattered themselves*
Qu'elles se fussent flattées, *f.*	*that they might have flattered themselves*

INFINITIVE MODE.

PRESENT.		PAST.	
Se flatter,	*to flatter one's self*	S'être flatté,	*to have flattered one's self*

PARTICIPLE.

PRESENT.		COMPOUND.	
Se flattant,	*flattering one's self*	S'étant flatté,	*having flattered one's self*

PAST.

Flatté, *m.* flattée, *f.* flattés, *m. p.* flattées, *f. p.* *flattered*

§ 57.—NEGATIVE FORM OF THE REFLECTIVE VERBS.

NE PAS SE FLATTER, *NOT TO FLATTER ONE'S SELF.*

INDICATIVE MODE.

PRESENT.

Je ne me flatte pas,	*I do not flatter myself*
Tu ne te flattes pas,	*thou dost not flatter thyself*
Il ne se flatte pas,	*he does not flatter himself*
On ne se flatte pas,	*one does not flatter himself*
Nous ne nous flattons pas,	*we do not flatter ourselves*
Vous ne vous flattez pas,	*you do not flatter yourselves*
Ils ne se flattent pas,	*they do not flatter themselves*
&c. &c.	*&c. &c.*

We will add a compound tense and the imperative conjugated in this form.

PAST INDEFINITE.

Je ne me suis pas flatté, *m.* flattée, *f.*	*I have not flattered myself*
Tu ne t'es pas flatté *or* flattée,	*thou hast not flattered thyself*
Il ne s'est pas flatté,	*he has not flattered himself*
Elle ne s'est pas flattée,	*she has not flattered herself*
On ne s'est pas flatté,	*one has not flattered himself*
Nous ne nous sommes pas flattés *or* flattées,	*we have not flattered ourselves*
Vous ne vous êtes pas flattés *or* flattées,	*you have not flattered yourselves*
Ils ne se sont pas flattés, *m.*	*they have not flattered themselves*
Elles ne se sont pas flattées, *f.*	*they have not flattered themselves*
&c. &c.	&c. &c.

IMPERATIVE MODE.

Ne te flatte pas,	*do not flatter thyself*
Qu'il ne se flatte pas,	*let him not flatter himself*
Qu'on ne se flatte pas,	*let one not flatter himself*
Ne nous flattons pas,	*let us not flatter ourselves*
Ne vous flattez pas,	*do not flatter yourselves*
Qu'ils ne se flattent pas,	*let them not flatter themselves*
&c. &c.	&c. &c.

§ 58.—INTERROGATIVE FORM OF THE REFLECTIVE VERB.

INDICATIVE MODE.

PRESENT.

Me flatté-je ? *or*[1] est-ce que je me flatte ?	*do I flatter myself?*
Te flattes-tu ?	*dost thou flatter thyself?*
Se flatte-t-il ?[2]	*does he flatter himself?*
Se flatte-t-on ?	*does one flatter himself?*
Nous flattons-nous ?	*do we flatter ourselves?*
Vous flattez-vous ?	*do you flatter yourselves?*
Se flattent-ils ?	*do they flatter themselves?*
&c. &c.	&c. &c.

PAST INDEFINITE.

Me suis-je flatté, *m.* flattée ? *f.*	*have I flattered myself?*
T'es-tu flatté *or* flattée ?	*hast thou flattered thyself?*
S'est-il flatté ?	*has he flattered himself?*
S'est-elle flattée ?	*has she flattered herself?*
S'est-on flatté ?	*has one flattered himself?*
Nous sommes-nous flattés *or* flattées ?	*have we flattered ourselves?*
Vous êtes-vous flatés *or* flattées ?	*have you flattered yourselves?*
Se sont-ils flattés ? *m.*	*have they flattered themselves?*
Se sont-elles flattées ? *f.*	*have they flattered themselves?*
&c. &c.	&c. &c.

[1] See § 98, and L. 25.

[2] See L. 4, R. 6.

§ 59.—The Reflective Verb Conjugated Negatively and Interrogatively.

Indicative Mode.

PRESENT.

Ne me flatté-je pas? ne me flatte pas?	Est-ce que je	*do I not flatter myself?*
Ne te flattes-tu pas?		*dost thou not flatter thyself?*
Ne se flatte-t-il pas?		*does he not flatter himself?*
Ne se flatte-t-on pas?		*does one not flatter himself?*
Ne nous flattons-nous pas?		*do we not flatter ourselves?*
Ne vous flattez-vous pas?		*do you not flatter yourselves?*
Ne se flattent-ils pas?		*do they not flatter themselves?*
&c. &c.		&c. &c.

PAST INDEFINITE.

Ne me suis-je pas flatté, *m.* flattée? *f.*	*have I not flattered myself?*
Ne t'es-tu pas flatté *or* flattée?	*hast thou not flattered thyself?*
Ne s'est-il pas flatté?	*has he not flattered himself?*
Ne s'est-elle pas flattée?	*has she not flattered herself?*
Ne s'est-on pas flatté?	*has one not flattered himself?*
Ne nous sommes-nous pas flattés *or* flattées?	*have we not flattered ourselves?*
Ne vous êtes-vous pas flattés *or* flattées?	*have you not flattered yourselves?*
Ne se sont-ils pas flattés? *m.*	*have they not flattered themselves?*
Ne se sont-elles pas flattées? *f.*	*have they not flattered themselves?*

§ 60. TABLE

REGULAR TERMINATIONS

Conjugation.	Infinitive.	Present Participle.	Past Participle.	Person.	Indicative.	Imperfect.
1st ER.	er.	ant.	*Sing.*	1	e,	ais,
	CHANT-	CHANT-	CHANT- é, *mas.*	*Sing.* 2	es,	ais,
			ée, *fem.*	3	e,	CHANT- ait,
			Plur.	1	ons,	ions,
			és, *mas.*	*Plur.* 2	ez,	iez,
			ées, *fem.*	3	ent.	aient.
2d IR.	ir.	issant.	*Sing.*	1	is,	issais,
	FIN-	FIN-	i, *mas.*	*Sing.* 2	is,	issais,
			FIN- ie, *fem.*	3	it,	FIN- issait,
			Plur.	1	issons	issions,
			is, *mas.*	*Plur.* 2	issez,	issiez,
			ies, *fem.*	3	issent.	issaient.
3d OIR.	evoir.	evant.	*Sing.*	1	ois,	evais,
	REC-	REC-	u, *mas.*	*Sing.* 2	ois,	evais,
			REÇ- ue, *fem.*	3	oit,	REC- evait,
			Plur.	1	evons,	evions,
			us, *mas.*	*Plur.* 2	evez,	eviez,
			ues, *fem.*	3	oivent.	evaient.
4th RE.	re.	ant.	*Sing.*	1	s,	ais,
	VEND-	VEND-	u, *mas.*	*Sing.* 2	s,	ais,
			VEND- ue, *fem.*	3		VEND- ait,
			Plur.	1	ons,	ions,
			us, *mas.*	*Plur.* 2	ez,	iez,
			ues, *fem.*	3	ent.	aient.

OF THE

OF THE FOUR CONJUGATIONS.

PAST DEFINITE.	FUTURE.	CONDITIONAL.	IMPERATIVE.	SUBJUNCTIVE.	IMPERFECT.
CHANT- ai,	CHANT- erai,	CHANT- erais,	CHANT- e,	CHANT- e,	CHANT- asse,
as,	eras,	erais,	e,	es,	asses,
a,	era,	erait,	e,	e,	ât,
âmes,	erons,	erions,	ons,	ions,	assions,
âtes,	erez,	eriez,	ez,	iez,	assiez,
èrent.	eront.	eraient.	ent.	ent.	assent.
FIN- is,	FIN- irai,	FIN- irais,			
is,	iras,	irais,	is,	isse,	isse,
it,	ira,	irait,	isse,	isses,	isses,
îmes,	irons,	irions,	issons,	isse,	ît,
îtes,	irez,	iriez,	issez,	issions,	issions,
irent.	iront.	iraient.	issent.	issiez,	issiez,
REC- us,	REC- evrai,	REC- evrais,		issent.	issent.
us,	evras,	evrais,	ois,	oive,	usse,
ut,	evra,	evrait,	oive,	oives,	usses,
ûmes,	evrons,	evrions,	evons,	oive,	ût,
ûtes,	evrez,	evriez,	evez,	eviez,	ussions,
urent.	evront.	evraient.	oivent.	oivent.	ussiez,
VEND- is,	VEND- rai,	VEND- rais,			ussent.
is,	ras,	rais,	s,	e,	isse,
it,	ra,	rait,	e,	es,	isses,
îmes,	rons,	rions,	ons,	e,	ît,
îtes,	rez,	riez,	ez,	ions,	issions,
irent.	ront.	raient.	ent.	iez,	issiez,
				ent.	issent.

§ 61.—Formation of the Tenses.

(1.) The tenses are simple or compound.

1. We call those, *simple* tenses, which do not borrow one of the tenses of the auxiliaries *avoir* and *être*.

2. We call those *compound* tenses, which are composed of the tenses of *avoir* and *être*, and the participle past of a verb.

(2.) Among the simple tenses, five are called *primitive*, because they serve to form the other tenses. They are:

1. The present of the indicative;
2. The past definite;
3. The present of the infinitive;
4. The participle present;
5. The participle past.

(3.) The other simple tenses, called *derived* tenses, are formed from the primitive.

(4.) 1. The present of the indicative forms the imperative, by suppressing the pronouns: as, je chante, *chante;* nous chantons, vous chantez, *chantons, chantez.* It will be seen that the third person of the singular and plural of the imperative, is properly the third person of the singular and plural of the subjunctive, used imperatively.

(5.) The past definite forms the imperfect of the subjunctive, by changing *i* into *sse* for the first conjugation; as, je chantai, *que je chantasse*, and by adding *se* for the other conjugations: as, je finis, *que je finisse;* je reçus, *que je reçusse;* je vendis, *que je vendisse.*

(6.) The present of the infinitive forms:

1. The future, by adding *ai* for the first and second conjugations: as, chanter, *je chanterai;* finir, *je finirai;* and by changing *oir* and *re* into *rai* for the other two conjugations; as, recevoir, *je recevrai;* rendre, *je rendrai.*

2. The conditional present is by French grammarians formed from the future by the addition of *s:* as, je chanterai, *je chanterais;* je finirai, *je finirais;* je recevrai, *je recevrais;* je vendrai, *je vendrais.*

(7.) The participle present forms:

1. The imperfect of the indicative, by changing *ant* into *ais:* as, chantant, *je chantais;* finissant, *je finissais;* recevant, *je recevais;* vendant, *je vendais.*

2. The present of the subjunctive, by changing *ant* into *e:* as, chantant, *que je chante;* finissant, *que je finisse;* vendant, *que je vende.*

Exception: In verbs of the third conjugation the termination *evant* is changed into *oive:* as, recevant, *que je reçoive.*

(8.) This formation must not prevent the change of *y* into *i*, according to Rule (2.) § 49.

(9.) The participle past forms all the compound tenses of verbs with the aid of the auxiliaries *avoir* and *être*: as, *j'ai chanté, je suis aimé, j'avais chanté, j'étais aimé.*

§ 61–2.—Paradigm of the Unipersonal Verb Y Avoir, To be there.

Indicative Mode.

PRESENT.		PAST INDEFINITE.	
Il y a,	*there is; there are*	Il y a eu,	*there has been; there have been*
IMPERFECT.		PLUPERFECT.	
Il y avait,	*there was; there were*	Il y avait eu,	*there had been*
PAST DEFINITE.		PAST ANTERIOR.	
Il y eut,	*there was; there were*	Il y eut eu,	*there had been*
FUTURE.		FUTURE ANTERIOR.	
Il y aura,	*there will be*	Il y aura eu,	*there will have been*

Conditional Mode.

PRESENT.		PAST.	
Il y aurait,	*there would be*	Il y aurait eu,	*there would have been*

Imperative Mode.

Qu'il y ait, *Let there be.*

Subjunctive Mode.

PRESENT.		PAST.	
Qu'il y ait,	*that there may be*	Qu'il y ait eu,	*that there may have been*
IMPERFECT.		PLUPERFECT.	
Qu'il y eût,	*that there might be*	Qu'il y eût eu,	*that there might have been*

Infinitive Mode.

PRESENT.		PAST.	
Y avoir,	*to be there*	Y avoir eu,	*to have been there*

Participle.

PRESENT.		COMPOUND.	
Y ayant,	*there being*	Y ayant eu,	*there having been*

Past or Passive.

Eu.

§ 62. ALPHABET

OF THE IRREGULAR, DEFECTIVE,

SEE § 44, RULE (2.)

The figures placed after the infinitive of the verbs

The tenses not given in

INFINITIVE.	PARTICIPLES.	INDICATIVE.	IMPERFECT.	PAST DEFINITE.
ABATTRE, 4. *to pull down*	abattant abattu, *f.* e.	j'abats *see* BATTRE	j'abattais	j'abattis
ABSOUDRE, 4. *to absolve* aux. avoir *defective.*	absolvant absous absout	j'absous tu absous il absout n. absolvons v. absolvez ils absolvent	j'absolvais tu absolvais il absolvait n. absolvions v. absolviez i. absolvaient	
ABSTENIR (s') 2. *to abstain*	s'abstenant abstenu, *f.* e.	je m'abstiens ref. *see* TENIR	je m'abstenais	je m'abstins
ABSTRAIRE, 4. *to abstract*	abstrayant abstrait, *f.* e.	j'abstrais *see* TRAIRE	j'abstrayais	
ACCOURIR, 2. *to run to*	accourant accouru, *f.* e.	j'accours *see* COURIR	j'accourais	j'accourus
ACCROÎTRE, 4. *to increase*	accroissant accru, *f.* e.	j'accrois *see* CROÎTRE	j'accroissais *also reflective*	j'accrus
ACCUEILLIR, 2. *to welcome*	accueillant accueilli, *f.* e.	j'accueille *see* CUEILLIR	j'accueillais	j'accueillis
ACHETER, 1. *to buy* aux. avoir § 49, (5) *peculiar.*	achetant acheté, *f.* e.	j'achète tu achètes il achète n. achetons v. achetez i. achètent	j'achetais *like* CHANTER	j'achetai
ACHEVER, 1. *to complete* aux. avoir § 49, (6) *peculiar.*	achevant achevé, *f.* e.	j'achève tu achèves il achève n. achevons v. achevez i. achèvent	j'achevais *like* CHANTER	j'achevai
ACQUÉRIR, 2. *to acquire* aux. avoir *irregular*	acquérant acquis, *f.* e.	j'acquiers tu acquiers il acquiert n. acquérons v. acquérez i. acquièrent	j'acquérais tu acquérais il acquérait n. acquérions v. acquériez ils acquéraient	j'acquis tu acquis il acquit n. acquîmes v. acquîtes ils acquirent
ADJOINDRE, 4. *to associate, &c.*	adjoignant adjoint, *f.* e.	j'adjoins *see* JOINDRE	j'adjoignais	j'adjoignis
ADMETTRE, 4. *to admit*	admettant admis, *f.* e.	j'admets *see* METTRE	j'admettais	j'admis

ICAL TABLE

PECULIAR AND UNIPERSONAL VERBS.

§ 43, RULE (7.) and § 49.

indicate the conjugations to which they belong.

this Table are not used.

FUTURE.	CONDITIONAL.	IMPERATIVE.	SUBJUNCTIVE.	IMPERFECT.
j'abattrai	j'abattrais	abats	j'abatte	j'abattisse
j'absoudrai	j'absoudrais		j'absolve	
tu absoudras	tu absoudrais	absous	tu absolves	
il absoudra	il absoudrait	q. absolve	il absolve	
n. absoudrons	n. absoudrions	absolvons	n. absolvions	
v. absoudrez	v. absoudriez	absolvez	v. absolviez	
i. absoudront	i. absoudraient	q. absolvent	i. absolvent	
je m'abstiendrai	je m'abstiendrais	abstiens-toi	je m'abstienne	je m'abstinsse
j'abstrairai	j'abstrairais	abstrais	j'abstraie	
j'accourrai	j'accourrais	accours	j'accoure	j'accourusse
j'accroîtrai	j'accroîtrais	accrois	j'accroisse	j'accrusse
j'accueillerai	j'accueillerais	accueille	j'accueille	j'accueillisse
j'achèterai	j'achèterais	achète	j'achète	j'achetasse
tu achèteras	tu achèterais	achète	tu achètes	*like*
il achètera	il achèterait	q. achète	il achète	CHANTER
n. achèterons	n. achèterions	achetons	n. achetions	
v. achèterez	v. achèteriez	achetez	v. achetiez	
ils achèteront	i. achèteraient	q. achètent	ils achètent	
j'achèverai	j'achèverais		j'achève	j'achevasse
tu achèveras	tu achèverais	achève	tu achèves	*like*
il achèvera	il achèverait	q. achève	il achève	CHANTER
n. achèverons	n. achèverions	achevons	n. achevions	
v. achèverez	v. achèveriez	achevez	v. acheviez	
ils achèveront	i. achèveraient	q. achèvent	i. achèvent	
j'acquerrai	j'acquerrais		j'acquière	j'acquisse
tu acquerras	tu acquerrais	acquiers	tu acquières	tu acquisses
il acquerra	il acquerrait	q. acquière	il acquière	il acquît
n. acquerrons	n. acquerrions	acquérons	n. acquérions	n. acquissions
n. acquerrez	v. acquerriez	acquérez	v. acquériez	v. acquissiez
ils acquerront	i. acquerraient	q. acquièrent	i. acquièrent	i. acquissent
j'adjoindrai	j'adjoindrais	adjoins	j'adjoigne	j'adjoignisse
j'admettrai	j'admettrais	admets	j'admette	j'admisse

INFINITIVE.	PARTICIPLES.	INDICATIVE.	IMPERFECT.	PAST DEFINITE.
ALLER, 1. *to go* aux. être *irregular*	allant allé, *f.* e.	je vais tu vas il va n. allons v. allez ils vont	j'allais tu allais il allait n. allions v. alliez ils allaient	j'allai tu allas il alla n. allâmes v. allâtes i. allèrent
AMENER, 1. *to bring*	amenant amené, *f.* e.	j'amène § 49, (6)	j'amenais *see* ACHEVER	j'amenai
AMONCELER, 1. *to heap*	amoncelant amoncelé, *f.* e.	j'amoncelle § 49, (4)	j'amoncelais *see* APPELER	j'amoncelai
APPARAÎTRE, 4. *to appear*	apparaissant apparu, *f.* e.	j'apparais *see* PARAÎTRE	j'apparaissais	j'apparus
APPARTENIR, 2. *to belong*	appartenant appartenu, *f.* e.	j'appartiens *see* TENIR	j'appartenais	j'appartins
APPELER, 1. *to call* aux. avoir § 49, (4) *peculiar*	appelant appelé, *f.* e.	j'appelle tu appelles il appelle n. appelons v. appelez ils appellent	j'appelais *like* CHANTER	j'appelai *like* CHANTER
APPRENDRE, 4. *to learn*	apprenant appris, *f.* e.	j'apprends *see* PRENDRE	j'apprenais	j'appris
APPUYER, 1. *to support* aux. avoir § 49, (2) *peculiar.*	appuyant appuyé, *f.* e.	j'appuie tu appuies il appuie n. appuyons v. appuyez ils appuient	j'appuyais t. appuyais il appuyait n. appuyions v. appuyiez i. appuyaient	j'appuyai *like* CHANTER
ASSAILLIR, 2. *to assault* aux. avoir *irregular*	assaillant assailli, *f.* e.	j'assaille tu assailles il assaille n. assaillons v. assaillez ils assaillent	j'assaillais t. assaillais i. assaillait n. assaillions v. assailliez i. assaillaient	j'assaillis t. assaillis i. assaillit n. assaillîmes v. assaillîtes i. assaillirent
ASSEOIR, 3. *to set something down; to seat*	asseyant assis, *f.* e.	j'assieds *see* S'ASSEOIR	j'asseyais	j'assis
ASSEOIR, (s') 3. *to sit down* aux. être *irregular and reflective*	s'asseyant assis, *f.* e.	j. m'assieds t. t'assieds i. s'assied n. n. asseyons v. v. asseyez i. s'asseient	je m'asseyais t. t'asseyais i. s'asseyait n. n. asseyions v. v. asseyiez i. s'asseyaient	j. m'assis t. t'assis i. s'assit n. n. assîmes v. v. assîtes i. s'assirent
ASTREINDRE, 4. *to compel*	astreignant astreint, *f.* e.	j'astreins *see* CEINDRE	j'astreignais	j'astreignis
ATTEINDRE, 4. *to attain*	atteignant atteint, *f.* e.	j'atteins *see* CEINDRE	j'atteignais	j'atteignis
ATTELER, 1. *to put to, harness*	attelant attelé, *f.* e.	j'attelle § 49, (4)	j'attelais *see* APPELER	j'attelai
ATTRAIRE, 4. *to attract*	attrayant attrait, *f.* e.	j'attrais *see* TRAIRE	j'attrayais	
AVENIR, 2. *to happen*	avenant avenu	il avient *it happens*	il avenait *it was happening*	il avint *it happened*
AVOIR, *to have*	*see model*, § 47			

FUTURE.	CONDITIONAL.	IMPERATIVE.	SUBJUNCTIVE.	IMPERFECT.
j'irai	j'irais		j'aille	j'allasse
tu iras	tu irais	va	tu ailles	tu allasses
il ira	il irait	q. aille	il aille	il allât
n. irons	n. irions	allons	n. allions	n. allassions
v. irez	v. iriez	allez	v. alliez	v. allassiez
ils iront	i. iraient	q. aillent	i. aillent	i. allassent
j'amènerai	j'amènerais	amène	j'amène	j'amenasse
j'amoncellerai	j'amoncellerais	amoncelle	j'amoncelle	j'amoncelasse
j'apparaîtrai	j'apparaîtrais	apparais	j'apparaisse	j'apparusse
j'appartiendrai	j'appartiendrais	appartiens	j'appartienne	j'appartinsse
j'appellerai	j'appellerais		j'appelle	j'appelasse
tu appelleras	t. appellerais	appelle	tu appelles	*like*
il appellera	i. appellerait	q. appelle	i. appelle	CHANTER
n. appellerons	n. appellerions	appelons	n. appelions	
v. appellerez	v. appelleriez	appelez	v. appeliez	
i. appelleront	i. appelleraient	q. appellent	i. appellent	
j'apprendrai	j'apprendrais	apprends	j'apprenne	j'apprisse
j'appuierai	j'appuierais		j'appuie	j'appuyasse
t. appuieras	t. appuierais	appuie	tu appuies	*like*
i. appuiera	i. appuierait	q. appuie	il appuie	CHANTER
n. appuierons	n. appuierions	appuyons	n. appuyions	
v. appuierez	v. appuieriez	appuyez	v. appuyiez	
i. appuieront	i. appuieraient	q. appuient	ils appuient	
j'assaillirai	j'assaillirais	assaille	j'assaille	j'assaillisse
t. assailliras	t. assaillirais		t. assailles	t. assaillisse
i. assaillira	i. assaillirait	q. assaille	i. assaille	i. assaillît
n. assaillirons	n. assaillirions	assaillons	n. assaillions	n. assaillissions
v. assaillirez	v. assailliriez	assaillez	v. assailliez	v. assaillissiez
i. assailliront	i. assailliraient	q. assaillent	i. assaillent	i. assaillissent
j'assiérai	j'assiérais	assieds	j'asseie	j'assisse
je m'assiérai	j. m'assiérais		je m'asseie	je m'assisse
t. t'assiéras	t. t'assiérais	assieds-toi	t. t'asseies	t. t'assisses
i. s'assiéra	i. s'assiérait	q. s'asseie	i. s'asseie	i. s'assît
n. n. assiérons	n. n. assiérions	asseyons-n.	n. n. asseyions	n. n. assissions
v. v. assiérez	v. v. assiériez	asseyez-v.	v. v. asseyiez	v. v. assissiez
i. s'assiéront	i. s'assiéraient	q. s'asseient	i. s'asseient	i. s'assissent
j'astreindrai	j'astreindrais	astreins	j'astreigne	j'astreignisse
j'atteindrai	j'atteindrais	atteins	j'atteigne	j'atteignisse
j'attellerai	j'attellerais	attelle	j'attelle	j'attelasse
j'attrairai	j'attrairais	attrais	j'attraie	
il aviendra	il aviendrait		il avienne	il avînt
it will happen	*it wld. happen*		*it may happen*	*it mgt. happen*

INFINITIVE.	PARTICIPLES.	INDICATIVE.	IMPERFECT.	PAST DEFINITE.
AVOIR (y), *to be there*	y ayant eu (unip.)	il y a *there is, are*	il y avait *there was, were*	il y eut *there was, were*
BATTRE, 4. *to beat* AUX. avoir *irregular*	battant battu, *f.* e.	je bats tu bats il bat n. battons v. battez ils battent	je battais tu battais il battait n. battions v. battiez i. battaient	je battis tu battis il battit n. battîmes v. battîtes ils battirent
BOIRE, 4. *to drink* AUX. avoir *irregular*	buvant bu, *f.* e.	je bois tu bois il boit n. buvons v. buvez ils boivent	je buvais tu buvais il buvait n. buvions v. buviez i. buvaient	je bus tu bus il but n. bûmes v. bûtes ils burent
BOUILLIR, 2. *to boil* AUX. avoir *irregular*	bouillant bouilli, *f.* e.	je bous tu bous il bout n. bouillons v. bouillez i. bouillent	je bouillais tu bouillais il bouillait n. bouillions v. bouilliez ils bouillaient.	je bouillis tu bouillis il bouillit n. bouillîmes v. bouillîtes ils bouillirent
BOURRELER, 1. *to torment*	bourrelant bourrelé, *f.* e.	je bourrèle § 49, (5)	je bourrelais	je bourrelai
BRAIRE, 4. *to bray* *defective.*		il brait ils braient		
BRUINER, 1. *to drizzle* *unipersonal.*	bruinant bruiné	il bruine *it drizzles*	il bruinait *it was driz-* [*zling*	il bruina *it drizzled*
BRUIRE, 4. *to roar, rustle* *defective.*	bruissant	il bruit	il bruyait, *or* il bruissait ils bruyaient ils bruissaient	
CACHETER, 1. *to seal*	cachetant cacheté, *f.* e.	je cachette § 49, (4)	je cachetais	je cachetai
CEINDRE, 4. *to gird* AUX. avoir *irregular*	ceignant ceint, *f.* e.	je ceins tu ceins il ceint n. ceignons v. ceignez ils ceignent	je ceignais tu ceignais il ceignait n. ceignions v. ceigniez ils ceignaient	je ceignis tu ceignis il ceignit n. ceignîmes v. ceignîtes ils ceignirent
CHANCELER, 1. *to stagger*	chancelant chancelé, *f.* e.	je chancelle § 49, (4)	je chancelais *see* APPELER	je chancelai
CHANGER, 1. *to change* AUX. avoir § 49, (1) *peculiar.*	changeant changé, *f.* e.	je change tu changes il change n. changeons v. changez ils changent	je changeais tu changeais il changeait n. changions v. changiez ils changeaient	je changeai tu changeas il changea n. changeâmes v. changeâtes ils changèrent
CIRCONSCRIRE, 4. *to circum-* [*scribe*	circonscrivant circonscrit, [*f.* e.	je circonscris *see* ÉCRIRE	je circonscri- [vais	j. circonscrivis
CIRCONVENIR, 2. *to circum-* [*vent*	circonvenant circonvenu, [*f.* e.	j. circonviens *see* VENIR	je circonve- [nais	je circonvins

FUTURE.	CONDITIONAL.	IMPERATIVE.	SUBJUNCTIVE	IMPERFECT.
il y aura	il y aurait		il y ait	il y eût
there will be	*there would be*		*there may be*	*there might be*
je battrai	je battrais		je batte	je battisse
tu battras	tu battrais	bats	tu battes	tu battisses
il battra	il battrait	q. batte	il batte	il battît
n. battrons	n. battrions	battons	n. battions	n. battissions
v. battrez	v. battriez	battez	v. battiez	v. batissiez
i. battront	i. battraient	q. battent	i. battent	i. battissent
je boirai	j. boirais		je boive	je busse
tu boiras	tu boirais	bois	tu boives	tu busses
il boira	il boirait	q. boive	il boive	il bût
n. boirons	n. boirions	buvons	n. buvions	n. bussions
v. boiriez	v. boiriez	buvez	v. buviez	v. bussiez
i. boiront	i. boiraient	q. boivent	i. boivent	ils bussent
je bouillirai	je bouillirais		je bouille	je bouillisse
tu bouilliras	tu bouillirais	bous	tu bouilles	tu bouillisses
il bouillira	il bouillirait	q. bouille	il bouille	il bouillît
n. bouillirons	n. bouillirions	bouillons	n. bouillions	n. bouillissions
v. bouillirez	v. bouilliriez	bouillez	v. bouilliez	v. bouillissiez
i. bouilliront	i. bouilliraient	q. bouillent	il bouillent	i. bouillissent
je bourrèlerai	je bourrèlerais		je bourrèle	je bourrelasse
		bourrèle		
il braira	il brairait			
ils brairont	ils brairaient			
il bruinera	il bruinerait	q. bruine	q. bruine	q. bruinât
it will drizzle	*it wld. drizzle*	*let it drizzle*	*it may drizzle*	*it mgt. drizzle*
je cachetterai	je cachetterais		je cachette	je cachetasse
		cachette		
je ceindrai	je ceindrais		je ceigne	je ceignisse
tu ceindras	tu ceindrais	ceins	tu ceignes	tu ceignisses
il ceindra	il ceindrait	q. ceigne	il ceigne	il ceignît
n. ceindrons	n. ceindrions	ceignons	n. ceignions	n. ceignissions
v. ceindrez	v. ceindriez	ceignez	v. ceigniez	v. ceignissiez
ils ceindront	ils ceindraient	q. ceignent	ils ceignent	i. ceignissent
je chancellerai	je chancelle- [rais	chancelle	je chancelle	je chancelasse
je changerai	je changerais		je change	je changeasse
like		change	tu changes	tu changeasses
CHANTER		q. change	*like*	il changeât
		changeons	CHANTER	changeassions
		changez		v. changeassiez
		q. changent		i. changeassent
je circonscri- [rai	je circonscri- [rais	circonscris	je circonscrive	je circonscri- [visse
je circonvien- [drai	je circonvien- [drais	circonviens	je circonvi- [enne	je circonvinsse

INFINITIVE.	PARTICIPLES.	INDICATIVE.	IMPERFECT.	PAST DEFINITE.
CLORE, 4. *to close defective*	clos	je clos tu clos il clot		
COLLETER, 1. *to collar*	colletant colleté, *f.* e.	je collète § 49, (5)	je colletais *see* ACHETER	je colletai
COMBATTRE, 4. *to combat*	combattant combattu, *f.* e.	je combats *see* BATTRE	je combattais	je combattis
COMMETTRE, 4. *to commit*	commettant commis, *f.* e.	je commets *see* METTRE	je commettais	je commis
COMPARAÎTRE, 4. *to appear*	comparaissant comparu	je comparais *see* PARAÎTRE	je comparais-[sais	je comparus
COMPLAIRE, 4. *to humor*	complaisant complu	je complais *see* PLAIRE	je complaisais	je complus
COMPRENDRE, 4. *to understand*	comprenant compris, *f.* e.	je comprends *see* PRENDRE	je comprenais	je compris
COMPROMETTRE, 4. *to compromit*	compromet-[tant compromis, *f.* e.	je compromets *see* METTRE	je compromet-[tais	je compromis
CONCLURE, 4. *to conclude* aux. avoir *irregular.*	concluant conclu, *f.* e.	je conclus tu conclus il conclut n. concluons v. concluez i. concluent	je concluais tu concluais il concluait n. concluions v. concluiez i. concluaient	je conclus tu conclus il conclut n. conclûmes. v. conclûtes ils conclurent
CONCOURIR, 2. *to concur*	concourant concouru, *f.* e.	je concours *see* COURIR	je concourais	je concourus
CONDUIRE, 4. *to conduct* aux. avoir *irregular.*	conduisant conduit, *f.* e.	je conduis tu conduis il conduit n. conduisons v. conduisez ils conduisent	je conduisais tu conduisais il conduisait n. conduisions v. conduisiez i. conduisaient	je conduisis tu conduisis il conduisit n. conduisîmes v. conduisîtes i. conduisirent
CONFIRE, 4. *to preserve* aux. avoir *irregular.*	confisant confit, *f.* e.	je confis tu confis il confit n. confisons v. confisez i. confisent	je confisais tu confisais il confisait n. confisions v. confisiez i. confisaient	je confis tu confis il confit n. confîmes v. confîtes ils confirent
CONGELER, 1. *to congeal*	congelant congelé, *f.* e.	je congèle § 49, (5)	je congelais	je congelai
CONJOINDRE, 4. *to conjoin*	conjoignant conjoint, *f.* e.	je conjoins *see* CEINDRE	je conjoignais	je conjoignis
CONNAÎTRE, 4. *to know* aux. avoir *irregular.*	connaissant connu, *f.* e.	je connais tu connais il connaît n. connaissons v. connaissez i. connaissent	je connaissais tu connaissais il connaissait n. connaissions v. connaissiez i. connaissaient	je connus tu connus il connut n. connûmes v. connûtes i. connurent
CONQUÉRIR, 2. *to conquer*	conquérant conquis, *f.* e.	je conquiers *see* ACQUÉRIR	je conquérais	je conquis
CONSENTIR, 2. *to consent*	consentant consenti, *f.* e.	je consens *see* SENTIR	je consentais	je consentis

Future.	Conditional.	Imperative.	Subjunctive.	Imperfect.
je clorai	je clorais			
tu cloras	tu clorais			
il clora, etc.	il clorait, etc.			
je collèterai	je collèterais	collète	je collète	je colletasse
je combattrai	je combattrais	combats	je combatte	je combattisse
je commettrai	je commet-[trais	commets	je commette	je commisse
je comparaî-[trai	je comparaî-[trais	comparais	je compa-[raisse	je comparusse
je complairai	je complairais	complais	je complaise	je complusse
je compren-[drai	je compren-[drais	comprends	je comprenne	je comprisse
je compromet-[trai	je compromet-[trais	compromets	je compro-[mette	je compro-[misse
je conclurai	je conclurais		je conclue	je conclusse
tu concluras	ru conclurais	conclus	tu conclues	tu conclusses
il conclura	il conclurait	q. conclue	il conclue	il conclût
n. conclurons	n. conclurions	concluons	n. concluions	n. conclussions
v. conclurez	y. concluriez	concluez	v. concluiez	v. conclussiez
ils concluront	il concluraient	q. concluent	ils concluent	ils conclussent
je concourrai	je concourrais	concours	je concoure	je concourusse
je conduirai	je conduirais		je conduise	je conduisisse
tu conduiras	tu conduirais	conduis	tu conduises	tu conduisisses
il conduira	il conduirait	q. conduise	il conduise	il conduisît
n. conduirons	n. conduirions	conduisons	n. conduisions	conduisissions
v. conduirez	v. conduiriez	conduisez	v. conduisiez	v. conduisissiez
ils conduiront	i conduiraient	q. conduisent	ils conduisent	i. conduisissent
je confirai	je confirais		je confise	je confisse
tu confiras	tu confirais	confis	tu confises	tu confisses
il confira	il confirait	q. confise	il confise	il confît
n. confirons	n. confirions	confisons	n. confisions	n. confissions
v. confirez	v. confiriez	confisez	v. confisiez	v. confissiez
i. confiront	ils confiraient	q. confisent	i. confisent	ils confissent
je congèlerai	je congèlerais	congèle	je congèle	je congelasse
je conjoindrai	je conjoin-[drais	conjoins	je conjoigne	je conjoignisse
je connaîtrai	je connaîtrais		je connaisse	je connusse
tu connaîtras	tu connaîtrais	connais	tu connaisses	tu connusses
il connaîtra	il connaîtrait	q. connaisse	il connaisse	il connût
n. connaîtrons	n. connaîtrions	connaissons	n. connaissions	n. connussions
v. connaîtrez	v. connaîtriez	connaissez	v. connaissiez	v. connussiez
ils connaîtront	i.connaîtraient	q. connaissent	ils connaissent	ils connussent
je conquerrai	je conquerrais	conquiers	je conquière	je conquisse
je consentirai	je consenti-[rais	consens	je consente	je consentisse

INFINITIVE.	PARTICIPLES.	INDICATIVE.	IMPERFECT.	PAST DEFINITE.
CONSTRUIRE, 4.	construisant	je construis	je construisais	je construisis
to construct	construit, *f.* e.	*see* CONDUIRE		
CONTENIR, 2.	contenant	je contiens	je contenais	je contins
to contain	contenu, *f.* e.	*see* TENIR		
CONTRAINDRE,	contraignant	je contrains	je contraignais	je contraignis
4. *to constrain*	contraint, *f.* e.	*see* CEINDRE		
CONTREDIRE, 4.	contredisant	je contredis	je contredisais	je contredis
to contradict	contredit, *f.* e.	tu contredis	*like* DIRE	*like* DIRE
aux avoir		il contredit		
irregular.		n. contredisons		
		v. contredisez		
		i. contredisent		
CONTREFAIRE,	contrefaisant	je contrefais	je contrefai-	je contrefis
4. *to counterfeit*	contrefait, *f.* e.	*see* FAIRE	[sais	
CONTREVENIR,	contrevenant	je contreviens	je contreve-	je contrevins
2. *to contravene*	contrevenu, *f.* e.	*see* TENIR	[nais	
CONVAINCRE,	convainquant	je convaincs	je convain-	je convainquis
4. *to convince*	convaincu, *f.* e.	*see* VAINCRE	[quais	
CONVENIR, 2.	convenant	je conviens	je convenais	je convins
to suit, fit, etc.	convenu, *f.* e.	*see* TENIR		
COQUETER, 1.	coquetant	je coquète	je coquetais	je coquetai
to coquet	coqueté	*see* ACHETER	*peculiar*	
CORROMPRE, 4.	corrompant	je corromps	je corrompais	je corrompis
to corrupt	corrompu, *f.* e.	*see* ROMPRE		
COUDRE, 4. *to*	cousant	je couds	je cousais	je cousis
sew	cousu, *f.* e.	tu couds	tu cousais	tu cousis
aux. avoir		il coud	il cousait	il cousit
irregular.		n. cousons	n. cousions	n. cousîmes
		v. cousez	v. cousiez	v. cousîtes
		ils cousent	ils cousaient	ils cousirent
COURIR, 2. *to*	courant	je cours	je courais	je courus
run	couru	tu cours	tu courais	tu courus
aux. avoir		il court	il courait	il courut
irregular.		n. courons	n. courions	n. courûmes
		v. courez	v. couriez	v. courûtes
		ils courent	ils couraient	ils coururent
COUVRIR, 2. *to*	couvrant	je couvre	je couvrais	je couvris
cover	couvert, *f.* e.	*see* OUVRIR		
CRAINDRE, 4.	craignant	je crains	je craignais	je craignis
to fear	craint, *f.* e.	*see* CEINDRE		
CROIRE, 4. *to*	croyant	je crois	je croyais	je crus
believe	cru, *f.* e.	tu crois	tu croyais	tu crus
aux. avoir		il croit	il croyait	il crut
irregular.		n. croyons	n. croyions	n. crûmes
		v. croyez	v. croyiez	v. crûtes
		ils croient	ils croyaient	il crurent
CROÎTRE, 4. *to*	croissant	je crois	je croissais	je crûs
grow	crû, *f.* e.	tu crois	tu croissais	tu crûs
aux. avoir & être		il croît	il croissait	il crût
irregular.		n. croissons	n. croissions	n. crûmes
		v. croissez	v. croissiez	v. crûtes
		ils croissent	ils croissaient	ils crûrent

FUTURE.	CONDITIONAL.	IMPERATIVE.	SUBJUNCTIVE.	IMPERFECT.
je construirai	je construirais	construis	je contruise	je construisis-[se
je contiendrai	je contien-[drais	contiens	je contienne	je continsse
je contrain-[drai	je contrain-[drais	contrains	je contraigne	je contraignis-[se
je contredirai *like* DIRE	je contredirais *like* DIRE	contredis q. contredise contredisons contredisez q. contredisent	je contredise *like* DIRE	je contredisse *like* DIRE
je contrefserai	je contreferais	contrefais	je contrefasse	je contrefisse
je contrevien-[drai	je contrevien-[drais	contreviens	je contrevien-[ne	je contrevinsse
je convaincrai	je convaincrais	convaincs	je convainque	je convain-[quisse
je conviendrai	je convien-[drais	conviens	je convienne	je convinsse
je coquèterai	je coquèterais	coquète	je coquète	je coquetasse
je corromprai	je corromprais	corromps	je corrompe	je corrompisse
je coudrai	je coudrais		je couse	je cousisse
tu coudras	tu coudrais	couds	tu couses	tu cousisses
il coudra	il coudrait	q. couse	il couse	il cousît
n. coudrons	n. coudrions	cousons	n. cousions	n. cousissions
v. coudrez	v. coudriez	cousez	v. cousiez	v. cousissiez
ils coudront	i. coudraient	q. cousent	i. cousent	ils cousissent
je courrai	je courrais		je coure	je courusse
tu courras	tu courrais	cours	tu coures	tu courusses
il courra	il courrait	q. coure	il coure	il courût
n. courrons	n. courrions	courons	n. courions	n. courussions
v. courrez	v. courriez	courez	v. couriez	v. courussiez
ils courront	ils courraient	q. courent	ils courent	ils courussent
je couvrirai	je couvrirais	couvre	je couvre	je couvrisse
je craindrai	je craindrais	crains	je craigne	je craignisse
je croirai	je croirais		je croie	je crusse
tu croiras	tu croirais	crois	tu croies	tu crusses
il croira	il croirait	q. croie	il croie	il crût
n. croirons	n. croirions	croyons	n. croyions	n. crussions
v. croirez	v. croiriez	croyez	v. croyiez	v. crussiez
ils croiront	ils croiraient	q. croient	ils croient	ils crussent
je croîtrai	je croîtrais		je croisse	je crûsse
tu croîtras	tu croîtrais	croîs	tu croisses	tu crûsses
il croîtra	il croîtrait	q. croisse	il croisse	il crût
n. croîtrons	n. croîtrions	croissons	n. croissions	n. crûssions
v. croîtrez	v. croîtriez	croissez	v. croissiez	v. crûssiez
ils croîtront	ils croîtraient	q. croissent	ils croissent	ils crûssent

INFINITIVE.	PARTICIPLES.	INDICATIVE.	IMPERFECT.	PAST DEFINITE.
CUEILLIR, 2. *to gather* aux avoir *irregular.*	cueillant cueilli, *f.* e.	je cueille tu cueilles il cueille n. cueillons v. cueillez ils cueillent	je cueillais tu cueillais il cueillait n. cueillions v. cueilliez ils cueillaient	je cueillis tu cueillis il cueillit n. cueillîmes v. cueillîtes ils cueillirent
CUIRE, 4. *to bake, cook, etc.*	cuisant cuit, *f.* e.	je cuis *see* CONDUIRE	je cuisais	je cuisis
DÉBATTRE, 4. *to debate*	débattant débattu, *f.* e.	je débats *see* BATTRE	je débattais	je débattis
DÉCACHETER, 1. *to unseal*	décachetant décacheté, *f.* e.	je décachette § 49, (4.)	je décachetais	je décachetai
DÉCHOIR, 3. *to decay* aux. avoir & être *defective.*	déchu, *f.* e. (*Bescherelle*)	je déchois tu déchois il déchoit n. déchoyons v. déchoyez ils déchoient	je déchoyais tu déchoyais il déchoyait n. déchoyions v. déchoyiez ils déchoyaient	je déchus tu déchus il déchut n. déchûmes v. déchûtes ils déchurent
DÉCOUDRE, 4. *to rip*	décousant décousu, *f.* e.	je découds *see* COUDRE	je décousais	je décousis
DÉCOUVRIR, 2. *to discover*	découvrant découvert, *f.* e.	je découvre *see* OUVRIR	je découvrais	je découvris
DÉCRIRE, 4. *to describe*	décrivant décrit, *f.* e.	je décris *see* ÉCRIRE	je décrivais	je décrivis
DÉDIRE, 4. *to unsay*	dédisant dédit, *f.* e.	je dédis *see* CONTREDIRE	je dédisais	je dédis
DÉDUIRE, 4. *to deduct*	déduisant déduit, *f.* e.	je déduis *see* CONDUIRE	je déduisais	je déduisis
DÉFAILLIR, 2. *to fail, faint defective.*	défaillant défailli (*Bescherelle*)	il défaille n. défaillons v. défaillez ils défaillent	je défaillais etc.	je défaillis etc.
DÉFAIRE, 4. *to undo*	défaisant défait, *f.* e.	je défais *see* FAIRE	je défaisais	je défis
DÉGELER, 1. *to thaw*	dégelant dégelé, *f.* e.	il dégèle	il dégelait	il dégela
DÉJOINDRE, 4. *disjoin*	déjoignant, déjoint, *f.* e.	je déjoins *see* CEINDRE	je déjoignais	je déjoignis
DÉMENTIR, 2. *to belie*	démentant démenti, *f.* e.	je démens *see* SENTIR	je démentais	je démentis
DÉMETTRE, 4. *to disjoint*	démettant démis, *f.* e.	je démets *see* METTRE	je démettais	je démis
DÉPEINDRE, 4. *to depict*	dépeignant dépeint, *f.* e.	je dépeins *see* CEINDRE	je dépeignais	je dépeignis
DÉPLAIRE, 4. *to displease*	déplaisant déplu, *f.* e.	je déplais *see* PLAIRE	je déplaisais	je déplus
DÉSAPPRENDRE, 4. *to unlearn*	désapprenant désappris, *f.* e.	je désap- [prends *see* PRENDRE	je désappre- [nais	je désappris
DESSERVIR, 2. *to clear the table*	desservant desservi, *f.* e.	je dessers *see* SERVIR	je desservais	je desservis
DÉTEINDRE, 4. *to discolor*	déteignant déteint, *f.* e.	je déteins *see* TEINDRE	je déteignais	je déteignis

FUTURE.	CONDITIONAL.	IMPERATIVE.	SUBJUNCTIVE.	IMPERFECT.
je cueillerai	je cueillerais		je cueille	je cueillisse
tu cueilleras	tu cueillerais	cueille	tu cueilles	tu cueillisses
il cueillera	il cueillerait	q. cueille	il cueille	il cueillît
n. cueillerons	n. cueillerions	cueillons	n. cueillions	n. cueillissions
v. cueillerez	v. cueilleriez	cueillez	v. cueilliez	v. cueillissiez
ils cueilleront	i. cueilleraient	q. cueillent	i. cueillent	ils cueillissent
je cuirai	je cuirais		je cuise	je cuisisse
		cuis		
je débattrai	je débattrais		je débatte	je débattisse
		débats		
je décachet-[terai	je décachet-[terais	décachette	je décachette	je décache-[tasse
je décherrai	je décherrais		je déchoie	je déchusse
tu décherras	tu décherrais	déchois	tu déchoies	tu déchusses
il décherra	il décherrait	q. déchoie	il déchoie	il déchût
n. décherrons	n. décherrions	déchoyons	n. déchoyions	n. déchussions
v décherrez	v. décherriez	déchoyez	v. déchoyiez	v. déchussiez
ils décherront	i. décherraient	q. déchoient	ils déchoient	ils déchussent
je découdrai	je découdrais		je découse	je décousisse
		découds		
je découvrirai	je découvrirais		je découvre	je découvrisse
		découvre		
je décrirai	je décrirais		je décrive	je décrivisse
		décris		
je dédirai	je dédirais		je dédise	je dédisse
		dédis		
je déduirai	je déduirais		je déduise	je déduisisse
		déduis		
see Bescherelle, Dictionnaire National.				
je déferai	je déferais		je défasse	je défisse
		défais		
il dégèlera	il dégèlerait	q. dégèle	il dégèle	il dégelât
je déjoindrai	je déjoindrais		je déjoigne	je déjoignisse
		déjoins		
je démentirai	je démentirais		je démente	je démentisse
		démens		
je démettrai	je démettrais		je démette	je démisse
		démets		
je dépeindrai	je dépeindrais		je dépeigne	je dépeignisse
		dépeins		
je déplairai	je déplairais		je déplaise	je déplusse
		déplais		
je désappren-[drai	je désappren-[drais	désapprends	je désappren-[ne	je désapprisse
je desservirai	je desservirais		je desserve	je desservisse
		dessers		
je déteindrai	je déteindrais		je déteigne	je déteignisse
		déteins		

Infinitive.	Participles.	Indicative.	Imperfect.	Past Definite.
Détenir, 2. *to detain*	détenant détenu, *f.* e.	je détiens *see* TENIR	je détenais	je détins
Détruire, 4. *destroy*	détruisant détruit, *f.* e.	je détruis *see* CONDUIRE	je détruisais	je détruisis
Devenir, 2. *to become*	devenant devenu, *f.* e.	je deviens *see* TENIR	je devenais	je devins
Dévêtir, 2. *to divest*	dévêtant dévêtu, *f.* e.	je dévêts *see* VÊTIR	je dévêtais	je dévêtis
Dire, 4. *to say* aux. avoir *irregular.*	disant dit, *f.* e.	je dis tu dis il dit n. disons v. dites ils disent	je disais tu disais il disait n. disions v. disiez ils disaient	je dis tu dis il dit n. dîmes v. dîtes ils dirent
Discourir, 2. *to discourse*	discourant discouru	je discours *see* COURIR	je discourais	je discourus
Disparaître, 4. *to disappear*	disparaissant disparu, *f.* e.	je disparais *see* CONNAÎTRE	je disparais-[sais	je disparus
Dissoudre, 4. *to dissolve*	dissolvant dissous, *f.* te.	je dissous *see* ABSOUDRE	je dissolvais	
Distraire, 4. *to divert*	distrayant distrait, *f.* e.	je distrais *see* TRAIRE	je distrayais	
Dormir, 2. *to sleep* aux. avoir *irregular.*	dormant dormi	je dors tu dors il dort n. dormons v. dormez ils dorment	je dormais tu dormais il dormait n. dormions v. dormiez ils dormaient	je dormis tu dormis il dormit n. dormîmes v. dormîtes ils dormirent
Échoir, 3. *to fall due*	échéant échu, *f.* e.	il échoit *or* il échet		il échut
Éclore, 4. *to hatch*	éclos	il éclot		
Éconduire, 4. *to refuse*	éconduisant éconduit, *f.* e.	j'éconduis *see* CONDUIRE	j'éconduisais	j'éconduisis
Écrire, 4. *to write* aux. avoir *irregular.*	écrivant écrit, *f.* e.	j'écris tu écris il écrit n. écrivons v. écrivez ils écrivent	j'écrivais tu écrivais il écrivait n. écrivions v. écriviez ils écrivaient	j'écrivis tu écrivis il écrivit n. écrivîmes v. écrivîtes ils écrivirent
Élire, 4. *to elect*	élisant élu, *f.* e.	j'élis *see* LIRE	j'élisais	j'élus
Émettre, 4. *to emit*	émettant émis, *f.* e.	j'émets *see* METTRE	j'émettais	j'émis
Emmener, 1. *to take away*	emmenant emmené, *f.* e.	j'emmène § 49, (6)	j'emmenais *see* MENER	j'emmenai
Émoudre, 4. *to sharpen*	émoulant émoulu, *f.* e.	j'émouds *see* MOUDRE	j'émoulais	j'émoulus
Émouvoir, 3. *to excite, etc.*	émouvant ému, *f.* e.	j'émeus *see* MOUVOIR	j'émouvais	j'émus
Employer, 1. *to employ*	employant employé, *f.* e.	j'emploie § 49, (2)	j'employais *see* APPUYER	j'employai
Empreindre, 4. *to imprint*	empreignant empreint, *f.* e.	j'empreins *see* CEINDRE	j'empreignais	j'empreignis

Future.	Conditional.	Imperative.	Subjunctive.	Imperfect.
je détiendrai	je détiendrais	détiens	je détienne	je détinsse
je détruirai	je détruirais	détruis	je détruise	je détruisisse
je deviendrai	je deviendrais	deviens	je devienne	je devinsse
je dévêtirai	je dévêtirais	dévêts	je dévête	je dévêtisse
je dirai	je dirais	dis	je dise	je disse
tu diras	tu dirais		tu dises	tu disses
il dira	il dirait	q. dise	il dise	il dît
n. dirons	n. dirions	disons	n. disions	n. dissions
v. direz	v. diriez	dites	v. disiez	v. dissiez
ils diront	ils diraient	q. disent	ils disent	ils dissent
je discourrai	je discourrais	discours	je discoure	je discourusse
je disparaîtrai	je disparaî-[trais	disparais	je disparaisse	je disparusse
je dissoudrai	je dissoudrais	dissous	je dissolve	
je distrairai	je distrairais	distrais	je distraie	
je dormirai	je dormirais		je dorme	je dormisse
tu dormiras	tu dormirais	dors	tu dormes	tu dormisses
il dormira	il dormirait	qu'il dorme	il dorme	il dormît
n. dormirons	n. dormirions	dormons	n. dormions	n. dormissions
v. dormirez	v. dormiriez	dormez	v. dormiez	v. dormissiez
ils dormiront	ils dormiraient	q. dorment	ils dorment	ils dormissent
il écherra	il écherrait			qu'il échût
il éclora	il éclorait		q. éclose	
j'éconduirai	j'éconduirais	éconduis	j'éconduise	j'éconduisisse
j'écrirai	j'écrirais		j'écrive	j'écrivisse
tu écriras	tu écrirais	écris	tu écrives	tu écrivisses
il écrira	il écrirait	q. écrive	il écrive	il écrivît
n. écrirons	n. écririons	écrivons	n. écrivions	n. écrivissions
v. écrirez	v. écririez	écrivez	v. écriviez	v. écrivissiez
ils écriront	ils écriraient	q. écrivent	ils écrivent	ils écrivissent
j'élirai	j'élirais	élis	j'élise	j'élusse
j'émettrai	j'émettrais	émets	j'émette	j'émisse
j'emmènerai	j'emmènerais	emmène	j'emmène	j'emmenasse
j'émoudrai	j'émoudrais	émouds	j'émoule	j'émoulusse
j'émouvrai	j'émouvrais	émeus	j'émeuve	j'émusse
j'emploierai	j'emploierais	emploie	j'emploie	j'employasse
j'empreindrai	j'empreindrais	empreins	j'empreigne	j'empreignisse

INFINITIVE.	PARTICIPLES.	INDICATIVE.	IMPERFECT.	PAST DEFINITE.
ENCLORE, 4. *to enclose*	enclos, *f.* e.	j'enclos		
ENCOURIR, 2. *to incur*	encourant encouru, *f.* e.	j'encours *see* COURIR	j'encourais	j'encourus
ENDORMIR, 2. *to lull asleep*	endormant endormi, *f.* e.	j'endors *see* DORMIR	j'endormais	j'endormis
ENDUIRE, 4. *to plaster*	enduisant enduit, *f.* e.	j'enduis *see* CONDUIRE	j'enduisais	j'enduisis
ENFREINDRE, 4. *to infringe*	enfreignant enfreint, *f.* e.	j'enfreins *see* CEINDRE	j'enfreignais	j'enfreignis
ENFUIR, (s') 2. *to run away*	s'enfuyant enfui, *f.* e.	je m'enfuis *see* FUIR	je m'enfuyais	je m'enfuis
ENJOINDRE, 4. *to enjoin*	enjoignant enjoint, *f.* e.	j'enjoins *see* CEINDRE	j'enjoignais	j'enjoignis
ENNUYER, (s') 1. *to be weary*	s'ennuyant ennuyé, *f.* e.	je m'ennuie *see* APPUYER	je m'ennuyais § 49, (2)	je m'ennuyai
ENQUÉRIR, (s') 2. *to inquire*	s'enquérant enquis, *f.* e.	je m'enquiers *see* ACQUÉRIR	je m'enquérais	je m'enquis
ENTREMETTRE, (s') 4. *to interpose*	s'entremettant entremis, *f.* e.	je m'entremets *see* METTRE	je m'entre-[mettais	je m'entremis
ENTREPRENDRE, 4. *to undertake*	entreprenant entrepris, *f.* e.	j'entreprends *see* PRENDRE	j'entreprenais	j'entrepris
ENTRETENIR, 2. *to entertain*	entretenant entretenu, *f.* e.	j'entretiens *see* TENIR	j'entretenais	j'entretins
ENTREVOIR, 3. *to glimpse at*	entrevoyant entrevu, *f.* e.	j'entrevois *see* VOIR	j'entrevoyais	j'entrevis
ENVOYER, 1. *to send* aux. avoir *irregular.*	envoyant envoyé, *f.* e.	j'envoie tu envoies il envoie n. envoyons v. envoyez ils envoient	j'envoyais tu envoyais il envoyait n. envoyions v. envoyiez ils envoyaient	j'envoyai tu envoyas il envoya n. envoyâmes v. envoyâtes ils envoyèrent
ÉPRENDRE, (s') 4. *to be smitten*	s'éprenant épris, *f.* e.	je m'éprends *see* PRENDRE	je m'éprenais	je m'épris
ESSAYER, 1. *to try*	essayant essayé, *f.* e.	j'essaie *see* APPUYER	j'essayais § 49, (2)	j'essayai
ÉTEINDRE, 4. *to extinguish*	éteignant éteint, *f.* e.	j'éteins *see* CEINDRE	j'éteignais	j'éteignis
ÉTINCELER, 1. *to sparkle*	étincelant étincelé, *f.* e.	j'étincelle *see* APPELER	j'étincelle § 49, (4)	j'étincelai
ÉTIQUETER, 1. *to label*	étiquetant étiqueté, *f.* e.	j'étiquète *see* ACHETER	j'étiquetais § 49, (5)	j'étiquetai
ÊTRE, 4. *to be*	*see model*	§ 47, (5)		
ÉTREINDRE, 4. *to press*	étreignant étreint, *f.* e.	j'étreins *see* CEINDRE	j'étreignais	j'étreignis
EXCLURE, 4. *to exclude*	excluant exclu, exclus	j'exclus *see* CONCLURE	j'excluais	j'exclus
EXTRAIRE, 4. *to extract*	extrayant extrait, *f.* e.	j'extrais *see* TRAIRE	j'extrayais	

Future.	Conditional.	Imperative.	Subjunctive.	Imperfect.
j'enclorai	j'enclorais			
j'encourrai	j'encourrais	encours	j'encoure	j'encourusse
j'endormirai	j'endormirais	endors	j'endorme	j'endormisse
j'enduirai	j'enduirais	enduis	j'enduise	j'enduisisse
j'enfreindrai	j'enfreindrais	enfreins	j'enfreigne	j'enfreignisse
je m'enfuirai	je m'enfuirais	enfuis-toi	je m'enfuie	je m'enfuisse
j'enjoindrai	j'enjoindrais	enjoins	j'enjoigne	j'enjoignisse
je m'ennuierai	je m'ennuierais	ennuie-toi	je m'ennuie	je m'ennuyasse
je m'enquerrai	je m'enquerrais	enquiers-toi	je m'enquière	je m'enquisse
je m'entremettrai	je m'entremettrais	entremets-toi	je m'entremette	je m'entremisse
j'entreprendrai	j'entreprendrais	entreprends	j'entreprenne	j'entreprisse
j'entretiendrai	j'entretiendrais	entretiens	j'entretienne	j'entretinsse
j'entreverrai	j'entreverrais	entrevois	j'entrevoie	j'entrevisse
j'enverrai	j'enverrais		j'envoie	j'envoyasse
tu enverras	tu enverrais	envoie	tu envoies	tu envoyasses
il enverra	il enverrait	q. envoie	il envoie	il envoyât
n. enverrons	n. enverrions	envoyons	n. envoyions	n. envoyassions
v. enverrez	v. enverriez	envoyez	v. envoyiez	v. envoyassiez
ils enverront	ils enverraient	q. envoient	ils envoient	ils envoyassent
je m'éprendrai	je m'éprendrais	éprends-toi	je m'éprenne	je m'éprisse
j'essaierai	j'essaierais	essaie	j'essaie	j'essayasse
j'éteindrai	j'éteindrais	éteins	j'éteigne	j'éteignisse
j'étincellerai	j'étincellerais	étincelle	j'étincelle	j'étincelasse
j'étiquèterai	j'étiquèterais	étiquète	j'étiquète	j'étiquetasse
j'étreindrai	j'étreindrais	étreins	j'étreigne	j'étreignisse
j'exclurai	j'exclurais	exclus	j'exclue	j'exclusse
j'extrairai	j'extrairais	extrais	j'extraie	

Infinitive.	Participles.	Indicative.	Imperfect.	Past Definite.
Faillir, 2. *to fail* (New form) (Old form, still used) *irregular.*	faillissant failli (*Bescherelle*) faillant failli (*Académie*)	je faillis *now regular* je faux tu faux il faut n. faillons v. faillez il faillent	je faillissais *see* FINIR, § 50 je faillais tu faillais il faillait n. faillions v. failliez ils faillaient	je faillis je faillis tu faillis il faillit n. faillîmes v. faillîtes ils faillirent
Faire, 4. *to do, to make* aux. avoir *irregular.*	faisant[1] fait, *f.* e.	je fais tu fais il fait n. faisons v. faites ils font	je faisais[1] tu faisais il faisait n. faisions v. faisiez ils faisaient	je fis tu fis il fit n. fîmes v. fîtes ils firent
Falloir, 3. *to be necessary*	fallant fallu	il faut	*unipersonal.*	il fallut
Feindre, 4. *to feign*	feignant feint, *f.* e.	je feins *see* CEINDRE	je feignais	je feignis
Ficeler, 1. *to cord*	ficelant ficelé, *f.* e.	je ficelle *see* APPELER	je ficelais § 49, (4)	je ficelai
Frire, 4. *to fry* *defective.*	frit, *f.* e.	je fris tu fris il frit		
Fuir, 2. *to flee* aux. avoir *irregular.*	fuyant fui	je fuis tu fuis il fuit n. fuyons v. fuyez ils fuient	je fuyais tu fuyais il fuyait n. fuyions v. fuyiez ils fuyaient	je fuis tu fuis il fuit n. fuîmes v. fuîtes ils fuirent
Geler, 1. *to freeze.* unip.	gelant gelé, *f.* e.	il gèle	il gelait	il gela
Gésir, 2. *to lie* *defective.*	gisant	il git n. gisons v. gisez ils gisent	je gisais tu gisais il gisait n. gisions v. gisiez ils gisaient	
Grasseyer, 1. *to lisp*	grasseyant grasseyé	je grasseie *see* APPUYER	je grasseyais § 49, (2)	je grasseyai
Gréler, 1. *to hail.* unip.	grélant grélé	il grèle	il grélait	il gréla
Grésiller, 1. *to sleet.* unip.	grésillant grésillé	il grésille	il grésillait	il grésilla
Haïr, 2. *to hate* aux. avoir *irregular.*	haïssant haï, *f.* e.	je hais tu hais il hait n. haïssons v. haïssez i. haïssent	je haïssais tu haïssais il haïssait n. haïssions v. haïssiez ils haïssaient	je haïs tu haïs il haït n. haïmes v. haïtes ils haïrent
Harceler, 1. *to torment*	harcelant harcelé, *f.* e.	je harcèle § 49, (5)	je harcelais	je harcelai

[1] See note, page 179.

Future.	Conditional.	Imperative.	Subjunctive.	Imperfect.
je faillirai	je faillirais	faillis	je faillisse	je faillisse
je faudrai	je faudrais		je faille	je faillisse
tu faudras	tu faudrais		etc.	etc.
il faudra	il faudrait			
n. faudrons	n. faudrions			
v. faudrez	v. faudriez			
ils faudront	ils faudraient			
je ferai	je ferais		je fasse	je fisse
tu feras	tu ferais	fais	tu fasses	tu fisses
il fera	il ferait	q. fasse	il fasse	il fît
n. ferons	n. ferions	faisons	n. fassions	n. fissions
v. ferez	v. feriez	faites	v. fassiez	v. fissiez
ils feront	ils feraient	q. fassent	ils fassent	ils fissent
il faudra	il faudrait	q. faille	q. faille	q. fallût
je feindrai	je feindrais	feins	je feigne	je feignisse
je ficellerai	je ficellerais	ficelle	je ficelle	je ficelasse
je frirai	je frirais			
tu friras	tu frirais	fris		
il frira, etc.	il frirait, etc.			
je fuirai	je fuirais		je fuie	je fuisse
tu fuiras	tu fuirais	fuis	tu fuies	tu fuisses
il fuira	il fuirait	q. fuie	il fuie	it fuît
n. fuirons	n. fuirions	fuyons	n. fuyions	n. fuissions
v. fuirez	v. fuiriez	fuyez	v. fuyiez	v. fuissiez
ils fuiront	ils fuiraient	q. fuient	ils fuient	ils fuissent
il gèlera	il gèlerait	qu'il gèle	qu'il gèle	q. gelât
je grasseierai	je grasseierais	grasseie	je grasseie	je grasseyasse
il grèlera	il grèlerait	q. grèle	qu'il grèle	qu'il grêlât
il grésillera	il grésillerait	q. grésille	q. grésille	q. grésillât
je haïrai	je haïrais		je haïsse	je haïsse
tu haïras	tu haïrais	hais	tu haïsses	tu haïsses
il haïra	il haïrait	q. haïsse	il haïsse	il haït
n. haïrons	n. haïrions	haïssons	n. haïssions	n. haïssions
v. haïrez	v. haïriez	haïssez	v. haïssiez	v. haïssiez
ils haïront	ils haïraient	q. haïssent	ils haïssent	ils haïssent
je harcèlerai	je harcèlerais	harcèle	je harcèle	je harcelasse

INFINITIVE.	PARTICIPLES.	INDICATIVE.	IMPERFECT.	PAST DEFINITE.
IMPORTER, 1.	important	il importe	il importait	il importa
to matter unipersonal.	importé	*it matters*		
INDUIRE, 4. *to induce*	induisant	j'induis	j'induisais	j'induisis
	induit, *f.* e.	*see* CONDUIRE		
INSCRIRE, 4. *to inscribe*	inscrivant	j'inscris	j'inscrivais	j'inscrivis
	inscrit, *f.* e.	*see* ÉCRIRE		
INSTRUIRE, 4. *to instruct*	instruisant	j'instruis	j'instruisais	j'instruisis
	instruit, *f.* e.	*see* CONDUIRE		
INTERDIRE, 4. *to interdict*	interdisant	j'interdis	j'interdisais	j'interdis
	interdit, *f.* e.	*see* CONTREDIRE		
INTERROMPRE, 4. *to interrupt*	interrompant	j'interromps	j'interrompais	j'interrompis
	interrompu, *f.* e.	*see* ROMPRE		
INTERVENIR, 2. *to intervene*	intervenant	j'interviens	j'intervenais	j'intervins
	intervenu, *f.* e.	*see* TENIR		
INTRODUIRE, 4. *to introduce*	introduisant	j'introduis	j'introduisais	j'introduisis
	introduit, *f.* e.	*see* CONDUIRE		
JETER, 1. *to throw*	jetant	je jette	je jetais	je jetai
	jeté, *f.* e.	tu jettes	tu jetais	tu jetas
aux. avoir		il jette	il jetait	il jeta
peculiar.		n. jetons	n. jetions	n. jetâmes
§ 49, (4.)		v. jetez	v. jetiez	v. jetâtes
		ils jettent	ils jetaient	ils jetèrent
JOINDRE, 4. *to join*	joignant	je joins	je joignais	je joignis
	joint, *f.* e.	*see* CEINDRE		
LIRE, 4. *to read*	lisant	je lis	je lisais	je lus
	lu, *f.* e.	tu lis	tu lisais	tu lus
aux. avoir		il lit	il lisait	il lut
irregular.		nous lisons	n. lisions	n. lûmes
		vous lisez	v. lisiez	v. lûtes
		ils lisent	ils lisaient	ils lurent
LUIRE, 4. *to shine*	luisant	je luis	je luisais	
	lui	*see* CONDUIRE		
MAINTENIR, 2. *to maintain*	maintenant	je maintiens	je maintenais	je maintins
	maintenu, *f.* e.	*see* TENIR		
MALFAIRE, 4. *to do wrong*	malfaisant	*seldom*	*used except*	*in the*
	malfait, *f.* e.			
MAUDIRE, 4. *to curse*	maudissant	je maudis	je maudissais	je maudis
	maudit, *f.* e.	tu maudis	tu maudissais	*like* DIRE.
aux. avoir		il maudit	il maudissait	
irregular.		n. maudissons	n. maudissions	
		v. maudissez	v. maudissiez	
		ils maudissent	i. maudissaient	
MÉCONNAÎTRE, 4. *to disown*	méconnaissant	je méconnais	je méconnais-	je méconnus
	méconnu, *f.* e.	*see* CONNAÎTRE	[sais	
MÉDIRE, 4. *to slander*	médisant	je médis	je médisais	je médis
	médit	*see* CONTREDIRE		
MÉFAIRE, 4. *to do wrong*	méfaisant	je méfais	je méfaisais	je méfis
	méfait	*see* FAIRE		
MENER, 1. *to lead, take*	menant	je mène	je menais	je menai
	mené, *f.* e.			
MENTIR, 2. *to lie*	mentant	je mens	je mentais	je mentis
	menti	*see* SENTIR		

Future.	Conditional.	Imperative.	Subjunctive.	Imperfect.
il importera	il importerait	q. importe	q. importe	q. importât
j'induirai	j'induirais	induis	j'induise	j'induisisse
j'inscrirai	j'inscrirais	inscris	j'inscrive	j'inscrivisse
j'instruirai	j'instruirais	instruis	j'instruise	j'instruisisse
j'interdirai	j'interdirais	interdis	j'interdise	j'interdisse
j'interromprai	j'interrom- [prais	interromps	j'interrompe	j'interromp- [isse
j'interviendrai	j'intervien- [drais	interviens	j'intervienne	j'intervinsse
j'introduirai	j'introduirais	introduis	j'introduise	j'introduisisse
je jetterai	je jetterais		je jette	je jetasse
tu jetteras	tu jetterais	jette	tu jettes	tu jetasses
il jettera	il jetterait	q. jette	il jette	il jetât
n. jetterons	n. jetterions	jetons	n. jetions	n. jetassions
v. jetterez	v. jetteriez	jetez	v. jetiez	v. jetassiez
ils jetteront	ils jetteraient	q. jettent	ils jettent	ils jetassent
je joindrai	je joindrais	joins	je joigne	je joignisse
je lirai	je lirais		je lise	je lusse
tu liras	tu lirais	lis	tu lises	tu lusses
il lira	il lirait	q. lise	il lise	il lût
n. lirons	n. lirions	lisons	n. lisions	n. lussions
v. lirez	v. liriez	lisez	v. lisiez	v. lussiez
ils liront	ils liraient	q. lisent	ils lisent	ils lussent
je luirai	je luirais		je luise	
je maintien- [drai	je maintien- [drais	maintiens	je maintienne	je maintinsse
tenses	*given*	*here*		
je maudirai	je maudirais		je maudisse	je maudisse
like DIRE	*like* DIRE	maudis	tu maudisses	*like* DIRE
		q. maudisse	il maudisse	
		maudissons	n. maudissions	
		maudissez	v. maudissiez	
		q. maudissent	ils maudissent	
je méconnaî- [trai	je méconnaî- [trais	méconnais	je méconnaisse	je méconnusse
je médirai	je médirais	médis	je médise	je médisse
je méferai	je méferais	méfais	je méfasse	je méfisse
je mènerai	je mènerais	mène	je mène	je menasse
je mentirai	je mentirais	mens	je mente	je mentisse

INFINITIVE.	PARTICIPLES.	INDICATIVE.	IMPERFECT.	PAST DEFINITE.
MÉPRENDRE, 4. (se) *to mistake, ref.*	se méprenant mépris, *f.* e.	j. m. méprends *see* PRENDRE	j. me mépre- [nais	je me mépris
METTRE, 4. *to put* aux. avoir *irregular.*	mettant mis, *f.* e.	je mets tu mets il met n. mettons v. mettez ils mettent	je mettais tu mettais il mettait n. mettions v. mettiez ils mettaient	je mis tu mis il mit n. mîmes v. mîtes ils mirent
MOUDRE, 4. *to grind* aux. avoir *irregular.*	moulant moulu, *f.* e.	je mouds tu mouds il moud n. moulons v. moulez ils moulent	je moulais tu moulais il moulait n. moulions v. mouliez ils moulaient	je moulus tu moulus il moulut n. moulûmes v. moulûtes ils moulurent
MOURIR, 2. *to die* aux. être *irregular.*	mourant mort, *f.* e.	je meurs tu meurs il meurt n. mourons v. mourez ils meurent	je mourais tu mourais il mourait n. mourions v. mouriez ils mouraient	je mourus tu mourus il mourut n. mourûmes v. mourûtes ils moururent
MOUVOIR, 3. *to move* aux. avoir *irregular.*	mouvant mu, *f.* e.	je meus tu meus il meut n. mouvons v. mouvez ils meuvent	je mouvais tu mouvais il mouvait n. mouvions v. mouviez ils mouvaient	je mus tu mus il mut n. mûmes v. mûtes ils murent
MOUVOIR, (se) 3. *to move reflective.*	se mouvant mu, *f.* e.	je me meus *see* MOUVOIR	j. me mouvais	je me mus
NAÎTRE, 4. *to be born* aux. être *irregular.*	naissant né, *f.* e.	je nais tu nais il naît n. naissons v. naissez ils naissent	je naissais tu naissais il naissait n. naissions v. naissiez ils naissaient	je naquis tu naquis il naquit n. naquîmes v. naquîtes ils naquirent
NÉGLIGER, 1. *to neglect*	négligeant négligé, *f.* e.	je néglige § 49, (1.)	je négligeais	je négligeai
NEIGER, 1. *to snow. unip.*	neigeant neigé	il neige	il neigeait	il neigea
NIVELER, 1. *to level*	nivelant nivelé, *f.* e.	je nivelle *see* APPELER	je nivelais § 49, (4)	je nivelai
NUIRE, 4. *to injure*	nuisant nui	je nuis *see* CONDUIRE	je nuisais	je nuisis
OBTENIR, 2. *to obtain*	obtenant obtenu, *f.* e.	j'obtiens *see* TENIR	j'obtenais	j'obtins
OFFRIR, 2. *to offer*	offrant offert, *f.* e.	j'offre *see* OUVRIR	j'offrais	j'offris
OINDRE, 4. *to anoint*	oignant oint	j'oins *see* CEINDRE	j'oignais	j'oignis
OMETTRE, 4. *to omit*	omettant omis, *f.* e.	j'omets *see* METTRE	j'omettais	j'omis
OUÏR, 2. *to hear. def.*	ouï, *f.* e.	j'ouïs il ouït		

Future.	Conditional.	Imperative.	Subjunctive.	Imperfect.
je me mépren-[drai	je me mépren-[drais	méprends-toi	j. me mépren-[ne	je me mépris-[se
je mettrai	je mettrais		je mette	je misse
tu mettras	tu mettrais	mets	tu mettes	tu misses
il mettra	il mettrait	q. mette	il mette	il mît
n. mettrons	n. mettrions	mettons	n. mettions	n. missions
v. mettrez	v. mettriez	mettez	v. mettiez	v. missiez
ils mettront	ils mettraient	q. mettent	ils mettent	ils missent
je moudrai	je moudrais		je moule	je moulusse
tu moudras	tu moudrais	mouds	tu moules	tu moulusses
il moudra	il moudrait	qu'il moule	il moule	il moulût
n. moudrons	n. moudrions	moulons	n. moulions	n. moulussions
v. moudrez	v. moudriez	moulez	v. mouliez	v. moulussiez
ils moudront	ils moudraient	q. moulent	ils moulent	ils moulussent
je mourrai	je mourrais		je meure	je mourusse
tu mourras	tu mourrais	meurs	tu meures	tu mourusses
il mourra	il mourrait	q. meure	il meure	il mourût
n. mourrons	n. mourrions	mourons	n. mourions	n. mourussions
v. mourrez	v. mourriez	mourez	v. mouriez	v. mourussiez
ils mourront	ils mourraient	q. meurent	ils meurent	ils mourussent
je mouvrai	je mouvrais		je meuve	je musse
tu mouvras	tu mouvrais	meus	tu meuves	tu musses
il mouvra	il mouvrait	q. meuve	il meuve	il mût
n. mouvrons	n. mouvrions	mouvons	n. mouvions	n. mussions
v. mouvrez	v. mouvriez	mouvez	v. mouviez	v. mussiez
ils mouvront	ils mouvraient	q. meuvent	ils meuvent	ils mussent
je me mouvrai	je me mouv-[rais	meus-toi	je me meuve	je me musse
je naîtrai	je naîtrais		je naisse	je naquisse
tu naîtras	tu naîtrais	nais	tu naisses	tu naquisses
il naîtra	il naîtrait	q. naisse	il naisse	il naquît
n. naîtrons	n. naîtrions	naissons	n. naissions	n. naquissions
v. naîtrez	v. naîtriez	naissez	v. naissiez	v. naquissiez
ils naîtront	ils naîtraient	q. naissent	ils naissent	ils naquissent
je négligerai	je négligerais	néglige	je néglige	je négligeasse
il neigera	il neigerait	q. neige	qu'il neige	q. neigeât
je nivellerai	je nivellerais	nivelle	je nivelle	je nivelasse
je nuirai	je nuirais	nuis	je nuise	je nuisisse
j'obtiendrai	j'obtiendrais	obtiens	j'obtienne	j'obtinsse
j'offrirai	j'offrirais	offre	j'offre	j'offrisse
j'oindrai	j'oindrais	oins	j'oigne	j'oignisse
j'omettrai	j'omettrais	omets	j'omette	j'omisse
				j'ouïsse
				il ouît

INFINITIVE.	PARTICIPLES.	INDICATIVE.	IMPERFECT.	PAST DEFINITE.
OUVRIR, 2. *to open* aux. avoir *irregular.*	ouvrant ouvert, *f.* e.	j'ouvre tu ouvres il ouvre n. ouvrons v. ouvrez ils ouvrent	j'ouvrais tu ouvrais il ouvrait n. ouvrions v. ouvriez ils ouvraient	j'ouvris tu ouvris il ouvrit n. ouvrîmes v. ouvrîtes ils ouvrirent
PAÎTRE, 4. *to graze* aux. avoir *defective.*	paissant pû	je pais tu pais il paît n. paissons v. paissez ils paissent	je paissais tu paissais il paissait n. paissions v. paissiez ils paissaient	
PARFAIRE, 4. *to complete*	parfaisant parfait, *f.* e.	je parfais *see* FAIRE	je parfaisais *seldom used*	je parfis
PARAÎTRE, 4. *to appear*	paraissant paru	je parais *see* CONNAÎTRE	je paraissais	je parus
PARCOURIR, 2. *to go through*	parcourant parcouru, *f.* e.	je parcours *see* COURIR	je parcourais	je parcourus
PARTIR, 2. *to depart*	partant parti, *f.* e.	je pars *see* SENTIR	je partais	je partis
PARVENIR, 2. *to succeed,* &c.	parvenant parvenu, *f.* e.	je parviens *see* TENIR	je parvenais	je parvins
PAYER, 1. *to pay*	payant payé, *f.* e.	je paie *see* APPUYER	je payais § 49, (2)	je payai
PEINDRE, 4. *to paint*	peignant peint, *f.* e.	je peins *see* CEINDRE	je pèignais	je peignis
PELER, 1. *to peel*	pelant pelé, *f.* e.	je pèle § 49, (4)	je pelais	je pelai
PERMETTRE, 4. *to permit*	permettant permis, *f.* e.	je permets *see* METTRE	je permettais	je permis
PLAINDRE, 4. *to pity*	plaignant plaint, *f.* e.	je plains *see* CEINDRE	je plaignais	je plaignis
PLAINDRE, (se) 4. *to complain. reflective.*	se plaignant plaint, *f.* e.	je me plains	je me plai-[gnais	je me plaignis
PLAIRE, 4. *to please* aux. avoir *irregular.*	plaisant plu	je plais tu plais il plaît n. plaisons v. plaisez ils plaisent	je plaisais tu plaisais il plaisait n. plaisions v. plaisiez ils plaisaient	je plus tu plus il plut n. plûmes v. plûtes ils plurent
PLEUVOIR, 3. *to rain. unip.*	pleuvant plu	il pleut	il pleuvait	il plut
POINDRE, 4. *to dawn. def.*		il point		
POURSUIVRE, 4. *to pursue*	poursuivant poursuivi, *f.* e.	je poursuis *see* SUIVRE	je poursuivais	je poursuivis
POURVOIR, 3. *to provide* aux. avoir *irregular.*	pourvoyant pourvu, *f.* e.	je pourvois tu pourvois il pourvoit n. pourvoyons v. pourvoyez ils pourvoient	je pourvoyais tu pourvoyais il pourvoyait n. pourvoyions v. pourvoyiez i. pourvoyaient	je pourvus tu pourvus il pourvut n. pourvûmes v. pourvûtes ils pourvurent

Future.	Conditional.	Imperative.	Subjunctive.	Imperfect.
j'ouvrirai	j'ouvrirais		j'ouvre	j'ouvrisse
tu ouvriras	tu ouvrirais	ouvre	tu ouvres	tu ouvrisses
il ouvrira	il ouvrirait	q. ouvre	il ouvre	il ouvrît
n. ouvrirons	n. ouvririons	ouvrons	n. ouvrions	n. ouvrissions
v. ouvrirez	v. ouvririez	ouvrez	v. ouvriez	v. ouvrissiez
ils ouvriront	ils ouvriraient	q. ouvrent	ils ouvrent	ils ouvrissent
je paîtrai	je paîtrais		je paisse	
tu paîtras	tu paîtrais	pais	tu paisses	
il paîtra	il paîtrait	q. paisse	il paisse	
n. paîtrons	n. paîtrions	paissons	n. paissions	
v. paîtrez	v. paîtriez	paissez	v. paissiez	
ils paîtront	ils paîtraient	q. paissent	ils paissent	
je parferai	je parferais		je parfasse	je parfisse
		parfais	*obsolete*	
je paraîtrai	je paraîtrais		je paraisse	je parusse
		parais		
je parcourrai	je parcourrais		je parcoure	je parcourusse
		parcours		
je partirai	je partirais		je parte	je partisse
		pars		
je parviendrai	je parviendrais		je parvienne	je parvinsse
		parviens		
je paierai	je paierais		je paie	je payasse
		paie		
je peindrai	je peindrais		je peigne	je peignisse
		peins		
je pèlerai	je pèlerais		je pèle	je pelasse
		pèle		
je permettrai	je permettrais		je permette	je permisse
		permets		
je plaindrai	je plaindrais		je plaigne	je plaignisse
		plains		
je me plain-[drai	je me plain-[drais	plains-toi	je me plaigne	je me plai-[gnisse
je plairai	je plairais		je plaise	je plusse
tu plairas	tu plairais	plais	tu plaises	tu plusses
il plaira	il plairait	q. plaise	il plaise	il plût
n. plairons	n. plairions	plaisons	n. plaisions	n. plussions
v. plairez	v. plairiez	plaisez	v. plaisiez	v. plussiez
ils plairont	ils plairaient	q. plaisent	ils plaisent	ils plussent
il pleuvra	il pleuvrait	q. pleuve	q. pleuve	q. plût
il poindra	il poindrait			
je poursuivrai	je poursuivrais		je poursuive	je poursuivisse
		poursuis		
je pourvoirai	je pourvoirais		je pourvoie	je pourvusse
tu pourvoiras	tu pourvoirais	pourvois	tu pourvoies	tu pourvusses
il pourvoira	il pourvoirait	q. pourvoie	il pourvoie	il pourvût
n. pourvoirons	n. pourvoirions	pourvoyons	n. pourvoyions	n. pourvussions
v. pourvoirez	v. pourvoiriez	pourvoyez	v. pourvoyiez	v. pourvussiez
ils pourvoiront	i. pourvoiraient	q. pourvoient	ils pourvoient	ils pourvussent

INFINITIVE.	PARTICIPLES.	INDICATIVE.	IMPERFECT.	PAST DEFINITE.
POURVOIR, (se) 3. *to provide*	se pourvoyant pourvu, *f.* e.	je me pour-	je me pour- [voyais	je me pourvus
POUVOIR, 3. *to be able* aux. avoir *irregular.*	pouvant pu	je puis tu peux il peut n. pouvons v. pouvez ils peuvent	je pouvais tu pouvais il pouvait n. pouvions v. pouviez ils pouvaient	je pus tu pus il put n. pûmes v. pûtes ils purent
PRÉDIRE, 4. *to predict*	prédisant prédit, *f.* e.	je prédis *see* CONTREDIRE	je prédisais	je prédis
PRENDRE, 4. *to take* aux. avoir *irregular.*	prenant pris, *f.* e.	je prends tu prends il prend n. prenons v. prenez ils prennent	je prenais tu prenais il prenait n. prenions v. preniez ils prenaient	je pris tu pris il prit n. prîmes v. prîtes ils prirent
PRESCRIRE, 4. *to prescribe*	prescrivant prescrit, *f.* e.	je prescris *see* ÉCRIRE	je prescrivais	je prescrivis
PRESSENTIR, 2 *to foresee*	pressentant pressenti, *f.* e.	je pressens *see* SENTIR	je pressentais	je pressentis
PRÉVALOIR, 3. *to prevail*	prévalant prévalu	je prévaux *see* VALOIR	je prévalais	je prévalus
PRÉVENIR, 2. *to prevent*	prévenant prévenu, *f.* e.	je préviens *see* TENIR	je prévenais	je prévins
PRÉVOIR, 3. *to foresee*	prévoyant prévu, *f.* e.	je prévois *like* VOIR	je prévoyais *like* VOIR	je prévis *like* VOIR
PRODUIRE, 4. *to produce*	produisant produit, *f.* e.	je produis *see* CONDUIRE	je produisais	je produisis
PROJETER, 1. *to project*	projetant projeté, *f.* e.	je projette *see* JETER	je projetais § 49, (4.)	je projetai
PROMETTRE, 4. *to promise*	promettant promis, *f.* e.	je promets *see* METTRE	je promettais	je promis
PROMOUVOIR, 3. *to promote*	promouvant promu, *f.* e.	je promeus *see* MOUVOIR	je promouvais	je promus
PROSCRIRE, 4. *to proscribe*	proscrivant proscrit, *f.* e.	je proscris *see* ÉCRIRE	je proscrivais	je proscrivis
PROVENIR, 2. *to proceed*	provenant provenu, *f.* e.	je proviens	je provenais	je provins
QUÉRIR, *to fetch*	*only used*	*in the infinitive*	*except in the*	*composition of*
RABATTRE, 4. *to abate*	rabattant rabattu, *f.* e.	je rabats *see* BATTRE	je rabattais	je rabattis
RACHETER, 1. *to buy again*	rachetant racheté, *f.* e.	je rachète *see* ACHETER	je rachetais § 49, (5.)	je rachetai
RAPPELER, 1. *to recall*	rappelant rappelé, *f.* e.	je rappelle *see* APPELER	je rappelais § 49, (4.)	je rappelai
RAPPRENDRE, 4. *to learn again*	rapprenant rappris, *f.* e.	je rapprends	je rapprenais	je rappris
RATTEINDRE, 4. *to reach again*	ratteignant ratteint, *f.* e.	je ratteins	je ratteignais	je ratteignis
REBATTRE, 4. *to beat again*	rebattant rebattu, *f.* e.	je rebats *see* BATTRE	je rebattais	je rebattis
RECONDUIRE, 4. *to conduct again*	reconduisant reconduit, *f.* e.	je reconduis *see* CONDUIRE	je reconduisais	je reconduisis

FUTURE.	CONDITIONAL.	IMPERATIVE.	SUBJUNCTIVE.	IMPERFECT.
je me pourvoirai	je me pourvoirais	pourvois-toi	je me pourvoie	je me pourvusse
je pourrai	je pourrais		je puisse	je pusse
tu pourras	tu pourrais		tu puisses	tu pusses
il pourra	il pourrait		ll puisse	il pût
n. pourrons	n. pourrions		n. puissions	n. pussions
v. pourrez	v. pourriez		v. puissiez	v. pussiez
ils pourront	ils pourraient		ils puissent	ils pussent
je prédirai	je prédirais		je prédise	je prédisse
		prédis		
je prendrai	je prendrais		je prenne	je prisses
tu prendras	tu prendrais	prends	tu prennes	tu prisses
il prendra	il prendrait	q. prenne	il prenne	il prît
n. prendrons	n. prendrions	prenons	n. prenions	n. prissions
v. prendrez	v. prendriez	prenez	v. preniez	v. prissiez
ils prendront	ils prendraient	q. prennent	ils prennent	ils prissent
je prescrirai	je prescrirais		je prescrive	je prescrivisse
		prescris		
je pressentirai	je pressentirais		je pressente	je pressentisse
je prévaudrai	je prévaudrais		je prévale	je prévalusse
		prévaux		
je préviendrai	je préviendrais	préviens	je prévienne	je prévinsse
je prévoirai	je prévoirais		je prévoie	je prévisse
like POURVOIR	*like* POURVOIR	prévois	*like* VOIR	*like* VOIR
je produirai	je produirais		je produise	je produisisse
		produis		
je projetterai	je projetterais		je projette	je projetasse
		projette		
je promettrai	je promettrais		je promette	je promisse
		promets		
je promouvrai	je promouvrais	promeus	je promouve	je promusse
je proscrirai	je proscrirais		je proscrive	je proscrivisse
		proscris		
je proviendrai	je proviendrais	proviens	je provienne	je provînsse
other verbs				
je rabattrai	je rabattrais		je rabatte	je rabattisse
		rabats		
je rachèterai	je rachèterais		je rachète	je rachetasse
		rachète		
je rappellerai	je rappellerais		je rappelle	je rappelasse
		rappelle		
je rapprendrai	je rapprendrais	rapprends	je rapprenne	je rapprisse
je ratteindrai	je ratteindrais		je ratteigne	je ratteignisse
		ratteins		
je rebattrai	je rebattrais		je rebatte	je rebattisse
		rebats		
je reconduirai	je reconduirais	reconduis	je reconduise	je reconduisisse

Infinitive.	Participles	Indicative.	Imperfect.	Past Definite.
Reconnaître, 4. *to recognize*	reconnaissant reconnu, *f.* e.	je reconnais *see* connaître	je reconnais- [sais	je reconnus
Reconquérir, 2. *to conquer again*	reconquerant reconquis, *f.* e.	je reconquiers *see* acquérir	je reconqué- [rais	je reconquis
Reconstruire 4. *to reconstruct*	reconstruisant reconstruit, *f.* e.	je reconstruis *see* conduire	je reconstrui- [sais	je reconstrui- [sis
Recoudre, 4. *to sew again*	recousant recousu, *f.* e.	je recouds	je recousais	je recousis
Recourir, 2. *to have recourse*	recourant recouru	je recours *see* courir	je recourais	je recourus
Recouvrir, 2. *to cover again*	recouvrant recouvert, *f.* e.	je recouvre *see* ouvrir	je recouvrais	je recouvris
Recueillir, 2. *to reap*	recueillant recueilli, *f.* e.	je recueille *see* cueillir	je recueillais	je recueillis
Redire, 4. *to say again*	redisant redit, *f.* e.	je redis *see* dire	je redisais	je redis
Réduire, 4. *to reduce*	réduisant réduit, *f.* e.	je réduis *see* conduire	je réduisais	je réduisis
Refaire, 4. *to make again*	refaisant refait, *f.* e.	je refais *see* faire	je refaisais	je refis
Rejoindre, 4. *to rejoin*	rejoignant rejoint, *f.* e.	je rejoins *see* ceindre	je rejoignais	je rejoignis
Relire, 4. *to read again*	relisant relu, *f.* e.	je relis *see* lire	je relisais	je relus
Reluire, 4. *to shine*	reluisant relui	je reluis *see* luire	je reluisais	je reluisis
Remettre, 4. *to remit*	remettant remis, *f.* e.	je remets *see* mettre	je remettais	je remis
Remoudre, 4. *to grind again*	remoulant remoulu, *f.* e.	je remouds *see* moudre	je remoulais	je remoulus
Renaître, 4. *to revive*	renaissant renaissant, *f.* e.	je renais *see* naître	je renaissais	je renaquis
Rendormir, 2. *to lull to sleep*	rendormant rendormi, *f.* e.	je rendors *see* dormir	je rendormais	je rendormis
Rentraire, 4. *to darn*	rentrayant rentrait, *f.* e.	je rentrais *see* traire	je rentrayais	
Renvoyer, 1. *to send back*	renvoyant renvoyé, *f.* e.	je renvoie *see* envoyer	je renvoyais § 49, (2.)	je renvoyais
Repaître, 4. *to feed*	repaissant repû	je repais *see* paître	je repaissais	je repus &c.
Repartir, 2. *to set off again*	repartant reparti, *f.* e.	je repars *see* sentir	je repartais	je repartis
Repeindre, 4. *to paint again*	repeignant repeint, *f.* e.	je repeins *see* ceindre	je repeignais	je repeignis
Repentir, (se) 2. *to repent. ref.*	se repentant repenti, *f.* e.	je me repens *see* sentir	je me repen- [tais	je me repentis
Reprendre, 4. *to take again*	reprenant repris, *f.* e.	je reprends *see* prendre	je reprenais	je repris
Reproduire, 4. *to reproduce*	reproduisant reproduit, *f.* e.	je reproduis *see* conduire	je reproduisais [sais	je reproduisis

Future.	Conditional.	Imperative.	Subjunctive.	Imperfect.
je reconnaî-[trai	je reconnaî-[trais	reconnais	je reconnaisse	je reconnusse
je reconquer-[rai	je reconquer-[rais	reconquiers	je reconquière	je reconquisse
je reconstrui-[rai	je reconstrui-[rais	reconstruis	je reconstrui-[se	je reconstrui-[sisse
je recoudrai	je recoudrais	recouds	je recouse	je recousisse
je recourrai	je recourrais	recours	je recouro	je recourusse
je recouvrirai	je recouvrirais	recouvre	je recouvre	je recouvrisse
je recueillerai	je recueille-[rais	recueille	je recueille	je recueillisse
je redirai	je redirais	redis	je redise	je redisse
je réduirai	je réduirais	réduis	je réduise	je réduisisse
je referai	je referais	refais	je refasse	je refisse
je rejoindrai	je rejoindrais	rejoins	je rejoigne	je rejoignisse
je relirai	je relirais	relis	je relise	je relusse
je reluirai	je reluirais	reluis	je reluise	je reluisisse
je remettrai	je remettrais	remets	je remette	je remisse
je remoudrai	je remoudrais	remouds	je remoule	je remoulusse
je renaîtrai	je renaîtrais	renais	je renaisse	je renaquisse
je rendormirai	je rendormi-[rais	rendors	je rendorme	je rendormisse
je rentrairai	je rentrairais	rentrais	je rentraie	
je renverrai	je renverrais	renvoie	je renvoie	je renvoyasse
je repaîtrai	je repaîtrais	repais	je repaisse	je repusse &c.
je repartirai	je repartirais	repars	je reparte	je repartisse
je repeindrai	je repeindrais	repeins	je repeigne	je repeignisse
je me repenti-[rai	je me repenti-[rais	repens-toi	je me repente	je me repen-[tisse
je reprendrai	je reprendrais	reprends	je reprenne	je reprisse
je reproduirai	je reproduirais	reproduis	je reproduise	je reproduisisse

INFINITIVE.	PARTICIPLES.	INDICATIVE.	IMPERFECT.	PAST DEFINITE.
REQUÉRIR, 2.	requérant	je requiers	je requérais	je requis
to require	requis, *f.* e.	*see* ACQUÉRIR		
RÉSOUDRE, 4.	résolvant	je résous	je résolvais	je résolus
to resolve	résolu, résous	*see* ABSOUDRE		
RESSENTIR, 2.	ressentant	je ressens	je ressentais	je ressentis
to resent	ressenti, *f.* e.	*see* SENTIR		
RESSORTIR, 2.	ressortant	je ressors	je ressortais	je ressortis
to go out again	ressorti, *f.* e.	*see* SORTIR		
RESSOUVENIR,	se ressouve-	je me ressou-	je me ressou-	je me ressou-
(se) *to remember. reflective.*	[nant souvenu, *f.* e.	[viens *see* TENIR	[venais	[vins
RESTREINDRE	restreignant	je restreins	je restrei-	je restreignis
4. *to restrain*	restreint, *f.* e.	*see* CEINDRE	[gnais	
RETENIR, 2. *to*	retenant	je retiens	je retenais	je retins
retain	retenu, *f.* e.	*see* TENIR		
RETRAIRE, 4.	retrayant	je retrais	je retrayais	
to redeem	retrait, *f.* e.	*see* TRAIRE		
REVENIR, 2. *to*	revenant	je reviens	je revenais	je revins
return	revenu, *f.* e.	*see* VENIR		
REVÊTIR, 2. *to*	revêtant	je revêts	je revêtais	je revêtis
clothe	revêtu, *f.* e.	*see* VÊTIR		
REVIVRE, 4. *to*	revivant	je revis	je revivais	je revécus
live again	revécu			
REVOIR, 3. *to*	revoyant	je revois	je revoyais	je revis
see again	revu, *f.* e.	*see* VOIR		
RIRE, 4. *to*	riant	je ris	je riais	je ris
laugh	ri	tu ris	tu riais	tu ris
aux. avoir		il rit	il riait	il rit
irregular.		n. rions	n. riions	n. rîmes
		v. riez	v. riiez	n. rîtes
		ils rient	ils riaient	ils rirent
ROMPRE, 4. *to*	rompant	je romps	je rompais	je rompis
break	rompu, *f.* e.	tu romps	tu rompais	tu rompis
aux. avoir		il rompt	il rompait	il rompit
irregular.		n. rompons	n. rompions	n. rompîmes
		v. rompez	v. rompiez	v. rompîtes
		ils rompent	ils rompaient	ils rompirent
ROUVRIR, 2. *to*	rouvrant	je rouvre	je rouvrais	je rouvris
re-open	rouvert, *f.* e.	*see* OUVRIR		
SAILLIR, 2. *to*	saillant	il saille	il saillait	
project	sailli			
SATISFAIRE, 4.	satisfaisant	je satisfais	je satisfaisais	je satisfis
to satisfy	satisfait, *f.* e.	*see* FAIRE		
SAVOIR, 3. *to*	sachant	je sais	je savais	je sus
know	su, *f.* e.	tu sais	tu savais	tu sus
aux. avoir		il sait	il savait	il sut
irregular		n. savons	n. savions	n. sûmes
		v. savez	v. saviez	v. sûtes
		ils savent	ils savaient	ils surent
SECOURIR, 2. *to*	secourant	je secours	je secourais	je secourus
succor	secouru, *f.* e.	*see* COURIR		
SÉDUIRE, 4. *to*	séduisant	je séduis	je séduisais	je séduisis
seduce	seduit, *f.* e.			

Future.	Conditional.	Imperative.	Subjunctive.	Imperfect.
je requerrai	je requerrais	requiers	je requière	je requisse
je résoudrai	je résoudrais	résous	je résolve	je résolusse &c.
je ressentirai	je ressentirais	ressens	je ressente	je ressentisse
je ressortirai	je ressortirais	ressors	je ressorte	je ressortisse
je me ressouviendrai	je me ressouviendrais	ressouviens-toi	je me ressouvienne	je me ressouvinsse
je restreindrai	je restreindrais	restreins	je restreigne	je restreignisse
je retiendrai	je retiendrais	retiens	je retienne	je retinsse
je retrairai	je retrairais	retrais	je retraie	
je reviendrai	je reviendrais	reviens	je revienne	je revinsse
je revêtirai	je revêtirais	revêts	je revête	je revêtisse
je revivrai	je revivrais	revis	je revive	je revécusse
je reverrai	je reverrais	revois	je revoie	je revisse
je rirai	je rirais	ris	je rie	je risse
tu riras	tu rirais	q. rie	tu ries	tu risses
il rira	il rirait	rions	il rie	il rît
n. rirons	n. ririons	riez	n. riions	n. rissions
v. rirez	v. ririez	q. rient	v. riiez	v. rissiez
ils riront	ils riraient		ils rient	ils rissent
je romprai	je romprais	romps	je rompe	je rompisse
tu rompras	tu romprais	q. rompe	tu rompes	tu rompisses
il rompra	il romprait	rompons	il rompe	il rompît
n. romprons	n. romprions	rompez	n. rompions	n. rompissions
v. romprez	v. rompriez	q. rompent	v. rompiez	v. rompissiez
ils rompront	ils rompraient		ils rompent	ils rompissent
je rouvrirai	je rouvrirais	rouvre	je rouvre	je rouvrisse
il saillera	il saillerait		q. saille	q. saillît
je satisferai	je satisferais	satisfais	je satisfasse	je satisfisse
je saurai	je saurais		je sache	je susse
tu sauras	tu saurais	sache	tu saches	tu susses
il saura	il saurait	q. sache	il sache	il sût
n. saurons	n. saurions	sachons	n. sachions	n. sussions
v. saurez	v. sauriez	sachez	v. sachiez	v. sussiez
ils sauront	ils sauraient	q. sachent	ils sachent	ils sussent
je secourrai	je secourrais	secours	je secoure	je secourusse
je séduirai	je séduirais	séduis	je séduise	je séduisisse

INFINITIVE.	PARTICIPLES.	INDICATIVE.	IMPERFECT.	PAST DEFINITE.
SEMER, 1. *to sow. peculiar.*	semant semé, *f.* e.	je sème	je semais	je semai
SENTIR, 2. *to feel* aux. avoir *irregular.*	sentant senti, *f.* e.	je sens tu sens il sent n. sentons v. sentez ils sentent	je sentais tu sentais il sentait n. sentions v. sentiez ils sentaient	je sentis tu sentis il sentit n. sentîmes v. sentîtes ils sentirent
SEOIR, 3. *to fit, become. unip.*	seyant sis	il sied	il seyait	
SERVIR, 2. *to serve* aux. avoir *irregular.*	servant servi, *f.* e.	je sers tu sers il sert n. servons v. servez ils servent	je servais tu servais il servait n. servions v. serviez ils servaient	je servis tu servis il servit n. servîmes v. servîtes ils servirent
SORTIR, 2. *to go out*	sortant sorti, *f.* e.	je sors *see* SENTIR	je sortais	je sortis
SOUFFRIR, 2. *to suffer*	souffrant souffert, *f.* e.	je souffre *see* OUVRIR	je souffrais	je souffris
SOUMETTRE, 4. *to submit*	soumettant soumis, *f.* e.	je soumets *see* METTRE	je soumettais	je soumis
SOURIRE, 4. *to smile*	souriant souri	je souris *see* RIRE	je souriais	je souris
SOUSCRIRE, 4. *to subscribe*	souscrivant souscrit	je souscris *see* ÉCRIRE	je souscrivais	je souscris
SOUSTRAIRE, 4. *to subtract*	soustrayant soustrait, *f.* e.	je soustrais *see* TRAIRE	je soustrayais	
SOUTENIR, 2. *to sustain*	soutenant soutenu, *f.* e.	je soutiens *see* TENIR	je soutenais	je soutins
SOUVENIR, (se) 2. *to remember*	se souvenant souvenu, *f.* e.	je me souviens *see* TENIR	je me souvenais	je me souvins
SUBVENIR, 2. *to relieve*	subvenant subvenu, *f.* e.	je subviens *see* TENIR	je subvenais	je subvins
SUFFIRE, 4. *to suffice* aux. avoir *irregular*	suffisant suffi	je suffis tu suffis il suffit n. suffisons v. suffisez ils suffisent	je suffisais tu suffisais il suffisait n. suffisions v. suffisiez ils suffisaient	je suffis tu suffis il suffit n. suffîmes v. suffîtes ils suffirent
SUIVRE, 4. *to follow* aux. avoir *irregular*	suivant suivi, *f.* e.	je suis tu suis il suit n. suivons v. suivez ils suivent	je suivais tu suivais il suivait n. suivions v. suiviez ils suivaient	je suivis tu suivis il suivit n. suivîmes v. suivîtes ils suivirent
SURFAIRE, 4. *to exact*	surfaisant surfait, *f.* e.	je surfais *see* FAIRE	je surfaisais	je surfis
SURPRENDRE, 4. *to surprise*	surprenant surpris, *f.* e.	je surprends *see* PRENDRE	je surprenais	je surpris

Future.	Conditional.	Imperative.	Subjunctive.	Imperfect.
je sèmerai	je sèmerais		je sème	je semasse
		sème		
je sentirai	je sentirais		je sente	je sentisse
tu sentiras	tu sentirais	sens	tu sentes	tu sentisses
il sentira	il sentirait	q. sente	il sente	il sentît
n. sentirons	n. sentirions	sentons	n. sentions	n. sentissions
v. sentirez	v. sentiriez	sentez	v. sentiez	v. sentissiez
ils sentiront	ils sentiraient	q. sentent	ils sentent	ils sentissent
il siéra	il siérait		q. siée	
je servirai	je servirais		je serve	je servisse
tu serviras	tu servirais	sers	tu serves	tu servisses
il servira	il servirait	q. serve	il serve	il servît
n. servirons	n. servirions	servons	n. servions	n. servissions
v. servirez	v. serviriez	servez	v. serviez	v. servissiez
ils serviront	ils serviraient	q. servent	ils servent	ils servissent
je sortirai	je sortirais		je sorte	je sortisse
		sors		
je souffrirai	je souffrirais		je souffre	je souffrisse
		souffre		
je soumettrai	je soumettrais		je soumette	je soumisse
		soumets		
je sourirai	je sourirais		je sourie	je sourisse
		souris		
je souscrirai	je souscrirais		je souscrive	je souscrivisse
		souscris		
je soustrairai	je soustrairais		je soustraie	
		soustrais		
je soutiendrai	je soutiendrais		je soutienne	je soutinsse
		soutiens		
je me souvien-	je me souvien-		je me souvien-	je me sou-
[drai	[drais	souviens-toi	[ne	[vinsse
je subviendrai	je subvien-		je subvienne	je subvinsse
	[drais	subviens		
je suffirai	je suffirais		je suffise	je suffisse
tu suffiras	tu suffirais	suffis	tu suffises	tu suffisses
il suffira	il suffirait	q. suffise	il suffise	il suffît
n. suffirons	n. suffirions	suffisons	n. suffisions	n. suffissions
v. suffirez	v. suffiriez	suffisez	v. suffisiez	v. suffissiez
ils suffiront	ils suffiraient	q. suffisent	ils suffisent	ils suffissent
je suivrai	je suivrais		je suive	je suivisse
tu suivras	tu suivrais	suis	tu suives	tu suivisses
il suivra	il suivrait	q. suive	il suive	il suivît
n. suivrons	n. suivrions	suivons	n. suivions	n. suivissions
v. suivrez	v. suivriez	suivez	v. suiviez	v. suivissiez
ils suivront	ils suivraient	q. suivent	ils suivent	ils suivissent
je surferai	je surferais		je surfasse	je surfisse
		surfais		
je surprendrai	je surpren-		je surprenne	je surprisse
	[drais	surprends		

Infinitive.	Participles.	Indicative.	Imperfect.	Past Definite
Surseoir, 3.	sursoyant	je sursois	je sursoyais	je sursis
to supersede	sursis, *f.* e.	tu sursois	tu sursoyais	tu sursis
aux. avoir		il sursoit	il sursoyait	il sursit
irregular.		n. sursoyons	n. sursoyions	n. sursîmes
		v. sursoyez	v. sursoyiez	v. sursîtes
		ils sursoient	ils sursoyaient	ils sursirent
Survenir, 2.	survenant	je surviens	je survenais	je survins
to happen, etc.	survenu, *f.* e.	*see* TENIR		
Survivre, 4.	survivant	je survis	je survivais	je survécus
to survive	survécu	*see* VIVRE		
Taire, (se) 4.	se taisant	je me tais	je me taisais	je me tus
to be silent	tu, *f.* e.	*see* PLAIRE		
Teindre, 4. *to*	teignant	je teins	je teignais	je teignis
dye	teint, *f.* e.	*see* CEINDRE		
Tenir, 2. *to*	tenant	je tiens	je tenais	je tins
hold	tenu, *f.* e.	tu tiens	tu tenais	tu tins
aux. avoir		il tient	il tenait	il tint
irregular.		n. tenons	n. tenions	n. tînmes
		v. tenez	v. teniez	v. tîntes
		ils tiennent	ils tenaient	ils tinrent
Tonner, 1. *to*	tonnant	il tonne	il tonnait	il tonna
thunder. unip.	tonné			
Traduire, 4.	traduisant,	je traduis	je traduisais	je traduisis
to translate	traduit, *f.* e.	*see* CONDUIRE		
Traire, 4. *to*	trayant	je trais	je trayais	
milk	trait	tu trais	tu trayais	
aux. avoir		il trait	il trayait	
defective.		n. trayons	n. trayions	
		v. trayez	v. trayiez	
		ils traient	ils trayaient	
Transcrire, 4.	transcrivant	je transcris	je transcrivais	je transcrivis
to transcribe	transcrit	*see* ÉCRIRE		
Transmettre,	transmettant	je transmets	je transmettais	je transmis
4. *to transmit*	transmis, *f.* e.	*see* METTRE		
Tressaillir,	tressaillant	je tressaille	je tressaillais	je tressaillis
2. *to start*	tressailli	*see* ASSAILLIR		
Vaincre, 4. *to*	vainquant	je vaincs	je vainquais	je vainquis
vanquish	vaincu, *f.* e.	tu vaincs	tu vainquais	tu vainquis
aux. avoir		il vainc	il vainquait	il vainquit
irregular.		n. vainquons	n. vainquions	n. vainquîmes
		v. vainquez	v. vainquiez	v. vainquîtes
		ils vainquent	ils vainquaient	ils vainquirent
Valoir, 3. *to*	valant	je vaux	je valais	je valus
be worth	valu	tu vaux	tu valais	tu valus
aux. avoir		il vaut	il valait	il valut
irregular.		n. valons	n. valions	n. valûmes
		v. valez	v. valiez	v. valûtes
		ils valent	ils valaient	ils valurent
Venir, 2. *to*	venant	je viens	je venais	je vins
come	venu, *f.* e.	*see* TENIR		
aux. être				

Future.	Conditional.	Imperative.	Subjunctive.	Imperfect.
je surseoirai	je surseoirais		je sursoie	je sursisse
tu surseoiras	tu surseoirais	sursois	tu sursoies	tu sursisses
il surseoira	il surseoirait	q. sursoie	il sursoie	il sursît
n. surseoirons	n. surseoirions	sursoyons	n. sursoyions	n. sursissions
v. surseoirez	v. surseoiriez	sursoyez	v. sursoyiez	v. sursissiez
ils surseoiront	i. surseoiraient	q. sursoient	ils sursoient	ils sursissent
je surviendrai	je surviendrais		je survienne	je survinsse
		surviens		
je survivrai	je survivrais		je survive	je survécusse
		survis		
je me tairai	je me tairais		je me taise	je me tusse
		tais-toi		
je teindrai	je teindrais		je teigne	je teignisse
		teins		
je tiendrai	je tiendrais		je tienne	je tinsse
tu tiendras	tu tiendrais	tiens	tu tiennes	tu tinsses
il tiendra	il tiendrait	q. tienne	il tienne	il tînt
n. tiendrons	n. tiendrions	tenons	n. tenions	n. tinssions
v. tiendrez	v. tiendriez	tenez	v. teniez	v. tinssiez
ils tiendront	ils tiendraient	q. tiennent	ils tiennent	ils tinssent
il tonnera	il tonnerait	q. tonne	q. tonne	q. tonnât
je traduirai	je traduirais		je traduise	je traduisisse
		traduis		
je trairai	je trairais		je traie	
tu trairas	tu trairais	trais	tu traies	
il traira	il trairait	q. traie	il traie	
n. trairons	n. trairions	trayons	n. trayons	
v. trairez	v. trairiez	trayez	v. trayiez	
ils trairont	ils trairaient	q. traient	ils traient	
je transcrirai	je transcrirais		je transcrive	je transcri- [visse
		transcris		
je transmet- [trai	je transmet- [trais	transmets	je transmette	je transmisse
je tressaillirai	je tressaillirais		je tressaille	je tressaillisse
		tressaille		
je vaincrai	je vaincrais		je vainque	je vainquisse
tu vaincras	tu vaincrais	vaincs	tu vainques	tu vainquisses
il vaincra	il vaincrait	q. vainque	il vainque	il vainquît
n. vaincrons	n. vaincrions	vainquons	n. vainquions	n. vainquissions
v. vaincrez	v. vaincriez	vainquez	v. vainquiez	v. vainquissiez
ils vaincront	ils vaincraient	q. vainquent	ils vainquent	i. vainquissent
je vaudrai	je vaudrais		je vaille	je valusse
tu vaudras	tu vaudrais	vaux	tu vailles	tu valusses
il vaudra	il vaudrait	q. vaille	il vaille	il valût
n. vaudrons	n. vaudrions	valons	n. valions	n. valussions
v. vaudrez	v. vaudriez	valez	v. valiez	v. valussiez
ils vaudront	ils vaudraient	q. vaillent	ils vaillent	ils valussent
je viendrai	je viendrais		je vienne	je vinsse
		viens		

Infinitive.	Participles.	Indicative.	Imperfect.	Past Definite.
Vêtir, 2. *to clothe* aux. avoir *irregular.*	vêtant vêtu, *f.* e.	je vêts tu vêts il vêt n. vêtons v. vêtez ils vêtent	je vêtais tu vêtais il vêtait n. vêtions v. vêtiez ils vêtaient	je vêtis tu vêtis il vêtit n. vêtîmes v. vêtîtes ils vêtirent
Vêtir, (se) 2. *to clothe one's self. ref.*	se vêtant vêtu, *f.* e.	je me vêts etc.	je me vêtais etc.	je me vêtis etc.
Vivre, 4. *to live* aux. avoir *irregular.*	vivant vécu	je vis tu vis il vit n. vivons v. vivez ils vivent	je vivais tu vivais il vivait n. vivions v. viviez ils vivaient	je vécus tu vécus il vécut n. vécûmes v. vécûtes ils vécurent
Voir, 3. *to see* aux. avoir *irregular.*	voyant vu, *f.* e.	je vois tu vois il voit n. voyons v. voyez ils voient	je voyais tu voyais il voyait n. voyions v. voyiez ils voyaient	je vis tu vis il vit n. vîmes v. vîtes ils virent
Vouloir, 3. *to be willing* aux. avoir *irregular.*	voulant voulu	je veux tu veux il veut n. voulons v. voulez ils veulent	je voulais tu voulais il voulait n. voulions v. vouliez ils voulaient	je voulus tu voulus il voulut n. voulûmes v. voulûtes ils voulurent

Remarks.

Absoudre. The Academy gives in the past participle of this verb, *absous* and *absout*, and seems to prefer the latter form. The best writers, however, prefer the former.

Aller. The form, *je vas*, I go, is obsolete.

Bénir has two participles, the regular one, *béni*, blessed; and the irregular form, *bénit*, consecrated.

Fleurir. This verb retains the old form in the present participle and imperfect, *florissant*, *je florissais*, etc., when it is used figuratively.

Pouvoir has two forms in the present of the indicative, *je puis* and *je peux*. The former is preferable, except when the second negative is put after the verb.

Future.	Conditional.	Imperative.	Subjunctive.	Imperfect.
je vêtirai	je vêtirais		je vête	je vêtisse
tu vêtiras	tu vêtirais	vêts	tu vêtes	tu vêtisses
il vêtira	il vêtirait	q. vête	il vête	il vêtît
n. vêtirons	n. vêtirions	vêtons	n. vêtions	n. vêtissions
v. vêtirez	v. vêtiriez	vêtez	v. vêtiez	v. vêtissiez
ils vêtiront	ils vêtiraient	q. vêtent	ils vêtent	ils vêtissent
je me vêtirai	je me vêtirais		je me vête	je me vêtisse
&c.	&c.	vêts-toi	&c.	&c.
je vivrai	je vivrais		je vive	je vécusse
tu vivras	tu vivrais	vis	tu vives	tu vécusses
il vivra	il vivrait	q. vive	il vive	il vécût
n. vivrons	n. vivrions	vivons	n. vivions	n. vécussions
v. vivrez	v. vivriez	vivez	v. viviez	v. vécussiez
ils vivront	ils vivraient	q. vivent	ils vivent	ils vécussent
je verrai	je verrais		je voie	je visse
tu verras	tu verrais	vois	tu voies	tu visses
il verra	il verrait	q. voie	il voie	il vît
n. verrons	n. verrions	voyons	n. voyions	n. vissions
v. verrez	v. verriez	voyez	v. voyiez	v. vissiez
ils verront	ils verraient	q. voient	ils voient	ils vissent
je voudrai	je voudrais		je veuille	je voulusse
tu voudras	tu voudrais		tu veuilles	tu voulusses
il voudra	il voudrait		il veuille	il voulût
n. voudrons	n. voudrions		n. voulions	n. voulussions
v. voudrez	v. voudriez	veuillez	v. vouliez	v. voulussiez
ils voudront	ils voudraient		ils veuillent	ils voulussent

Remarks.

Répartir (with an accent), is regular and means *to divide*. It should not be confounded with *repartir*, to set off again.

Résoudre has two past participles, *résolu*, resolved upon, and *résous*, resolved into.

Ressortir, *to depend upon, to be within the jurisdiction*, is regular. It must not be confounded with *ressortir*, to go out again, which is conjugated like *sortir*.

Tistre, to weave, is only used in the past participle, *tissu*, woven.

§ 63.—The Participle.

(1.) The participle is so called, because it participates of the nature both of the verb and of the adjective. It partakes of the nature of the verb, in having its signification and regimen, and of the nature of the adjective in relating, like the latter, to nouns and pronouns.

(2.) There are two sorts of participles; the present and the past.

§ 64.—The Participle Present.

(1.) The participle present, which denotes continuance of action answers to the English participle in *ing*.

(2.) This participle is invariable; always terminating in *ant;* as, chantant, *singing;* finissant, *finishing;* recevant, *receiving;* vendant, *selling.*

une dame *marchant*, — *a lady walking;*
des hommes *marchant*, — *men walking.*

J'ai vu les vents *grondant* sur ces moissons superbes,
Déraciner les blés, se disputer les gerbes. DELILLE.

I have seen the winds roaring over those superb harvests, root up the grain, and contend for the sheaves.

§ 65.—Verbal Adjectives ending in ant.

(1.) The verbal adjective in *ant* expresses merely the condition, the manner of being, the quality of the noun. It never denotes action.

(2.) This adjective varies in gender and number. We give below examples of the same words, used as participles and as adjectives:—

Adjectives.	*Participles.*
Une femme *obligeante* est aimée de tout le monde.	Une femme *obligeant* tout le monde est généralement aimée.
An obliging woman is loved by every person.	*A woman obliging every body is generally loved.*
Les tribus *errantes* de l'Afrique.	Les tribus *errant* dans l'Afrique.
The wandering tribes of Africa.	*The tribes wandering in Africa.*
Il n'y a que les natures *aimantes* qui soient propres à l'étude de la nature. BERNARDIN DE ST. PIERRE.	Les natures *aimant* la solitude, aiment généralement l'étude.
Affectionate natures (dispositions) only, are fit for the study of nature.	*Natures (dispositions) loving solitude, are in general fond of study.*

§ 66.—The Participle Past.

(1.) The participle past denotes the completion of the action.

(2.) It is susceptible of variations for gender and number.

(3.) The participle past, used without an auxiliary, agrees in gender and number with the noun which it qualifies, whether the noun

precedes or follows. In short, all that we have said of the agreement of the adjective with the noun, may be applied to this participle.

des enfants *chéris*,	*beloved children;*
des femmes *estimées*,	*esteemed women;*

Comme une lampe d'or, dans l'azur *suspendue*,
La lune se balance aux bords de l'horizon;
Ses rayons *affaiblis* dorment sur le gazon. LAMARTINE.

Like a golden lamp, suspended in the azure vault, the moon balances herself in the confines of the horizon; her weakened rays sleep on the turf.

(4.) For further rules on the past participle, see Syntax, § 134, and following.

§ 67.—The Adverb.

(1.) The adverb is an invariable word joined to verbs, adjectives, or to other adverbs, to modify their signification.

(2.) Adverbs are divided into seven classes:

1. Of manner;	doucement, *softly;* sagement, *wisely;* etc.
2. Of order;	premièrement, *first;* d'abord, *at first;* ensuite, *afterwards;* etc.
3. Of place;	ici, *here;* où, *where;* là, *there;* ailleurs, *elsewhere;* etc.
4. Of time;	hier, *yesterday;* aujourd'hui, *to-day;* demain, *to-morrow;* etc.
5. Of quantity;	peu, *little;* trop, *too much;* tant, *so much;* etc.
6. Of comparison;	plus, *more;* moins, *less;* très, *very.*
7. Of affirmation, negation and doubt.	oui, *yes;* certes, *certainly;* non, *no;* nullement, *by no means;* peut-être, *perhaps;* ne, pas, point, *not;* etc.

(3.) A few adjectives are sometimes used adverbially. They are then invariable:

chanter *juste*,	*to sing in tune;*
coûter *cher*,	*to cost dear;*
parler *haut*,	*to speak loud.*

(4.) Several words united together, and having the force of an adverb, are called an adverbial phrase:

tout à coup,	*suddenly;*
peu à peu,	*by degrees;*
tout à l'heure,	*immediately;*
de temps en temps,	*now and then*, etc.

§ 68.—Formation of Adverbs from Adjectives.

(1.)—Adverbs ending in *ment*, may be formed from adjectives in the following manner:

(2.) When the adjective ends in the masculine with a vowel, *ment* is added to form the adverb:

Adjective.		*Adverb.*	
utile,	*useful;*	utilement,	*usefully;*
poli,	*polite;*	poliment,	*politely;*
aisé,	*easy;*	aisément,	*easily.*

(3.) *Exceptions.*

beau,	*beautiful;*	bellement,	*beautifully;*
fou,	*foolish;*	follement,	*foolishly;*
mou,	*soft;*	mollement,	*softly;*
nouveau,	*new;*	nouvellement,	*newly;*
traître,	*treacherous;*	traîtreusement,	*treacherously.*

(4.) When the adjective ends in the masculine with a consonant, the syllable *ment* is added to its feminine termination, as,

masc.	*fem.*			
bon,	bonne,	*good;*	bonnement,	*in a good manner;*
doux,	douce,	*soft;*	doucement,	*softly;*
heureux,	heureuse,	*happy;*	heureusement,	*happily.*

(5.) Adjectives ending in *nt*, change that termination into *mment:*

prudent,	*prudent;*	prudemment,	*prudently;*
élégant,	*elegant;*	élégamment,	*elegantly.*

Exceptions.

lent,	*slow;*	lentement,	*slowly;*
présent,	*present;*	présentement,	*presently.*

(6.) The following adverbs require an acute accent over the *e* preceding *ment*, which *e* is mute in the adjective:

aveuglément,	*blindly;*	expressément,	*expressly;*
commodément,	*commodiously;*	importunément,	*importunately;*
communément,	*commonly;*	incommodément,	*incommodiously;*
conformément,	*conformably;*	obscurément,	*obscurely;*
confusément,	*confusedly;*	opiniâtrément,	*obstinately;*
diffusément,	*diffusely;*	précisément,	*precisely;*
énormément,	*enormously;*	profondément,	*profoundly.*

§ 69.—Degrees of Signification in Adverbs ending in ment.

(1.) Adverbs ending in *ment*, are, like all the adjectives from which they are formed, susceptible of three degrees of signification; the positive, the comparative, and the superlative.

(2.) The first expresses the manner simply.

(3.) The second expresses it in a degree of equality, superiority, or inferiority, by adding to the adverb the words, si, *so;* aussi, *as;* plus, *more;* moins, *less.*

(4.) The third, by the addition of the words, bien, très, fort, *very*, carries the signification to the highest degree.

§ 70.—Adverbs making of themselves a Comparison.

comme, de même, pareillement,	*in the same manner;*	ainsi,	*thus;*
		plus, davantage,	*more;*

De plus,	*besides;*
Moins,	*less;*
Mieux,	*better;*
Pis,	*worse;*
Très,	*very;*
Ni plus ni moins,	*neither more nor less;*
Presque, Quasi,	*almost;*
A peu près,	*nearly;*
Pour le plus,	*for the most;*
Tout au plus,	*at most;*
A qui mieux mieux, A l'envi,	*vying with one another;*
De mieux en mieux,	*better and better.*

§ 71.—The Preposition.

(1.) The preposition is an invariable word, used to express the relations of things.

(2.) The preposition conveys by itself no distinct meaning. The preposition and the word which it governs, form what is called an indirect regimen.

§ 72.—Table of the Principal Prepositions.

A,	*to, at, in;*
A cause de,	*on account of;*
Après,	*after;*
Attendu, vu,	*on account of;*
Auprès de,	*near;*
Autour de,	*about, around;*
Avant,	*before, (earlier);*
Avec,	*with;*
Chez,	*at the house of*
Contre,	*against;*
Dans,	*in, within;*
D'après,	*from, after;*
D'avec,	*from;*
De,	*of, from, with;*
Delà, au delà de, De delà, par delà,	*beyond, on that side of;*
Depuis,	*since, for;*
Derrière,	*behind;*
Dès,	*from;*
Devant,	*before, opposite;*
Durant,	*during;*
En,	*in, at, to;*
En deçà de, De deçà, par deçà,	*this side;* *on this side;*
Entre	*between;*
Envers, A l'égard de,	*towards;*
Environ,	*about;*
Excepté, Hormis,	*except, but;*
Hors,	*save;*
Jusqu'à, Jusques à,	*until, as far as;*
Loin de,	*far from;*
Le long de,	*along;*
Malgré,	*in spite of;*
Moyennant,	*by means of;*
Nonobstant,	*notwithstanding;*
Outre,	*besides;*
Par,	*by, through;*
Pardevant,	*before, (law term);*
Parmi,	*among, amongst;*
Pendant,	*during;*
Pour,	*for;*
Près de,	*near, close by;*
Proche, proche de,	*near by;*
Quant à,	*as far, with respect;*
Sans,	*without;*
Sauf,	*saving, except;*
Selon,	*according to;*
Sous,	*under;*
Suivant,	*according to;*
Sur,	*upon, on;*
Touchant,	*touching;*
Concernant,	*concerning;*
Vers,	*towards, to;*
Vis-à-vis de,	*opposite.*

(2.) The prepositions are divided into several classes.

(3.) Among those denoting place are—

Autour, *around;*

Ce n'est qu'*autour* de lui que vole la victoire. RACINE.

Around him alone hovers victory.

Chez, *with; at the house of; among;* (apud *of the Latin.*)
- Enfin, *chez* les chrétiens les mœurs sont innocentes. CORNEILLE.
- *Among Christians, finally, the manners are innocent.*
- *Chez* mon père, *at my father's house.*

Dans, *in;*
- Rome n'est plus *dans* Rome. CORNEILLE.
- *Rome is no longer in Rome.*

Parmi, *among;* Vers, *towards;*
- *Parmi* les rochers, *vers* le milieu de ces montagnes escarpées. FÉNELON.
- *Among the rocks, towards the middle of those steep mountains.*

Sous, *under;*
- L'autel couvert de feux, tombe et fuit, *sous* la terre. VOLTAIRE.
- *The altar covered with fire, falls and disappears under the earth.*

Sur, *upon;*
- Les riches ne sont *sur* la terre que pour faire du bien. FÉNELON.
- *The rich are placed on the earth merely to do good.*

(4.) Some, denoting time, are—

Durant, Pendant, *during;*
- *Durant* la nuit, elle n'a point dormi. CORNEILLE.
- *During the night she has had no sleep.*

(5.) Some mark place and time, as—

Dès, *from;*
- Dès Orléans; *Dès* sa source. L'ACADÉMIE.

" (*place;*)
- *From Orleans; from its source;*

" (*time;*)
- L'homme, *dès* sa naissance, a le sentiment du plaisir et de la douleur. MASSILLON.
- *Man from his birth has the sensation of pleasure and of pain.*

Depuis, *from; since;*
- La France s'étend *depuis* le Rhin jusqu'à l'Océan. L'ACADÉMIE.

" (*place;*)
- *France extends from the Rhine to the Ocean.*

" (*time;*)
- En Orient, en Occident, *depuis* deux mille ans, on ne parle que d'Alexandre. MASSILLON.
- *In the East, in the West, since two thousand years, they speak continually of Alexander.*

Dans, en, sous, vers, etc., may also be placed under this head.

(6.) Some prepositions mark order, as—

Avant, *before;* (*at an earlier time;*)
- La conscience nous avertit, en ami, *avant* de nous punir. STANISLAS.
- *Conscience warns us, as a friend, before punishing us.*

Après, *after;*
- Je crains Dieu, et *après* Dieu, je crains principalement celui qui ne le craint pas. SADI.
- *I fear God, and, after God, I fear principally the man who does not fear him.*

Entre, *between;*
- L'homme est placé libre entre le vice et la vertu. MARMONTEL.
- *Man is placed free between vice and virtue.*

Derrière, *behind;*
- Il se met toujours derrière celui qui parle. LA BRUYÈRE.
- *He places himself always behind the speaker.*

Devant, *before;* (*in front of;*
- Fais marcher devant toi l'ange exterminateur. VOLTAIRE.
- *Send before thee the exterminating angel.*

(7.) The prepositions marking union, are:

Avec, *with*;

Je veux vivre *avec* elle, *avec* elle expirer.
CORNEILLE.
I will live with her, die with her.

Outre, *besides*;

Outre l'estime de soi-même, l'honnête homme possède encore l'estime et la confiance universelles.
MARMONTEL.
Besides self-esteem, the honest man possesses universal esteem and confidence.

(8.) Those of separation, exception, are:

Excepté, *except*;

Il travaille toute la semaine, *excepté* le dimanche.
L'ACADÉMIE.
He works the whole week, except Sunday.

Hormis, *except*;

Hormis toi, tout le monde est content.
All are pleased, except you.

Hors, *except*;

Nul n'aura de l'esprit, *hors* nous et nos amis.
MOLIÈRE.
No one shall have wit, but ourselves and our friends.

Sans, *without*;

Point de vertu *sans* religion, point de bonheur *sans* vertu.
DIDEROT.
No virtue without religion, no happiness without virtue.

Sauf, *save; except*;

On peut tout sacrifier à l'amitié, *sauf* l'honnêteté et la justice.
MARMONTEL.
We may sacrifice all to friendship, except honesty and justice.

(9.) The prepositions of opposition are:

Contre, *against*;

Le travail est une meilleure ressource *contre* l'ennui que le plaisir.
TRUBLET.
Labor is a better resource against ennui than pleasure.

Malgré, *in spite of*;

Nous suivrons *malgré* nous le vainqueur de Lesbos.
RACINE.
We shall follow against our will the conqueror of Lesbos.

Nonobstant, *notwithstanding*.

La vérité, *nonobstant* le préjugé, l'erreur et le mensonge, se fait jour à la fin.
MARMONTEL.
Truth, prejudice error and falsehood notwithstanding, comes at last to light.

(10.) The prepositions of conformity are:

Selon, Suivant, *according to*;

La terre, cette bonne mère, multiplie ses dons *selon* le nombre de ses enfants.
FÉNELON.
The earth, that good mother, multiplies her gifts according to the number of her children.

Les talents produisent *suivant* la culture.
MARMONTEL.
Talents produce according to their cultivation.

(11.) Several words placed together and performing the part of a preposition, are called a prepositional phrase:

A l'égard de,	*with regard to*;
En faveur de,	*in favor of*;
A la réserve de,	*reserving*; *etc.*

§ 73.—The Conjunction.

(1.) Conjunctions are invariable words which serve to connect words and sentences.

(2.) French grammarians divide the conjunctions into nine classes:

1 Copulative,	as	et, *and*; ni, *nor*; que, *that*; de sorte que, *so that*; etc.
2 Adversative,		mais, *but*; quoique, *though*; cependant, *yet*; etc.
3 Disjunctive,		ou, *or*; ou bien, *else*; ni, *neither*; etc.
4 Explanatory,		savoir, *namely*; comme, *as*; c'est à dire, *that is to say*; etc.
5 Circumstantial,		quand, lorsque, *when*; pendant que, *while*;
6 Conditional,		si, *if*; sans quoi, *without which*; supposé que, *supposing that*, etc.
7 Causal,		car, *for*; puisque, *since*; pourquoi, *why*; *wherefore*; etc.
8 Transitive,		or, donc, *therefore*; ainsi, *thus*; d'ailleurs, *besides*, etc.
9 Determinative,		que, *that*.

(3.) We here present a list of the conjunctions and conjunctive phrases most commonly used in French. We will divide them into two classes.

1. Conjunctions and conjunctive phrases which may be placed in the first or in the second part of a period:

A cause que,	*because*;	Jusqu'à ce que,	*until that*;
A moins que,	*unless*;	Lorsque,	*if, when*;
Aussitôt que,	*as soon as*;	Ou bien,	*or, else*;
Au cas que,	*in case that, if*;	Outre que,	*besides that*;
Après que,	*after that*;	Pendant que,	*while that*;
Ainsi que,	*as, as well as*;	Parce que,	*because*;
Attendu que,	*whereas*;	Pourvu que,	*provided*;
Afin que,	*in order that*;	Puisque,	*since*;
Au reste,	*besides*;	Quand,	*if, when*;
Avant que,	*before that, sooner than*;	Quoique,	*although, though*
		Si,	*if*;
Cependant que,	*although*;	Sans que,	*unless*;
De crainte que,	*for fear that, lest*;	Sitôt que,	*provided that*;
De même que,	*in the same way as*;	Soit que,	*be it that*;
De peur que,	*for fear that, lest*;	Si ce n'est que,	*unless*;
Depuis que,	*since that*;	Supposé que,	*supposing that*;
De sorte que,	*so that*;	Tant que,	*provided that*;
Durant que,	*while*;	Tandis que,	*while that*;
En cas que,	*in case that*;	Vû que,	*provided that.*
Encore que,	*although*;		

2. The conjunctions and conjunctive phrases which usually come

between two parts of a sentence, or at the commencement of a discourse momentarily interrupted, are:

Aussi bien que,	*as well as;*	En effet,	*in fact;*
Après tout,	*nevertheless;*	Et puis,	*and then;*
A condition que,	*on condition that;*	Mais,	*but;*
Au surplus,	*besides;*	Partant,	*therefore;*
C'est pourquoi,	*therefore;*	Par conséquent,	*consequently;*
Cependant,	*however;*	Pourtant,	*however;*
C'est à dire,	*that is to say;*	Sans quoi,	*unless that;*
C'est à savoir,	*that is;*	Savoir,	*to wit;*
Car,	*for, because;*	Sinon,	*unless;*
Donc,	*therefore;*	Toutefois,	*nevertheless.*

See Lesson 100—Examples on the different uses of conjunctions.

§ 74.—INTERJECTIONS.

(1.) The interjections indicate some sudden affection or emotion of the mind. They are exclamations which seem to take the place of entire propositions.

(2.) Some imply astonishment:

Ah! eh! etc.

Beaux arts, *eh!* dans quels lieux n'avez-vous droit de plaire? DELILLE.
Fine arts, ah! in what place have you not a right to please?

(3.) Some express derision, irony, distrust, etc.:

Ouais, *ah! indeed!* Oui dà, *truly*, etc.

Ouais! ce maître d'armes vous tient bien au cœur. MOLIÈRE.
Ah! indeed! this fencing master displeases you much.

(4.) Others express contempt, aversion and disapprobation:

Foin! *away with*, etc.

Foin du loup et de sa race! LA FONTAINE.
Away with the wolf and his race!

Tout beau! *softly!*

Tout beau, monsieur; *tout beau!* MOLIÈRE.
Softly, sir; softly!

(5.) We shall carry no further this classification, but content ourselves with giving a list of the most usual interjections:

Ah!	*ah!*	Oh!	*oh!*
Ahi!	*eigh!*	Ouais!	*ah, indeed! so, so!*
Bah!	*bah!*	Ouf!	*eigh!*
Chut!	*silence! hist!*	Paf!	*crack!*
Eh!	*eh!*	St!	*hist!*
Fi!	*fy!*	Sus!	*quickly!*
Gare!	*take care!*	Zest!	*quickly!*
Ha!	*ha!*	Fi donc!	*fy then!*
Hélas!	*alas!*	Ho ça!	*holla!*
Heu!	*alas!*	Hé bien!	*now then!*
Holà!	*holla!*	Eh bien!	*well then!*
Ho!	*ho!*	Oui dà!	*truly!*
Hem!	*hem!*	Or çà!	*quickly!*
Hein!	*eh!*	Tout beau!	*softly!*
Hum!	*hum!*	Silence! Paix!	*silence!*
&c.		&c.	

§ 75.—SYNTAX.

(1.) Syntax treats of the agreement, government, and arrangement of words in sentences.

(2.) One word is said to agree with another, when it takes the same modification of gender, number, and person.

(3.) One word governs another, when by the influence of the former the latter is made to assume a particular form or place.

(4.) The proper arrangement of words consists in placing them in the order sanctioned by grammatical rules, deduced from the best reputable custom.

(5.) For the cases adopted by the modern French grammarians, the student is referred to § 2, and § 42, (2,) (3,) (4,) (5.)

§ 76.—THE NOUN.—PLACE OF NOUNS.

(1.) In French, as well as in English, a noun used as the subject or nominative of an affirmative or negative sentence, generally precedes the verb:

L'homme le plus obscur aime la liberté. CHATEAUBRIAND.	*The most humble man loves liberty.*
L'espérance tient lieu des biens qu'elle promet. LA CHAUSSÉE.	*Hope takes the place of the benefits which it promises.*

(2.) In poetry and in elevated prose, the subject is sometimes placed after the verb:

Il n'est point de noblesse, où manque *la vertu.* CRÉBILLON.	*Nothing noble can exist, where virtue is wanting.*
La fortune est à craindre, où manque *la sagesse.* BOURSAULT.	*Where wisdom is wanting, fortune is to be feared.*

(3.) In interjected sentences, that is, in sentences which we, while repeating the words of a person, *throw among* other sentences, to indicate that person as the speaker, the subject, in French, must always follow the verb:

Heureux, *disait Mentor*, le peuple qui est conduit par un sage roi! FÉNELON.	*Happy, said Mentor, the people who are governed by a wise king.*

(4.) In interrogative sentences, the noun generally precedes the verb, which must be immediately followed by a pronoun corresponding in gender and number with the noun:

La *mort* est-*elle* un mal? La *vie* est-*elle* un bien? CRÉBILLON.	*Is death an evil? Is life a benefit?* Literally, *Death, is it an evil?* etc.

(5.) When the sentence commences with one of the following words, où, *where;* que, *what;* combien, *how much;* quand, *when;*

the noun may be placed immediately after the verb, or in accordance with the last rule:

Où est votre *père*? or Où votre *père* est-il?	*Where is your father?*
Mais que sert *un long règne*, à moins qu'il ne soit beau? BOURSAULT.	*Of what use is a long reign, unless it be glorious?*

(6.) The noun, used as a direct regimen, has the same place in the sentence in French as in English:

La force fonde, étend, et maintient un *empire*. SAURIN.	*Power founds, extends, and maintains an empire.*

(7.) When there are, in the same sentence, two nouns, one used as direct, the other as indirect regimen, and those nouns with the words qualifying or modifying them, are of equal length, the direct regimen should precede the indirect:[1]

Le malheur ajoute un nouveau *lustre* à la gloire des grands hommes. FÉNELON.	*Misfortune adds a new lustre to the glory of great men.*
Avez-vous donné *les livres* à mon frère? GIRAULT-DUVIVIER.	*Have you given the books to my brother.*

(8.) When, however, the qualifying or explanatory words render the direct regimen longer than the indirect, the *régime indirect* is placed first:

Avez-vous donné *à mon frère les livres* que vous lui aviez promis?	*Have you given my brother the books, which you had promised him?*
Les hypocrites parent *des dehors* de la vertu, *les vices les plus honteux*. NOËL.	*Hypocrites adorn with the appearance of virtue, the most shameful vices.*

(9.) The indirect regimen precedes the direct regimen, when the meaning would otherwise be doubtful:

Tâchez de ramener par *la douceur ces esprits égarés*. BESCHERELLE.	*Try to bring back by mildness, these erring spirits.*

Any other construction would render the sentence equivocal.

(10.) In English, the name of the possessor frequently precedes the name of the object possessed, and the two are connected by means of *'s* (the old Saxon genitive termination). In French the order is always different. The name of the object precedes that of the possessor, and the connecting link is a preposition:

Les livres de mon ami.	*My friend's books.*
Vous avez vu la montre de ma sœur.	*You have seen my sister's watch.*

[1] This must also be the case, when the *régime direct* is shorter than the *régime indirect*.

(11.) The name of an object always precedes the name of the substance of which it is formed, or which it contains. The preposition *de* comes between them:

Une table de marbre.	*A marble table.*
La France a beaucoup de carrières de marbre.	*France has many marble quarries.*
Un bouteille de vin.	*A bottle of wine.*

(12.) The word representing an individual always precedes that describing his particular occupation, or the merchandise of which he disposes:

Un maître de danse.	*A dancing master.*
Un maître de langues.	*A teacher of languages.*
Un marchand de drap.	*A draper, or dealer in cloth.*

(13.) The name of a vehicle, boat, mill, etc. always precedes the noun representing the power by which it is impelled, or the purpose to which it is adapted. The connecting preposition is generally *à*:

Un moulin à vent.	*A wind-mill.*
Un moulin à farine.	*A grist-mill.*
Des moulins à eau.	*Water-mills.*
Une voiture à vapeur.	*A steam carriage.*
Un bateau à vapeur.	*A steamboat.*
Une voiture à deux chevaux.	*A two horse carriage.*

(14.) The name of an object precedes the noun representing its particular produce, use, or appendages, etc.; *à* generally connects these nouns:

Le goût du fruit de *l'arbre à pain* ressemble celui de l'artichaut. BERNARDIN DE ST. PIERRE.	*The taste of the fruit of the bread-tree resembles that of the artichoke.*
Le nom de vertu, dans la bouche de certaines personnes, fait tressaillir, comme le grelot du *serpent à sonnettes.* MME. NECKER.	*The name of virtue, in the mouth of certain persons, makes one shudder, like the noise of a rattle-snake.*
Les *bêtes à cornes* ne sont pas si nombreuses que les *bêtes à laine.*	*Horned animals (neat cattle) are not so numerous as sheep (wool animals).*
La salle à manger.	*The dining room.*
Du bois à brûler.	*Fire wood.*
Un verre à eau.	*A water glass*, i. e., *glass for water.*

See § 81, (2.)

§ 77.—THE ARTICLE.—USE OF THE ARTICLE.

(1.) The article[1] must be used in French before every noun employed in a general sense, or denoting a whole species of objects, although in similar cases the article is not used in English. Ex:

[1] The student will recollect that the French have only one article, *le*. The word *un* being, by modern French grammarians, very properly classed with the numeral adjectives.

Les bienfaits peuvent tout sur une âme bien née. VOLTAIRE.
Benefits are all powerful with a well disposed mind.

*L'*honneur, aux grands cœurs, est plus cher que *la* vie. CORNEILLE.
Honor is, with magnanimous hearts, more precious than life.

La honte suit toujours un lâche désespoir. CRÉBILLON.
Shame always follows a cowardly despair.

(2.) The article is used in French, as in English, before a noun denoting a particular object, or taken in a particular sense:

Le bonheur des méchants comme un torrent s'écoule. RACINE.
The happiness of the wicked runs away like a torrent.

*L'*arbrisseau le plus sain a besoin de culture. FABRE D'ÉGLANTINE.
The healthiest shrub needs cultivation.

Le moment du péril est celui du courage. LA HARPE.
The time of peril is the time for courage.

(3.) The article is used before the names of countries, provinces, rivers, winds and mountains:

La France est bornée *au* midi par *les* Pyrénées et *la* Méditerranée; *à l'*est par *la* Suisse et *la* Savoie; *au* nord par *la* Belgique, et à *l'*ouest par *l'*Océan. Ses principales rivières sont *la* Meuse, *le* Rhin, *la* Seine, *la* Loire, *la* Garonne et *le* Rhône.

France is bounded on the south by the Pyrenees and the Mediterranean; on the east by Switzerland and Savoy; on the north by Belgium, and on the west by the Ocean. Its principal rivers are the Meuse, the Rhine, the Seine, the Loire, the Garonne and the Rhone.

(4.) Those countries which take their name from their capital, or some other city within their boundaries, take no article:

Naples est un pays délicieux.
Naples is a delightful country.

Vénise était un état puissant.
Venice was a powerful state.

New-York est un état sain.
New York is a healthy state.

(5.) The French use the article before titles prefixed to names:

Le général Cavaignac.
General Cavaignac;

Le président Bonaparte.
President Bonaparte.

(6.) The article is also used before the names of dignities, of certain bodies, systems of doctrine, and with other words mentioned below:

La monarchie,	*monarchy;*	A l'école,	*at school;*
Le parlement,	*parliament;*	Au collége,	*at college;*
Le gouvernement,	*government;*	Au marché,	*at, to market;*
Le christianisme,	*Christianity;*	Au lit,	*in bed;*
L'épiscopat,	*episcopacy;*	&c.	&c.
A l'église,	*at church;*		

(7.) Before the names of the seasons, and the following expressions:

L'année prochaine,	*next year;*	L'automne dernier,	*last fall;*
L'année dernière,	*last year;*	La semaine dernière,	*last week;*
Le printemps prochain,	*next spring;*	&c.	&c.

(8.) The names of several cities take the article. Those nouns have generally a meaning, and indicate often natural objects:

Le Havre,	*Havre;*	La Rochelle,	*Rochelle;*
La Haie,	*The Hague;*	Le Détroit,	*Detroit;*

(9.) In speaking of the parts of the body, or of the qualities of the mind, the French use the article in cases where the English use a possessive adjective, or the indefinite article:

Votre frère a *les* chevaux noirs.	*Your brother has black hair.*
Il s'est blessé à *la* main.	*He has hurt his hand.*
Charles a *la* mémoire excellente.	*Charles has an excellent memory.*

§ 78.—Use of the Article before Words taken in a Partitive Sense.

(1.) A word, when used to denote an entire object or class of objects, is said to have a *general* sense; when, however, it is employed to indicate a *part* of any thing or class of things, considered in reference to the *whole*, it is said to have a *partitive* sense. Before a word taken partitively, the word *some* or *any*, is, or may, in English, often be employed. If, for example, I use the words *courage* and *wood*, abstractedly, I take them in the *general* sense; but if I say, *give me wood; your brother has courage*, I use them in the *partitive* sense, that is, I ask for a *part* of that substance called *wood*, and attribute to your brother something of that quality called *courage*.

(2.) The article accompanied by, or in combination with the preposition *de*, called by some grammarians the *partitive article* [§ 13, (10.)] is used before nouns taken in a partitive sense

Du pain et *de* l'eau lui suffisent.	*Bread and water are sufficient for him;* that is, *some bread.*
Apportez-nous *du* sel et *du* vinaigre.	*Bring us salt and vinegar;* that is, *some salt.*
Toujours la patrie a *des* charmes pour moi. LA HARPE.	*My native land has always (some) charms for me.*

(3.) The preposition *de* only, is used when the noun taken in a partitive sense, is preceded by an adjective:

Il possède *de* belles maisons.	*He possesses fine houses.*
Proposons-nous à nous-mêmes *de* grands exemples à imiter, plutôt que *de* vains systèmes à suivre. J. J. ROUSSEAU.	*Let us propose to ourselves rather to imitate great examples, than to follow vain systems.*

(14.) When, however, the noun preceded by the adjective, is connected with it, and the two form a compound noun, that noun takes the article according to rule (2.), as,

Des jeunes gens; *des* grands hommes.	*Young people; great men (some.)*

Heureux, si de son temps, pour de bonnes raisons,
La Macédoine eût eu *des* petites-maisons! . . BOILEAU.

Fortunate would it have been, if, in his time, (Alexander's) Macedon had had lunatic asylums.

(5.) The preposition alone is used before a noun, when it is preceded by a collective word or by an adverb of quantity:

Une multitude *de* peuples.
Beaucoup *de* personnes.
A quoi bon tant *d'*amis?
Un seul nous suffit s'il nous aime. FLORIAN.

A multitude of nations.
Many persons.
Of what use are so many friends?
A single one suffices if he loves us.

(6.) The article, however, is used, when the noun preceded by a collective word, is limited by what follows. The words, la plupart, *the most;* bien, *many;* and infiniment, *infinitely*, form also exceptions to the preceding rule:

Un grand nombre *des* personnes que j'ai vues. NOËL.
Il me reste peu, *des* livres qui m'ont été donnés. NOËL.
Les méchants ont bien *de la* peine à demeurer unis. FÉNELON.

Many of the persons whom I have seen.
I have few left, of the books which have been given me.
The wicked have much trouble to remain united.

(7.) The preposition is used alone before a noun placed after a verb conjugated negatively, but not interrogatively at the same time:

Je ne vous ferai pas *de* reproches.
L'on ne dit jamais que l'on n'a point *d'*esprit. BOURSAULT.
On ne fait jamais *de* bien à Dieu, en faisant du mal aux hommes. VOLTAIRE.

I shall cast upon you no reproaches.
We never say, that we have no wit.
We never can do good in respect to God, by doing evil to men.

(8.) The commencement of rule (6.) will also apply to this sentence:

Ne donnez jamais *des* conseils qu'il soit dangereux de suivre. GIRAULT-DUVIVIER.

Never give advice which is dangerous to follow.

§ 79.—ENGLISH INDEFINITE ARTICLE A OR AN.

The French numeral adjective, un, *masc.* une, *fem.* answers to the English article *a* or *an* [§ 13, (4.) (11.)].

The restrictions to its use are specified in the remarks on the article.

§ 80.—REPETITION OF THE ARTICLE.

(1.) GENERAL RULE. The article[1] is repeated before every noun and every word used as a noun, having a separate meaning:

[1] This rule applies to the determinative adjectives, *mon, ton, son, ce, cet*, etc.

Le cœur, l'esprit, *les* mœurs, tout gagne à la culture.	*The heart, the mind, the manners, every thing improves by cultivation.*
Le père et *la* mère semblaient exciter leur petite compagne à s'en repaître la première. BUFFON.	*The father and mother seemed to excite their little companion to feed upon it first.*

(2.) The article will, therefore, be repeated, when one of two adjectives, united by the conjunction *et*, qualifies a noun expressed, and the other a noun understood:

*L'*histoire ancienne et *la* moderne.	*Ancient and modern history.*

that is, l'histoire ancienne et l'histoire moderne.

Les philosophes anciens et *les* modernes.	*Ancient and modern philosophers.*
Le premier et *le* second étages.	*The first and second stories.*

(3.) Should, however, the two adjectives qualify the same expressed word, the article must not be repeated.

Le sage et pieux Fénelon a des droits bien acquis à l'estime générale. GIRAULT-DUVIVIER.	*The wise and pious Fenelon has well established rights to general esteem.*
A ces mots il lui tend *le* doux et tendre ouvrage. BOILEAU.	*At these words he presents to him the sweet and tender book.*

(4.) When two nouns are joined by the conjunction *ou*, and the second is merely a repetition or explanation of the first, the article should not be repeated.

Les joues *ou* côtés de la tête du condor, sont couvertes d'un duvet noir. BUFFON.	*The cheeks or sides of the head of the condor, are covered with black down.*
On distinguait parmi les nobles *les* palatins ou gouverneurs des provinces. J. J. ROUSSEAU.	*They distinguished among the nobles the palatines or governors of provinces.*

§ 81.—MISCELLANEOUS REMARKS ON THE USE OF THE ARTICLE.

(1.) The article is not used before numbers placed after the names of sovereigns, to designate their order of succession [§ 26, (3.)].

Louis *dix-huit*, Charles *dix*.	*Louis the eighteenth, Charles the tenth.*

(2.) The French put no article before nouns placed in apposition with, or explanatory of, other preceding nouns:

Louis treize, *fils* de Henri quatre, fut bien différent de son père.	*Louis the thirteenth, the son of Henry the fourth, was very different from his father.*
Le Tartufe, comédie de Molière.	*The Tartufe, a comedy of Molière.*
Lamartine, célèbre poète et prosateur français.	*Lamartine, a celebrated French poet and prose writer.*
Je suis français, vous êtes américain.	*I am a Frenchman, you are an American.*

(3.) If the explanatory word be itself qualified or restricted by other words, the *un* is then placed before it:

Cet homme est *un* Français, d'une famille illustre, mais malheureuse.	*That man is a Frenchman, of an illustrious, but unfortunate family.*
Ces messieurs sont *des* marchands de Lyon.	*Those gentlemen are merchants from Lyons.*

(4.) Under the second rule of this Section may also be placed the words mentioned in § 76, Rules (11.) (12.) (13.) and (14.):

une montre d'or,	*a gold watch;*
un maître de dessin,	*a drawing-master;*
un moulin à vapeur,	*a steam mill;*
une chambre à coucher,	*a bed-room.*

(5.) Some exceptions to rule (2.) will be better explained by examples than by precepts:

un magasin *à* foin,	*a hay loft;*
une bouteille *à* vin,	*a wine bottle.*

are *a loft intended for hay, a bottle intended for wine*, but not actually *containing* hay or wine.

un magasin *au* foin,	*a hay-loft;*
la bouteille *au* vin,	*the wine-bottle.*

That is, *the loft actually used for hay, the bottle now used for wine.*

un magasin *de* foin,	*a loft* } *full of* { *hay;*
une bouteille *de* vin,	*a bottle* } { *wine;*

(6.) Proper names of persons do not receive the article, unless it forms a part of the name; as, *Lebrun, Lamartine, La Harpe, La Fontaine;* as also in some gallicised Italian names; as *Le Tasse*, Tasso, *Le Dante*, Dante, etc. An adjective, however, coming before proper names, is generally preceded by the article.

Le bon et naïf La Fontaine.	*The good and candid La Fontaine.*
Le pieux Fénelon.	*The pious Fenelon.*

(7.) It has been seen [§ 12, (1.) Examples] that the plural article is often placed in elevated style before the names of renowned individuals:

Nous avons vu à la fois, à la tête des escadrons impériaux, *les* Murat, *les* Kellermann, *les* Lassalle, *les* Montorun. LE GÉNÉRAL FOY.	*We have seen at once, at the head of the imperial squadrons, Murat, Kellerman, Lassalle, Montorun.*

(8.) Names of kingdoms and provinces, when preceded by the preposition *en*, take no article:

En France, en Amérique.	*In France, in America.*

(9.) No article is placed after *en* preceding a noun used indeterminately, or after the word *ni* standing before a noun, which is the direct regimen of a verb, preceding the negative:

Nous irons en voiture.	*We shall go in a carriage.*
Vous êtes en peine.	*You are in trouble.*
Nous n'avons ni or ni argent.	*We have neither gold nor silver.*

(10.) The article is omitted before *plus* and *moins* in comparative sentences, where, in English, it would, in the corresponding place, be inserted:

Plus une action est utile, plus elle est louable.	*The more useful an action is, the more praiseworthy it is.*

(11.) The article precedes *plus* and *moins* to express *comparison* in the highest degree, and agrees in gender with the noun:

Votre sœur ne pleurait pas, quoiqu'elle fût *la* plus affligée de toutes ces dames.	*Your sister did not weep, although she was the most grieved of all those ladies.*

(12.) The article remains invariable when it stands before a superlative, in which, however, no direct comparison is intended:

Votre sœur ne pleure pas, lors même qu'elle est le plus affligée.	*Your sister does not weep, even when she is most grieved.*

NOËL.

(19.) To give more force to the diction, the article is often omitted in a rapid enumeration of individuals:

Citoyens, étrangers, amis, ennemis, tous le révèrent.	*Citizens, strangers, friends, enemies, all reverence him.*

§ 82.—IDIOMS IN WHICH THE ARTICLE IS OMITTED.

Ajouter foi,	*to give faith;*	Demander pardon,	*to beg pardon;*
Avoir besoin,	*to have need;*	Donner avis, / Faire part,	*to inform;*
Avoir chaud,	*to be warm;*	Entendre raillerie,[1]	*to bear jokes;*
Avoir coutume,	*to be accustomed;*	Faire attention,	*to pay attention;*
Avoir dessein,	*to intend;*	Faire bonne chère,	*to live well;*
Avoir dispute,	*to have difficulties;*	Faire crédit,	*to give credit;*
Avoir envie,	*to wish, to desire;*	Faire envie,	*to excite envy;*
Avoir appétit,	*to have an appetite;*	Faire honneur,	*to honor;*
Avoir faim,	*to be hungry;*	Faire horreur,	*to inspire horror;*
Avoir froid,	*to be cold;*	Faire peur,	*to frighten;*
Avoir honte,	*to be ashamed;*	Faire mention,	*to mention;*
Avoir mal,	*to have pain;*	Faire naufrage,	*to suffer shipwreck;*
Avoir patience,	*to have patience;*	Faire place,	*to make room;*
Avoir peur,	*to be afraid;*	Faire plaisir,	*to oblige;*
Avoir pitié,	*to take pity;*	Faire présent,	*to present;*
Avoir raison,	*to be right;*	Faire réflexion,	*to reflect;*
Avoir sommeil,	*to be sleepy;*	Faire tort,	*to injure;*
Avoir soif,	*to be thirsty;*	Mettre fin,	*to put an end;*
Avoir soin,	*to take care;*	Mettre ordre,	*to arrange;*
Avoir sujet,	*to have reason;*	Perdre courage,	*to lose courage;*
Avoir tort,	*to be wrong;*	Porter envie,	*to envy;*
Chercher fortune,	*to seek one's fortune;*	Porter malheur,	*to cause misfortune;*
Courir risque,	*to run the risk;*	Prendre congé,	*to take leave;*
Demander justice,	*to demand justice;*		

[1] Entendre *la* raillerie, is also said, but it means *to understand joking.*

Prendre feu,	*to catch fire;*
Prendre garde,	*to take care;*
Prendre haleine,	*to take breath;*
Prendre médecine,	*to take medicine;*
Prendre racine,	*to take root;*
Rendre compte,	*to account;*
Rendre justice,	*to render justice;*
Rendre service,	*to oblige;*
Rendre visite,	*to visit;*
Tenir compagnie,	*to accompany;*
Tenir lieu,	*to take place;*
Tenir parole,	*to keep one's word;*
Trouver moyen,	*to find means;*
Avec ardeur, etc.,	*with ardor;*
Par dépit, etc.,	*through spite;*
Pour récompense, etc.,	*as a reward;*
Sans peine,	*without difficulty;*
Sans souci,	*without sorrow, without care.*

§ 83.—The Adjective.

(4.) We have seen [§ 18, Rule (3.)] that an adjective, relating to two substantives of the same gender, must agree with them in gender, and be put in the plural;

(2.) And Rule (4.) that an adjective, relating to two or more nouns of different genders, must be put in the masculine plural.

(3.) When, however, nouns, united or not by the conjunction *et*, are somewhat synonymous; when the writer wishes actually to qualify only the last; or when the mind, more particularly occupied with the last noun, seems to forget the others, the adjective will assume the gender and number of the last noun only.

Toute sa vie n'a été qu'un travail, qu'une occupation *continuelle*. MASSILLON.

His whole life has been nothing but continual labor and occupation.

Je ne connais point de roman, point de comédie *espagnole*, sans combats. FLORIAN.

I know no romance, no Spanish comedy, without combats.

Le fer, le bandeau, la flamme est *toute prête*. RACINE.

The sword, the band, the flame is all ready.

(4.) Sometimes the adjective, preceded by two or more substantives joined by the conjunction *et*, qualifies the last only. It must then, of course, agree with that noun only.

Le bon goût des Égyptiens leur fit aimer la solidité et la régularité toute nue. BOSSUET.

The good taste of the Egyptians made them like solidity and unadorned regularity.

Le sourire est une marque de bienveillance, d'applaudissement, et de satisfaction *intérieure*. BUFFON.

The smile is a mark of good-will, of applause, and of inward satisfaction.

§ 84.—Remarks on the Peculiarities of several Adjectives.

(1.) The adjective feu (*late, deceased*), is invariable, when placed before the article or adjective determining a noun, but varies when placed after the determining word:

J'ai ouï dire à *feu* ma sœur, que sa fille et moi naquîmes la même année. MONTESQUIEU.

I have heard my late sister say, that her daughter and I were born the same year.

Le duc de . . . doit à la bienveillance dont l'honorait la *feue* reine, les bonnes grâces de l'empereur. DE SALVANDY.

The duke of . . . owes to the goodwill of the late queen towards him, the good graces of the emperor.

(2.) The adjectives nu, *bare*, and demi, *half*, are invariable when placed before the noun, and are connected with it by a hyphen:

Il était *nu*-tête; les pieds chaussés de petites sandales. VOLTAIRE.

He was bare-headed; he wore on his feet small sandals.

Une *demi*-heure après avoir quitté le vaisseau, je foulai le sol américain. CHATEAUBRIAND.

Half an hour after having left the ship, I trod the American soil.

(3.) The adjectives *nu* and *demi*, when coming after the noun agree with it:

Accoutumez vos enfants à demeurer été et hiver, jour et nuit toujours tête *nue*. J. J. ROUSSEAU.

Accustom your children to remain summer and winter, day and night, always bare-headed.

Opimius paya la tête de Caius Gracchus, dix-sept livres et *demie* d'or. VERTOT.

Opimius paid for the head of Caius Gracchus, seventeen pounds and a half of gold.

(4.) The adjectives excepté, *except*; passé, *past*; y-compris, *including*; ci-joint, ci-inclus, *annexed, inclosed*; franc de port, *postage free*; come under the two last rules:

Vous trouverez *ci-joint* la copie de la lettre que M. . . m'a écrite. J. J. ROUSSEAU.

You will find annexed the copy of the letter which M. . . has written to me.

Le dessin de cet oiseau m'a été envoyé d'Angleterre, avec la description *ci-jointe*. BUFFON.

The drawing of that bird came to me from England, with the description here annexed.

Vous trouverez *ci-inclus*, copie de ma lettre. DOMERGUES.

You will find inclosed a copy of my letter.

Je vous recommande les cinq lettres *ci-incluses*. BERNARDIN DE ST. PIERRE.

I recommend to you the five letters inclosed.

J'ai reçu, *franc* de port, une lettre anonyme. J. J. ROUSSEAU.

I received, postage free, an anonymous letter.

Le Contrat social est imprimé, et vous en recevrez douze exemplaires, *francs* de port. THE SAME.

The Social Contract is printed, and you will receive twelve copies free of postage.

(5.) An adjective used adverbially, that is, modifying a verb, is of course invariable [§ 67, (3.)]:

En Laponie, une peau d'hermine coûte quatre ou cinq sous; la chair de cet animal sent très *mauvais*. REGNARD.

In Lapland the skin of the ermine costs four or five sous; the flesh of this animal smells very bad.

De ma vie je n'ai entendu des voix de femme monter si *haut*. Mme. DE SÉVIGNÉ.

Never in my life have I heard women's voices sound so loud.

§ 85.—Place of the Qualifying Adjective.

(1.) No invariable rule can be given for the place of the adjective in French, although it *follows* the noun much more frequently than it precedes it.

(2.) The adjectives which are generally placed after the noun are:

1. All participles present and past, used adjectively:

une personne *reconnaissante*,	*a grateful person;*
une histoire *amusante*,	*an amusing history;*
un enfant *chéri*,	*a beloved child;*
de la viande *rôtie*,	*roast meat;*

2. All adjectives expressing the form, the shape:

une table *ronde*,	*a round table;*
une chambre *carrée*,	*a square room;*

(3.) Adjectives explaining the matter of which an object is composed:

acide *sulfurique*,	*sulphuric acid;*
corps *aërien*,	*aerial body;*

(4.) Those expressing color, taste, or relating to hearing and touching:

un habit *noir*,	*a black coat;*
du fruit *amer*,	*bitter fruit;*
des sons *harmonieux*,	*harmonious sounds;*
de la cire *molle*,	*soft wax;*

(5.) Adjectives which may be used substantively:

un homme riche,	*a rich man;*
une femme aveugle,	*a blind woman;*

(6.) Adjectives representing nation:[1]

un grammaire française,	*a French grammar;*
un dictionnaire allemand,	*a German dictionary;*

(7.) Adjectives expressing the defects of the body and mind:

un homme boiteux,	*a lame man;*
un esprit aliéné,	*an unsound mind;*

(8.) Almost all adjectives ending in *al*, *able*, *ible*, *ique*, and *if*.

un homme libéral,	*a liberal man;*
une nation paisible,	*a peaceful nation;*
un esprit fanatique,	*a fanatical spirit;*
un soldat fugitif,	*a fugitive soldier.*

(9.) It must not be inferred from the rules above that the adjective always comes after the noun. The deviations are quite frequent;

[1] The French often use the name of the country instead of the adjective of nation; particularly when speaking of the produce of the country:

De la laine *d'Espagne*,	*Spanish wool.*
Du fromage *d'Angleterre*,	*English cheese.*

and often no other reason than taste can be assigned for them. We give a few examples, in which the same adjective is, by different authors, placed before and after the noun:

Before the Noun.	*After the Noun.*
Jamais nous ne goûtons de *parfaite* allégresse. CORNEILLE.	Qu'a-t-il dit, qu'a-t-il fait? Qui ne promette à Rome un empereur *parfait.* RACINE.
We never enjoy perfect (unalloyed) pleasure.	*What has he said, what has he done which does not promise to Rome a perfect emperor?*
Il fallut réveiller d'un *profond* sommeil cet autre Alexandre. BOSSUET.	Dans un sommeil *profond* ils ont passé leur vie. BOILEAU.
It was necessary to rouse from a profound sleep that second Alexander.	*They spent their life in a profound sleep.*
Craignez, d'un vain plaisir les *trompeuses* amorces. BOILEAU.	Le monde est une figure *trompeuse* qui passe. BUFFON.
Fear the deceitful allurements of a vain pleasure.	*The world is a deceitful picture, which passes before us.*

(10.) We find, however, in our best writers, few examples of a long adjective placed before a short noun, although they often place the adjective before the noun to give variety or force to the diction; they never, for instance, would say (in prose) d'imaginaires lois, for des lois imaginaires, *imaginary laws.*

(11.) The following adjectives when used in a literal sense, generally precede the noun. See § 144, Note:

Beau,	*fine, handsome;*	*Mauvais,	*bad;*
*Bon,	*good;*	*Méchant,	*wicked;*
*Brave,	*brave;*	Meilleur,	*better;*
*Cher,	*dear (loved);*	Moindre,	*less;*
Chétif,	*mean;*	*Petit,	*small;*
*Grand,	*tall;*	Saint,	*holy;*
Gros,	*large;*	Vieux,	*old;*
*Jeune,	*young;*	*Vrai,	*true, real.*
Joli,	*pretty;*		

Those marked with an asterisk are included in the following table.

§ 86.—LIST OF ADJECTIVES HAVING A DIFFERENT MEANING, ACCORDING AS THEY PRECEDE OR FOLLOW THE NOUN.

Un bon homme, *a simple, artless man;*	Un homme bon, *a good, benevolent man* (un homme de bien);
Un brave homme, *a worthy man;*	Un homme brave, *a brave man;*
Une certaine histoire, *a certain story;*	Une histoire certaine, *a reliable story;*
Un cher enfant, *a dear child;*	Une robe chère, *an expensive dress;*
Une commune voix, *a unanimous voice;*	Une voix commune, *an ordinary voice;*

Un cruel homme, *a tiresome man;*	Un homme cruel, *a cruel man;*
La dernière année, *the last year (of a series);*	L'année dernière, *last year;*
Une fausse clef, *a false key; an imitation key;*	Une clef fausse, *a key belonging to another lock, (the wrong key);*
Un furieux menteur, *an excessive liar;*	Un lion furieux, *a furious lion;*
Un galant homme, *a gentleman;*	Un homme galant, *a man attentive to the ladies;*
Un grand homme, *a great man;*	Un homme grand, *a tall man;*
Le grand air, *the air of good society;*	L'air grand, *a noble appearance;*
Le haut ton, *a haughty tone;*	Le ton haut, *a loud tone;*
Un honnête homme, *an honest man;*	Un homme honnête, *a polite man;*
Le jeune Pline, *young Pliny;*	Pline le jeune, *Pliny the younger;*
Un malhonnête homme, *a dishonest man;*	Un homme malhonnête, *an impolite man;*
Mauvais air, *awkward appearance;*	L'air mauvais, *malicious appearance;*
Un méchant livre, *a poor book;*	Un livre méchant, *a biting, caustic book;*
Morte eau, *lowest tides;*	Eau morte, *stagnant water;*
Un nouveau livre, *a new book (another book);*	Un livre nouveau, *a book recently published;*
Un pauvre historien, *a wretched historian;*	Un historien pauvre, *a historian without pecuniary means;*
Un plaisant homme, *a ridiculous man;*	Un homme plaisant, *an agreeable man;*
Un petit homme, *a man of small size;*	Un homme petit, *a mean man;*
Mes propres mains, *my own hands;*	Mes mains propres, *my clean hands;*
Un seul enfant, *a single child;*	Un enfant seul, *a child alone;*
Un simple soldat, *a private soldier;*	Un soldat simple, *a foolish soldier;*
Un triste homme, *a pitiful man;*	Un homme triste, *a sorrowful man;*
Un unique tableau, *a single picture;*	Un tableau unique, *a matchless picture;*
Un vilain homme, *an ugly, unpleasant man;*	Un homme vilain, *a sordid, miserly man;*
Une vraie histoire, *a mere story;*	Une histoire vraie, *a true history.*

§ 87.—Regimen of Adjectives.

(1.) The regimen or complement of adjectives is a noun or a verb completing or defining their sense. Between the noun and the adjective comes one of the prepositions, à, de, dans, en, sur, etc:

Cet homme est digne *de louange.*	*This man is worthy of praise.*
Ce général est digne *de commander.*	*That general is worthy to command.*

In the first phrase, *louange;* in the second, *commander*, is the regimen of the adjective *digne.*

(2.) The regimen is not always necessary to the adjective. It is added to it only to give it a particular limitation:

Without a regimen.	*With a regimen.*
Cet homme n'est pas content.	Cet homme n'est pas content *de* son fils.
That man is not pleased.	*That man is not pleased with his son.*

(3.) As may be seen in the last sentence, an adjective is not always, in French, followed by the same preposition as the corresponding adjective in English. Thus, after the adjective *content*, the French use the preposition *de* (*of*), while after its English representative (*pleased*), the preposition *with* must be employed. M. Bescherelle and several other French grammarians, while acknowledging the difficulty, give us the consoling assurance, that "L'usage et les dictionnaires les feront connaître" (*use and dictionaries will make us acquainted with them*); that is, with the prepositions required after the adjectives. As the student will scarcely be *satisfait de cela*, we give a rule or two on this difficult subject, and add lists of adjectives with their proper accompanying prepositions.

(4.) When an adjective follows the verb *être*, used unipersonally, the preposition *de* is placed after that adjective, and before the verb following:

Il est doux *de* mourir pour son pays.	*It is sweet to die for one's country.*
Il est plus aisé *d'*être sage pour les autres que pour soi-même.	*It is easier to be wise for another than for one's self.*
LA ROCHEFOUCAULD.	
Il est plus glorieux *de* se vaincre soi-même, que de vaincre les autres.	*It is more glorious to conquer one's self, than to conquer others.*
SCUDÉRY.	

(5.) It should be recollected, that it is only when the verb *être* is unipersonal, that it thus seems to influence the choice of the preposition. In other cases, the adjective must be followed by the preposition proper to it. See § 88, 89, 90, 91, 92, below.

Cela est doux *au* toucher.	*That is soft to the touch.*
Cela n'est pas aisé *à* faire.	*That is not easy to be done (easily done.)*

§ 88.—LIST OF ADJECTIVES REQUIRING THE PREPOSITION DE.

Absent de,	*absent (from)*	Exempt de,	*exempt from*
Ambitieux de,	*ambitious of*	Fâché de,	*sorry for*
Amoureux de,	*in love with*	Fatigué de,	*tired with, of*
Avide de,	*eager for*	Fier de,	*proud of*
Approchant de,	*approaching, near*	Fort de,	*confident in*
Capable de,	*capable of,*	Fou de,	*excessively fond of*
Chéri de,	*beloved by*	Glorieux de,	*proud of*
Complice de,	*accomplice in*	Honteux de,	*ashamed of*
Content de,	*pleased with*	Impatient de,	*impatient of*
Curieux de,	*curious to*	Incapable de,	*incapable of*
Désireux de,	*desirous to, of*	Inconsolable de,	*inconsolable for*
Dédaigneux de,	*disdaining to*	Indigne de,	*unworthy of*
Désolé de,	*grieved with*	Indigné de,	*indignant with*
Différent de,	*different from*	Inquiet de,	*uneasy about*
Digne de,	*worthy of, to*	Ivre de,	*intoxicated with*
Envieux de,	*envious of*	Las de,	*weary of*
Éloigné de,	*remote, far from*	Mécontent de,	*displeased with*
Esclave de,	*a slave to*	Parent de,	*related to*

Plein de,	*full of*
Ravi de,	*glad to, of*
Rassasié de,	*satiated with*
Reconnaissant de,	*grateful for*
Rempli de,	*filled with*
Redevable de,	*indebted for*
Soigneux de,	*careful of, to*
Sûr de,	*sure of*
Surpris de,	*surprised of*
Tributaire de,	*tributary to*
Victime de,	*victim to, of*
Vide de,	*void of*

Qui vit *content de* rien, possède toute chose. BOILEAU.

He who lives content with a little, possesses all.

Il n'est pas de Romain,
Qui ne soit *désireux de* vous donner la main. CORNEILLE.

There is no Roman that is not desirous to reach you his hand.

§ 89.—LIST OF ADJECTIVES REQUIRING THE PREPOSITION A.

Accessible à,	*accessible to*
Accoutumé à,	*accustomed to*
Adhérent à,	*adhering to*
Agréable à,	*agreeable to*
Ajusté à,	*fitted to*
Antérieur à,	*prior to*
Aisé à,	*easy to*
Ardent à,	*zealous for*
Assidu à,	*assiduous to*
Attentif à,	*attentive to*
Bon à,	*good for, fit for*
Cher à,	*dear to*
Conforme à,	*similar to*
Contraire à,	*contrary to*
Cruel à,	*cruel towards*
Difficile à,	*difficult to*
Enclin à,	*prone to*
Étranger à,	*a stranger to*
Exact à,	*exact in*
Facile à,	*easy to*
Favorable à,	*favorable to*
Formidable à,	*formidable to*
Fatal à,	*fatal to*
Importun à,	*importunate to*
Impénétrable à,	*impenetrable to*
Indispensable à,	*indispensable to*
Intéressé à,	*interested in*
Invisible à,	*invisible to*
Insensible à,	*insensible to*
Naturel à,	*natural to*
Nécessaire à,	*necessary to*
Nuisible à,	*hurtful to*
Odieux à,	*odious to*
Postérieur à,	*posterior to*
Préférable à,	*preferable to*
Propice à,	*propitious to*
Propre à,	*fit for*
Rebelle à,	*rebellious towards*
Redoutable à,	*formidable to*
Semblable à,	*similar to*
Sujet à,	*subject to*

L'ignorance toujours est *prête à* s'admirer. BOILEAU.

Ignorance is always ready to admire itself.

Insensible à la vie, *insensible à* la mort,
Il ne sait quand il veille, il ne sait quand il dort. RACINE.

Insensible to life, insensible to death, he does not know when he is awake, or when he sleeps.

§ 90.—ADJECTIVES REQUIRING A DIFFERENT PREPOSITION IN FRENCH AND IN ENGLISH, NOT INCLUDED IN THE ABOVE LIST, WITH THE FOLLOWING SIGNIFICATION.

Bon pour,	*kind towards, devoted to*
Célèbre pour, par,	*celebrated for*
Civil envers,	*polite to*
Ignorant en,	*not versed in*
Indulgent pour,	*indulgent towards*
Insolent avec,	*insolent to*
Poli envers,	*polite to*

Quand on est bon *pour* tout le monde, on ne l'est *pour* personne. C. DELAVIGNE.

When one is devoted to every body one is so towards nobody.

Il fut célèbre *par* sa doctrine, autant que *par* sa naissance. BOSSUET.

He was celebrated for his doctrine, as well as for his birth.

§ 91.—Remark.

It must not be forgotten, that when the verb *être* is used unipersonally before the adjectives contained in the two preceding sections, these adjectives become subject to rule (4.) § 87.

Il est indispensable d'étudier beaucoup, pour devenir savant.	*It is indispensable to study much, to become learned.*

§ 92.—Important Rules.

(1.) A noun may be followed by two or more adjectives, having one and the same regimen, provided these adjectives require the same prepositions after them; thus we may say:

Ce père est utile et cher à sa famille. GIRAULT-DUVIVIER.	*That father is useful and dear to his family.*
La religion est nécessaire et naturelle à l'homme. ANONYMOUS.	*Religion is necessary and natural to man.*

These two sentences are correct, because the adjectives, *utile*, and *cher*, in the first, and *nécessaire* and *naturel*, in the second, require the same preposition, *à*.

(2.) We could not in the first of these two sentences, substitute the adjective *chéri* (beloved) for the word *cher*, and say as in English, *That father is useful* TO, *and beloved* BY *his family*. Such a construction in French, *is never admissible*. We must say, *That father is useful to his family, and is beloved by them;* because the adjective *chéri*, requires the preposition *de*, or its substitute, the relative pronoun *en* [§ 39, (17.)].[1] Ce père est utile à sa famille et en est chéri, *i. e., est chéri d'elle.*

§ 93.—Determining Adjectives.—Demonstrative Adjectives.

The demonstrative adjective, which must not be confounded with the demonstrative pronoun [§ 36.], always precedes the noun, and must be repeated before every substantive. It assumes the gender and number of the word which it determines [§ 20, (1.)]:

Cet air pur, *ces* gazons, *cette* voûte mobile;	*That pure air, that turf, that changing arch;*
Ici tout plaît au cœur, tout enchante les yeux. CASTEL.	*here every thing pleases the heart, and charms the eyes.*

[1] The rule, with regard to the regimen of verbs is equally imperative. We could not say in French, as in English, *Every week I write letters* TO, *and receive letters* FROM *my brother*. We must say, *Every week, I write letters to my brother, and receive some from him.* Toutes les semaines, j'écris des lettres à mon frère, et j'en reçois de lui.

§ 94.—Agreement, Repetition, and Place of the Possessive Adjective.

We have said [§ 21, (2.)] that the possessive adjective assumes the gender and number of the object possessed, and (4.) that it must be repeated before every noun. The place of the possessive adjective is the same in French, as in English, that is, before the noun. These adjectives must not be confounded with the possessive pronouns [§ 34, (2.)]:

Mon père, *ma* mère, et *mes* sœurs sont arrivés. — *My father, mother, and sisters have arrived.*

§ 95.—Remarks.

(1.) It has been said [§ 77, (9.)] that the French use the article instead of the possessive adjective, when alluding to the parts of the body. This, however, must only take place where the possession is otherwise sufficiently explained. We must say, for instance:

J'ai mal à *la* tête. — *My head aches (I have a pain in the head).*

Charles s'est cassé *le* bras. — *Charles has broken his arm.*

because the possession is sufficiently explained by the pronouns *je*, in the first sentence, and *se* in the second. But, we must say,

Je vois que *mon* bras s'enfle, — *I see that my arm swells.*

because without the *mon*, the possession of the arm would not be indicated.

(2.) The English expressions, *a book of mine, a cousin of his*, cannot be translated literally into French. We must say, un de mes amis, *one of my friends;* un de ses cousins, *one of his cousins.*

Cinna et Carbon, *un de ses lieutenants*, se campèrent sur les bords du Tibre. Vertot. — *Cinna and Carbo, a lieutenant of his, encamped on the banks of the Tiber.*

(3.) In familiar or jocose style, we sometimes use the possessive pronoun, *mien, tien, sien*, without the article, to express the same relation:

A travers d'un *mien* pré, certain âne passa. Racine. — *Through a meadow of mine, a young ass passed.*

Un *mien* cousin est juge-maire. La Fontaine. — *A cousin of mine is judge and mayor.*

(4.) When the possessor is an inanimate object, the adjectives *son, sa, ses, leurs*, should be placed before the object possessed only when the possessor is the subject of the same proposition:

La campagne a *ses* agréments. — *The country has its pleasures.*

Ces langues ont *leurs* beautés. — *Those languages have their beauties.*

(5.) When the (*inanimate*) possessor is not the subject of the proposition, in which the possession is expressed, but of a preceding one, the article and the relative pronoun *en* are used [§ 39, (17.) § 110.]:

Ce livre est bien imprimé, *le* papier *en* est excellent.	*That book is well-printed, its paper (the paper of it) is excellent.*
J'habite la campagne, les agréments *en* sont sans nombre.	*I inhabit the country, its pleasures (the pleasures of it) are without number.*
Ces langues sont riches, j'*en* admire les beautés. NOËL.	*Those languages are rich; I admire their beauties (the beauties of them).*

(6.) Exception. The possession may be expressed by *son*, *sa*, *ses*, *leurs*, although the possessor be not the nominative of the same proposition, when the object possessed is the regimen of a preposition:

Paris est une ville remarquable; les étrangers admirent la beauté de *ses* édifices. NOËL.	*Paris is a remarkable city; foreigners admire the beauty of its edifices.*

§ 96.—NUMERAL ADJECTIVES.

(1.) The cardinal number used simply to indicate number, not order, precedes the noun.

(2.) When used to indicate order [§ 26, (3.)], the cardinal number generally follows the noun (except when indicating the day of the month) [§ 26, (1.)]:

Léon *dix*. Chapitre *dix*.	*Leo the tenth. Chapter ten.*

(3.) The ordinal number is placed before the noun:

La *dixième* année.	*The tenth year.*

(4.) It follows the words *chapitre*, *livre*, *article*, *page*, etc., in the division of a book.

Livre *sixième*, chapitre *dixième*.	*Sixth book, tenth chapter.*

§ 97.—INDEFINITE ADJECTIVES.

(1.) *Quelque* is written in three ways:

1. Followed by a verb, it is written in two words, *quel que;* the first, *quel*, which is an adjective, agrees in gender and number with the subject of the verb, and the second, *que*, which is a conjunction, is invariable.

Mais *quels que* soient ton culte et ta patrie, Dors sous ma tente avec sécurité. CAMPENON.	*But, whatever may be thy religion or thy country, sleep in security under my tent.*
Cet homme, *quelle que* fût sa fortune ou son mérite, ne put réussir dans ses entreprises. BONIFACE.	*That man, whatever his fortune or his merits might be, could not succeed in his undertakings.*

2. Followed by a noun, it is then an adjective [§ 30, (12.)], and agrees in number with that noun:

Princes, *quelques* raisons que vous puissiez me dire. RACINE.

Princes, whatever reasons you may give me.

3. *Quelque* followed by an adjective, or an adverb, is invariable.

Les jeux de hasard, quelque médiocres qu'ils paraissent, sont toujours chers et dangereux. MME. DE GENLIS.

Games of chance, however trifling they may seem, are always expensive and dangerous.

(2.) *Même* is an adjective or an adverb:

It is an adjective [§ 30, (5.)]:

1. When it precedes the noun, and means *same:*

Vous retombez toujours dans les *mêmes* alarmes. RACINE.

You always fall into the same apprehensions.

2. When it follows a noun or pronoun, and has the sense of *himself, herself, themselves, even, very,* and cannot be turned into de la même manière, *in the same manner:*

Les dieux eux-*mêmes* devinrent jaloux des bergers. FÉNELON.

The gods themselves became jealous of the shepherds.

Ces murs *mêmes*, seigneur, peuvent avoir des yeux. RACINE.

These very walls, my lord, may have eyes.

(3.) It is an adverb and is invariable, when it modifies a verb, an adjective, or a participle. It has then the sense of aussi, *also;* quoique, *although,* or, de la même manière, *in the same manner:*

Frappez, Tyriens et *même* Israélites. RACINE.

Strike Tyrians and Israelites also.

Leurs vertus et *même* leurs noms étaient ignorés. BERNARDIN DE ST. PIERRE.

Their virtues, as well as their names, were unknown.

Exempts de maux réels, les hommes s'en forment *même* de chimériques.

When exempt from real misfortunes, men create to themselves imaginary ones.

(4.) We have seen that *tout,* when an adjective, that is, when signifying *every, all,* is variable [§ 30, (15,) (16)].

(5.) *Tout,* when it means *entirely, quite, nothing but,* is an adverb, and, as such, invariable:

Le lion est *tout* nerfs et muscles. BUFFON.

The lion is nothing but nerves and muscles.

Il montra, pour rimer, des chemins *tout* nouveaux. BOILEAU.

He showed us, in poetry, paths entirely new.

Le chien est *tout* zèle, *tout* ardeur, *tout* obéissance. BUFFON.

The dog is nothing but zeal, ardor and obedience.

(6.) But, here, is the same *invariable* word, variable by *euphony* before a feminine word, commencing with a consonant or an *h* aspirate:

Les plaisanteries ne sont bonnes que quand elles sont servies *toutes* chaudes. VOLTAIRE.

Jokes are only good when they are served up quite warm.

The following extract (for the historical accuracy of which we do not vouch), offers an example on the last rule, and on the exception:

La vanité est sortie *toute* parée de la tête des femmes, comme Minerve est sortie *tout* armée de la tête de Jupiter. SAINT-LAMBERT.

Vanity issued quite adorned from woman's head, as Minerva issued quite armed from the head of Jupiter.

§ 98.—THE PRONOUN.—PLACE OF THE PERSONAL PRONOUN, USED AS SUBJECT OF THE VERB.

(1.) Personal pronouns, used as subjects of verbs, are in French as well as in English, placed before them, in affirmative and negative sentences:

J'inventai des couleurs, j'armai la calomnie,
J'intéressai sa gloire; *il* trembla pour sa vie. RACINE.

I invented colors, I armed calumny, I touched his glory; he trembled for his life.

(2.) In affirmative or negative sentences commencing with *au moins, à peine, encore, peut-être, en vain, du moins, combien*, etc., the pronoun may elegantly be placed after the verb, although this construction is not imperative:

Peut-être avez-*vous* raison. NOËL.

Perhaps you are right.

Peut-être *vous* entretiendrai-*je* aussi de l'astronomie. AIMÉ-MARTIN.

Perhaps I will converse with you on astronomy.

Combien (l'homme) perd-*il* de vœux, combien fait-*il* de pas! LA FONTAINE.

How many wishes he loses, how many steps he takes!

(3.) In exclamations, the nominative pronoun is often placed after the verb in French, as well as in English

Puissé-je de mes yeux y voir tomber la foudre! CORNEILLE.

May I with my own eyes see the thunder crush it!

(4.) In interrogative sentences, the nominative pronoun is placed immediately after the verb, in the simple tenses, and between the auxiliary and the participle, in the compound:

Où suis-*je*? qu'ai-*je* fait? que dois-*je* faire encore?

Where am I? what have I done? what have I yet to do?

(5.) In interrogative sentences with verbs having only one[1] syllable, in the first person singular of the indicative present, and with some verbs having more than one syllable, but in which that person ends with an *s* preceded by a consonant, and in a number of other

[1] We may say, however, suis-je? *am I?* ai-je? *have I?* que fais-je? *what am I doing?* dois-je? *should I? ought I?* vois-je? *do I see?* vais-je? *do I go?* entends-je? *do I hear?* puis-je? *can I? may I?*

verbs, the pronoun *je* is not placed after the verb. In such case another construction must be given to the sentence:

Est-ce que je cours?	*Do I run?* literally, *Is it that I run?*
Est-ce que je dors?	*Do I sleep?*
Est-ce que je comprends?	*Do I understand?*

(6.) The same construction is admissible, in conversation, with all the persons and tenses which may be used interrogatively.

§ 99.—Repetition and Omission of the Nominative Pronoun.

(1.) It is proper to repeat the personal pronouns *je, tu, il, nous, vous, ils*, before every verb:

Je lis, *j'écris, je* me promène.	*I read, write, and walk.*

(2.) The omission of the pronouns *je, tu, il, nous, vous, ils*, before the second or third verb of a sentence, is a matter of choice and subject to the following restrictions:

Those pronouns must be repeated:

1. When the verbs are not in the same tense:

Je prétends et *je* prétendrai toujours.	*I maintain and will always maintain.*

2. When the first verb is in the negative, and the second in the affirmative:

Je *ne* plie *pas*, et *je* romps.	*I do not bend, and I break.*

3. When the propositions are connected by conjunctions other than et, *and;* ou, *or;* ni, *nor;* mais, *but:*

Nous détestons les méchants, parce que *nous* les craignons.	*We detest the wicked because we fear them.*

(3.) Although we would advise the student to follow the 1st rule of this §, particularly with regard to the pronouns *je, tu, nous, vous*, and thereby avoid all uncertainty, we give a few examples, where the pronouns after the first are

Repeated.	*Omitted.*
Je veux qu'on dise un jour aux peuples effrayés, Il fut des Juifs, *il* fut une insolente race. RACINE.	*Il* s'arrache les cheveux, se roule sur le sable, reproche aux Dieux leur rigueur, appelle en vain à son secours la cruelle mort. FÉNELON.
I wish that they may one day say to the frightened nations, there were Jews, there was an insolent race.	*He (Telemachus) tears his hair, rolls on the sand, reproaches the Gods with their rigor, and calls in vain cruel Death to his aid.*

Il s'écoute, *il* se plaît, *il* s'adonise, *il* s'aime. J. B. ROUSSEAU.

He listens to himself, he pleases himself, he adorns himself, he loves himself.

Nous avons dit, et *nous* allons prouver, qu'il n'y a pas de bonheur sans vertu. BEAUZÉE.

We have said, and we are going to prove, that there is no happiness without virtue.

L'Éternel est son nom, le monde est son ouvrage,
Il entend les soupirs de l'humble qu'on outrage,
Juge tous les mortels avec d'égales lois,
Et du haut de son trône interroge les rois. RACINE.

The Eternal is his name, the world is his work; he listens to the sighs of the humble oppressed, judges all mankind with equal laws, and interrogates the mighty from his lofty throne.

§ 100.—PLACE OF PERSONAL PRONOUNS USED AS REGIMENS OF VERBS.

(1.) The personal pronoun used as *régime direct*, (direct object or accusative) [§ 42, (4.)], and the pronoun used as *régime indirect*, (indirect object) with the preposition *to*, expressed or understood, in English, (dative of the Latin), [§ 42, (3.)] are in French placed before the verb:

Direct Regimen.

Je *vous* vois, *I see you;*
Vous *les* voyez, *you see them.*
Madame, enfin le ciel près de vous *me* rappelle. RACINE.
Madam, at last heaven recalls me near you.
Pauvre science humaine!
Un fil *t'*arrête hélas! comme le moucheron
Du bon Jean La Fontaine.
AIMÉ MARTIN.
Alas! poor human science! a web stops thee, like the gnat of the good Jean La Fontaine.

Indirect Regimen.

Je *vous* parle, *I speak to you;*
Vous *leur* parlez, *you speak to them.*
A ce prix je *leur* permets de vivre. RACINE.
On that condition I allow them to live.
Il faut compter sur l'ingratitude des hommes, et ne laisser pas de *leur* faire du bien. FÉNELON.
We should expect ingratitude from men, but not cease, on that account, to do them good.

(2.) 1st Exception: When the verb is in the second person singular, or in the first or second person plural of the imperative, used affirmatively, these pronouns must be placed after it:

Voyez-*les*, *see them.*
Rends-*moi* chrétienne et libre, à tout je me soumets. VOLTAIRE.
Make me a Christian and free, submit to every thing.
Dépouillons-*nous* aussi d'une vaine fierté. BOILEAU.
Let us divest ourselves also from a vain pride.
Allez, conduisez-*la* dans la chambre prochaine. RACINE.
Go, conduct her into the next room.

Parlez-*leur*, *speak to them.*

(3.) *Remark:* But if the verb, in those persons of the imperative, be used negatively, the pronouns will be placed according to Rule (1.):

Ne *les* voyez pas, *do not see them.*
Ne *leur* parlez pas, *do not speak to them.*

Si l'on vous propose de faire une mauvaise action, ne *la* faites pas.	*If they propose to you to commit a bad action, do it not.*
Dissipe tes douleurs, Et ne *me* trouble pas par ces indignes pleurs. BOILEAU.	*Dissipate thy grief, and trouble me not by these unworthy tears.*

(4.) 2d Exception: With reflective verbs, when the régime indirect[1] is a person, the pronoun representing it must follow the verb. This must also be the case with the following verbs:

Aller à, *to go to, towards.* Accourir à, Courir à, } *to run to, towards*	Venir à, *to come to.* Boire à, *to drink to.* Penser à, songer à, *to think of.*
Je m'adresse *à lui, à eux.*	*I apply to him, to them.*
Je vais *à vous* ou *à eux.*	*I go to you or to them.*
Vous courez *à lui* ou *à elle.*	*You run to him or to her.*
Elle vient *à moi* ou *à vous.*	*She comes to me or to you.*
Vous pensez *à nous* ou *à lui.*	*You think of us or of him.*
Ils songent *à eux* et *à vous.*	*They think of them and of you.*

(5.) The pronoun, used as the indirect regimen of the French, which answers to the indirect object of the English, preceded by a preposition other than *to*, and to the genitive and ablative cases of the Latin, is always, in French, placed after the verb, and preceded by one of the prepositions, de, *of;* pour, *for;* avec, *with*, etc.

Je parle *de lui* et *de vous.*	*I speak of him and of you.*
J'écris *pour lui* et *pour elle.*	*I write for him and for her.*
Qui rit d'autrui, Doit craindre qu'en revanche on rie aussi *de lui.* MOLIÈRE.	*He who laughs at others must fear that in their turn, they may also laugh at him.*

(6.) When two imperatives, used affirmatively, are joined together by the conjunction *et*, the pronoun regimen of the second may be placed before it, or after it, as in English:

After the Verb.	*Before the Verb.*
Sortez et laissez-*moi* dormir.	Sortez et *me* laissez dormir.
Go out, and let me sleep.	*Go out, and let me sleep.*
Marche, et *suis-nous*, du moins, où l'honneur nous appelle. BOILEAU.	Laissez-*moi* cette chaîne, ou *m'*arrachez le jour. LA HARPE.
March and follow us, at least, where honor calls us.	*Leave me this chain, or deprive me of life.*
Cessez, vous dis-je et *laissez-moi*, Madame, exécuter les volontés du roi. RACINE.	Vous attendez le roi; parlez et *lui* montrez, Contre le fils d'Hector tous les Grecs conjurés. RACINE.
Cease, I tell you, and suffer me, Madam, to execute the commands of the king.	*You expect the king; speak and depict to him all the Greeks conspiring against the son of Hector.*

[1] Object of the verb preceded in English by *to*, expressed or understood, dative of the Latin.

§ 101.—Respective Place of the Pronouns, when two occur with one Verb.

(1.) When two pronouns occur, one *régime direct* (accusative) and the other *régime indirect* (dative), the pronoun *régime indirect*, if not in the third person singular or plural, must precede the pronoun *régime direct:*

Il *me* le donnera.	*He will give it to me.*
Il *te* le prêtera.	*He will lend it to thee.*
Ils *nous* les montreront.	*They will show them to us.*
Vous *nous* le direz.	*You will say it to us.*
Quand je puis obliger, ma joie est assez grande,	*When I can oblige, my joy is great enough,*
Pour n'attendre jamais que l'on *me le* commande. Boursault.	*without my wishing to wait until they command me* (i. e., *they command it to me*).
Je *vous le* dis encore, vous n'aurez l'estime des hommes que par une solide vertu. Mme. De Maintenon.	*I repeat it to you: you can obtain the esteem of men only by real virtue.*

(2.) When the pronoun *régime indirect* is in the third person singular or plural, it must then be placed after the *régime direct:*

On *le lui* donnera.	*They will give it to him.*
Vous *le lui* prêterez.	*You will lend it to him.*
Nous ne *le leur* prêterons pas.	*We will not lend it to them.*
Vous *le leur* écrirez.	*You will write it to them.*
Le plus sûr appui de l'homme est Dieu, et vous voulez *le lui* ravir. Boiste.	*The surest support of man is God, and you wish to deprive him of it.*

(3.) *Remark:* The reflective pronoun *se*, used as an indirect regimen, makes an exception to the above rule, as it takes precedence of the direct regimen:

Si les hommes pensent mal les uns des autres, du moins ils ne *se le* disent pas. Anonymous.	*If men think ill of each other, at least they do not say it to each other.*

(4.) The Rules (1.) and (2.), also the Exception (3.), apply to the imperative used negatively; but Rule (1.) cannot apply to the imperative used affirmatively.

Examples of the Imperative used Negatively.

Ne *nous le* donnez pas [Rule (1.)].	*Do not give it to us.*
Ne *le leur* prêtez pas [Rule (2.)].	*Do not lend it to them.*
Qu'ils ne *se le* disent pas [Remark (3.)].	*Let them not say it to themselves.*
Du sang de tant de rois c'est l'unique héritage;	*Of the blood of so many kings, it is my only inheritance;*
Ne *me* l'enviez pas, laissez-moi mon partage. Voltaire.	*do not envy it (to me), leave me my portion.*

(5.) When the imperative used affirmatively has two regimens,

the pronoun *régime direct* precedes the *régime indirect* in all the persons:

Envoyez-*le-moi*.	*Send it to me.*
Donnez-*le-nous*.	*Give it to me.*
Qu'ils *le lui* donnent.	*Let them give it to him.*
Montrez-*le-moi*, ce mortel privilégié. BALLANCHE.	*Show him to me, that privileged mortal.*
Mets-*le-toi* dans l'esprit: qui fait mal, trouve mal. ANONYMOUS.	*Put this into thy mind: he who does evil, finds evil.*

§ 102.—RULE.

When two pronouns in different cases, representing rational beings, occur, and the pronoun in the *régime direct* is in the first, or in the second person, this pronoun must be placed according to the general rules; and the pronoun in the *régime indirect* must follow the verb, and be preceded by the proper preposition:

Il nous a recommandés *à eux*.	*He has recommended us to them.*
Il vous a presenté *à elle*.	*He has presented you to her.*
Nul ne peut *se* comparer *à lui*, pour faire en peu de temps, un travail fort inutile. LA BRUYÈRE.	*No one can compare himself to him, for doing in a short time, a very useless piece of work.*

§ 103.—RULE.

(1.) The personal pronouns *lui*, *elle*, *eux*, *elles*, used as indirect regimens of verbs and preceded by a preposition, can only relate to persons, and not to things. The expressions *of* or *from it*; *of* or *from them*, when relating to things, should be rendered by *en* [§ 39, (17.)]:

J'*en* parle; j'*en* donne.	*I speak of it, of them; I give of it (some).*
J'aime trop la valeur, pour *en* être jaloux. LA HARPE.	*I prize valor too highly to be jealous of it.*
Celui qui est dans la prospérité doit craindre d'*en* abuser. FÉNELON.	*He who is in prosperity should fear to abuse it.*

(2.) The relative pronoun *y* [§ 39, (18.) § 111], is used in French in relation to things, *for the indirect regimen*, expressed in English by *at* or *to* (dative). It means *at* or *to it*; or *to them*; *thereto*, etc.:

J'y songerai, *I will think of it.*	Faites-*y* attention, *Pay attention to it.*
C'est lorsque nous sommes éloignés de notre pays, que nous sentons surtout l'instinct qui nous *y* attache. CHATEAUBRIAND.	*It is when we are far from our country that we feel, above all, the instinct which attaches us to it.*
Tous nos jours vont à la mort, le dernier *y* arrive. MONTAIGNE.	*All our days travel towards death, the last one arrives at it (reaches it).*
Les choses de la terre ne valent pas qu'on s'*y* attache. NICOLE.	*The things of the earth are not worth our attachment to them.*

(3.) Y is sometimes used adverbially, with the sense of là, *there*.

Allez-vous à New-York ?	*Do you go to New York ?*
J'y vais,	*I go (there).*

(4.) In order to avoid its meeting with the vowel *i*, y is not used in connection with the future and conditional of aller, *to go ;* we say : J'irais, nous irions, instead of j'y irais, nous y irions, etc., *I should go there, we should go there,* etc.

§ 104.—Place of En and Y.

(1.) The place of *en* and *y* is the same as that prescribed by Rule (1.) § 100, for the personal pronouns. They are also subject to Exception (2.) and Remark (3.) of the same §. See examples above.

(2.) *En* and *y* are always placed after the other pronouns *régimes :*

Il *nous en* a parlé.	*He has spoken to us of it.*
Il *lui en* a dit quelque chose.	*He has told him something of it.*
Parlez-*lui-en.*	*Speak to him of it.*
Ne *nous en* parlez pas.	*Do not speak to us of it.*
Je *l'y* ai renvoyé.	*I have referred him to it.*
Renvoyez-*nous-y.*	*Refer,* or *send us back to it.*
Ne *nous y* renvoyez pas.	*Do not refer us to it.*

§ 105.—Repetitions of the Pronouns *régimes.*

These pronouns must, in French, be repeated before every verb:

Ah ! mon enfant, que je voudrais bien *vous* voir un peu, *vous* entendre, *vous* embrasser. *vous* voir passer. Mme. De Sévigné.	*Ah ! my child, how I would like to see you for a short time, to hear you, to embrace you, see you pass.*
Je veux *le* voir, *le* prier, *le* presser, l'importuner, *le* fléchir. Bescherelle.	*I will see him, entreat him, press him, importune him, bend him.*

§ 106.—The Possessive Pronoun.

(1.) The possessive pronoun, in French, is always preceded by the article [§ 34, (2.) (3.)] which, as well as the pronoun itself, agrees in gender and number with the noun represented [§ 35, (1.)]:

L'ambition ni la fumée ne touchent point un cœur comme *le mien.* J. J. Rousseau.	*Neither ambition nor smoke have power on such a heart as mine.*
Au lieu de déplorer la mort des autres, je veux apprendre de vous à rendre *la mienne* sainte. Bossuet.	*Instead of bewailing the death of others, I wish to learn from you how to render my own holy.*

(2.) The pronouns *le nôtre, le vôtre* [§ 34, (3.)], etc., unlike the adjectives notre, votre, etc., always take the circumflex accent:

La musique des anciens Grecs était très différente de *la nôtre.* Voltaire.	*The music of the ancient Greeks was very different from ours.*

(3.) When the English possessive pronouns, *mine*, *thine*, etc., come after the verb *to be*, they are often rendered into French by the indirect pronouns, *à moi*, *à toi*:

Ce livre est *à moi*.	*That book is mine.*
Ces plumes sont-elles *à vous*?	*Are these pens yours?*

§ 107.—The Demonstrative Pronoun.

(1.) The demonstrative pronouns [§ 36], can never be placed before nouns. They merely represent them:

La meilleure leçon est *celle* des exemples. LA HARPE.	*The best lesson is that of examples.*
N'oublie jamais les bienfaits que tu as reçus; oublie promptement *ceux* que tu as accordés. BOISTE.	*Never forget the benefits which thou hast received; forget quickly those which thou hast conferred.*

(2.) The pronouns *celui*, *celle*, *ceux*, *celles*, as has been said [§ 37, (2.)], are often used absolutely, not only in the nominative, but also in the *régimes*, direct and indirect. They have then the sense of *he who*, *him whom*, *of whom*; *that which*, *of which*. They apply, in this sense, as well to *things* as to *persons*:

Celui qui compte dix amis, n'en a pas un. MALESHERBES.	*He who reckons ten friends, has not one.*
On ne saurait forcer *celui* qui ne veut pas.	*We cannot compel him who will not.*
L'harmonie la plus douce est la voix de *celle qu'*on aime. LA BRUYÈRE.	*The sweetest harmony is the voice of her whom we love.*

(3.) The French use *celui*, *celle*, *ceux*, *celles*, indifferently for *this*, *that*. When they institute a contrast or a comparison, they suffix the adverbs[1] *ci* (*ici*) and *là* to the pronouns [§ 37, (3.)]:

Corneille nous assujettit à ses caractères et à ses idées; Racine se conforme aux nôtres. *Celui-là* peint les hommes, comme ils devraient être, *celui-ci* les peint tels qu'ils sont. LA BRUYÈRE.	*Corneille subjects us to his characters and to his ideas; Racine conforms himself to ours. That one (the former) paints men as they should be, this one (the latter) paints them as they are.*

(4.) *Celui-ci*, *celle-ci*, *ceux-ci*, *celles-ci*, may be used absolutely in French in the sense of *this one*, *that one*, etc.

On la vit, toutes les semaines, essuyer les larmes de *celui-ci*, pourvoir aux besoins de *celui-là*. FLÉCHIER.	*Every week, she was seen wiping the tears of this one, providing for the wants of that one.*

[1] The same adverbs produce the same difference in meaning with the demonstrative adjectives *ce*, *cet*, etc. They are not placed immediately after those adjectives, but after the nouns which they determine: cet homme-ci, *this man*, cet homme-là, *that man*. The commencement of Remark (3.) applies also to the adjectives *ce*, *cet*, *cette*, *ces*, etc.

(5.) *Ceci* and *cela* are always used absolutely. They serve to point out things only. They can, of course, never be prefixed to a noun [§ 37, (5.)]:

Tant que le jour est long, il gronde entre ses dents,	*The livelong day he mutters between his teeth,*
Fais *ceci*, fais *cela*, va, viens, monte, descends. REGNARD.	*do this, do that, go, come, go up, come down.*
Je suis un peu surpris de tout *ceci.* MASSILLON.	*I am a little surprised at all this.*
Vous n'avez pu désavouer *cela.* PASCAL.	*You have not been able to disavow that.*

§ 108.—REMARKS ON THE DEMONSTRATIVE PRONOUN CE.

(1.) *Ce*, when used as a demonstrative pronoun, is almost always construed with the verb *être*, or followed by a relative pronoun:

C'est un poids bien pesant qu'un grand nom à soutenir. MONTESQUIEU.	*A great name is a very heavy weight to sustain.*
Ce qui me plaît *c'est* sa modestie. LÉVIZAC.	*That which pleases me is her modesty.*

(2.) *Ce* is used for *he, she, they*, preceding any part of the verb *to be*, when that verb is followed by a noun, or an adjective used substantively and preceded by *the, a* or *an*, or a possessive or demonstrative adjective.

(3.) *Observe*, that the verb *être* following the pronoun *ce*, is put in the plural, when the noun following that verb is plural. The pronoun *ce*, however, remains unchanged.

C'est un trompeur.	*He is a deceitful man.*
C'est la femme que je cherche.	*She is the woman whom I seek.*
C'étaient mes amis.	*They were my friends.*
Ce seraient paroles exquises,	*They would be exquisite words,*
Si c'était un grand qui parlât. MOLIÈRE.	*If a great man were to speak them.*
N'étaient-*ce* pas les mêmes hommes? CHATEAUBRIAND.	*Were they not the same men?*

All those sentences are elliptical; a noun being understood after the *ce*:

Cet homme est un trompeur.	*That man is a deceitful one.*
Cette femme est la femme que je cherche.	*That woman is the woman whom I seek.*

(4.) *This is, that is, these are, those are*, may also be rendered by *c'est ici, ce sont là*:

C'est ici la place.	*This is the place.*
Ce sont là mes enfants.	*Those are my children.*

Voici, voilà, are, however, to be preferred to *c'est ici*, etc.:

Voici la place.	*This is the place.*
Voilà mes enfants.	*Those are my children.*

(5.) *Ce* answers to the English pronoun *it*, when this latter word stands as the nominative of the verb *to be*, without definite reference to an antecedent:

Ce n'est que par les sens que l'âme peut s'instruire. FONTANES.
It is only through the senses that the mind can receive instruction.

Ce fut d'une retraite de pâtres et d'aventuriers, que sortirent les conquérants de l'univers. ROLLIN.
It was from a refuge for shepherds and adventurers, that emerged the conquerors of the world.

C'est un défaut capital qu'il faut éviter dans quelque sujet que *ce* soit. VOLTAIRE.
This is a capital defect which should be avoided in whatever subject it may be.

(6.) When the verb *être*, however, is used unipersonally, and followed by an adjective [§ 87, (3.)], the pronoun *it* is not rendered by *ce*, but by the pronoun used with all unipersonal verbs (*il*):

Il est nécessaire d'étudier.
It is necessary to study.

Il est plus difficile pour les nations que pour les individus, de recouvrer l'estime de leurs voisins, quand elles l'ont perdue. BOISTE.
It is more difficult for nations than for individuals to recover the esteem of their neighbors, when they have lost it.

§ 109.—THE RELATIVE PRONOUN.

(1.) The relative pronoun que, *whom*, *which*, can in French never be suppressed like the corresponding English pronouns:[1]

Les louanges *que* nous donnons, se rapportent toujours par quelque chose à nous-mêmes. MASSILLON.
The praises (which) we give, have always in some way a relation to ourselves.

(2.) The pronouns *quel*, *que*, *quoi*, *lequel*, represent the English pronouns *which* or *what* used interrogatively.

1. *Quel* is used before a noun in a determinative sense:

Quel livre lirons-nous?
What or *which book shall we read?*

Quel est donc votre mal?
What then is your ailment?
MOLIÈRE.

2. *Que* is used before a verb:

Que dites-vous?
What do you say?

3. *Quoi* is used as an exclamation:

Quoi! est-ce vous?
What! is it you?

4. *Lequel*, used interrogatively, means *which one:*

Voici deux plumes; *laquelle* voulez-vous?
Here are two pens; which (which one) will you have?

(3.) *Qui* is also used interrogatively for the *régime direct*, and

[1] The conjunction *that*, is often omitted in English; its equivalent *que*, must always be expressed in French.

Je crois *qu'* il est ici.
I believe (that) he is here.

preceded by a preposition, for the *régime indirect*. It then means *whom, of whom, to whom, whose*, etc.:

Qui avez-vous vu?	*Whom have you seen?*
De *qui* tenez-vous cette nouvelle?	*From whom have you this news?*
A *qui* est ce livre?	*Whose book is this?*

§ 110.—The Pronoun En.

(1.) We have already [§ 39, (17.) § 95, (5.) § 103, Rule (1.)] made several remarks on this pronoun.

(2.) *En* signifies *of it, from it, with it, about it, of them, from them*, etc., expressed or understood. Though *en* is by some French writers often used in relation to persons, their example should be imitated in such cases only as that presented by the example in § 92, (2.)

(3.) *En*, used as an equivalent for the English *some* or *any*, expressed or understood, preserves its nature of an indirect regimen, and has, in the same manner as the French article placed before a noun used partitively, the sense of *of it, of them;* the word *partie* being understood:

Avez-vous des pommes?	*Have you apples?*
That is, *some*, or rather, *of the, a part of the apples.*	
J'en ai.	*I have, I have some; I have of them* or *I have (a part) of them.*

(4.) *En* sometimes recalls the whole or part of a proposition:

L'on ne saurait voir, sans *en* être piqué, Posséder par un autre un bien qu'on a manqué. MOLIÈRE.	*We cannot see, without being piqued, another person in possession of goods which we have failed in obtaining.*
N'*en* disputons plus, chacun a sa pensée. MOLIÈRE.	*Let us no longer argue about this, every one has his own opinion.*

§ 111.—The Pronoun Y.

Some remarks have already been made on this pronoun [§ 39, (18.) § 103, (2.)]. *Y* means *to it, at it, to them, at them.* It is seldom used in relation to persons or animals, but frequently in relation to things:

Je reçois votre lettre, ma chère enfant, et j'*y* fais réponse avec précipitation. Mme. DE SÉVIGNÉ.	*I receive your letter, my dear child, and answer it (make answer thereto) in haste.*
Tirer vanité de quelque chose, c'est prouver qu'on n'*y* est pas accoutumé. BOISTE.	*To feel vanity on account of any thing, is proving that we are not accustomed to it.*
Chargez-vous de cette affaire; donnez-*y* tous vos soins. BONIFACE.	*Take this affair upon yourself; give all your care to it.*

§ 112.—Place of the Pronouns En and Y.

See § 104, (1.) (2.)

§ 113.—The Indefinite Pronoun On [§ 41, (4.)].

(1.) *On*, which is very extensively used in the French language, is said only of persons. The verb, of which it is always the nominative, must be in the singular. This pronoun is of the masculine gender. [*See* (2.)] *On* is used in French for *people, one, some one, we, they*, whenever these words have a general and indefinite meaning, and do not refer to any particular word:

On pardonne aisément le mal involontaire. De la Boutraye.
We (people, they, etc.) easily forgive involuntary injuries.

On cherche les rieurs, et moi je les évite. La Fontaine.
People (they, we) seek laughing or merry people, and I avoid them.

Another translation of the above sentences, will show us that the pronoun *on* often enables the French to make use of the active voice, which they always prefer to the passive.[1] Thus, the two examples last given may be rendered as follows:

Active Voice in French.	*Passive Voice in English.*
On pardonne aisément le mal involontaire.	*Involuntary injuries are easily forgiven.*
On cherche les rieurs, mais moi je les évite.	*Merry or joyful people are generally sought; for my part I avoid them.*

A few more examples, from some of the best French authors, elucidating the use of this pronoun, will be useful to the student:

Quand *on* est chrétien, de quelque sexe que *l'on* soit, il n'est pas permis d'être lâche. Fénelon.
A Christian, of whichever sex he may be, is not allowed to be cowardly.

On peut être honnête homme, et faire mal des vers. Molière.
One may be a worthy man, and make bad verses.

On aime peu celui qui n'ose aimer personne. Delille.
We feel but little love for him who dares love nobody.

A-t-*on* jamais pleuré d'avoir fait son devoir? Chamfort.
Have we ever grieved on account of having done our duty?

Quand *on* a même but, rarement on s'accorde. Lebrun.
Those who have the same aim, rarely agree.

Artistes, écrivains, poètes, si vous vous copiez toujours, *on* ne vous copiera jamais. Bernardin de St. Pierre.
Artists, writers, poets, if you always copy each other, no person will copy you.

(2.) If the word *on* denotes definitely a female, the adjective relating to it, takes the feminine termination:

Quand *on* est *belle*, *on* ne l'ignore pas. L'Académie.
When one (a lady) is handsome, she is not ignorant of it.

[1] On dit, *it is said*; on rapporte, *it is related*; on craint, *it is feared*; etc. Cela se fait ainsi, literally, *that makes itself thus, that is made in this manner*, etc.

(3.) The pronoun *on*, must be repeated before every verb:

On lève l'ancre, *on* part, *on* fuit loin de la terre,	*They raise the anchor, they depart, they flee far from the land, already*
On découvrait déjà les bords de l'Angleterre. VOLTAIRE.	*they discovered the shores of England.*

§ 114.—THE VERB.—AGREEMENT OF THE VERB WITH ITS SUBJECT.

(1.) The verb agrees with its nominative or subject, whether that nominative precedes or follows:

L'homme est né pour régner sur tous les animaux. VOLTAIRE.	*Man is born to reign over all the animals.*
Les hommes sont encore enfants à soixante ans. AUBERT.	*Men are still children at sixty.*
Par ces portes *sortaient* les fières *légions.* SAINT-VICTOR.	*Through those gates issued the proud legions.*

(2.) When a verb has two or more singular nominatives connected by the conjunction *et*, the verb is put in the plural:

La *colère* et la *précipitation sont* deux choses fort opposées à la prudence. FÉNELON.	*Anger and precipitation are two things very much opposed to prudence.*
La *violence* et la *vertu* ne peuvent rien l'une sur l'autre. PASCAL.	*Violence and virtue have no power over each other.*

(3.) When a verb has several singular nominatives not connected by *et*, it is put in the singular or in the plural, according to circumstances:

1. It is put in the singular, if the nominatives are in some way synonymous:

La *douceur*, la *bonté* du grand Henri, *a* été célébrée de mille louanges. PÉLISSON.	*The mildness, the goodness of the great Henry, has been celebrated by a thousand praises.*
D'où *peut* venir cet ennui, ce dégoût? COLIN D'HARLEVILLE.	*Whence can proceed that ennui, that disgust?*

(2.) When, in a series of nominatives, the last has more force or interest attached to it, and therefore, makes us, as it were, overlook the others:

Ce sacrifice, votre intérêt, votre honneur, DIEU vous le *commande!*	*This sacrifice, your interest, your honor,* GOD *commands it!*

3. The verb is put in the plural, when the affirmation is intended to be made of all the nominatives taken collectively, and not of each in particular:

La douceur, les soupirs de cette femme infortunée ne *purent* le fléchir. WAILLY.	*The sweetness, the sighs of that unfortunate woman could not move him.*

Savez vous, si demain,
Sa *liberté, ses jours*, seront en votre main? RACINE.

Do you know, if to-morrow, his liberty, his life, will be in your power?

(4.) On the form of the verb when preceded by several subjects connected by *ou*, See Lesson 84, 2, 3.

§ 115.—NUMBER OF THE VERB AFTER A COLLECTIVE NOUN.

(1.) Every verb, having, as its subject, a *general* collective noun [§ 3, (6.)], preceded by the article, such as *la totalité, l'infinité*, etc., takes the number of that noun:

L'armée des infidèles *fut* entièrement détruite. L'ACADÉMIE.

The army of the infidels was entirely destroyed.

La *multitude* des bonnes choses que l'on trouve dans un ouvrage, *fait* perdre de vue la multiplicité des mauvaises. CAMINADE.

The multitude of the good things which we find in a work, makes us lose sight of the multiplicity of the bad ones.

(2.) When a partitive collective noun [§ 3, (6.)] occurs as the subject of a proposition, the verb agrees with that noun, if it occupies the first rank in the thought of the speaker or writer.

The verb agrees, on the contrary, with the plural noun following the collective word, if the collective acts only a secondary part, or if it is employed only to add an accessory idea of number:

Agreement with the Collective.

Une *troupe* d'assassins *entra* dans la chambre de Coligny. VOLTAIRE.

A gang of assassins entered Coligny's chamber.

Une *nuée* de traits *obscurcit* l'air.

A cloud of arrows darkened the air.

Cette *espèce* de paons *paraît* avoir éprouvé les mêmes effets par la même cause. BUFFON.

That species of peacocks seems to have experienced the same effects through the same cause.

Agreement with the following Noun.

Une troupe de *nymphes* couronnées de fleurs, *nageaient* autour de son char. FÉNELON.

A troop of nymphs, crowned with flowers, were swimming around her chariot.

Une nuée de *barbares désolèrent* le pays. L'ACADÉMIE.

A cloud of barbarians desolated the country.

Cette espèce de *chiens* qu'on appelle chiens de Laconie, ne *vivent* que dix ans. BOILEAU.

That species of dogs which they call Laconian dogs, live only ten years.

§ 116.—NUMBER OF THE VERB ÊTRE AFTER THE PRONOUN CE.

(1.) The verb *être*, preceded or followed by *ce*, as the grammatical subject, takes the number of the noun placed in apposition with that pronoun [§ 108, (3.)]:

Ce sont les mœurs qui font la bonne compagnie. LA CHAUSSÉE.

It is morals which form good company.

Sont-ce des religieux et des prêtres qui parlent ainsi? *sont-ce* des chrétiens? PASCAL.	*Are they monks and priests who speak so? are they Christians?*

(2.) The verb *être* may also be put in the plural, when the pronouns *eux* and *elles* are put in apposition with the pronoun *ce*. This rule, however, is optional, as the examples will show. Before *nous* and *vous* similarly placed, the verb is always in the singular; c'*est*-nous; c'*est* vous.

Singular.	*Plural.*
C'*est* eux qui *ont* bâti ce superbe labyrinthe. BOSSUET.	Ce *sont* eux qui viennent. BESCHERELLE.
It is they who have built that superb labyrinth.	*It is they who come.*

§ 117.—THE VERB RELATING TO SEVERAL SUBJECTS IN DIFFERENT PERSONS.

A verb having several subjects in different persons, is put in the plural, and assumes the termination of the first person in preference to that of the second, and that of the second in preference to that of the third. It may then be preceded by the plural pronoun of the person preferred, recapitulating, as it were, all the other subjects:

Votre père et *moi*, *nous* avons été longtemps ennemis l'un de l'autre. FÉNELON.	*Your father and I, have long been enemies to each other.*
Allez; *vous* et vos semblables n'*êtes* point faits pour être transplantés. MONTESQUIEU.	*Go; you and such as you are not fit to be transplanted.*

§ 118.—USE OF THE TENSES.—THE PRESENT OF THE INDICATIVE.

(1.) This tense denotes what exists, or is taking place at the time we speak:

Je lis; vous parlez.	*I read; you speak.*

(2.) The French have only one form of the indicative present:

Je lis means, therefore, *I read, do read,* or *am reading.*

(3.) The indicative present is used in French, as well as in English, for expressing things which are and will always be true:

Dieu *est* éternel, sa puissance *est* sans bornes, et sa clémence *est* grande. GIRAULT-DUVIVIER.	*God is eternal, his power is boundless, and his clemency is great.*

(4.) It is often used to express a proximate future:

Je *suis* de retour dans un moment. MOLIÈRE.	*I shall be back in a moment.*
Si Titus a parlé, s'il l'*épouse*, je pars. RACINE.	*If Titus has spoken, if he marries her, I go (will go).*

(5.) The present is frequently used for the past, to awaken attention, and place the event, as it were, before the reader:

J'ai vu, seigneur, j'ai vu votre malheureux fils,	*I saw, my lord, I saw your unfortunate son dragged by the horses*
Traîné par les chevaux que sa main a nourris;	*which his own hand has fed; he*
Il *veut* les rappeler, mais sa voix les *effraie.* RACINE.	*wishes to recall them, but his voice frightens them.*

§ 119.—THE IMPERFECT.

(1.) The imperfect, or simultaneous past, is used to express something which was in progress, while another thing was taking place. It leaves the beginning, duration, and end of an action undetermined:

J'*écrivais*, quand je reçus votre lettre.	*I was writing, when I received your letter.*

(2.) The French imperfect, as may be seen in the above example, represents the English past tense formed of the auxiliary *to be*, and the participle present of a principal verb.

(3.) The imperfect is also used to express repeated or customary action. It may then often be rendered in English by the infinitive of the verb preceded by "used to":

Lorsque j'*étais* à Londres, j'*allais* me promener le matin, ensuite je *dînais*, et je *passais* le reste de la journée à lire et à écrire	*When I was in London, I walked (used to walk) in the morning, afterwards dined (usually dined), and spent (usually) the remainder of the day in reading and writing.*

(4.) The use of this tense will be further explained in the next Section.

§ 120.—THE PAST DEFINITE.

(1.) The past definite indicates an action performed at a time entirely past:

J'*allai* à Londres, où je *vis* votre père; je *finis* mes affaires dans cette ville, et *revins* aussitôt ici.	*I went to London, where I saw your father; I finished my business in that city, and returned hither immediately.*
M. un tel *écrivit* hier au soir un sixain à Mademoiselle une telle. MOLIÈRE.	*Mr. such-a-one wrote last evening six verses to Miss such-a-one.*

(2.) The past definite can only be used, as we have seen above, when the time at which an action took place is entirely elapsed. We cannot, therefore, use it in connection with the words *to-day, this morning, this week, this month, this year*, etc., [*See* § 121, Past

Indefinite.] We may use it in speaking of *yesterday, last week, last year*, etc.:

Je vous envoie, mon cher frère, une lettre que j'*écrivis* hier pour Madame de Laval. FÉNELON.

I send you, my dear brother, a letter which I wrote yesterday for Madame de Laval.

(3.) The imperfect may almost always be rendered in English by the participle present of the verb and the auxiliary *to be;* or by prefixing "*used to*" to the infinitive mood. The past definite can never be so rendered.

(4.) The imperfect might be called the *descriptive* tense of the French.

(5.) The past definite might be called the *narrative* tense. It expresses that which took place at some time fully past. We will endeavor to illustrate this difference between these two tenses:—A traveller has entered a wood and discovered a retired cottage; he wishes to describe what he saw there, and makes use of the imperfect or descriptive tense; he says:

Un vieillard *se promenait* sous les arbres; *il tenait* un livre à la main; de temps en temps, il *élevait* les yeux vers le ciel, ou les *couvrait* de la main, et *semblait* s'abîmer dans une profonde rêverie. Devant la porte de la cabane *était* assise une femme qui *berçait* un enfant sur ses genoux; elle *était* pâle; ses cheveux *flottaient* au gré du vent; des larmes *coulaient* le long de ses joues, etc.

An old man was walking under the trees; he held (was holding) a book in his hand; from time to time he raised his eyes towards heaven, or concealed them with his hand, and seemed to sink into a profound reverie. Before the door of the hut, sat (was sitting) a female, rocking (who was rocking) a child on her knees; she was pale; her hair waved (was waving) at the mercy of the wind; tears flowed (were flowing) down her cheeks, etc.

The traveller has here drawn a picture of what presented itself to his eyes, as he approached the cottage. Not content with representing merely the then present situation of things, he wishes also to narrate what took place. He has described the theatre on which the occurrence took place, which he is going to relate; he now proceeds to the narrative, and uses the past definite or narrative tense:

Je *m'approchai* du vieillard; lorsqu'il *m'aperçut*, il *s'avança* vers moi, *me salua*, et me *pria* de ne pas troubler cette paisible retraite du malheur. Il *retourna* à la cabane, *prit* l'enfant des bras de la femme, et *rentra;* elle le *suivit*, etc.

I approached the old man; when he perceived me he came towards me, greeted me, and besought me not to disturb this peaceful retreat of the unfortunate. He returned to the cottage, took the child from the woman's arms and went in; she followed him.

Another example might be taken from La Fontaine's well-known fable:

LE CORBEAU ET LE RENARD.	THE RAVEN AND THE FOX.
Maître corbeau sur un arbre perché,	*Master raven perched upon a tree,*
Tenait en son bec un fromage;	*held (was holding) in his beak a cheese;*
Maître renard, par l'odeur alléché,	*master fox, attracted by the smell,*
Lui *tint* à peu près ce langage.	*addressed him nearly in the following words.*

Here the poet uses the imperfect of *tenir* in describing the situation in which the fox found the raven, but in relating the action of the fox, La Fontaine uses the *narrative* tense of the same verb.

The commencement of the first book of *Télémaque*, offers an excellent illustration of what we have here advanced, on the use of the imperfect, and the past definite.

§ 121.—The Past Indefinite.

(1.) The past indefinite expresses an action entirely completed, but performed at a time of which some part is not yet elapsed, as *to-day, this month, this year*, etc.

Le roi m'*a nommé* aujourd'hui archevêque de Cambray. FÉNELON.	*The king appointed me to-day archbishop of Cambray.*
Ce matin *j'ai trouvé* le pavé si glissant, que *j'ai pensé* que si je venais à tomber sur le bras droit, je serais tout à fait désemparé. BERNARDIN DE ST. PIERRE.	*This morning I found the street so slippery, that I thought, in case I happened to fall on my right arm, I should then be completely helpless.*
Je t'*ai défendu* (*see* (2.) *below*) cent fois de racler ton méchant violon; cependant, je t'*ai entendu ce matin*— Ce matin? Ne vous souvient-il pas que vous *me le mîtes* [§ 120 (2.)] hier en pièces? PALAPRAT.	*I have forbidden thee a hundred times to scrape thy wretched violin; nevertheless I heard thee this morning. —This morning! Do you not recollect that you broke it to pieces yesterday?*

(2.) The past indefinite is also used with regard to a time entirely past, but not specified:

Les fruits de la terre *ont* été la première nourriture des hommes. GIRAULT-DUVIVIER.	*The fruits of the earth were the first aliments of mankind.*
Les Français *ont gagné* la bataille de Marengo.	*The French gained the battle of Marengo.*

(3.) When the time is specified and entirely elapsed, the past indefinite is by many of the best French writers, used indifferently with the past definite:

Past Definite:	*Past Indefinite.*
Huit jours après son départ, il m'*écrivit* une lettre. BERNARDIN DE ST. PIERRE.	Je vous *ai écrit*, il y a quinze jours. THE SAME.
A week after his departure, he wrote me a letter.	*I wrote to you a fortnight ago.*

Je *fus* bien fâché hier, ma chère cousine, de vous avoir quittée avec tant de précipitation. FÉNELON.

I was very sorry yesterday, my dear cousin, for having left you in so much haste.

Hier en travaillant à mon quatrième dialogue, j'*ai éprouvé* un vrai plaisir. MIRABEAU.

Yesterday, while working at my fourth dialogue, I experienced real pleasure.

(4.) When the first verb of a sentence is put in the past indefinite, every other verb of that sentence, and of the sentences referring to it, should be in the same tense:

Où *avez*-vous *été*?
J'*ai* d'abord *été* à l'église, ensuite je *suis venu* dîner.

Where have you been?
I first went to church, and then came home to dinner.

§ 122.—THE PAST ANTERIOR.

The past anterior expresses what took place *immediately* before another event which is also past, the latter event being usually the result of, or dependent upon the former:

Quand *j'eus reconnu* mon erreur, je fus honteux des mauvais procédés que j'avais eus pour lui. GIRAULT-DUVIVIER.

When I had perceived my error, I was ashamed of my bad conduct towards him.

See (3.) of the § below.

§ 123.—THE PLUPERFECT.

(1.) The pluperfect marks an event not only past in itself, but as past with regard to another past event:

J'*avais* déjeûné, quand vous vîntes me demander. GIRAULT-DUVIVIER.

I had breakfasted, when you came to inquire for me.

(2.) The pluperfect having as its auxiliary the imperfect of the verbs *avoir*, or *être*, partakes of the signification of that tense. It may, therefore, often be used to denote customary action:

Dès que j'*avais* lu quelques pages, je me promenais.

As soon as I had read a few pages, I used to take a walk.

In such cases it generally precedes or follows another verb in the imperfect.

(3.) When the action is not a customary one, and the sentence commences with one of the adverbs, *quand, lorsque, aussitôt que, dès que*, etc., the past anterior is generally used:

Dès que j'*eus lu* quelques pages, je sortis.

As soon as I had read a few pages, I went out.

§ 124.—THE TWO FUTURES.

(1.) The future simple is used to signify what will be, or will take place, at a time not yet come:

Votre frère *partira* demain.

Your brother will go to-morrow.

(2.) The future is used, in French, after an adverb of time, in cases where the English use the present of the indicative:

Quand vous *viendrez*, vous apporterez mon livre.	*When you come, you will bring my book.*

(3.) It has sometimes the sense of the imperative in sentences like the following:

Croira qui *voudra* l'historien Capitolin et quelques autres écrivains, qui font danser les éléphants sur la corde. FÉRAUD.	*Believe who will the historian Capitolinus and several other writers, who make elephants dance on a rope.*

(4.) The future anterior is used to signify what will have been at a future period; it is also used after an adverb of time in cases where the past indefinite is used in English:

Quand *j'aurai fini* mes affaires, je vous irai voir. GIRAULT-DUVIVIER.	*When I have finished my affairs, I will go and see you.*

§ 125.—THE TWO CONDITIONALS.

(1.) The conditional present denotes what would take place under a certain condition:

Nous *goûterions* bien des jouissances, si nous savions faire un bon usage du temps. GIRAULT DUVIVIER.	*We should have many enjoyments, if we knew how to make a good use of time.*

(2.) The conditional past denotes what would have taken place, at a time past, if the condition on which it depended, had been fulfilled:

Il *serait allé* à la campagne, si le temps le lui avait permis.	*He would have gone into the country, if the weather had allowed him.*

(3.) The two futures, and the two conditionals, cannot, in French, follow the conjunction *si*, meaning *in case that*. The indicative present is then used instead of the future, and the imperfect instead of the conditional. This rule is often violated by the French, but seldom by the Americans or English, who have acquired a good knowledge of the French language.

§ 126.—THE IMPERATIVE.

(1.) The imperative is used to express a command, exhortation, permission or entreaty:

Connais-moi tout entière. CORNEILLE.	*Know me entirely.*
Ah! *demeurez*, seigneur, et *daignez* m'écouter. RACINE.	*Ah! remain, my lord, and deign to listen to me.*

Ne *tardons* plus, *marchons*, et s'il faut que je meure, *Mourons.* RACINE.	*Let us tarry no longer, let us proceed, and, if I must die, let us die.*

§ 127.—THE SUBJUNCTIVE.

(1.) The subjunctive is the mode of doubt or indecision:

Obéis, si tu veux qu'on *t'obéisse* un jour. VOLTAIRE.	*Obey, if thou wishest that one day others may obey thee.*

(2.) A verb, which is governed by the conjunction *que*, must be put in the subjunctive mode in French, though it may be in the indicative or conditional in English:[1]

1. When the part of the sentence, which precedes *que*, being interrogative or negative, expresses a doubt:

Pensez-vous que vous *réussissiez* dans cette affaire?	*Do you think that you may succeed in this affair?*
Je ne voudrais pas assurer, qu'on *le doive* écrire. BOILEAU.	*I would not affirm, that it should be written.*
Croyez-vous qu'il *vienne?*	*Do you believe he will come?*

2. When the verb preceding *que* expresses *consent, command, doubt, desire, surprise, want, duty, necessity, fear, apprehension:*

Je *permets*, je *souhaite*, je *doute*, je *veux*, *j'ordonne*, je *suis surpris* que vous *veniez.*	*I permit, I wish, I doubt, I desire, I order, I am surprised, that you may* or *should come.*
Dès ce même moment, ordonnez que je *parte.* RACINE.	*Order, that I may depart this very moment.*
Tu veux qu'en ta faveur nous *croyions* l'impossible. CORNEILLE.	*Thou wishest that for thy sake we may believe in impossibilities.*
Je *suis ravi* que nous *logions* ensemble. DESTOUCHES.	*I am delighted that we happen to live together.*

3. When the first verb expresses fear or apprehension, the verb preceded by *que*, must also be preceded by *ne:*

Je crains, je tremble, j'appréhende, j'ai peur, qu'il *ne vienne.* GIRAULT-DUVIVIER.	*I fear, I tremble, I apprehend, I am afraid he may come.*

(3.) The pronouns *qui, que, lequel, dont*, and the word *où*, meaning *in which*, should be followed by the subjunctive, when that part of the sentence which precedes them, expresses an interrogation, or implies a wish, a doubt, or a condition. They must also be followed by the verb in the subjunctive, when they are preceded by a superlative relative [§ 14, (9.)].

Y a-t-il quelqu'un *qui* ne *respecte* le malheur.	*Is there any one who does not respect misfortune.*

[1] When two verbs are united by the conjunction *que*, the second is put in the indicative, if the first expresses something certain, positive:

On m'assure que vous *avez* reçu une lettre de votre père.	*They assure me that you have received a letter from your father.*

La meilleure chose que vous *puissiez* faire. — *The best thing that you can do.*

Choisissez une retraite *où* vous *soyez* tranquille. — *Choose a retreat in which you may enjoy repose.*

(4.) A verb preceded by *que* and one of the unipersonal verbs *falloir, importer, convenir, suffire, valoir mieux*, or by the verb *être*, used unipersonally in connection with the adjectives *fâcheux, juste, injuste, suprenant, possible*, or with *à propos, temps, à désirer, à souhaiter*, etc., must be put in the subjunctive [*see* L. 73, R. 1.]:

Il *faut* que vous *veniez*. — *You must come*, or *it is necessary that you should come.*

Il *est* temps que vous *partiez* pour Rome. — *It is time that you should go to Rome.*

Il ne me *plaît* pas que vous *alliez* là. LA ACADÉMIE. — *It does not please me that you should go there.*

Il *n'est* pas certain que vous *ayez* raison. — *It is not certain that you are right.*

(5.) After the expressions *quelque . . . que, quel que, si . . . que, quoique*, the verb is always put in the subjunctive:

*Quelqu'*effort que *fassent* les hommes, leur néant paraît partout. BOSSUET. — *Whatever effort men may make, their nothingness appears everywhere.*

Qui que ce *soit*, parlez, et ne le craignez pas. RACINE. — *Whoever he may be, speak, and do not fear him.*

Si mince qu'il *puisse* être, un cheveu fait de l'ombre. VILLEFRÉ. — *However thin it may be, a hair has a shadow.*

(6.) For the other conjunctions which must be followed by the subjunctive, see § 143.

§ 128.—THE INFINITIVE.

(1.) The infinitive represents the being, action or passion, in an indefinite manner, and without number or person:

Vouloir tromper le ciel, c'est folie à la terre. LA FONTAINE. — *To wish to deceive Heaven, is folly in men.*

L'ardeur de *vaincre* cède à la peur *de mourir*. CORNEILLE. — *The ardor of conquest (to conquer) yields to the fear of death (to die).*

Haïr est un tourment. SÉGUR. — *To hate is a torment.*

(2.) The infinitive is often used substantively:

Ou plutôt, que ne puis-je au doux *tomber* du jour? LAMARTINE. — *Or rather, why can I not at the sweet close of the day?*

(3.) The infinitive present is used, in French, after certain verbs, which are, in English, joined to other verbs by the conjunction *and*:

Allez *chercher* mon père. — *Go and fetch my father.*

(4.) We might give as a general rule, that a verb immediately preceded and governed by another verb (*avoir* and *être* excepted) or by a preposition (*en* excepted) is put in the present of the infinitive:

Tout ce qu'elle s'imaginait *tenir*, lui échappait tout à coup. FÉNELON. — *All that she fancied that she held, escaped her suddenly.*

Vos raisons sont trop bonnes d'elles-mêmes, *sans être* appuyées de ces secours étrangers. RACINE.	*Your reasons are too good in themselves, to need that foreign assistance.*
Vous pensez tout *savoir*. PIEYRE.	*You think that you know everything.*
Croit-il le *pouvoir rompre*? TH. CORNEILLE.	*Does he believe he can break it?*

(5.) The French language, preferring the active to the passive voice, requires the use of the active verb in the following and similar cases wherein the English use the passive voice:

Cette dame est bien *à plaindre*.	*That lady is much to be pitied.*
Cette maison est *à vendre*.	*This house is to be sold.*
La chose est de trop peu de conséquence pour la *traiter* sérieusement. VOLTAIRE.	*The matter is of too little consequence to be treated seriously.*

§ 129.—GOVERNMENT OF VERBS.

Some verbs are, in English, governed by prepositions different from those which connect or govern the same verbs in French. Some, again, which are, in English, joined by prepositions, require none between them in French. We give below, lists of verbs with the appropriate prepositions, according to the best French authorities:

§ 130.—VERBS REQUIRING NO PREPOSITION BEFORE ANOTHER VERB IN THE INFINITIVE.

Accourir,	*to run*	Observer,	*to notice, to observe*
Aimer mieux,	*to prefer*	Oser,	*to dare*
Aller,	*to go*	Paraître,	*to seem*
Apercevoir,	*to perceive*	Penser,	*to think, to fancy*
Assurer,	*to assure*	Pouvoir,	*to be able*
Avouer,	*to confess*	Prétendre,	*to pretend*
Compter,	*to intend*	Préférer,	*to prefer*
Confesser,	*to confess*	Protester,	*to protest*
Courir,	*to run*	Rappeler (se),	*to remember*
Croire,	*to believe*	Rapporter,	*to report*
Daigner,	*to deign*	Reconnaître,	*to acknowledge*
Déclarer,	*to declare*	Regarder,	*to look at*
Désirer,	*to desire*	Retourner,	*to return*
Devoir,	*to be obliged*	Revenir,	*to come back*
Écouter,	*to hear, to listen*	Savoir,	*to know*
Entendre,	*to hear*	Sembler,	*to seem*
Envoyer,	*to send*	Sentir,	*to feel*
Espérer,	*to hope*	Souhaiter,	*to wish*
Faire,	*to make*	Soutenir,	*to maintain*
Falloir,	*to be necessary*	Témoigner,	*to testify*
Imaginer, (s')	*to imagine*	Valoir mieux,	*to be better*
Laisser,	*to let, to suffer*	Venir,	*to come*
Mener,	*to take, to lead*	Voir,	*to see*
Nier,	*to deny*	Vouloir,	*to be willing*

Je *prétends* vous *traiter* comme mon propre fils. RACINE.	*I intend to treat you as my own son.*

Et le Rhin de ses flots *ira grossir* la Loire,	*And the Rhine will go and swell the Loire with its waves,*
Avant que tes faveurs sortent de ma mémoire. BOILEAU.	*before the remembrance of thy goodness leaves my memory.*

§ 131.—VERBS REQUIRING THE PREPOSITION A BEFORE AN INFINITIVE.

The (*se*) placed after the verb shows it to be reflective.

Abaisser (s'),	*to stoop*
Aboutir,	*to end in*
Accorder (s'),	*to agree*
Accoutumer,	*to accustom*
Acharner (s'),	*to strive*
Admettre,	*to admit, to permit*
Aguerrir (s'),	*to become inured*
Aider,	*to help in*
Aimer,	*to like*
Appliquer (s'),	*to endeavor, to apply*
Apprendre,	*to learn*
Apprêter (s'),	*to prepare*
Aspirer,	*to aspire*
Assigner,	*to summon*
Assujettir (s'),	*to subject one's self*
Attacher (s'),	*to apply*
Attendre (s'),	*to expect*
Attendre,	*to put off*
Augmenter (s'),	*to increase*
Autoriser,	*to authorize*
Avilir (s'),	*to debase one's self*
Avoir,	*to have*
Avoir peine,	*to have difficulty in*
Balancer,	*to hesitate*
Borner (se),	*to confine one's self*
Chercher,	*to endeavor*
Complaire,	*to delight in*
Concourir,	*to co-operate*
Condamner (se),	*to condemn one's self*
Condescendre,	*to condescend*
Consentir,	*to consent*
Consister,	*to consist*
Conspirer,	*to conspire*
Consumer,	*to destroy*
Contribuer,	*to contribute*
Convier,	*to invite*
Coûter.	*to cost*
Déterminer,	*to induce*
Déterminer (se),	*to resolve*
Disposer (se),	*to prepare one's self*
Divertir (se),	*to amuse one's self*
Employer,	*to employ, to devote*
Encourager,	*to encourage*
Engager,	*to induce*
Enhardir,	*to encourage*
Enseigner,	*to teach*
Être, être à lire, à écrire, etc.	*to be reading, writing, etc.*
Entendre (s'),	*to be expert in*
Évertuer (s'),	*to strive*
Exceller,	*to excel*
Exciter,	*to excite*
Exhorter,	*to exhort*
Exposer (s'),	*to expose one's self*
Fatiguer (se),	*to weary one's self*
Habituer (s'),	*to become used to*
Hasarder (se),	*to venture*
Hésiter,	*to hesitate*
Instruire,	*to instruct*
Intéresser,	*to interest*
Inviter,	*to invite*
Mettre,	*to set, to put*
Mettre (se),	*to commence*
Montrer,	*to show, to teach*
Obstiner (s'),	*to persist in*
Offrir (s'),	*to offer*
Pencher,	*to incline*
Penser,	*to think, to intend*
Persévérer,	*to persevere*
Persister,	*to persist*
Plaire (se),	*to delight in*
Prendre plaisir,	*to take pleasure*
Préparer (se),	*to prepare*
Porter, Provoquer,	*to induce, to excite, to urge*
Pousser,	*to urge*
Réduire,	*to constrain*
Réduire (se),	*to tend, to end*
Renoncer,	*to renounce*
Répugner,	*to be repugnant*
Résigner (se),	*to be reconciled*
Rester,	*to tarry too long*
Réussir,	*to succeed*
Risquer,	*to risk*
Servir,	*to serve*
Songer,	*to think, to intend*
Suffire (not unip.),	*to suffice*
Tarder,	*to tarry*
Tendre,	*to tend*
Tenir,	*to intend, to aim*
Travailler,	*to labor*
Viser,	*to aim*
Vouer,	*to devote*

L' homme *n'aime* point *à* s'occuper de son néant, et de sa bassesse. — *Man does not like to contemplate his nothingness, and his vileness.*

MASSILLON.

Avez-vous jamais *pensé à offrir* à Dieu toutes ces souffrances? — *Have you ever thought of offering all these sufferings to God?*

THE SAME.

§ 132.—VERBS REQUIRING THE PREPOSITION DE BEFORE AN INFINITIVE.

Abstenir (s'),	*to abstain*	Désaccoutumer (se),	*to leave off*
Accuser (s'),	*to accuse one's self*	Déshabituer (se),	*to leave off*
Achever,	*to finish*	Désespérer,	*to despair*
Affecter,	*to affect*	Désoler, (se),	*to grieve*
Affliger (s'),	*to grieve*	Détourner,	*to dissuade*
Agir (s'), unip.,	*to be the question*	Différer,	*to put off*
Applaudir (s'),	*to rejoice*	Dire,	*to say, tell*
Appréhender,	*to apprehend*	Disconvenir,	*to deny*
Avertir,	*to warn*	Discontinuer,	*to discontinue*
Aviser (s'),	*to bethink one's self*	Dispenser,	*to dispense*
Avoir besoin,	*to want*	Dispenser (se),	*to forbear*
Avoir coutume,	*to be accustomed*	Disculper (se),	*to apologize*
Avoir dessein,	*to intend*	Dissuader,	*to dissuade*
Avoir envie,	*to wish*	Douter,	*to doubt*
Avoir garde,	*to take care*	Efforcer (s'),	*to endeavor*
Avoir honte,	*to be ashamed*	Effrayer (s'),	*to be frightened*
Avoir intention,	*to intend*	Empêcher,	*to prevent*
Avoir le temps,	*to have time*	Empresser (s'),	*to hasten*
Avoir le courage,	*to have courage*	Épouvanter (s'),	*to be frightened*
Avoir peur,	*to be afraid*	Entreprendre,	*to undertake*
Avoir raison,	*to be right*	Enrager,	*to be vexed*
Avoir regret,	*to regret*	Étonner (s'),	*to wonder*
Avoir tort,	*to be wrong*	Éviter,	*to avoid*
Avoir sujet,	*to have reason*	Excuser (s'),	*to excuse one's self*
Avoir soin,	*to take care*	Féliciter,	*to congratulate*
Blâmer,	*to blame*	Feindre,	*to feign*
Brûler,	*to wish ardently*	Flatter (se),	*to flatter one's self*
Censurer,	*to censure*	Frémir,	*to shudder*
Cesser,	*to cease*	Garder (se),	*to take care*
Chagriner (se),	*to grieve one's self*	Gémir,	*to lament*
Charger,	*to desire, to intrust*	Glorifier (se),	*to pride one's self*
Charger (se),	*to take on one's self*	Hasarder (se),	*to venture*
Choisir,	*to choose*	Hâter (se),	*to hasten*
Commander,	*to command*	Imputer,	*to impute*
Conjurer,	*to beseech*	Indigner (s'),	*to be indignant*
Conseiller,	*to advise*	Ingérer (s'),	*to take into one's head*
Contenter (se),	*to be satisfied*	Inspirer,	*to inspire*
Convaincre,	*to convince*	Jurer,	*to swear*
Convenir,	*to become, suit*	Manquer,	*to fail*
Corriger,	*to correct*	Méditer,	*to think, to intend*
Craindre,	*to fear*	Mêler, (se),	*to meddle*
Décourager,	*to discourage*	Menacer,	*to threaten*
Dédaigner,	*to disdain*	Mériter,	*to deserve*
Défendre,	*to forbid*	Moquer (se),	*to laugh at*
Défendre (se),	*to decline*		
Defier,	*to challenge, to dare*		
Dépêcher (se),	*to hasten*		

Mourir (used figuratively),	*to long*
Négliger,	*to neglect*
Nier,	*to deny*
Pardonner,	*to excuse*
Parler,	*to speak*
Passer (se),	*to do without*
Permettre,	*to permit*
Persuader,	*to persuade*
Piquer (se),	*to take pride in*
Plaindre,	*to pity*
Plaindre (se),	*to complain*
Prendre garde,	*to take care, heed*
Prendre soin,	*to take care*
Prescrire,	*to prescribe*
Presser,	*to urge*
Presser (se),	*to hasten*
Présumer,	*to presume*
Prier,	*to desire*
Promettre,	*to promise*
Proposer,	*to propose*
Proposer (se),	*to intend*
Protester,	*to protest*
Punir,	*to punish*
Rebuter (se),	*to be weary*
Recommander,	*to recommend*
Refuser,	*to refuse*
Regretter,	*to regret*
Réjouir (se),	*to rejoice*
Remercier,	*to thank*
Repentir (se),	*to repent*
Reprendre,	*to censure*
Réprimander,	*to reprimand*
Reprocher (se),	*to reproach one's self*
Résoudre,	*to resolve*
Ressouvenir (se),	*to remember*
Rire,	*to laugh*
Rougir,	*to blush*
Scandaliser (se),	*to take offence*
Seoir (unip.),	*to become, suit*
Sommer,	*to summon*
Soupçonner,	*to suspect*
Souvenir (se),	*to remember*
Suffire (unip.),	*to suffice*
Suggérer,	*to suggest*
Supplier,	*to beseech*
Tenter,	*to attempt*
Trembler,	*to tremble*
Vanter (se),	*to boast*

Il vaut mieux *hasarder de sauver* un coupable, que *de condamner* un innocent. VOLTAIRE.

It is better to run the risk of sparing a guilty person, than to condemn an innocent one.

Le monde *se vante de faire* des heureux. MASSILLON.

The world boasts that it can render men happy.

§ 133.—RULE.

(1.) Two or more verbs may govern the same object, provided they require the same regimen:

Nous *aimons*, nous *instruisons*, et nous *louons* nos *enfants*.

We love, we instruct, and we praise our children.

This sentence is correct, because *aimer*, *instruire*, and *louer*, being active verbs, govern one and the same case, the direct regimen.

(2.) But when the verbs require different regimens, they cannot govern one and the same noun; and therefore another form must be given to the sentence. We could not say in French—Un grand nombre de vaisseaux *entrent* et *sortent de* ce port tout les mois—*A great number of vessels enter and go out of this port every month*, because the verb *entrer* reaches its regimen by means of the preposition *dans*, and *sortir* by means of the preposition *de*. We should say:

Un grand nombre de vaisseaux entrent *dans* ce port, et *en* sortent tous les mois.

A large number of vessels enter this port, and leave it every month.

See § 92, (1.) (2.), also note, and § 140.

§ 134.—The Participle Past.

(1.) We have seen [§ 66, (3.)] that the participle past, not accompanied by an auxiliary, assumes the gender and number of the noun which it qualifies:

Les inimitiés sourdes et *cachées* sont plus à craindre que les haines *ouvertes* et *déclarées*. NOEL.

Quiet and concealed enmity is more to be feared than open and declared hatred.

(2.) The participle past accompanied by the auxiliary *être*, agrees in gender and number with the subject of the verb, whether the subject be placed before or after it. [*See* § 135, (1.)].

Le fer est *émoussé*; les bûchers sont *éteints*. VOLTAIRE.

The sword is blunted; the piles are extinguished.

La vertu obscure est souvent *méprisée*. MASSILLON.

Humble virtue is often despised.

Les Grecs étaient *persuadés* que l'âme est immortelle. BARTHÉLEMY.

The Greeks were persuaded that the soul is immortal.

Quand il vit l'urne où étaient *renfermées* les cendres d'Hippias, il versa un torrent de larmes. FÉNELON.

When he perceived the urn in which were enclosed the ashes of Hippias, he shed a torrent of tears.

(3.) The participle past, having *avoir* as its auxiliary, never agrees with the nominative:

Vous riez? Écrivez qu'elle *a ri*. RACINE.

You laugh? Put down that she laughed.

Mes amis *ont parlé*; leurs cœurs sont attendris. VOLTAIRE.

My friends have spoken; their hearts are moved.

Mes cousines *ont lu*. BESCHERELLE.

My cousins have read.

(4.) The participle past, having *avoir* for an auxiliary, agrees with its direct regimen, when that regimen precedes the participle:

La lettre *que* vous avez *écrite*.

The letter which you have written.

Pédro, qu'as tu fait de nos montures? Seigneur, je *les* ai *attachées* à la grille. LE SAGE.

Pedro, what hast thou done with our horses? My lord, I have tied them to the railing.

Les meilleures harangues sont celles *que* le cœur a *dictées*. MARMONTEL.

The best addresses are those which the heart has dictated.

Je *les* ai *cherchés* dans tous les coins, et je ne *les* ai pas *trouvés*. Mme. DE GENLIS.

I have sought them in every corner, but have not found them.

(5.) But, if the direct regimen is placed after the participle, this participle remains invariable:

J'ai *reçu* votre lettre.

I have received your letter.

C'est la vérité elle-même qui lui a *dicté* ces belles *paroles*. BOSSUET.

It is truth itself which has dictated to him those fine words.

Les dieux ont *attaché* presque autant de *malheurs* à la liberté, qu'à la servitude. MONTESQUIEU.

The gods have attached almost as many misfortunes to liberty, as to servitude.

§ 135.—REMARKS ON THE FOREGOING RULES.

(1.) Although the compound tenses of the reflective or pronominal verbs [§ 43, (6.), § 46, (2.), § 56] take *être* as an auxiliary, the past participle of those verbs does not follow the rule (2.) of the preceding section, but comes under the same rules with those conjugated with *avoir*. It agrees with the direct regimen, when that regimen comes before it, and is invariable when that regimen succeeds:

Votre sœur *s'est acheté* de belles robes.

Your sister has bought (herself) handsome dresses, i. e., *for herself.*

Cette femme *s'est rendue* malheureuse.

That woman has rendered herself unhappy.

Acheté, in the first example, does not vary, because *se*, placed before it, is an indirect regimen or dative, while the direct regimen or accusative, *robes*, is placed after the participle. *Rendue*, in the second example, varies, because the word *se*, representing *femme*, is a direct regimen, and precedes the participle.

We will add a few extracts as examples:

REFLECTIVE PRONOUNS.

Used as indirect Objects.

Ils ne *se* sont *proposé*, pour exemple, que la constitution la plus simple des anciens. VOLTAIRE.

They have proposed to themselves, as an example, only the most simple constitution of the ancients.

Il est vrai, qu'elle et moi nous *nous* sommes *parlé* des yeux. MOLIÈRE.

It is true, that she and I have spoken to each other with our eyes.

Néanmoins, il s'était *conservé* l'autorité principale. BOSSUET.

Nevertheless, he had preserved to himself the principal authority.

Used as direct Objects.

Elles *se* sont *proposées* comme des modèles de douceur. QUOTED BY BESCHER.

They have proposed themselves as patterns of gentleness.

La langue latine et la langue grecque *se* sont longtemps *parlées*. LEMARE.

The Latin and Greek languages were long spoken.

La vie pastorale qui s'est *conservée* dans l'Asie, n'est pas sans opulence. VOLTAIRE.

The pastoral life which has been preserved in Asia, is not without opulence.

(2.) When pronominal or reflective verbs, of which the second pronoun is an indirect regimen, are accompanied by another pronoun, or by a noun, used as a direct regimen, the participle agrees with this latter pronoun or noun, when it is preceded by it, and remains invariable, when the *régime direct* follows. See Rules (4.) (5.) of the preceding section:

Variable.	*Invariable.*
L'indiscrétion que nous nous sommes reprochée.	Nous nous sommes reproché l'indiscrétion.
The indiscretion with which we have reproached ourselves.	*We have reproached ourselves with the indiscretion.*

Or to render in English the relations the same as in French:

The indiscretion which we have reproached to ourselves.	*We have reproached to ourselves the indiscretion.*

(3.) The participle past conjugated with *avoir*, and preceded by a direct regimen, is sometimes followed by an infinitive. In such cases, when the direct regimen is under the government of the infinitive rather than of the participle, the latter of course remains unchanged:

La règle que j'ai *commencé* à expliquer.	*The rule which I commenced to explain.*

(4.) The verb in the infinitive is sometimes understood; yet the participle must follow the same rule, as if it were expressed. The participles *fait*, followed by an infinitive, and *laissé*, followed by the infinitive of an active verb, are always invariable:

Elle a obtenu toutes les faveurs qu'elle a *voulu* (obtenir).	*She obtained all the favors which she wished (to obtain).*
La maison *que* j'ai *fait* bâtir.	*The house which I have had built.*
Ces hommes *se* sont *laissé* bat	*These men have suffered themselves to be beaten.*

(5.) In some cases, it may be difficult to ascertain whether the *régime direct* is under the government of the participle, or of the infinitive.

If the *régime direct* is to be represented as performing the action expressed by the infinitive, the participle is made to agree with that *régime* in gender and number:

Je *les* ai *vus* secourir leurs ennemis.	*I saw them relieving their enemies.*

In this example it will be seen that *les* (*the régime direct*) is represented as actually doing what is expressed by the infinitive, and that the infinitive itself is translated by the *present participle*.

If, however, the *régime direct* is to be represented as suffering the action expressed by the infinitive, then the participle will remain unchanged, and the infinitive will be translated as a passive. Thus:

Je *les* ai *vu* secourir par leurs ennemis.	*I saw them relieved by their enemies.*

Further examples:

Variable.	*Invariable.*
Je *les* ai *vus* repousser les ennemis.	Je *les* ai *vu* repousser par les ennemis.
I saw them repel (repelling) the enemies.	*I saw them repelled by the enemies.*

Je *les* ai *vus* prendre la fuite.
I saw them taking flight.
Je *les* ai *vus* frapper.
I saw them striking.
Les personnes que j'ai *entendues* chanter.
The persons whom I heard singing.

Je *les* ai *vu* prendre sur le fait.
I saw them taken in the deed.
Je *les* ai *vu* frapper.
I saw them struck.
Les chansons que j'ai *entendu* chanter.
The songs which I heard sung.

(6.) The participles past of neuter verbs, conjugated with *avoir*, and those of unipersonal verbs, are always invariable:

Que de bien n'a-t-elle pas fait, pendant le peu de jours qu'elle a *régné!* FLÉCHIER.
How much good has she not done, during the few days that she reigned!

Les chaleurs excessives qu'il a *fait*, ont causé beaucoup de maladies. CONDILLAC.
The excessive heat which we have had, has caused much sickness.

(7.) The past participle never agrees with *en*, because *en* can have no other relation to the participle than that of an indirect regimen.[1] The presence of *en* does not, of course, prevent the agreement of the participle with a direct regimen preceding the verb:

Avez-vous mangé des fruits? *J'en* ai *mangé.*
Have you eaten of the fruits? I have eaten of them.

Tout le monde m'a offert des services, et personne ne m'*en* a *rendu.* Mme. DE MAINTENON.
Every body tendered me services, and no person rendered me any.

EN, *preceded by the direct Regimen of the Participle.*

Cassius naturellement fier et impérieux, ne cherchait dans la perte de César que la vengeance de quelques *injures qu'il* en avait *reçues.* VERTOT.
Cassius, naturally proud and imperious, sought in the death of Cesar only revenge for some injuries which he had received from him.

Rendez grâces au ciel qui *nous* en a *vengés.* CORNEILLE.
Render thanks to Heaven which has revenged us for it.

(8.) *Le peu* has in French two meanings; it signifies *a small quantity*, or *the want of.*

When it signifies *a small quantity*, the participle agrees with the noun which follows *le peu:*

Le peu d'affection que vous lui avez *témoignée*, lui a rendu le courage.
The little affection which you have shown him, has restored his courage.

[1] Noël and Chapsal, page 165. Several grammarians call *en* at times a régime direct. We think with Bescherelle (*Dictionnaire national, page* 1114), that *en* does not represent the entire direct regimen, but only a part of it, or rather merely refers to it, the direct regimen being itself understood. Ex. Avez-vous des livres? J'en ai. *Have you books? I have some.* In the latter sentence, the word quelques uns, *the direct object* is understood after the verb. *J'en ai quelques uns*, and *en* is rather a reference to it, than a substitute for it. The literal translation of the sentence will show this: *I have of them a few.*

When *le peu* is used in the sense of *the want of*, the participle remains unaltered.

Le peu d'affection que vous lui avez *témoigné*, l'a découragé.	*The want of affection which you have shown him, has discouraged him.*

§ 136.—The Adverb.—Rules.—Place of the Adverb.

(1.) In French, the adverb used to modify a verb in a simple tense, is generally placed after the verb:

Que de gens prennent *hardiment* le masque de la vertu! SCUDÉRI.	*How many people assume boldly the mask of virtue!*

(3.) Adverbs of place, and those used in interrogation, have the same place in French as in English:

Où est votre frère? Il est *ici*.	*Where is your brother? He is here.*

(3.) In compound tenses, the adverb is placed between the auxiliary and the participle:

Vous avez *mal* fait.	*You have done wrong.*
Il nous a *bien* reçus.	*He received us well.*

(4.) Adverbs of manner ending in *ment*, may, in compound tenses, be placed before the participle or after it, when they are not very long, or followed by other modifying words. When, however, they are followed by such words, they must be placed after the participle:

Cela est *heureusement* exprimé. / Cela est exprimé *heureusement*.	*That is happily expressed.*
Il est venu *heureusement à temps*.	*He came fortunately in time.*

(5.) The adverbs aujourd'hui, *to-day;* demain, *to-morrow;* hier, *yesterday*, may be placed before or after the verb, but never between the auxiliary and the participle. The adverb davantage, *more*, must always follow the participle:

Nous sommes arrivés *aujourd'hui*.	*We came to day.*
Votre frère s'est blessé *hier*.	*Your brother hurt himself yesterday.*
Aujourd'hui il fait beau-temps; *demain* il pleuvra.	*To-day, it is fine weather; to-morrow it will rain.*
GIRAULT-DUVIVIER.	

§ 137.—Observations.

(1.) The adverbs of comparison, *plus*, *moins*, must be repeated before every adjective which they modify:

Il est *moins* paresseux et *moins* obstiné que son frère.	*He is less idle and obstinate than his brother.*

(2.) These adverbs, and the adverbs of quantity, need not be repeated before every noun; but the preposition *de*, which must always come between *peu*, *trop*, *beaucoup*, *tant*, *plus*, *moins*, and a noun or an adjective used substantively, must be repeated in every case:

Il n'y aurait pas *tant de* peine et *de* misère dans ce monde . . .	*There would not be so much trouble and misery in the world. . . .*
Ce libraire a *beaucoup de* bons et *de* mauvais ouvrages, dans son magasin.	*This bookseller has many good and bad works, in his establishment.*

(3.) The adverbs mieux, *better;* pis, *worse*, must not be confounded with the adjectives meilleur and pire. *See* note § 14, (7).

§ 138.—Adverbs of Negation.

(1.) The negation is composed of *ne*, placed before the verb, and *pas* or *point*, after it in the simple tenses. The second negative comes between the auxiliary and the verb, in the compound tenses:

Le ciel sur nos souhaits *ne* règle *pas* les choses. CORNEILLE.	*Heaven does not regulate things according to our wishes.*
Rome n'attache *point* le grade à la noblesse. CORNEILLE.	*Rome does not by any means confine offices to the nobility.*
L'estime est le vrai principe de la considération, qui n'est *pas* toujours attaché aux dignités. FONTENELLE.	*Esteem is the true principle of consideration, which is not always attached to office.*
Les rois *ne* sont *point* protégés par les lois. CHÉNIER.	*Kings are by no means protected by laws.*

It will be seen in the above examples, that the negative *point*, is stronger than *pas*. The meaning of these two words, which are in fact substantives used adverbially to strengthen the negative *ne*, will sufficiently explain this:

N'allez pas, means *n'allez un pas*, do not go or move *one pace* or *step*. N'allez point, means *n'allez un point*, do not go or move *a point* or *dot*.

(2.) The second negative may be suppressed after the verbs *pouvoir*, *oser*, *savoir* and *cesser:*

Non, déesse; je *ne* puis souffrir, qu'un de leurs vaisseaux fasse naufrage. FÉNELON.	*No, goddess; I cannot suffer that a single one of their vessels perish.*
Dans son appartement elle n'osait rentrer. VOLTAIRE.	*She dared not re-enter her apartment.*
Qui vit haï de tous, *ne* saurait longtemps vivre. CORNEILLE.	*He who lives hated by all, cannot exist long.*
La liberté *ne* cesse d'être aimable. CORNEILLE.	*Liberty cannot cease to be worthy of love.*

(3.) *Pas* or *point* is suppressed, when the verb is modified by another negative word, such as *jamais*, *guère*, *nul*, *nullement*, *aucun*,

personne, *ni*, etc., or followed by *que*, meaning *only*, and *plus* used negatively:

L'ambition, seigneur, *n'a guère* de limites. BOURSAULT.	*Ambition, my lord, has scarcely any limits.*
Nul n'est heureux, s'il ne jouit de sa propre estime. J. J. ROUSSEAU.	*No one is happy, unless he can esteem himself.*
Personne n'aime à recevoir de conseils. DE SÉGUR.	*No one likes to receive advice.*
Un méchant *ne* sait *jamais* pardonner. NOEL.	*A wicked man never knows how to forgive.*

(4.) NE *used Idiomatically*, [§ 127, (2,) 3.]

The negative *ne*, is used without any negative sense, after the conjunctions, à moins que, *unless*; de peur que, de crainte que, *for fear that*:

A moins que vous *ne* lui parliez.	*Unless you speak to him.*
De peur qu'on *ne* vous trompe. L'ACADÉMIE.	*For fear*, or *lest you might be deceived.*

(5.) *Ne* is used in the same manner after autre, *different*; autrement, *otherwise*; plus, moins, mieux, forming a comparison, and after the verbs craindre, avoir peur, trembler, appréhender, empêcher:

Il est tout autre qu'il *n'était*.	*He is very different from what he was.*
Il parle autrement qu'il *n'agit*.	*He speaks and acts very differently.*
Il est plus modeste qu'il *ne* le paraît.	*He is more modest than he appears.*
Je crains presque, je crains, qu'un songe *ne* m'abuse. RACINE.	*I am almost afraid that (lest) a dream is deceiving me.*
Vous avez bien peur que je *ne* change d'avis. MARIVAUX.	*You fear much lest I may change my mind.*
La pluie empêcha qu'on *ne* se promenât dans les jardins. RACINE.	*The rain prevented their taking a walk in the gardens.*

(6.) *Remark.*—*Ne* is not used when the verb of the preceding proposition is accompanied by a negative:

Il ne parle pas autrement qu'il agit.	*He does not speak otherwise than he acts.*
Il n'est pas plus modeste qu'il le paraît.	*He is not more modest than he appears.*

(7.) After *craindre*, *appréhender*, *avoir peur*, *trembler*, we put *pas* after the *ne* when we wish for the accomplishment of the action expressed by the second verb:

Je crains qu'il *ne* vienne *pas*.	*I fear that he may not come.*
J'ai peur que mon frère *n'arrive pas*.	*I am afraid that my brother may not come.*

§ 139.—The Preposition.—Regimen of Prepositions and Prepositional Phrases.

(1.) Prepositions may be divided, according to their regimen, into three classes:

1st. Prepositions governing nouns without the aid of another preposition. They are:[1]

A,	*at* or *to*,	Hors,	*except*, (*see* hors below)
De,	*of, from*	Hormis,	
Dès,	*from*,	Malgré,	*in spite of*
Après,	*after*	Moyennant,	*by means of*
Attendu,	*on account of*	Joignant,	*joining*
Avant,	*before*	Nonobstant,	*notwithstanding*
Avec,	*with*	Outre,	*besides*
Chez,	*with, at the house of*	Par,	*by*
		Pour,	*for*
Concernant,	*touching*	Parmi,	*among, amongst*
Contre,	*against*	Pendant,	*during*
Dans,	*in*	Sans,	*without*
Depuis,	*since*	Sauf,	*safe, save*
Derrière,	*behind*	Selon,	*according to*
Dessus,	*above*	Sous,	*under*
Dessous,	*under*	Suivant,	*according to*
Devers,	*towards*	Sur,	*upon*
Devant,	*before*	Touchant,	*touching*
Durant,	*during*	A travers,	*through*
En,	*in*	Vers,	*towards*
Entre,	*between*	Voici,	*here is*
Envers,	*towards*	Voilà,	*there is*
Excepté,	*except.*	Vu,	*considering*

2d. Prepositions requiring the preposition *de* after them:[2]

Auprès,	*near*	A la réserve,	*reserving*
Autour,	*around*	A l'exception,	*excepting*
Ensuite,	*after*	A l'exclusion,	*excluding*
Faute,	*for want*	A l'égard,	*with regard*
Hors,	*out of*	A l'insu,	*unknown*
Loin,	*far*	A l'opposite,	*contrary*
Près,	*near*	A moins,	*unless, for less*
Proche,	*near*	A raison,	*by reason, at the rate*
A cause,	*on account*		
A côté,	*by the side*	Au rez,	*on a level*
A couvert,	*under cover*	Au deça,	*this way*
A fleur,	*even with*	Au delà,	*that way, beyond*
A force,	*by dint*	Au dessous,	*under*
A la faveur,	*by means*	Au dessus,	*above*
A l'abri,	*under shelter*	Au dedans,	*within*
A la mode,	*according to the fashion*	Au dehors,	*without*
		Au devant,	*before, to meet*

[1] Governing the accusative.
[2] Governing the genitive or ablative.

Au milieu,	*in the middle*	Au travers,	*through*
Au lieu,	*instead*	Aux dépens,	*at the expense*
Au moyen,	*by means*	Aux environs	*in the neighborhood*
Au niveau,	*on a level*	En dépit,	*in spite*
Au péril,	*at the peril*	Le long,	*along*
Au prix,	*at the price*	Vis-à-vis,	*opposite*
Au risque,	*at the risk*		

3d. The prepositions followed by *à* are:

Attenant,	*joining*	Par rapport,	*with regard*
Jusque,	*as far as*	Quant,	*as to*

(2.) Many of the prepositions which govern the *régime direct*, are formed from active verbs. Almost all the prepositions requiring *de* before the regimen, are formed of a preposition and a noun. Those requiring the preposition *à*, have a relation of tendency, of aim, etc.

§ 140.—Remark.

The rules which we have given, [§ 92, (1.) (2.) note, and § 133], with regard to the regimen or government of verbs and adjectives, apply also to prepositions. When two prepositions require the same regimen, it is useless to repeat this regimen after each one, but, if they require a different regimen, it is necessary to give to each its proper object. It would, therefore, be incorrect to say—Un magistrat doit toujours juger suivant et conformément aux lois:—*A magistrate should always judge in accordance with, and conformably to, the laws;* because the preposition *suivant* governs the noun in the régime direct, that is without the aid of another preposition, and *conformément* governs the noun in the régime indirect by means of *à*. We should say:

Un magistrat doit toujours juger *suivant* les lois, et *conformément à* ce qu'elles prescrivent. Marmontel.

A magistrate should always judge in accordance with the laws, and conformably to what they prescribe.

§ 141.—Repetition of Prepositions.

1. The prepositions *à*, *de*, *en* and *sans*, must be repeated before every regimen, be it a noun, a pronoun or a verb:

Ce monde ci n'est qu'une loterie *de* biens, *de* rangs, *de* dignités, *de* droits. Voltaire.

This world is but a lottery of goods, of ranks, of dignities, of rights.

L'éloquence est un art très sérieux, destiné *à* instruire, *à* réprimer les passions, *à* corriger les mœurs, *à* soutenir les lois, etc. Fénelon.

Eloquence is a very important art, destined to instruct, to repress passions, to correct manners, to support the laws, etc.

Telle est la multitude, et *sans* frein et *sans* lois. La Harpe.

Such is the multitude, without restraint and without laws.

2. The other prepositions must also be repeated before every noun, pronoun, or verb, unless the words used as regimens, have a similarity of meaning, in which case the prepositions may be placed before the first regimen only, or before all, at the option of the speaker:

Je vous donne ceci *pour* vous et *pour* votre frère.	*I give you this for you and for your brother.*
Il perd sa jeunesse dans la mollesse et (dans) la volupté.	*He wastes his youth in effeminacy and voluptuousness.*

§ 142.—Observations on several Prepositions.

(1.) *Avant* marks a priority of time and place;—*Devant* means simply *opposite, in front of:*

Je marche *avant* vous.	*I walk before you*, i. e., *I walk earlier than you*, or *I have the precedence of you in walking.*
Je marche *devant* vous.	*I walk in front of you.*

(2.) *En, à, dans.*—The sense of *en* is more indefinite, more extensive than that of *dans*. *En* is generally used before the name of a division of the earth, a kingdom, etc.; *à* before the name of a town, and *dans* before a word restricted by an article or a determinative adjective:

En Europe, *en* France, *à* Paris, *dans* ma chambre.	*In Europe, in France, in Paris, in my room.*
En Amérique, ce sont les bisons qui ont une bosse sur le dos. Buffon.	*In America, the bisons have a bunch on their back.*
Dans l'Amérique méridionale, le bœuf était absolument inconnu. Buffon.	*In South America, the ox was entirely unknown.*

(3.) *Chez*, might be rendered in English by *at the house of, with, among*, etc.:

Chez votre père; *chez* vous.	*At your father's; at your house.*
La condition des comédiens était infâme *chez* les Romains, et honorable *chez* les Grecs. La Bruyère.	*The condition of comedians was infamous among the Romans, and honorable with the Greeks.*

§ 143.—The Conjunction.—Government of Conjunctions. [*See* § 127.]

(1.) Conjunctions govern the verbs following them, in the infinitive, the indicative, and the subjunctive modes.

1. The infinitive must be put after every conjunction which is followed by the preposition *de*, and after all those which differ from

prepositions only because they are followed by a verb, instead of a noun:

Étudiez diligemment *afin de* surpasser vos compagnons. — *Study diligently that you may (in order to) surpass your companions.*

We think with M. Bescherelle that the words described in the preceding rule, belong more properly to the prepositions than to the conjunctions.

(2.) The following conjunctions always require the subjunctive after them in French, whatever mode they may take in English. Those marked with an asterisk require *ne* before the verb [§ 138, (4.)]:

Afin que,	*in order that*	Malgré que,	*although*
*A moins que,	*unless*	Nonobstant que,	*notwithstanding*
Au cas que,	*if*	Non que,	*not that*
Avant que,	*before that*	Non pas que,	*not that*
Bien que,	*although*	Posé que,	*supposing that*
*De crainte que,	*for fear*	Pour que,	*that, in order that*
*De peur que,	*lest*	Pourvu que,	*provided that*
En cas que,	*in case*	Quoique que,	*although, though*
Encore que,	*although*	Sans que,	*without that*
Jusqu'à ce que,	*till, until that*	Soit que,	*whether*
Loin que,	*far from, not that*	Supposé que,	*suppose that*

Quoiqu'à peine à mes maux je *puisse* résister, J'aime mieux les souffrir, que de les mériter. RACINE.

Although I can scarcely bear my misfortunes, I would rather suffer under them, than deserve them.

En cas que vous *persistiez*, il faudra que j'allégue au prince et au roi même votre mauvaise santé. FÉNELON.

In case you persist, I must mention your bad health to the prince and even to the king.

(3.) The following conjunctions: De manière que, de sorte que, en sorte que, *so that;* tellement que, *in such a manner that;* si ce n'est que, sinon que, *unless that, but that;* govern the following verb in the indicative or conditional modes, when the preceding verb expresses a positive assertion; but they govern the subjunctive, when the preceding verb expresses a desire or a command:

Il se conduisit très mal, *de sorte* qu'il *fut* contraint de se retirer. — *He behaved very ill, so that he was obliged to withdraw.*

Faites *en sorte* qu'on *soit* content de vous. — *Behave in such a manner that people may be pleased with you.*

(4.) When there are in a sentence two or more verbs governed by a conjunction, *que* must be placed before the second and the following verbs, or the conjunction itself may be repeated:

Puisqu'on plaide, *qu'on* meurt, et *qu'on* devient malade, Il faut des médecins, il faut des avocats. LA FONTAINE.

Since we plead, we die and we become sick, we must have physicians, we must have lawyers.

Si vous partez, et *que* vous vouliez me prendre avec vous. BESCHERELLE.

If you go, and wish to take me with you.

(5.) The other conjunctions generally govern the same tense in French as in English:

Fais du bien aujourd'hui *puisque* tu vis encore. VILLEFRÉ.

Do good to-day, since thou yet livest.

Rien n'éblouit les grandes âmes, *parce que rien* n'est plus haut qu'elles. MASSILLON.

Nothing dazzles great minds, because nothing is higher than they.

(6.) With regard to the conjunction *si*, *see* § 125, (3.)

§ 144.—COLLOCATION OF WORDS.

(1.) The place of the different parts of speech has been mentioned in the Syntax, under their several heads, and in various other parts of the work. A *résumé* of the principal rules of construction may, however, not be unacceptable here.

(2.) The collocation of words, is the order according to which the several words which form a sentence should follow one another. This order is fixed for the several forms of sentences, affirmative, negative, and interrogative, by the genius of the language, and the practice of the best writers.

(3.) The construction of the affirmative sentence is as simple in French as it is in English. The following is the arrangement of the words:

1. *The Subject.*	2. *The Verb.*	3. *The Adverb*
Le marchand	est	ici.
The merchant	*is*	*here.*

(4.) When the subject is accompanied by an adjective, or another attribute, the order is as follows:

1. *The Subject.*	2. *Its Attribute.*[1]	3. *The Verb.*	4. *The Adverb.*
Le marchand	anglais	est	ici.
The merchant	*English*	*is*	*here.*
Le fils	de votre ami	est	ici.
The son	*of your friend*	*is*	*here.*
Le marteau	de fer	est	ici.
The hammer	*of iron*	*is*	*here.*
Le bateau	à vapeur	est	là.
The boat	*steam*	*is*	*there.*

[1] Some adjectives [§ 85, (11.)] are generally placed before the noun, when used alone with a noun; but when another adjective comes with them, they follow the noun:—un petit homme, *a little man;* un homme petit et gros, *a short, stout man*; others have a different meaning before the noun or after it [§ 86.]

(5.) When the attribute is placed in apposition with the subject, the construction is the same in the two languages:

1. *The Subject.*	2. *The Verb.*	3. *The Attribute.*
Le marchand	est	anglais.
The merchant	*is*	*English.*

(6.) When the verb is in a compound tense, many adverbs are placed between the auxiliary and the participle:

1. *The Subject.*	2. *The Auxiliary.*	3. *The Adverb.*	4. *The Participle.*
Nous	avons	souvent	lu.
We	*have*	*often*	*read.*

(7.) Long adverbs of manner, ending in *ment*, other long adverbs, and the adverbs of time and place, *aujourd'hui*, *demain*, *hier*, *ici*, *là*, are not placed between the auxiliary and the participle [§ 136, Lesson 41, 5.]:

Nous avons écrit aujourd'hui, *We have written to-day.*

(8.) When there is a direct regimen in the sentence, it is placed after the verb:

1. *Subject.*	2. *Attribute.*	3. *Verb.*	4. *Adverb.*	5. *Régime Direct.*
L'écolier	attentif	apprend	toujours	sa leçon.
The scholar	*attentive*	*learns*	*always*	*his lesson.*

(9.) When there are two regimens of equal length, or nearly so, the direct precedes the indirect:

1. *Subject.*	2. *Verb.*	3. *Direct Regimen.*	5. *Indirect Regimen.*
Jean	a donné	le livre	à mon père.
John	*has given*	*the book*	*to my father.*

(10.) Should the direct regimen be followed by a relative pronoun, or by attributes rendering it longer than the indirect regimen, the latter is placed first:

1. *Subj.*	2. *Verb.*	3. *Ind. Regimen.*	4. *Direct Regimen.*
Jean	a donné	à mon père	le livre qu'il lui avait promis.
John	*has given*	*to my father*	*the book which he had promised him.*

(11.) The pronouns representing the direct regimen, and those representing the indirect regimen, preceded by *to*, expressed or understood in English, are placed before the verb in French:

1. *Subject.*	2. *Direct Reg.*	3. *Verb.*	1. *Subject.*	2. *Ind. Reg.*	3. *Verb.*
Nous	les	voyons.	Nous	leur	parlons.
We	*them*	*see.*	*We*	*to them*	*speak*

(12.) In the imperative used affirmatively, those pronouns follow the verb:

1. *Verb.*	2. *Direct Reg.*	1. *Verb.*	2. *Ind. Reg.*
Voyez-	les.	Parlez-	leur.
See	*them.*	*Speak*	*to them.*

(13.) When two personal pronouns are used as regimens in a sentence, the indirect, if in the first or second person, precedes the direct:

1. *Subject.*	2. *Ind. Reg.*	3. *Direct Reg.*	4. *Verb.*
Paul	nous	le	donne.
Paul	*to us*	*it*	*gives.*
Paul	vous	le	donne.
Paul	*to you*	*it*	*gives.*

(14.) Should however, the indirect regimen be in the third person, it is placed after the direct:

1. *Subject.*	2. *Direct Reg.*	3. *Ind. Reg.*	4. *Verb.*
Paul	le	lui	donne.
Paul	*it*	*to him*	*gives.*

(15.) In the imperative used affirmatively, the direct regimen precedes always the indirect:

1. *Subj.*	2. *Dir. Reg.*	3. *Ind. Reg.*	1. *Verb.*	2. *Dir. Reg.*	3. *Ind. Reg.*
Donnez-	les-	nous.	Donnez-	les-	lui.
Give	*them*	*to us.*	*Give*	*them*	*to him.*

(16.) The pronoun representing a noun in the oblique cases, generally preceded in English by a preposition other than *to*, is, in French, placed after the verb:

1. *Subj.*	2. *Verb.*	3. *Ind. Reg.*	1. *Subj.*	2. *Verb.*	3. *Ind. Reg.*
Je	parle	de lui.	Je	parle	avec lui.
I	*speak*	*of him.*	*I*	*speak*	*with him.*

(17.) To render a sentence negative, *ne* is placed immediately before the verb, and *pas*, *jamais*, *rien*, etc., after it:

1. *Subject.*	2. *Negative.*	3. *Verb.*	4. *Negative.*
Je	ne	vois	pas.
I	*not*	*see*	*not.*
Je	ne	lis	jamais.
I	*not*	*read*	*never.*

(18.) When the verb is in a compound tense, the first negative is placed before the auxiliary, and the second between that auxiliary and the participle:

1. *Subject.*	2. *Negat.*	3. *Reg.*	4. *Aux.*	5. *Negat.*	6. *Participle.*
Je	ne	l'	ai	pas	vu
I	*not*	*him*	*have*	*not*	*seen.*
Je	ne	leur	ai	jamais	parlé.
I	*not*	*to them*	*have*	*never*	*spoken.*
Je	ne	leur	ai	rien	donné.
I	*not*	*to them*	*have*	*nothing*	*given.*

(19.) The pronouns used as direct regimens, and as indirect regimens, are placed before the imperative used negatively. They are subject to the rules of precedence, (13.) and (14.)

	1. *Negat.*	2. *Reg.*	3. *Reg.*	4. *Verb.*	5. *Negat.*
[Rule (13.)]	Ne	nous	le	donnez	pas.
	Not	*to us*	*it*	*give*	*not.*
[Rule (14.)]	Ne	le	lui	donnez	pas.
	Not	*it*	*to him*	*give*	*not.*

(20.) The construction of an interrogative sentence, which has a noun for its subject, differs in the two languages. The following examples will show the order of the words in French:

1. *The Subj.*	2. *Verb.*	3. *Duplicate Subj.*	4. *Regimen.*
Le marchand	reçoit-	il	son argent.
The merchant	*receives*	*he*	*his money.*
Mon frère	écrit-	il	des lettres?
My brother	*writes*	*he*	*letters?*

(21.) When the sentence commences with où, *where;* que, *what;* quel, *what, which;* combien, *how much, how many;* the noun may be placed after the verb:

Où est votre ami?	*Where is your friend?*
Que dit votre père?	*What says your father?*

(22.) The construction of interrogative sentences, in which the subject of the verb is a pronoun, is very simple. The pronoun is placed after the verb in simple tenses, and after the auxiliary in compound tenses:

1. *Ind. Regimen.*	2. *Verb.*	3. *Subject.*	4. *Direct Reg.*
Nous	envoyez-	vous	notre argent?
To us	*send*	*you*	*our money?*

1. *Ind. Reg.*	2. *Aux.*	3. *Subj.*	4. *Part.*	5. *Direct Reg.*
Leur	avez-	vous	donné	cet argent?
To them	*have*	*you*	*given*	*that money?*

(23.) The order of the words in a sentence, at once negative and interrogative, is as follows:

1. 1*st. Neg.*	2. *Reg. Prn.*	3. *Verb.*	4. *Subj.*	5. 2*d Neg.*	6. *Direct Reg.*
Ne	nous	envoyez-	vous	pas	de l'argent?
Not	*to us*	*send*	*you*	*not*	*money?*

(24.) In a compound tense:

1. 1*st Neg.*	2. *Reg. Prn.*	3. *Verb.*	4. *Subj.*	5. 2*d Neg.*	6. *Part.*	7. *Dir. Reg.*
Ne	nous	avez-	vous	pas	envoyé	de l'argent?
Not	*to us*	*have*	*you*	*not*	*sent*	*money?*

(25.) The first person singular of the present of the indicative of most verbs which have in that person only one syllable, and of a few others having more than one syllable, cannot admit of the construction mentioned in the 22d rule of this Section. To render the sen-

tence interrogative, *est-ce que* is prefixed to the affirmative form of the verb:

Est-ce que vous parlez?
Is it that you speak?
Do you speak?

Est-ce que je prétends lui parler?
Is it that I pretend to speak to him?
Do I pretend to speak to him?

(26.) Every person of a tense susceptible of being conjugated interrogatively, may be rendered so by prefixing *est-ce que* to the affirmative form:

Est-ce que vous lisez?	*Do you read?*
Est-ce que votre frère est arrivé?	*Is your brother arrived?*

(27.) In poetry and in elevated prose, the subject of an affirmative sentence is sometimes placed after the verb:

Tout-à-coup au jour vif et brillant de la zone torride, succède *une nuit* universelle et profonde; à la parure d'un printemps éternel, *la nudité* des plus tristes hivers.	*Suddenly to the vivid and brilliant day of the torrid zone, succeeds a universal and profound night; to the attire of an eternal spring, the nakedness of the saddest winters.*

RAYNAL.

(28.) The article, the demonstrative and the possessive adjective are repeated before every word which they determine [Lesson 86].

(29.) Pronouns, used as subjects of verbs, may be repeated before every verb [§ 99, Lesson 87].

(30.) Pronouns, used as regimens of verbs, must be repeated before every verb [§ 105, Lesson 87].

(31.) Prepositions are generally repeated before every word which they govern [§ 141].

§ 145.—USE OF CAPITAL LETTERS.

The only important difference existing in the two languages, in the use of capital letters, is that the French do not use a capital for an adjective, unless it be used substantively, and applied to a person or persons, or unless it form an integral part of a name:

Ce monsieur est-il *français?*	*Is that gentleman French?*
C'est un *Français?*	*He is a Frenchman?*
Est-il français?	*Is he French?*
Cette dame est-elle anglaise?	*Is that lady English?*
C'est une Anglaise.	*She is an English lady?*
Elle est anglaise.	*She is English?*
Apprenez-vous le français?	*Do you learn French?*
Je n'apprends pas l'anglais.	*I do not learn English?*
J'attends le Français qui demeure ici.	*I am waiting for the Frenchman who lives here.*
Le département des Basses-Alpes.	*The department of the Lower Alps.*
Le royaume des Pays-Bas.	*The kingdom of the Netherlands.*

§ 146.—Elision.

(1.) Elision is the suppression of the final vowel of a word, and the substitution of an apostrophe (') before words commencing with a vowel or an *h* mute:

A is only elided in *la*, article or pronoun:—L'âme, *the soul*, instead of *la âme;* l'humilité, *humility*, instead of *la humilité*—je l'admire, je l'honore, *I admire her, I honor her*, instead of *je la admire, je la honore.*

E is elided in *le*, article or pronoun, in *je, te, me, se, ce*, (meaning, *it*, dem. prn.), *de, ne, que, parce que, quoique, puisque, jusque, quelque:*—l'ami, *the friend;* l'homme, *the man.*

I is only elided in *si* coming before il, *he;* ils, *they.*

O and U are never elided.

(2.) Although the words *onze* and *onzième* commence with a vowel, the article is not elided before them; *le onze, le onzième.*

§ 147.—Analogy between many English and French Words.

(1.) Most words ending in *al, ce, de, ge, le, me, ant, ent, ion*, are the same in both languages:

AL Minéral, général, animal, principal, fatal.
CE Race, prudence, notice, sacrifice, édifice.
DE Parade, grade, ambuscade, parricide, prélude.
GE Courage, page, vestige, orange, déluge.
LE Docile, capable, table, possible, fertile, ridicule.
ME Doctrine, mine, scène, famine, machine, héroïne.
ANT Dormant, vigilant, constant, instant, arrogant.
ENT Présent, content, accident, président, résident.
ION Question, fraction, légion, pension, religion.

(2.) Most words ending in *ary, ory, gy, ncy, ty, ous, or, ine, ive*, become French by changing:

ARY	into	AIRE	Nécessaire, militaire.
ORY	"	OIRE	Mémoire, gloire, victoire.
GY	"	GIE	Energie, géologie, effigie.
NCY	"	NCE	Clémence, décence, excellence.
TY	"	TÉ	Charité, alacrité, divinité.
OUS	"	EUX	Industrieux, curieux, fameux.
OR	"	EUR	Candeur, ardeur, acteur.
INE	"	IN	Masculin, féminin, clandestin.
IVE	"	IF	Actif, passif, massif.

§ 148.—Gallicisms or Idiomatic Phrases.

Gallicisms, or idioms peculiar to the language, are very numerous in French. We have already in the first part of this work, presented a considerable number of such expressions, and will here give a somewhat extended list of those not placed in the examples and exercises. In proverbial sayings, we have endeavored to give the equivalent English phrase. We would advise the student to analyze carefully the following idiomatic sentences, and particularly those which do not admit of a literal or near translation. Idioms and proverbial phrases give a great insight into the character and customs of a nation, and their analysis is often of great assistance in the acquisition of a language:

Ce piano n'est pas d'accord.	*This piano is out of tune.*
Arrangez cette affaire à l'amiable.	*Settle that business amicably.*
Nous sommes d'accord sur ce point.	*We agree upon that point.*
Quel âge donneriez-vous à cet homme?	*How old would you take that man to be?*
Cela fera bien mon affaire.	*That will suit me exactly.*
Allons au fait.	*Let us come to the point.*
Vous mettez ma patience à bout.	*You exhaust my patience.*
Ce sont deux têtes dans un bonnet.	*They are both of the same mind.*
Vous avez toujours ces propos à la bouche.	*You always use those expressions.*
Entre nous soit dit, ce n'est pas la mer à boire.	*Between ourselves, the thing is not so very difficult.*
Vous ne savez plus de quel bois faire flèche.	*You are put to your last shift. You are at your wit's end.*
J'avais ce mot sur le bout des lèvres.	*I had that word at my tongue's end.*
C'est son bras droit.	*He is his right hand.*
Il nous a fermé la porte au nez.	*He shut the door in our face.*
Vous allez toujours droit au but.	*You come always to the main point.*
En tout cas, je leur remettrai votre lettre.	*At all events, I will give them your letter.*
Ne voyez-vous pas qu'il rit sous cape?	*Do you not see that he laughs in his sleeve?*
Nous avons piqué des deux.	*We put spurs to our horses.*
Nous en sommes sur ce chapitre.	*We are speaking about this matter.*
Oh! pour le coup, vous avez raison.	*Oh! for this time, you are right.*
Cet orateur bat la campagne	*That speaker wanders from his subject.*
Parlez-moi à cœur ouvert.	*Speak to me without reserve, openly.*
Nous avons couché à la belle étoile.	*We slept in the open air.*
Je n'ai que faire de son argent.	*I do not want his money.*
J'ai fait si bien mon compte, que j'ai obtenu cet argent.	*I managed matters so well, that I obtained that money.*
Cela ne me fait rien du tout.	*That is nothing at all to me.*
Faites-moi grâce de tous ces détails.	*Spare me all those particulars.*
C'en est fait.	*It is all over. All is gone.*
Comme vous voilà fait!	*What a condition you are in!*

Il m'a prié de vous faire ses amitiés.	*He wished me to give his love to you.*
En attendant, faites-lui mes compliments.	*In the mean while, present my compliments to him.*
Chemin faisant, nous le rencontrâmes.	*Going along, we met him.*
Le plus fort est fait.	*The most difficult part is done.*
Ce soldat n'a jamais vu le feu.	*That soldier has never smelt gunpowder.*
Il s'est bien tiré d'affaire.	*He came off very well.*
Nous sommes au fort de l'hiver.	*We are in the depth of winter*
Qu'allait-il faire dans cette galère?	*What business had he there?*
C'est un homme comme il faut.	*He is a gentleman.*
Ce drap est hors de prix.	*That cloth is extravagantly dear.*
Il se fit jour à travers les ennemis.	*He forced his way through the enemy.*
Je vois cela dans un autre jour.	*I see that in a different light.*
Dites-moi au juste ce qu'il en est.	*Tell me exactly how the matter stands.*
Il ne laisse pas de dépenser beaucoup.	*He spends a great deal, nevertheless.*
C'est une autre paire de manches.	*That is quite another thing.*
C'est un tour de son métier.	*That is one of his tricks.*
Vous l'avez mis au pied du mur.	*You left him no excuse.*
Voilà qui va le mieux du monde.	*That is going on finely.*
Revenons à nos moutons.	*Let us resume our subject.*
Cela est d'un bon naturel.	*That bespeaks a good disposition.*
Ces arbustes grandissent à vue d'œil.	*Those shrubs grow perceptibly.*
Je regarde cela d'un autre œil.	*I look upon that in a different light.*
Il a vendu sa montre pour un morceau de pain.	*He sold his watch for a mere song.*
Vous lui avez donné la monnaie de sa pièce.	*You paid him in his own coin.*
Il a trouvé à qui parler.	*He met with his match.*
Vous êtes un homme de parole.	*You are a man of your word.*
Je lui ai coupé la parole.	*I cut him short.*
Vous avez cela sur le cœur.	*You cannot digest that.*
Il se creuse la cervelle.	*He racks his brain.*
Le jeu n'en vaut pas la chandelle.	*The toll is more than the grist.*
Vous avez pris le change.	*You started upon the wrong scent.*
Chansons que tout cela.	*That is all nonsense.*
Les bons comptes font les bons amis.	*Short reckonings make long friends.*
Il met la charrue devant les bœufs.	*He puts the cart before the horse.*
Vous bâtissez des châteaux en Espagne.	*You build castles in the air.*
Je suis au comble de la joie.	*I am overjoyed.*
Ce n'est pas à vous de lui reprocher sa faute.	*It does not become you to reproach him with his fault.*
Il est tombé de Scylla en Charybde.	*He fell from the frying pan into the fire.*
Cet homme cherche à vous en conter.	*That man is trying to deceive you.*
Nous sommes en pays de connaissance.	*We are here among acquaintances.*
La sentinelle nous coucha en joue.	*The sentinel levelled his gun at us.*
Ce malade n'en reviendra pas.	*That sick man will not recover.*
Nous sommes au courant de tout cela.	*We are perfectly acquainted with all that.*
Cela fait dresser les cheveux.	*That makes one's hair stand on end.*
Ils chantent sur une autre note.	*They have changed their tone.*
Ce vers est frappé au bon coin.	*That verse bears the right stamp.*

Je lui ai donné le clef des champs.	*I sent him about his business.*
Il ne sait où donner de la tête.	*He does not know which way to turn.*
Vous vous donnez toujours raison.	*You pretend to be always in the right.*
Il a donné dans le piège.	*He fell into the snare.*
Cela lui donne de l'humeur.	*That puts him out of temper.*
Je n'entre point là dedans.	*That is no business of mine.*
Il entre dans vos intérêts.	*He interests himself for you.*
Je m'embarrasse fort peu de cela.	*I care very little about that.*
Son amitié est à toute épreuve.	*His friendship will stand any test.*
Vos propos m'échauffent les oreilles.	*Your expressions provoke my anger.*
Finissez ce badinage.	*Put an end to this trifling.*
Reposez-vous-en sur moi.	*Trust to me about this matter.*
Cette marchandise n'a point de débit.	*This article has no sale.*
Il est toujours sur le qui-vive.	*He is always on the watch.*
Cette maison est à vendre au plus offrant et dernier enchérisseur.	*That house is to be sold to the highest bidder.*
De quelle part ce domestique vient-il ?	*Who sent that servant?*
Doublons le pas ; il se fait tard.	*Let us mend our pace ; it is growing late.*
J'y vais de ce pas.	*I am going thither this moment.*
Passe pour ceci.	*Let this pass.*
Il faut en passer par là.	*We must submit to those terms.*
Vous m'avez peint avec de beaux traits.	*You have given a fine account of me.*
Pour moi, je m'y perds.	*As for me, I cannot see into it.*
Peu s'en fallut qu'il ne me frappât.	*He came very near striking me.*
Dites-moi un peu ce que vous en pensez.	*Just tell me what you think of it.*
Il nous jette de la poudre aux yeux.	*He casts a mist before our eyes.*
Vous seriez bien embarrassé, si on vous prenait au mot.	*You would be at a great loss, if you were taken at your word.*
Ne vous en prenez pas à moi.	*Do not blame me about this.*
Le malade n'en pouvait plus.	*The patient was quite exhausted.*
Je l'ai envoyé promener.	*I told him to mind his business.*
Le bon homme que c'est !	*What a simple man he is!*
Brisons-là dessus.	*No more of this.*
Il en fut quitte pour la peur.	*He escaped, though frightened.*
Vous en êtes quitte à bon marché.	*You came off cheaply.*
Cela n'est pas de refus.	*That is not to be refused.*
Je l'ai entrevu ce matin.	*I had a glimpse of him this morning.*
Je ne m'en soucie guère.	*I care but little about it.*
Il a des affaires par dessus la tête.	*He is over head and ears in business.*
Qu'à cela ne tienne.	*That shall not make us disagree.*
A la bonne heure.	*Well and good.*
Tout fin qu'il est, il s'est trompé.	*Cunning as he is, he made a mistake.*
Ce n'est pas là un trait d'ami.	*That is not acting like a friend.*
Trève de compliments.	*No more compliments.*
Je vous vois venir, monsieur.	*I see what you are about, sir.*
Voilà comme vous êtes.	*That is the way with you.*
Tout cela va le mieux du monde.	*All goes on as well as possible.*
Vous n'y êtes pas.	*That is not it.*
Vous voilà bien avancé.	*You are much the better for it.*

For a very copious collection of *Gallicisms*, the student is referred to the second part of the Author's MANUAL OF FRENCH CONVERSATION.

READING LESSONS.

[The manner of dividing words into syllables is not the same in French and in English. A practical illustration of the French mode will not be unacceptable to the student. In the following fables the hyphen is placed to separate the syllables.]

I.—FABLES.

1. LE CHÊ-NE ET LE SY-CO-MO-RE.

Un chê-ne é-tait plan-té près d'un sy-co-mo-re. Le der-nier pous-sa des[1] feuil-les dès le com-men-ce-ment du prin-temps, et mé-pri-sa l' in-sen-si-bi-li-té du[2] pre-mier. Voi-sin, dit[3] le chê-ne, ne comp-te pas trop sur les ca-res-ses de cha-que zé-phyr in-cons-tant. Le froid peut[4] re-ve-nir. Pour moi, je ne suis pas pres-sé de pous-ser des feuil-les; j'at-tends que la cha-leur soit cons-tan-te. Il a-vait rai-son;[5] une ge-lée dé-trui-sit[6] les beau-tés nais-san-tes du sy-co-mo-re. Eh bien! dit l'au-tre, n'a-vais-je pas rai-son de ne me pas pres-ser?

Ne comp-tez ni sur les ca-res-ses ni sur les pro-tes-ta-tions ex-ces-si-ves[7]; elles sont or-di-nai-re-ment de cour-te du-rée. PERRIN.

[1] Lesson 12, Rule 3. [2] L. 5, R. 1. [3] From *dire*, page 376. [4] From *pouvoir*, page 388. [5] L. 8, R. 1. [6] From *détruire*, page 376. [7] L. 13, R. 5.

2. LE LOUP DÉ-GUI-SÉ.

Un loup, la ter-reur d'un trou-peau, ne sa-vait[1] com-ment fai-re pour at-tra-per des[2] mou-tons; le ber-ger é-tait con-ti-nuel-le-ment sur ses gar-des. L'a-ni-mal vo-ra-ce s'a-vi-sa de se dé-gui-ser de la peau d'u-ne bre-bis qu'il a-vait en-le-vée[3] quel-ques jours au-pa-ra-vant. Le stra-ta-gè-me lui[4] réus-sit pen-dant quel-que temps; mais en-fin, le ber-ger dé-cou-vrit l'ar-ti-fi-ce, a-ga-ça les chiens con-tre lui; ils lui[4] ar-ra-chè-rent la toi-son de des-sus les é-pau-les, et le[5] mi-rent[6] en piè-ces.

Ne vous fiez pas tou-jours à l'ex-té-rieur. Un hom-me de ju-ge-ment et de pé-né-tra-tion ne ju-ge pas se-lon les ap-pa-ren-ces.

PERRIN.

[1] From *savoir*, page 392. [2] L. 12, R. 3. [3] L. 42, R. 7. [4] L. 27, R. 2. [5] L. 27, R. 1. [6] From *mettre*, p. 384.

3. L'Â-NE ET SON MAÎ-TRE.

Un â-ne trou-va par ha-sard une peau de lion,[1] et s'en[2] re-vê-tit, (*revétir*, 2. *ir.*) Ainsi dé-gui-sé il al-la dans les fo-rêts, et ré-pan-dit par-tout la[3] ter-reur et la cons-ter-na-tion. Tous les a-ni-maux fuy-aient[4] de-vant lui. Enfin il ren-con-tra son maî-tre qu'il vou-lut é-pou-van-ter aus-si; mais le bon hom-me a-per-ce-vant quel-que cho-se de[5] long, aux deux côtés de la tê-te de l'a-ni-mal, lui dit: maî-tre bau-det, quoi-que vous so-yez[6] vê-tu com-me un lion, vos o-reil-les vous tra-his-sent et mon-trent que vous n'ê-tes ré-el-le-ment qu'un â-ne.

Un sot a tou-jours un en-droit qui le dé-cou-vre et le rend ri-di-cu-le. L'af-fec-ta-tion est un jus-te su-jet de mé-pris. PERRIN.

[1] L. 5, R. 3. [2] § 39, (17.) [3] L. 8, R. 2. [4] From *fuir*, page 380. [5] L. 18. R. 3. [6] L. 73, R. 4.

4. L'AI-GLE ET LE HI-BOU.

L'ai-gle et le hi-bou, a-près a-voir[1] fait long-temps la guer-re con-vin-rent d'u-ne paix; les ar-ti-cles pré-li-mi-nai-res a-vaient é-té pré-a-la-ble-ment si-gnés par des[2] am-bas-sa-deurs: l'ar-ti-cle le plus es-sen-tiel é-tait que le pre-mier ne man-ge-rait pas les pe-tits de l'au-tre.—Les con-nais-sez[3]-vous? de-man-da le hi-bou.—Non, ré-pon-dit l'ai-gle.—Tant pis.—Pei-gnez[4]-les-moi[5] ou me les mon-trez; foi d'hon-nê-te ai-gle je n'y[6] tou-che-rai ja-mais. Mes pe-tits, ré-pon-dit l'oi-seau noc-tur-ne, sont mi-gnons, beaux, bien faits; ils ont la voix dou-ce et mé-lo-dieu-se;[7] vous les re-con-naî-trez ai-sé-ment à ces mar-ques.—Très bien, je ne l'ou-blie-rai pas. Il ar-ri-va un jour que l'ai-gle a-per-çut dans le coin d'un ro-cher de[8] pe-tits monstres très laids, re-chi-gnés, avec un air tris-te et lu-gu-bre. Ces enfants, dit-il, n'ap-par-tien-nent pas à no-tre a-mi; man-geons-les; aus-si-tôt il se mit à en[9] fai-re un bon re-pas. L'ai-gle n'a-vait pas tort.[10] Le hi-bou lui a-vait fait une faus-se pein-ture de ses pe-tits; ils n'en a-vaient pas le moin-dre trait.

Les pa-rents de-vraient é-vi-ter avec soin ce fai-ble en-vers leurs enfants, il les rend sou-vent a-veu-gles sur leurs dé-fauts.

PERRIN.

[1] L. 21, R. 2. [2] L. 12, R. 3. [3] From *connaître*, page 370. [4] From *peindre*, page 386. [5] L. 28, R. 4. [6] § 39, (18.) [7] L. 13, R. 5. [8] L. 8, R. 4. [9] L. 15, R. 7. [10] L. 8, R. 1.

5. LE PAY-SAN ET LA COU-LEU-VRE.

Un pay-san, al-lant au bois a-vec un sac pour y[1] met-tre des noi-set-tes, c'é-tait[2] la sai-son, trou-va u-ne cou-leu-vre. Ah! ah! dit le

man-ant, je te tiens[3] à pré-sent; tu ne m'é-chap-pe-ras pas; tu viendras (*venir*, 2. *ir.*) dans ce sac et tu mour-ras.[4] L'a-ni-mal per-vers; je veux dire[5] la cou-leu-vre, et non pas l'hom-me; lui dit: qu'ai-je fait pour mé-ri-ter un pa-reil trai-te-ment?—Ce que tu as fait? Tu es le sym-bole de l'in-gra-ti-tu-de, le plus o-dieux de tous les vi-ces.—S'il faut[6] que les in-grats meu-rent, ré-pli-qua har-di-ment le rep-ti-le, vous vous con-dam-nez vous-même; de tous les a-ni-maux l'hom-me est le plus in-grat.—L'hom-me! dit le pay-san, sur-pris de la hardies-se de la cou-leu-vre; je pour-rais[7] t'é-cra-ser dans l'ins-tant, mais je veux[8] m'en rap-por-ter à quel-que ju-ge.—J'y con-sens.[9] U-ne va-che é-tait à quel-que dis-tan-ce; on[10] l'ap-pel-le, el-le vient;[11] on lui pro-po-se le cas.—C'é-tait bien la pei-ne de m'ap-pe-ler, dit-el-le; la cho-se est clai-re; la cou-leu-vre a rai-son. Je nour-ris l'hom-me de mon lait; il en fait du beur-re et du fro-ma-ge; et pour ce bienfait, il man-ge mes en-fants. A pei-ne sont-ils nés[12] qu'ils sont é-gorgés[13] et cou-pés en mil-le mor-ceaux. Ce n'est pas tout: quand je suis vieil-le, et que je ne lui don-ne plus de lait, l'in-grat m'as-som-me sans pi-tié; ma peau mê-me n'est pas à l'a-bri de son in-gra-ti-tu-de; il la tan-ne et en fait des bot-tes et des sou-liers. De là, je con-clus que l'hom-me est le vrai sym-bo le de l'in-gra-ti-tu-de. A-dieu; j'ai dit ce que je pen-se.

L'hom-me, tout é-ton-né, dit au rep-ti-le: je ne crois pas ce que cet-te ra-do-teu-se a dit; elle a per-du l'es-prit: rap-por-tons-nous-en à la dé-ci-sion de cet ar-bre.—De tout mon cœur.—L'ar-bre é-tant pris pour ju-ge, ce fut bien pis en-co-re. Je mets l'hom-me à l'a-bri[14] des o-ra-ges, de la cha-leur, et de la pluie. En é-té, il trou-ve sous mes bran-ches u-ne om-bre a-gré-a-ble; je pro-duis des fleurs et du fruit; ce-pen-dant, a-près mil-le ser-vi-ces, un ma-nant me fait tom-ber à coups de ha-che: il cou-pe tou-tes mes bran-ches, en fait du feu, et ré-serve mon corps, pour ê-tre sci-é en plan-ches. L'hom-me se voy-ant ain-si con-vain-cu: je suis bien sot, dit-il, d'é-cout-er[15] u-ne ra-do-teu-se et un ja-seur. Aus-si-tôt il fou-la la cou-leu-vre aux pieds et l'é-cra-sa.

Le plus fort a tou-jours rai-son, il op-pri-me le plus fai-ble. La for-ce et la pas-sion sont sour-des à la voix de la jus-ti-ce et de la vé-ri-té.

PERRIN.

[1] § 39, (18.) [2] L. 82, R. 1. [3] From *tenir*, page 396.
[4] From *mourir*, page 384. [5] L. 32, R. 5. [6] From *falloir*, page 380.
[7] From *pouvoir*, page 388. [8] From *vouloir*, page 398. [9] § 39, (18.)
[10] L. 35, R. 1, 2. [11] From *venir*, page 396. [12] From *naître*, page 384.
[13] L. 42, R. 6. [14] L. 69, R. 1. [15] L. 21, R. 2.

6. LE SIN-GE.

Un vieux sin-ge ma-lin é-tant mort, son om-bre des-cen-dit dans la som-bre de-meu-re de Plu-ton, où el-le de-man-da à re-tour-ner par-mi les vi-vants. Plu-ton vou-lait la ren-voy-er dans le corps d'un â-ne pe-sant et stu-pi-de, pour lui ô-ter sa sou-ples-se, sa vi-va-ci-té, et sa ma-li-ce. Mais el-le fit tant de tours plai-sants et ba-dins, que l'in-fle-xi-ble roi des en-fers ne put[1] s'em-pê-cher de ri-re, et lui lais-sa le choix d'une con-di-tion. El-le de-man-da à en-trer dans le corps d'un per-ro-quet.—Au moins, di-sait-el-le, je con-ser-ve-rai par-là quel-que res-sem-blan-ce a-vec les hom-mes que j'ai long-temps i-mi-tés. É-tant sin-ge je fai-sais des ges-tes com-me eux; et é-tant per-ro-quet, je par-le-rai a-vec eux dans les plus a-gré-a-bles con-ver-sa-tions.

A pei-ne l'om-bre du sin-ge fut in-tro-dui-te dans ce nou-veau mé-tier, qu'u-ne vieil-le fem-me cau-seu-se l'a-che-ta. Il fit[2] ses dé-li-ces; el-le le mit dans une bel-le[3] ca-ge. Il fai-sait bon-ne chè-re, et dis-cou-rait tou-te la jour-née a-vec la vieil-le ra-do-teu-se, qui ne par-lait pas plus sen-sé-ment que lui. Il joi-gnit[4] à son nou-veau ta-lent d'é-tour-dir tout le mon-de, je ne sais[5] quoi de son an-cien-ne pro-fes-sion. Il re-mu-ait sa tê-te ri-di-cu-le-ment, il fai-sait cra-quer son bec, il a-gi-tait ses ai-les de cent fa-çons, et fai-sait de ses pat-tes plu-sieurs tours qui sen-taient en-co-re les gri-ma-ces de Fa-go-tin. La vieil-le pre-nait à tou-te heu-re ses lu-net-tes pour l'ad-mi-rer; el-le é-tait bien fâ-chée d'être un peu sour-de, et de per-dre quel-que-fois des pa-ro-les de son per-ro-quet, au-quel el-le trou-vait plus d'esprit qu'à per-son-ne. Ce per-ro-quet gâ-té de-vint ba-vard, im-por-tun, et fou. Il se tour-men-ta si fort dans sa ca-ge, et but[6] tant de vin a-vec la vieil-le, qu'il en mou-rut.

Le voi-là re-ve-nu de-vant Plu-ton, qui vou-lut[7] cet-te fois le faire pas-ser dans le corps d'un pois-son. Mais il fit en-co-re une far-ce de-vant le roi des om-bres, et les prin-ces ne ré-sis-tent guè-re[8] aux de-man-des des mau-vais plai-sants qui les flat-tent. Plu-ton ac-cor-da donc à ce-lui-ci, qu'il i-rait[9] dans le corps d'un hom-me; mais com-me le dieu eut hon-te de[10] l'en-voy-er dans le corps d'un hom-me sa-ge et vert-u-eux, il le des-ti-na au corps d'un ha-ran-gueur en-nuy-eux et im-por-tun, qui men-tait, qui se van-tait sans cesse, qui fai-sait des ges-tes ri-di-cu-les, qui se mo-quait de tout le mon-de, qui in-ter-rom-pait tou-tes les con-ver-sa-tions les plus po-lies et les plus so-li-des, pour di-re rien, ou les sot-ti-ses les plus gros-siè-res. Mer-cu-re qui le re-con-nut[11] dans ce nou-vel é-tat, lui dit en riant:—Ho! ho! je te re-con-nais; tu n'es qu'un com-posé du sin-ge et du

per-ro-quet que j'ai vus [12] au-tre-fois. Que[13] t'ô-te-rait tes ges-tes et tes pa-roles ap-prises par cœur sans ju-ge-ment, ne lais-se-rait rien de toi. D'un jo-li sin-ge et d'un bon per-ro-quet on n'en fait qu'un sot hom-me.

FÉNELON.

[1] From *pouvoir*, page 388; see also § 138, (2.) [2] From *fuire*, p. 380. [3] L. 13, R. 6. [4] From *joindre*, page 382. [5] From *savoir*, page 392. [6] From *boire*, page 368. [7] From *vouloir*, page 398. [8] L. 17, R. 5. [9] From *aller*, page 366. [10] L. 21, R. 4. [11] From *reconnaître*, page 390. [12] L. 42, R. 7. [13] § 39, (5.)

II.—APOLOGUES ET ALLÉGORIES.

1. LE BERGER ET LE TROUPEAU.

QUAND vous voyez quelquefois un nombreux troupeau, qui, répandu sur une colline, vers le déclin d'un beau jour, paît[1] tranquillement le thym et le serpolet, ou qui broute dans une prairie une herbe menue et tendre, qui a échappé à la faux du moissonneur; le berger, soigneux et attentif, est debout auprès de ses brebis; il ne les perd pas de vue; il les suit,[2] il les[3] conduit, il les change de paturage; si elles se dispersent, il les rassemble; si un loup avide paraît, il lâche son chien qui le met en fuite; il les nourrit, il les défend; l'aurore le trouve déjà en pleine campagne, d'où il ne se retire qu'avec le soleil. Quels[4] soins! quelle vigilance! quelle servitude! Quelle condition vous paraît la plus délicieuse et la plus libre, ou du berger, ou des brebis? Le troupeau est-il fait pour le berger, ou le berger pour le troupeau? Image naïve[5] des peuples, et du prince qui les gouverne, s'il est bon prince.

LA BRUYÈRE.

[1] From *paître*, page 386. [2] From *suivre*, page 394. [3] L. 27, R. 7. [4] § 30, (10.) [5] L. 13, R. 5.

2. LES PARVENUS.

NI les troubles, Zénobie, qui agitent votre empire, ni la guerre que vous soutenez virilement contre une nation puissante, depuis la mort du roi votre époux, ne diminuent rien de votre magnificence. Vous avez préféré à toute autre contrée les rives de l'Euphrate, pour y élever un superbe édifice; l'air y est sain et tempéré, la situation en est riante, un bois sacré l'ombrage du côté du couchant; les dieux de Syrie, qui habitent quelquefois la terre, n'y auraient pu choisir une plus belle demeure. La campagne autour, est couverte[2] d'hommes qui taillent et qui coupent, qui vont[3] et qui viennent,[4] qui roulent ou qui charrient le bois du Liban, l'airain et le porphyre; les grues et les

machines gémissent dans l'air, et font espérer à ceux qui voyagent vers l'Arabie, de revoir, à leur retour en leurs foyers, ce palais achevé, et dans cette splendeur où vous désirez le porter, avant de l'habiter, vous et les princes vos enfants. N'y[5] épargnez rien, grande reine, employez-y l'or et tout l'art des plus excellents ouvriers; que les Phidias et les Zeuxis de votre siècle déploient[6] toute leur science sur vos plafonds, et sur vos lambris. Tracez-y de vastes et délicieux jardins, dont l'enchantement soit tel, qu'ils ne paraissent pas faits de la main des hommes. Épuisez vos trésors et votre industrie sur cet ouvrage incomparable; et, après que vous y aurez[7] mis, Zénobie, la dernière main, quelqu'un de ces pâtres qui habitent les sables voisins de Palmyre, devenu riche par les péages de vos rivières, achètera[8] un jour à deniers comptants cette royale maison, pour l'embellir et la rendre plus digne de lui et de sa fortune. LA BRUYÈRE.

[1] § 39, (17.) [2] § 134, (2.) [3] From *aller*, page 366. [4] From *venir*, page 396
[5] § 39, (18.) [6] § 49, (2.) [7] L. 61, R. 5. [8] § 49, (5.)

3. LE PALAIS DE LA RENOMMÉE.

AUX extrémités du monde, sous le pôle, dont[1] l'intrépide Cook mesura la circonférence, à travers les vents et les tempêtes; au milieu des terres australes qu'une barrière de glace dérobe à la curiosité des hommes, s'élève[2] une montagne, qui surpasse en hauteur les sommets les plus élevés des Andes, dans le Nouveau-Monde, ou du Thibet, dans l'antique Asie.

Sur cette montagne, est bâti un palais, ouvrage des puissances infernales. Ce palais a mille portiques d'airain; les moindres bruits viennent[3] frapper les dômes de cet édifice, dont le silence n'a jamais franchi le seuil.

Au centre du monument, est une voûte tournée en spirale, comme une conque, et faite de sorte que tous les sons qui pénètrent dans le palais, y aboutissent; mais, par un effet du génie de l'architecte des mensonges, la plupart de ces sons se trouvent[4] faussement reproduits; souvent une légère rumeur s'enfle et gronde en entrant par la voie préparée aux éclats du tonnerre; tandis que les roulements de la foudre expirent en passant par les routes sinueuses[5] destinées aux faibles bruits.

C'est là que, l'oreille placée à l'ouverture de cet immense écho, est assis sur un trône retentissant, un démon, la renommée. Cette puissante fille de Satan et de l'orgueil, naquit[6] autrefois pour annoncer le mal. Avant le jour où Lucifer leva l'étendard contre le Tout-Puissant, la renommée était inconnue. Si un monde venait à s'animer ou à s'éteindre; si l'Éternel avait tiré un univers du néant,

ou replongé un de ses ouvrages dans le chaos; s'il avait jeté un soleil dans l'espace, créé un nouvel ordre de séraphins, essayé[7] la bonté d'une lumière, toutes ces choses étaient aussitôt connues[8] dans le ciel, par un sentiment intime d'admiration et d'amour, par le chant mystérieux de la céleste Jérusalem. Mais, après la rebellion des mauvais anges, la renommée usurpa la place de cette intention divine. Bientôt, précipitée[9] aux enfers, ce[10] fut elle qui publia dans l'abyme la naissance de notre globe, et qui porta l'ennemi de Dieu à tenter la chûte de l'homme. Elle vint sur la terre avec la mort, et dès ce moment elle établit sa demeure sur la montagne, où elle entend et répète confusément ce qui se passe sur la terre, aux enfers, et dans les cieux.

CHATEAUBRIAND.

[1] L. 31, R. 8. [2] § 49, (6.) [3] From *venir*, page 396. [4] L. 36, R. 2. [5] L. 13, R. 5. [6] From *naître*, page 384. [7] § 49, (2.) [8] L. 42, R. 6. [9] § 66, (3.) [10] L. 81, R. 1.

4.—L'ACADÉMIE SILENCIEUSE OU LES EMBLÊMES.

Il y avait[1] à Amadan une célèbre académie, dont le premier statut était conçu en ces termes: *Les académiciens penseront beaucoup, écriront peu, et ne*[2] *parleront que le moins possible.* On[3] l'appelait *l'Académie silencieuse*, et il n'était point en Perse de vrai savant qui n'eût l'ambition d'y être admis. Le docteur Zeb, auteur d'un petit livre excellent, intitulé le *Bâillon*, apprit[4] au fond de sa province, qu'il[5] vaquait une place dans l'Académie silencieuse. Il part aussitôt; il arrive à Amadan, et, se présentant à la porte de la salle où les académiciens sont assemblés, il prie l'huissier de remettre au président ce billet: Le docteur Zeb demande humblement la place vacante. L'huissier s'acquitta sur-le-champ de la commission; mais le docteur et son billet arrivaient trop tard, la place était déjà remplie.

L'académie fut désolée de ce contre-temps; elle avait reçu un peu malgré elle un bel[6]-esprit dont[7] l'éloquence vive et légère faisait l'admiration de la cour, et elle se voyait[8] réduite à refuser le docteur Zeb, le fléau des bavards, une tête si bien faite, si bien meublée! Le président chargé d'annoncer au docteur cette nouvelle désagréable ne pouvait presque s'y résoudre, et ne savait comment s'y prendre. Après avoir un peu rêvé, il fit[9] remplir d'eau une grande coupe, mais si bien remplir, qu'une goutte de plus eût fait déborder la liqueur; puis il fit signe qu'on introduisît le candidat. Il parut[10] avec cet air simple et modeste qui annonce presque toujours le vrai mérite. Le président se leva, et, sans proférer une seule parole, il lui montra d'un air affligé la coupe emblématique, cette coupe si exactement pleine. Le docteur comprit[11] de reste, qu'il n'y avait plus de place à

l'académie ; mais, sans perdre courage, il songeait à faire comprendre qu'un académicien surnuméraire n'y dérangerait rien. Il voit à ses pieds une feuille de rose, il la ramasse, il la pose délicatement sur la surface de l'eau, et fait si bien, qu'il n'en échappe pas une seule goutte.

A cette réponse ingénieuse, tout le monde battit des mains, on laissa dormir les régles pour ce jour-là, et le docteur Zeb fut reçu par acclamation. On lui présenta sur-le-champ, le registre où les récipiendaires devaient s'inscrire eux-mêmes. Il s'y inscrivit donc, et il ne lui restait plus qu'à prononcer selon l'usage une phrase de remercîment. Mais, en académicien vraîment silencieux, le docteur Zeb remercia sans dire mot. Il écrivit[12] en marge le nombre *cent ;* c'était celui de ses nouveaux confrères ; puis, en mettant un zéro devant le chiffre, il écrivit au dessous : *Ils n'en vaudront*[13] *ni moins ni plus* (0100). Le président répondit au modeste docteur avec autant de politesse que de présence d'esprit. Il mit le chiffre *un* devant le nombre *cent*, et il écrivit : *Ils en vaudront dix fois davantage* (1100).

L'abbé BLANCHET.

[1] § 61, 2. [2] L. 19, R. 2. [3] § 41, (4.) [4] From *apprendre*, page 366. [5] Unipersonal, *that there was a place vacant.* [6] L. 13, 6. [7] L. 31, 8. [8] From *voir*, page 398. [9] L. 32, R. 3, 4. [10] From *paraître*, page 386. [11] From *comprendre*, page 370. [12] From *écrire*, page 376. [13] From *valoir*, page 396.

III. ANECDOTES.

1. LE BON MINISTRE.

LE puissant Aaron-al-Raschid commençait à soupçonner que son visir Giafar ne méritait pas la confiance qu'il lui avait donnée :[1] les femmes d'Aaron, les habitants de Bagdad, les courtisans, les derviches, censuraient le visir avec amertume. Le calife aimait Giafar ; il ne voulut point le condamner sur les clameurs de la ville et de la cour. Il visita son empire ; il vit partout la terre bien cultivée, la campagne riante, les hameaux opulents, les arts utiles en honneur, et la jeunesse dans la joie. Il visita ses places de guerre et ses ports de mer ; il vit de nombreux vaisseaux qui menaçaient[2] les côtes de l'Afrique et de l'Asie ; il vit[3] des guerriers disciplinés et contents. Ces guerriers, les matelots, et les peuples des campagnes s'écriaient : O Dieu ! bénissez les fidèles en prolongeant les jours d'Aaron-al-Raschid et de son visir

Giafar; ils maintiennent dans l'empire la paix, la justice, et l'abondance; tu manifestes, grand Dieu, ton amour pour les fidèles, en leur donnant un calife comme Aaron, et un visir comme Giafar! Le calife, touché de ces acclamations, entre dans une mosquée, s'y précipite à genoux, et s'écrie: Grand Dieu! je te rends grâces: tu m'as donné un ministre dont mes courtisans me disent du mal, et dont mes peuples me disent du bien. SAINT-LAMBERT.

[1] § 134, (4.) [2] § 119. [3] From *voir*, page 398.

2. BONAPARTE ET LA SENTINELLE.*

APRÈS avoir gagné la bataille d'Arcole, qui avait duré[1] trois jours, Bonaparte, toujours infatigable, parcourait son camp, sous un vêtement fort simple, qui ne décelait point en lui le général en chef, à l'effet d'examiner par lui-même si les fatigues de trois journées aussi pénibles que cette bataille, n'avaient rien fait perdre à ses soldats de leur discipline et de leur surveillance habituelles.[2] Le général trouve[3] une sentinelle endormie, lui enlève doucement son fusil sans l'éveiller, et fait faction à sa place. Quelques[4] moments après, le soldat se réveille; se voyant ainsi désarmé et reconnaissant son général, il s'écrie: Je suis perdu!—Rassure-toi, lui dit Bonaparte avec douceur, après tant de fatigues, il peut être permis à un brave tel que toi de succomber au sommeil; mais une autre fois choisis mieux ton temps.

[1] § 135, (6.) [2] § 18, (3.) [3] § 118, (5.) [4] L. 88.

3. BIENFAISANCE.

LE duc de Montmorenci, qui fut décapité à Toulouse, aimait à répandre des bienfaits. Ce seigneur, voyageant[1] en Languedoc, aperçut dans un champ, quatre laboureurs qui dînaient à l'ombre d'un buisson. Approchons-nous de ces bonnes gens, dit-il à ceux qui le suivaient, et demandons-leur s'ils se croient heureux. Trois répondirent que bornant leur félicité à certaines commodités de leur condition, que Dieu leur avait données,[2] ils ne souhaitaient rien dans le monde. Le quatrième avoua franchement qu'une chose manquait à son bonheur: c'était de pouvoir acquérir certain héritage que ses pères possédaient.—Et si tu l'avais,[3] cet héritage, dit M. de Montmorenci, serais-tu content?—Autant que je le[4] puis être, répondit le paysan.—Combien vaut[5]-il? demanda le duc.—Deux mille francs, répondit le paysan.—Qu'on[6] les lui donne, reprit le duc, et qu'il soit dit que j'ai rendu un homme heureux en ma vie. LE VASSOR.

[1] § 49, (1.) [2] L. 42, R. 7. [3] L. 62, R. (6.) [4] L. 46, R. 4, 5.
[5] From *valoir*, page 396. [6] L. 28.

* The word *sentinelle* is always feminine.

IV.—MAXIMES ET RÉFLEXIONS.

1.* La religion donne à la vertu les plus douces espérances, au vice impénitent de justes alarmes, et au vrai repentir les plus puissantes consolations; mais elle tâche surtout d'inspirer aux hommes de l'amour, de la douceur, et de la pitié pour les hommes.

MONTESQUIEU.

2. Aimez et observez la religion, le reste meurt, elle ne meurt jamais. FÉNELON.

3. Les vertus nées de la religion, se cachent dans la religion même.

LACRETELLE.

4. La religion est encore plus nécessaire à ceux qui commandent, qu'à ceux qui obéissent. BOSSUET.

5. Prier ensemble, dans quelque langue, dans quelque rite que ce soit, c'est la plus touchante fraternité d'espérance et de sympathie que les hommes puissent contracter sur cette terre.

Mme. DE STAËL.

6. La conscience est un juge placé dans l'intérieur de notre être.

SÉGUR.

7. La conscience est la voix de l'âme, les passions sont la voix du corps. J. J. ROUSSEAU.

8. La vertu obscure est souvent méprisée, parce que rien ne la relève à nos yeux. MASSILLON.

9. La vertu est un effort fait sur nous-mêmes, pour le bien d'autrui, dans l'intention de plaire à Dieu seul.

BERNARDIN DE ST. PIERRE.

10. Il y a une amitié chrétienne que la philosophie humaine ne comprend guère; c'est l'association de deux âmes qui mettent en commun leur foi et leurs prières, et s'élèvent ensemble vers Dieu.

LAURENTIE.

11. La modestie est au mérite, ce que les ombres sont dans un tableau; elle lui donne de la force et du relief. LA BRUYÈRE.

12. La vérité n'a jamais besoin de l'erreur, et les ombres n'ajoutent rien à la lumière. LAMARTINE.

13. On n'est pas digne d'aimer la vérité, quand on peut aimer quelque chose plus qu'elle. MASSILLON.

14. La flatterie est une fausse monnaie qui n'a de cours que par notre vanité. LA ROCHEFOUCAULD.

* This extract and several of the following, furnish excellent illustrations of the Rules on the use of the article.

15. On ne triomphe de la calomnie qu'en la dédaignant.
Mme. DE MAINTENON.

16. Ce n'est que pour l'innocence, que la solitude peut avoir des charmes. LECZINSKA.

17. Les conseils agréables sont rarement des conseils utiles.
MASSILLON.

18. Ceux qui donnent des conseils sans les accompagner d'exemples, ressemblent à ces poteaux de la campagne, qui indiquent les chemins sans les parcourir. RIVAROL.

V.—POÉSIE.

HYMNE DE L'ENFANT A SON RÉVEIL.

O PÈRE qu'adore mon père!
Toi qu'on ne nomme qu'à genoux,
Toi dont le nom terrible et doux,
Fait courber le front de ma mère;

On dit que ce brillant soleil
N'est qu'un jouet de ta puissance;
Que sous tes pieds il se balance
Comme une lampe de vermeil.

On dit que c'est toi qui fais naître
Les petits oiseaux dans les champs,
Et qui donnes aux petits enfants,
Une âme aussi pour te connaître.

On dit que c'est toi qui produis
Les fleurs dont le jardin se pare;
Et que sans toi, toujours avare,
Le verger n'aurait point de fruits.

Aux dons que ta bonté mesure,
Tout l'univers est convié;
Nul insecte n'est oublié,
A ce festin de la nature.

L'agneau broute le serpolet;
La chèvre s'attache au cytise;
La mouche, au bord du vase, puise
Les blanches gouttes de mon lait.

L'alouette a la graine amère
Que laisse envoler le glaneur,
Le passereau suit le vanneur,
Et l'enfant s'attache à sa mère.

Et, pour obtenir chaque don
Que chaque jour tu fais éclore,
A midi, le soir, à l'aurore,
Que faut-il ?—prononcer ton nom.

O Dieu ! ma bouche balbutie,
Ce nom, des anges redouté,
Un enfant même est écouté,
Dans le chœur qui te glorifie !

Ah ! puisqu'il entend de si loin
Les vœux que notre bouche adresse,
Je veux lui demander sans cesse
Ce dont les autres ont besoin.

Mon Dieu ! donne l'onde aux fontaines,
Donne la plume aux passereaux,
Et la laine aux petits agneaux,
Et l'ombre et la rosée aux plaines.

Donne aux malades la santé,
Au mendiant le pain qu'il pleure,
A l'orphelin une demeure,
Au prisonnier la liberté.

Donne une famille nombreuse
Au père qui craint le Seigneur,
Donne à[1] moi sagesse et bonheur
Pour que ma mère soit heureuse. LAMARTINE.

2. LA FEUILLE.

De ta tige détachée,
Pauvre feuille désséchée,
Où vas tu ?—Je n'en sais rien :
L'orage a brisé le chêne
Qui seul était mon soutien.
De son inconstante haleine
Le zéphyr ou l'aquilon,

[1] The *à* in this line is a poetical license.

Depuis ce jour me promène,
De la forêt à la plaine,
De la montagne au vallon;
Je vais où le vent me mène,
Sans me plaindre ou m'effrayer;
Je vais où va toute chose,
Où va la feuille de rose,
Et la feuille de laurier. ARNAULT.

3. LE MONTAGNARD ÉMIGRÉ.

COMBIEN j'ai douce souvenance
Du joli lieu de ma naissance!
Ma sœur, qu'ils étaient beaux ces jours
De France!
O mon pays, sois mes amours!
Toujours.

Te souvient-il que notre mère,
Au foyer de notre chaumière,
Nous pressait sur son sein joyeux,
Ma chère?
Et nous baisions ses blonds cheveux,
Tous deux.

Ma sœur, te souvient-il encore,
Du château que baignait la Dore,
Et de cette tant vieille tour,
Du More,
Où l'airain sonnait le retour
Du jour?

Te souvient-il du lac tranquille
Qu'effleurait l'hirondelle agile,
Du vent qui courbait le roseau
Mobile,
Et du soleil couchant, sur l'eau,
Si beau?

Te souvient-il de cette amie,
Douce compagne de ma vie?
Dans les bois en cueillant la fleur
Jolie,
Hélène appuyait sur mon cœur
Son cœur.

Oh! qui me rendra mon Hélène,
Et la montagne et le grand chêne?
Leur souvenir fait tous les jours
Ma peine.
Mon pays sera mes amours
Toujours. CHATEAUBRIAND.

4. STANCES.

Et j'ai dit dans mon cœur, que faire de la vie?
Irai-je encor, suivant ceux qui m'ont devancé,
Comme l'agneau qui passe où sa mère a passé,
Imiter des mortels l'immortelle folie?

L'un cherche sur les mers les trésors de Memnon,
Et la vague engloutit ses vœux et son navire;
Dans le sein de la gloire où son génie aspire,
L'autre meurt, enivré par l'écho d'un vain nom.

Avec nos passions formant sa vaste trame,
Celui-là fonde un trône, et monte pour tomber;
Dans des piéges plus doux aimant à succomber,
Celui-ci lit son sort dans les yeux d'une femme.

Le paresseux s'endort dans les bras de la faim;
Le laboureur conduit sa fertile charrue;
Le savant pense et lit; le guerrier frappe et tue;
Le mendiant s'assied sur le bord du chemin.

Où vont-ils cependant?—Ils vont où va la feuille
Que chasse devant lui le souffle des hivers.
Ainsi vont se flétrir dans leurs travaux divers
Ces générations que le temps sème et cueille.

Ils luttaient contre lui, mais le temps a vaincu.
Comme un fleuve engloutit le sable de ses rives,
Je l'ai vu dévorer leurs ombres fugitives.
Ils sont nés, ils sont morts. Seigneur, ont-ils vécu?

Pour moi, je chanterai le maître que j'adore,
Dans le bruit des cités, dans la paix des déserts,
Couché sur le rivage, ou flottant sur les mers,
Au déclin du soleil, au lever de l'aurore.

La terre m'a crié: Qui donc est le Seigneur?
—Celui dont l'âme immense est partout répandue,
Celui dont un seul pas mesure l'étendue,
Celui dont le soleil emprunte sa splendeur;

Celui qui du néant a tiré la matière,
Celui qui sur le vide a fondé l'univers,
Celui qui sans rivage a renfermé les mers,
Celui qui d'un regard a lancé la lumière ;

Celui qui ne connaît ni jour, ni lendemain,
Celui qui de tout temps de soi-même s'enfante,
Qui vit dans l'avenir comme à l'heure présente,
Et rappelle les temps échappés de sa main.

C'est lui, c'est le Seigneur ! Que ma langue redise
Les cent noms de sa gloire aux enfants des mortels !
Comme la harpe d'or pendue à ses autels,
Je chanterai pour lui, jusqu'à ce qu'il me brise !

LAMARTINE.

5. LAFAYETTE EN AMÉRIQUE.

RÉPUBLICAINS, quel cortége s'avance ?
—Un vieux guerrier débarque parmi nous.
—Vient-il d'un roi vous jurer l'alliance ?
—Il a des rois allumé le courroux.
—Est-il puissant ?—Seul il franchit les ondes.
—Qu'a-t-il donc fait ?—Il a brisé des fers.
Gloire immortelle à l'homme des deux mondes !
Jours de triomphe, éclairez l'univers !

Européen, partout sur ce rivage
Qui retentit de joyeuses clameurs,
Tu vois régner, sans trouble et sans servage,
La paix, les lois, le travail, et les mœurs.
Des opprimés ces bords sont le refuge :
La tyrannie a peuplé nos déserts,
L'homme et ses droits ont ici Dieu pour juge.
Jours de triomphe, éclairez l'univers !

Mais que de sang nous coûta ce bien-être !
Nous succombions ; Lafayette accourut,
Montra la France, eut Washington pour maître,
Lutta, vainquit, et l'Anglais disparut.
Pour son pays, pour la liberté sainte,
Il a depuis grandi dans les revers.
Des fers d'Olmutz, nous effaçons l'empreinte.
Jours de triomphe, éclairez l'univers !

Ce vieil ami que tant d'ivresse accueille,
Par un héros, ce héros adopté,
Bénit jadis, à sa première feuille,
L'arbre naissant de notre liberté.
Mais aujourd'hui, que l'arbre et son feuillage
Bravent en paix la foudre et les hivers,
Il vient s'asseoir sous son fertile ombrage.
Jours de triomphe, éclairez l'univers!

Autour de lui, vois nos chefs, vois nos sages,
Nos vieux soldats se rappelant ses traits;
Vois tout un peuple, et ces tribus sauvages,
A son seul nom sortant de leurs forêts.
L'arbre sacré, sur ce concours immense,
Forme un abri de rameaux toujours verts.
Les vents au loin porteront sa semence.
Jours de triomphe, éclairez l'univers!

L'Européen que frappent ces paroles,
Servit des rois, suivit des conquérants;
Un peuple esclave encensait ces idoles;
Un peuple libre a des honneurs plus grands.
Hélas! dit-il, et son œil sur les ondes
Semble chercher des bords lointains et chers!
Que la vertu rapproche les deux mondes!
Jours de triomphe, éclairez l'univers! BÉRANGER.

6. LA MARSEILLAISE.

Allons, enfants de la patrie:
Le jour de gloire est arrivé:
Contre nous de la tyrannie
L'étendard sanglant est levé.
Entendez-vous dans les campagnes
Mugir ces féroces soldats?
Ils viennent jusque dans vos bras
Égorger vos fils, vos compagnes.
Aux armes! citoyens; formez vos bataillons;
Marchez;—qu'un sang impur abreuve vos sillons!

Chœur.

Aux armes! citoyens; formons nos bataillons;
Marchons;—qu'un sang impur abreuve nos sillons!

Que veut cette horde d'esclaves,
De traîtres, de rois conjurés?
Pour qui ces ignobles entraves,
Ces fers dès longtemps préparés?
—Français, pour nous, ah! quel outrage,
Quels transports il doit exciter!
C'est nous qu'on ose menacer
De rendre à l'antique esclavage!
Aux armes, etc.

Quoi! des cohortes étrangères
Feraient la loi dans nos foyers!
Quoi! ces phalanges mercenaires
Terrasseraient nos fiers guerriers!
Grand Dieu! par des mains enchaînées[1]
Nos fronts sous le joug se plieraient!
De vils despotes deviendraient
Les maîtres de nos destinées!
Aux armes, etc.

Tremblez, tyrans! et vous, perfides,
L'opprobre de tous les partis;
Tremblez! . . . vos projets parricides
Vont enfin recevoir leur prix.
Tout est soldat pour vous combattre,
S'ils tombent, nos jeunes héros,
La France en produit de nouveaux,
Contre vous tout prêts à se battre.
Aux armes, etc.

Français! en guerriers magnanimes,
Portez ou retenez vos coups:
Épargnez les tristes victimes,
A regret s'armant contre vous;—
Mais ces despotes sanguinaires,
Mais les complices de Bouillé . . .
Tous ces tigres qui, sans pitié,
Déchirent le sein de leur mère . . .
Aux armes, etc.

[1] Literally, by *chained-hands*, *i. e.*, by the hands of slaves, of mercenary soldiers. The meaning of this word has often been misunderstood. The style of the Marseillaise Hymn, is perhaps, in one or two places, not strictly correct.

Amour sacré de la patrie,
Conduis, soutiens nos bras vengeurs,
Liberté, liberté chérie
Combats avec tes défenseurs.
Sous nos drapeaux, que la victoire
Accoure à tes mâles accents;
Que nos ennemis expirants,
Voient ton triomphe et notre gloire!
Aux armes, etc. ROUGET DE L'ISLE.

7. LE RETOUR DANS LA PATRIE.

QU'IL va lentement le navire,
A qui[1] j'ai confié mon sort!
Au rivage ou mon cœur aspire,
Qu'il est lent à trouver un port!
France adorée!
Douce contrée!
Mes yeux cent fois ont cru te découvrir,
Qu'un vent rapide
Soudain nous guide
Aux bords sacrés où je reviens mourir
Mais enfin le matelot crie;
Terre, terre, là-bas, voyez!
Ah! tous mes maux sont oubliés.
Salut à ma patrie!

Oui, voilà les rives de France;
Oui, voilà le port vaste et sûr,
Voisin des champs où mon enfance
S'écoula sous un chaume obscur!
France adorée!
Douce contrée!
Après vingt ans, enfin je te revois;
De mon village
Je vois la plage,
Je vois fumer la cime de mes toits.
Combien mon âme est attendrie!
Là furent mes premières amours;
Là ma mère m'attend toujours,
Salut à ma patrie!

[1] A poetical license; this should be *auquel*. § 39, (2.)

Au bruit des transports d'allégresse,
Enfin le navire entre au port.
Dans cette barque où l'on se presse
Hâtons-nous d'atteindre le bord.
France adorée!
Douce contrée!
Puissent tes fils te revoir ainsi tous!
Enfin j'arrive,
Et sur la rive,
Je rends au ciel, je rends grâce à genoux.
Je t'embrasse, ô terre chérie!
Dieu! qu'un exilé doit souffrir!
Moi, désormais, je puis mourir.
Salut à ma patrie! BÉRANGER.

VOCABULARY FOR THE READING LESSONS.

ABBREVIATIONS.

adj.	adjective.	p.	participle.
adj. v.	verbal adjective.	pl.	plural.
adv.	adverb.	pre.	preposition.
art.	article.	prn.	pronoun.
conj.	conjunction.	v. a.	active verb.
f.	feminine gender.	v. a. & n.	active and neuter verb.
ind. p.	present of indicative.	v. aux.	auxiliary verb.
int.	interjection.	v. unip.	unipersonal verb.
m.	masculine gender.	v. ir. or ir.	irregular verb.
n.	noun.	v. n.	neuter verb.
p. d.	past definite.	v. r.	reflective verb.

The numbers after the verbs indicate the conjugation.

A—AD.

A, à (*with a grave accent*), pre. *at* or *to.*
Abondance, n. f. *abundance, plenty.*
Aboutir, v. n. 2. *to end in, to come to.*
Abreuver, v. a. 1. *to water, to fill.*
Abyme or abîme, n. m. *abyss, depth.*
Abri, n. m. *shelter.*
Académicien, n. m. *Academician.*
Académie, n. f. *academy.*
Accent, n. m. *accent,* pl. *voice.*
Acclamation, n. f. *acclamation.*
Accompagner, v. a. 1. *to accompany.*
Accorder, v. a. 1. *to grant* (s') v. r. *to agree.*
Accourir, v. n. ir. 2. *to run, to hasten to.*
Accueillir, v. a. ir. 2. *to welcome.*
Acheter, v. a. 1. *to buy.*
Achever, v. a. 1. *to achieve, complete.*
Acquérir, v. a. ir. 2. *to acquire.*
Acquitter (s'), v. r. 1. *to acquit one's self of, to discharge.*
Adieu, int. & n. m. *adieu, farewell, leave.*
Admettre, v. a. ir. 4. *to admit.*
Admiration, n. f. *admiration.*
Admirer, v. a. 1. *to admire.*
Adopter, v. a. 1. *to adopt.*
Adorer, v. a. 1. *to adore.*

AD—AM.

Adresser, v. a. 1. *to address;* (s'), ref. *to apply.*
Affectation, n. f. *affectation.*
Affligé, p. & adj. v. *grieved, afflicted.*
Afrique, *Africa.*
Agacer, v. a. 1. *to entice, to tease.*
Agile, adj. *nimble, light.*
Agiter, v. a. *to agitate, to shake.*
Agneau, n. m. *lamb.*
Ah! int. *Ah.*
Aigle, n. m. *eagle.*
Aile, n. f. *wing.*
Aimer, v. a. 1. *to love, to like.*
Ainsi, adv. *thus, so.*
Air, n. m. *air.*
Airain, n. m. *brass.*
Aisément, adv. *easily.*
Ajouter, v. a. 1. *to add.*
Alarm, n. f. *alarm.*
Allégorie, n. f. *allegory.*
Allégresse, n. f. *joy.*
Aller, v. n. ir. 1. (ind. p., je vais,) *to go.*
Alliance, n. f. *alliance.*
Allumer, v. a. 1. *to light, kindle.*
Alouette, n. f. *lark.*
Ambassadeur, n. m. *ambassador.*
Ambition, n. f. *ambition.*
Âme, n. f. *soul.*
Amer, e, adj. *bitter.*

Amérique, *America.*
Amitié, n. f. *friendship.*
Amertume, n. f. *bitterness, sorrow.*
Ami, e, n. m. & f. *friend.*
Amour, n. m. *love.*
Âne, n. m. *ass, donkey.*
An, n. m. année, f. *year.*
Ancien, m. adj. *ancient, old.*
Ange, n. m. *angel.*
Anglais, e, adj. *English.*
Animal, (pl. aux.) n. m. *animal.*
Animer, v. a. 1. *to animate, to excite.*
Annoncer, v. a. 1. *to announce.*
Antique, adj. *ancient, antique.*
A peine, adv. *scarcely, hardly.*
Apercevoir, v. a. 3. *to perceive.*
Apologue, n. m. *apologue.*
Apparence, n. f. *appearance.*
Appartenir, v. n. ir. 2. (ind. p. j'appartiens), *to belong.*
Appeler, v. a. 1. *to call.*
Apprendre, v. a. 4. (p. appris), *to learn.*
Approcher, v. a. 1. *to bring near,* (s'), v. r. *to approach.*
Appuyer, v. a. 1. *to lean.*
Après, pre. *after.*
Aquilon, n. m. *north wind.*
Arabie, *Arabia.*
Arbre, n. m. *tree.*
Architecte, n. m. *architect.*
Armer, v. a. 1. *to arm* (s'), v. r. *to arm one's self.*
Arracher, v. a. 1. *to tear.*
Arriver, v. n. 1. *to arrive.*
Art, n. m. *art.*
Article, n. m. *article.*
Artifice, n. m. *artifice, cunning, trick.*
Asie, *Asia.*
Aspirer, v. n. 1. *to aspire.*
Assembler, v. a. 1. *to assemble.*
Asseoir (s'), v. r. ir. 3. (ind. p. je m'assieds, p. assis), *to sit down.*
Association, n. f. *association, company.*
Assommer, v. a. 1. *to strike down, to kill.*
Attacher, v. a. 1. *to attach.*
Attaché, adj. *attached.*
Atteindre, v. a. ir. 4. (p. d. j'atteignis), *to reach, to hit.*
Attendre, 4. *to await, to expect.*
Attendri, e, a. v. p. *moved, grieved.*
Attentif, ve, adj. *attentive.*
Attraper, v. a. 1. *to catch.*
Au, art. *at* or *to the.*
Aujourd'hui, adv. *to-day.*
Auparavant, adv. *before.*
Auprès, pre. & adv. *near.*
Auquel, prn. *to which.*
Aurore, n. f. *dawn, aurora.*
Aussi, conj. & adv. *as, so, also.*
Aussitôt, adv. *immediately.*
Austral, e, adj. *austral.*
Autant, adv. *as much, as many.*
Autel, n. m. *altar.*
Auteur, n. m. *author.*
Autour, pre. & adv. *round, around.*
Autre, adj. *other.*
Autrefois, adv. *formerly.*
Autrui, prn. *other, others.*
Aux, art. *at* or *to the.*
Avancer (s'), v. r. 1. *to advance, approach.*
Avant, pre. *before.*
Avare, n. & adj. *miser, avaricious.*
Avec, pre. *with.*
Avenir, n. m. *future.*
Aveugle, adj. *blind.*
Avide, adj. *anxious, eager.*
Aviser (s'), v. r. 1. *to think, to take into one's head.*
Avoir, v. aux. & a. ir. (p. d. j'eus), *to have.*
Avouer, v. a. 1. *to confess.*

B.

Badin, e, adj. *playful.*
Baigner, v. a. 1. *to bathe.*
Bâillon, s. m. *gag.*
Baiser, v. a. 1. *to kiss.*
Balancer, v. n. 1. *to balance, hesitate.*
Balbutier, v. a. & n. 1. *to stammer.*
Barque, n. f. *bark, boat.*
Barrière, n. f. *gate.*
Bataille, n. f. *battle.*
Bataillon, n. m. *battalion.*
Bâtir, v. a. 2. *to build.*
Battre, v. a. ir. 4. (p. battu,) *to beat.*
Baudet, n. m. *donkey.*
Bavard, e, n. & adj. *talkative, prattler.*
Beau, bel, f. belle, adj. *fine, handsome.*
Beaucoup, adv. *much, many.*
Beauté, n. f. *beauty.*

Bec, n. m. *beak.*
Bel-esprit, n. m. *wit.*
Bénir, v. a. 2. *to bless.*
Berger, n. m. *shepherd.*
Besoin, n. m. *need, want.*
Beurre, n. m. *butter.*
Bien, n. m, *property,* adv. *well.*
Bien-être, n. m. *welfare, comfort.*
Bienfaisance, n. f. *beneficence, benevolence.*
Bienfait, n. m. *benefit.*
Bientôt, adv. *soon.*
Billet, n. m. *note.*
Blanc, blanche, adj. *white.*
Boire, v. a. ir. 4. (p. d. je bus, p. bu) *to drink.*
Bois, n. m. *wood, forest.*
Bon, ne, adj *good, kind, simple*
Bonheur, n. m. *happiness.*
Bonne-chère, n. f. *good living.*
Bonté, n. f. *goodness, kindness.*
Bord, n. m. *border, shore.*
Borner, v. a. 1. *to confine, to bound.*
Botte, n. f. *boot, bundle.*
Bouche, n. f. *mouth.*
Bouillir, v. n. ir. 2. *to boil, to bubble.*
Branche, n. f. *branch.*
Bras, n. m. *arm.*
Brave, adj. *brave, worthy.*
Braver, v. a. 1. *to brave, affront.*
Brebis, n. f. *sheep.*
Brillant, e. adj. *shining, brilliant.*
Briser, v. a. 1. *to break.*
Brouter, v. a. & n. 1. *to browse, to graze.*
Bruit, n. m. *noise.*
Buisson, n. m. *bush.*

C.

C', prn. *it.*
Cacher, v. a. 1. *to hide, conceal;* (se), v. r. *to hide one's self.*
Cage, n. f. *cage.*
Calife, n. m. *calif.*
Calomnie, n. f. *calumny.*
Camp, n. m. *camp*
Campagne, n. f. *country, campaign.*
Candidat, n. m. *candidate.*
Caresse, n. f. *caress.*
Cas, n. m. *case.*
Causeur, se, adj. *talker, talkative.*
Ce, prn. & adj. *this, that.*
Célèbre, adj. *celebrated.*
Céleste, adj. *celestial.*
Celui, prn. *this, that.*
Censurer, v. a. 1. *to censure.*
Cent, adj. num. *hundred.*
Centre, n. m. *centre.*
Cependant, conj. *however.*
Certain, adj. *certain.*
Ces, adj. *these, those.*
Cesse (sans), *without ceasing.*
Cette, adj. *this, that.*
Ceux, prn. *these, those.*
Chaleur, n. f. *heat.*
Champ, n. m. *field.*
Changer, v. a. & n. 1. *to change.*
Chant, n. m. *song, singing.*
Chanter, v. a. & n. 1. *to sing.*
Chaos, n. m. *chaos.*
Chaque, adj. *each.*
Charger, v. a. 1. *to charge, load.*
Charme, n. m. *charm.*
Charrier, v. a. 1. *to transport, carry.*
Chasser, v. a. & n. 1. *to hunt, to chase, to drive away.*
Château, n. m. *castle, villa.*
Chaume, n. m. *thatch.*
Chaumière, n. f. *cottage.*
Chef, n. m. *chief.*
Chemin, n. m. *way, road.*
Chêne, n. m. *oak.*
Cher, e, adj. *dear.*
Chercher, v. a. 1. *to seek.*
Chère, f. *fare;* faire bonne-chère, *to live well.*
Chéri, adj. *cherished, beloved.*
Cheveux, n. m. pl. *hair.*
Chèvre, n. f. *goat.*
Chien, n. m. *dog.*
Chiffre, n. m. *figure.*
Chœur, n. m. *choir, chorus.*
Choisir, v. a. 2. *to choose.*
Choix, n. m. *choice.*
Chose, n. f. *thing.*
Chrétien, n. & adj. *Christian.*
Chûte, n. f. *fall.*
Ciel, n. m. (pl. cieux,) *heaven.*
Cime, n. f. *peak, top.*
Circonférence, n. f. *circumference.*
Cité, n. f. *city.*
Citoyen, n. m. *citizen.*
Clair, e, adj. *clear,* n. m. *light.*
Clameur, n. f. *cry, clamor.*
Cœur, n. m. *heart.*
Cohorte, n. f. *cohort.*
Coin, n. m. *corner.*
Colline, n. f. *hill.*

Combattre, v. a. & n. 4. *to combat, to fight.*
Commander, v. a. 1. *to command, to order.*
Combien, adv. *how much, how many.*
Comme, adv. & conj. *as, like, when.*
Commencement, n. m. *beginning.*
Commencer, v. a. 1. *to begin.*
Comment, adv. *how.*
Commission, n. f. *commission.*
Commodité, n. f. *convenience.*
Commun, e, adj. *common, usual.*
Compagne, n. f. *companion.*
Complice, n. m. *accomplice.*
Composer, v. a. 1. *to compose.*
Comprendre, v. a. ir. 4. *to understand, to comprise.*
Comptant, adj. & adv. *ready, for cash.*
Compter, v. a. 1. *to count, to intend.*
Concevoir, v. a. 3. *to conceive.*
Conclure, v. a. ir. 1. *to conclude.*
Concours, n. m. *concourse, assembly.*
Condamner, v. a. 1. *to condemn.*
Condition, n. f. *condition.*
Conduire, v. a. ir. 4. *to conduct.*
Confiance, n. f. *confidence, dependence.*
Confier, v. a. 1. *to trust, to confide.*
Confrère, n. m. *brother, fellow.*
Confusément, adv. *confusedly.*
Conjuré, a. v. *sworn together.*
Connaître, v. a. ir. 4. (p. d. je connus, p. connu), *to know, to be acquainted with.*
Conque, n. f. *shell.*
Conquérant, n. m. *conqueror.*
Conscience, n. f. *conscience.*
Conseil, n. m. *advice, counsel.*
Consentir, v. n. 2. *to consent, agree.*
Conserver, v. a. 1. *to preserve.*
Consolation, n. f. *consolation.*
Constant, e, adj. *constant.*
Consternation, n. f. *consternation.*
Content, e, adj. *pleased, content.*
Continuellement, adv. *continually*
Contracter, v. a. 1. *to contract.*
Contre, pre. *against.*
Contrée, n. f. *country, district.*
Contre-temps, n. m. *disappointment.*
Convaincre, v. a. ir. 4. *to convince.*
Convenir, v. n. 2. *to agree, to suit, to confess.*
Conversation, n. f. *conversation.*
Convier, v. a. 1. *to invite.*
Corps, n. m. *body, corpse.*
Cortége, n. m. *retinue.*
Côte, n. f. *coast.*
Côté, n. m. *side.*
Couchant, n. m. *West.*
Coucher, (se), v. ref. 1. *to lie down.*
Couleuvre, n. f. *snake, adder.*
Coup, n. m. *blow.*
Coupe, n. f. *cup, vessel.*
Couper, v. a. 1. *to cut.*
Cour, n. f. *court.*
Courage, n. m. *courage.*
Courber, v. a. 1. *to bend, to bow.*
Courroux, n. m. *anger.*
Court, e, adj. *short.*
Cours, n. m. *course.*
Courtisan, n. m. *courtier.*
Coûter, v. n. 1. *to cost.*
Couvrir, v. a. ir. 2. *to cover.*
Craindre, v. a. ir. 4. (p. d. je craignis, p. craint), *to fear.*
Craquer, v. a. & n. 1. *to crack, to snap.*
Créer, v. a. 1. *to create.*
Crier, n. a. 1. *to cry.*
Croire, v. a. ir. 4. (p. d. je crus, p. cru), *to believe.*
Croquer, v. a. 1. *to eat greedily.*
Cueillir, v. a. ir. 2. *to gather, to pick.*
Cultiver, v. a. 1. *to cultivate.*
Curiosité, n. f. *curiosity.*
Cytise, n. m. *cytisus.*

D.

Dans, pre. *in, into.*
Davantage, adv. *more.*
De, pre. *of* or *from.*
Débarquer, v. a. & n. 1. *to land.*
Déborder, v. n. 1. *to run over.*
Debout, adv. *standing.*
Décapiter, v. a. 1. *to behead.*
Déceler, v. a. 1. *to discover.*
Déchirer, v. a. 1. *to tear.*
Décision, n. f. *decision*
Déclin, n. m. *decline, fall.*
Découvrir, v. a. ir. 2. *to discover, uncover.*
Dédaigner, v. a. 1. *to disdain.*
Défaut, n. m. *defect.*
Défendre, v. a. 4. *to defend, to forbid.*
Défenseur, n. m. *defender, protector.*
Déguiser, v. a. 1. *to disguise.*
Déjà, adv. *already.*
Délicat, e, adj. *delicate.*

Délicatement, adv. *delicately.*
Délice, n. m. *delight.*
Délices, n. f. pl. *delight.*
Délicieux, se, adj. *delightful, delicious.*
Demande, n. f. *request, question.*
Demander, v. a. 1. *to ask, to request.*
Demeure, n. f. *abode, dwelling.*
Démon, n. m. *demon.*
Deniers, n. m. p. *money, means.*
Déployer, v. a. 1. *to display.*
Depuis, pre. *since.*
Déranger, v. a. 1. *to disturb, to put out of order.*
Dernier, e, adj. *last, latter.*
Dérober, v. a. 1. *to steal, to conceal.*
Derviche, n. m. *dervise.*
Dès, pre. *from.*
Désagréable, adj. *disagreeable.*
Désarmé, adj. v. *disarmed.*
Descendre, v. n. 4. *to descend, to come down.*
Désert, n. m. *desert.*
Désirer, v. a. 1. *to wish, to desire.*
Désoler, v. a. 1. *to distress, to grieve, to desolate.*
Désormais, adv. *henceforth.*
Dessécher, v. a. 1. *to dry up, to drain.*
Dessous, adv. *under.*
Dessus, adv. *above.*
Destinée, n. f. *fate.*
Destiner, v. a. 1. *to destine.*
Détacher, v. a. 1. *to detach, to separate.*
Détruire, v. a. ir. 4. (p. d. je détruisis), *to destroy.*
Deux, adj. *two.*
Devancer, v. a. 1. *to outstrip, to come before.*
Devant, pre. *before, opposite.*
Devenir, v. n. 2. *to become.*
Devoir, v. a. 3. *to owe.*
Dévorer, v. a. 1. *to devour.*
Dieu, n. m. *God.*
Digne, adj. *worthy.*
Diminuer, v. a. 1. *to diminish.*
Dîner, n. m. *dinner.*
Dîner, v. n. *to dine.*
Dire, v. a. ir. 4. (p. dit.) *to say, tell.*
Discourir, v. n. ir. 2. *to discourse.*
Discipline, n. f. *discipline.*
Disparaître, v. n. ir. 4. *to disappear.*
Disperser, v. a. 1. *to disperse.*
Distance, n. f. *distance.*
Divers, adj. *diverse, different.*
Divin, e, adj. *divine.*
Dix, adj. *ten.*
Docteur, n. m. *doctor.*
Dôme, n. m. *dome.*
Don, n. m. *gift.*
Donc, conj. *therefore, then.*
Donner, v. a. 1. *to give.*
Dont, prn. *of which, of whom.*
Dorer, v. a. 1. *to gild.*
Dormir, v. n. ir. 2. *to sleep.*
Doucement, adv. *softly, sweetly.*
Douceur, n. f. *softness, sweetness.*
Doux, ce, adj. *soft, sweet.*
Drapeaux, n. m. p. *colors, standards.*
Droit, n. m. *right.*
Droit, adj. & adv. *straight.*
Du, art. *of* or *from the.*
Duc, n. m. *duke.*
Durée, n. f. *duration.*
Durer, v. n. 1. *to last, to endure.*

E.

Eau, n. f. *water.*
Échapper, v. n. 1. *to escape.*
Écho, n. m. *echo.*
Éclairer, v. a. 1. *to light.*
Éclat, n. m. *brightness, splendor.*
Éclore, v. n. ir. 4. *to hatch.*
Écouler (s'), v. r. 1. *to elapse, to pass.*
Écouter, v. a. 1. *to listen, to hear.*
Écraser, v. a. 1. *to crush.*
Écrier (s'), v. r. 1. *to exclaim.*
Écrire, v. a. ir. 4. *to write.*
Édifice, n. m. *edifice.*
Effacer, v. a. 1. *to efface.*
Effet, n. m. *effect.*
Effleurer, v. a. 1. *to graze, to touch slightly.*
Effort, n. m. *effort, endeavor.*
Effrayer, v. a. 1. *to frighten,* (s') ref. *to be frightened.*
Égorger, v. a. 1. *to slaughter, to murder, to cut the throat.*
Eh bien! int. *well!*
Élever, v. a. 1. *to raise.*
Elle, prn. *she, it, her.*
Éloquence, n. f. *eloquence.*
Embellir, v. a. 2. *to embellish.*
Emblématique, adj. *emblematical.*
Emblême, n. m. *emblem.*
Embrasser, v. a. 1. *to embrace, to kiss.*

Émigré, n. & adj. *emigrant.*
Empêcher, v. a. 1. *to prevent.*
Empire, n. m. *empire.*
Employer, v. a. 1. *to employ, to use.*
Empreinte, n. f. *mark, print.*
Emprunter, v. a. 1. *to borrow.*
En, pre. *in, into, at, to.*
En, rel. prn. *of it, of them,* etc.
Encenser, v. a. 1. *to flatter, to worship.*
Enchaîner, v. a. 1. *to chain.*
Enchantement, n. m. *enchantment, charm.*
Encore, adv. *yet, still, again.*
Endormir, v. a. ir. 2. *to put* or *lull to sleep,* (s') ref. *to go to sleep.*
Endroit, n. m. *spot, place.*
Enfant, n. m. *child.*
Enfanter, v. a. 1. *to produce.*
Enfer, n. m. *hell.*
Enfers, n. m. pl. *infernal regions.*
Enfin, adv. *at last, finally.*
Enfler, (s') v. r. 1. *to swell, to increase.*
Engloutir, v. a 2. *to swallow up.*
Enivrer, v. a. 1. *to intoxicate.*
Enlever, v. a. 1. *to take or carry away.*
Ennemi, n. m. & adj. *enemy, inimical.*
Ennuyeux, se, adj. *tiresome, wearisome.*
Ensemble, adv. *together.*
Entendre, v. a. 4. *to hear, to understand.*
Entraves, n. f. pl. *bonds, obstacles, fetters.*
Entrer, v. n. 1. *to enter, to go in.*
Envers, pre. *towards, to.*
Envoler, (s'), v. r. 1. *to fly away.*
Épargner, v. a. 1. *to spare.*
Épaule, n. f. *shoulder.*
Épouvanter, v. a. 1. *to frighten.*
Époux, se, n. m. & f. *husband, wife.*
Épuiser, v. a. 1. *to exhaust.*
Erreur, n. f. *error.*
Esclave, n. m. *slave.*
Espace, n. m. *space.*
Espérance, n. f. *hope.*
Espérer, v. a. 1. *to hope.*
Esprit, n. m. *wit, mind.*
Essayer, v. a. 1. *to try, attempt.*
Et, conj. *and.*
Établir, v. a. 2. *to establish.*
État, n. m. *state, condition, trade.*
Été, n. m. *summer.*
Éteindre, v. a. ir. 4. (p. d. j'éteignis), *to extinguish, put out.*
Étendard, n. m. *standard.*
Étendue, n. f. *extent.*
Éternel, le, adj. & n. *eternal.*
Étonner, v. a. 1. *to astonish.*
Étourdir, v. a. 2. *to stun, to disturb.*
Être, v. aux. & n. ir. 4. (ind. p. je suis, p. d. je fus), *to be.*
Être, n. m. *being.*
Euphrate, *Euphrates.*
Européen, ne, n. & adj. *European.*
Eux, prn. m. pl. *them.*
Éveiller, v. a. 1. *to awake.*
Éviter, v. a. 1. *to avoid.*
Exactement, adv. *exactly.*
Examiner, v. a. 1. *to examine.*
Excellent, e, adj *excellent.*
Excessif, ve, adj. *excessive.*
Exciter, v. a. 1. *to excite.*
Exemple, n. m. *example.*
Exilé, n. m. & adj. *exile, exiled.*
Expirant, adj. v. *expiring, dying.*
Expirer, v. n. 1. *to expire.*
Extérieur, n. m. *outside, exterior.*
Extérieur, e, adj. *exterior.*
Extrémité, n. f. *extremity.*

F.

Fâché, e, adj. v. *angry, sorry.*
Façon, n. f. *fashion, way.*
Faction, n. f. *faction, watch.*
Fagotin, m. *a name often given in France to monkeys.*
Faible, adj. *weak, feeble.*
Faim, n. f. *hunger.*
Faire, v. a. ir. 4. (p. d. je fis), *to make, to do, to cause.*
Falloir, v. unip. ir. 3. (ind. p. il faut), *to be necessary.*
Famille, n. f. *family.*
Farce, n. f. *farce, trick.*
Farouche, adj. *wild, stern.*
Fatigue, n. f. *fatigue, weariness.*
Faussement, adv. *falsely.*
Faux, n. f. *scythe.*
Faux, se, adj. *false.*
Félicité, n. f. *happiness, felicity.*
Femme, n. f. *woman, wife.*
Fers, n. m. pl. *chains, irons.*
Fertile, adj. *fruitful, fertile.*
Feu, n. m. *fire.*
Feuillage, n. m. *foliage.*

Feuille, n. f. *leaf.*
Festin, n. m. *sumptuous meal, repast.*
Fidèle, n. m. & adj. *faithful.*
Fier, e, adj. *proud, formidable.*
Fier, (se), v. r. 1. *to trust, to confide.*
Fille, n. f. *daughter, girl.*
Fils, n. m. *son.*
Flatterie, n. f. *flattery.*
Fléau, n. m. *scourge.*
Flétrir, v. a. & n. 2. *to fade, wither.*
Fleur, n. f. *flower.*
Fleuve, n. m. *river, stream.*
Flotter, v. n. 1. *to float, to wave.*
Foi, n. f. *faith.*
Fois, n. f. *time.*
Folie, n. f. *folly.*
Fond, n. m. *bottom.*
Fonder, v. a. 1. *to found.*
Fontaine, n. f. *fountain, spring.*
Force, n. f. *strength, force.*
Forêt, n. f. *forest, wood.*
Former, v. a. 1. *to form.*
Fort, e, adj. *strong.*
Fortune, n. f. *fortune.*
Foudre, n. f. *thunderbolt.*
Fou, folle, adj. & n. m. & f. *fool, foolish.*
Fouler, v. a. 1. *to tread under foot.*
Foyer, n. m. *hearth.*
Foyers, n. m. pl. *hearth, home, native country.*
Franc, n. m. *franc.*
Français, e, adj. *French.*
Franchement, adv. *frankly.*
Franchir, v. a. 2. *to step over, to pass over.*
Frapper, v. a. 1. *to strike.*
Fraternité, n. f. *brotherhood.*
Froid, n. m. *cold.*
Fromage, n. m. *cheese.*
Front, n. m. *forehead, brow.*
Fruit, n. m. *fruit.*
Fugitif, ve, adj. *fugitive.*
Fuite, n. f. *flight.*
Fumer, v. n. & a. 1. *to smoke.*
Fusil, n. m. *gun.*

G.

Gagner, v. a. 1. *to win, gain.*
Garde, n. f. *guard, watch, care.*
Gâté, adj. v. *spoiled.*
Gelée, n. f. *frost.*
Gémir, v. n. 2. *to moan, groan.*
Général, n. m. & adj. *general.*
Génération, n. f. *generation.*
Génie, n. m. *genius.*
Genou, n. m. *knee.*
Gens, n. pl. *people.*
Gestes, n. m. pl. *gestures.*
Glace, n. f. *ice, looking-glass.*
Glaneur, n. m. *gleaner.*
Globe, n. m. *globe.*
Gloire, n. f. *glory.*
Glorifier, v. a. 1. *to glorify, praise.*
Goutte, n. f. *drop.*
Gouverner, v. a. 1. *to govern.*
Grâces, n. f. pl. *graces, thanks.*
Graine, n. f. *grain.*
Grand, e, adj. *great, large.*
Grandir, v. n. 2. *to grow.*
Grimaces, n. f. pl. *grimaces, faces.*
Gronder, v. a. & n. 1. *to scold, to roar.*
Gros, se, adj. *large.*
Grossier, e. adj. *coarse.*
Grue, n. f. *crane.*
Guère, adv. *but little, but few.*
Guerre, n. f. *war.*
Guerrier, n. m. *warrior.*
Guide, n. m. *guide.*

H.

Habitant, n. m. *inhabitant.*
Habiter, v. a. 1. *to inhabit.*
Habituel, le, adj. *usual, habitual.*
Hache, n. f. *axe.*
Haleine, n. f. *breath.*
Hameau, n. m. *hamlet.*
Harangueur, n. m. *orator.*
Hardiesse, n. f. *boldness.*
Hardiment, adv. *boldly.*
Harpe, n. f. *harp.*
Hasard, n. m. *chance.*
Hâter, v. a. 1. *to hasten.*
Hauteur, n. f. *height, haughtiness.*
Herbe, n. f. *herb, grass.*
Héros, n. m. *hero:*
Heure, n. f. *hour.*
Héritage, n. m. *inheritance, property.*
Heureux, se, adj. *happy, fortunate.*
Hibou, n. m. *owl.*
Hirondelle, n. f. *swallow.*
Hiver, n. m. *winter.*
Homme, n. m. *man.*
Honnête, adj. *honest, polite.*
Honneur, n. m. *honor.*
Honte, n. f. *shame.*

Horde, n. f. *horde, troop.*
Huissier, n. m. *doorkeeper, attendant.*
Humain, e, adj. *human, humane.*
Humblement, adv. *humbly.*
Hymne, n. f. *hymn.*

I.

Idole, n. f. *idol.*
Ignoble, adj. *mean, low, debasing.*
Il, ils, prn. *he, it, they.*
Image, n. f. *image, resemblance.*
Imiter, v. a. 1. *to imitate.*
Immense, adj. *immense, vast.*
Immortel, le, adj. *immortal.*
Impénitent, adj. *impenitent, unrepenting.*
Importun, e, adj. *importunate, troublesome.*
Impur, e, adj. *impure.*
Incomparable, adj. *incomparable, matchless.*
Inconnu, e, adj. *unknown.*
Inconstant, e, adj. *inconstant, changeable.*
Indiquer, v. a. 1. *to indicate, to point out.*
Industrie, n. f. *industry.*
Infatigable, adj. *indefatigable, untiring.*
Infernal, e, adj. *infernal.*
Inflexible, adj. *inflexible, unbending.*
Ingénieux, se, adj. *ingenious.*
Ingrat, e, adj. & n. *ungrateful.*
Ingratitude, n. f. *ingratitude.*
Innocence, n. f. *innocence.*
Inscrire, v. a. ir. 4. *to inscribe.*
Insecte, n. m. *insect.*
Insensibilité, n. f. *insensibility.*
Inspirer, v. a. 1. *to inspire.*
Instant, n. m. *instant, moment.*
Intention, n. f. *intention, meaning.*
Intérieur, e, adj. & n. *interior, inside.*
Interrompre, v. a. ir. 4. *to interrupt.*
Intime, adj. *intimate, close.*
Intitulé, adj. v. *entitled, called.*
Intrépide, adj. *intrepid.*
Introduire, v. a. ir. 4. (p. d. j'introduisis), *to introduce.*
Ivresse, n. f. *intoxication, excessive joy.*

J.

Jadis, adv. *formerly.*
Jamais, adv. *never.*
Jardin, n. m. *garden.*
Jaseur, se, n. m. & f. *talker, prattler.*
Je, j', prn. *I.*
Jeter, v. a. 1. *to throw, cast.*
Jeunesse, n. f. *youth.*
Joie, n. f. *joy.*
Joindre, v. a. ir. 4. (p. d. je joignis, p. joint), *to join, to connect, to add.*
Joli, e, adj. *pretty.*
Jouet, n. m. *plaything, sport.*
Joug, n. m. *yoke, subjection.*
Jour, n. m. *day, light.*
Journée, n. f. *day, day's work.*
Joyeux, se, adj. *joyful, glad.*
Juge, n. m. *judge.*
Jugement, n. m. *judgment, decision*
Juger, v. a. 1. *to judge, to decide.*
Jurer, v. a. & n. 1. *to swear, to promise.*
Jusque, pre. *as far, as far as.*
Juste, adj. & n. *just.*
Justice, n. f. *justice.*

L.

La, l', art. *the.*
La, l', prn. *her, it.*
Là, adv. *there;* là-bas, *yonder.*
Laboureur, n. m. *husbandman.*
Lac, n. m. *lake.*
Lâcher, v. a. 1. *to lose hold of, to let go.*
Laid, e, adj. *ugly.*
Laine, n. f. *wool.*
Laisser, v. a. 1. *to leave, to let.*
Lait, n. m. *milk.*
Lambris, n. m. *wainscot.*
Lampe, n. f. *lamp.*
Lancer, v. a. 1. *to dart, to send forth with violence, to launch.*
Langue, n. f. *tongue, language.*
Laurier, n. m. *laurel.*
Le, l', les, art. *the.*
Le, l', les, prn. *it, them.*
Léger, e, adj. *light.*
Lendemain, n. m. *next day, morrow.*
Les, art. pl. *the;* les, prn. *them.*
Leur, adj. pl. *their.*
Leur, prn. *to them.*
Lever, v. a. 1. *to raise,* (se), v. r. *to rise, to arise.*
Lever, n. m. *rising.*
Liban, *Lebanon.*
Liberté, n. f. *liberty, freedom.*
Libre, adj. *free.*

Lieu, n. m. *place, spot.*
Lion, n. m. *lion.*
Liqueur, n. f. *liquor, liquid.*
Livre, n. m. *book.*
Loi, n. f. *law.*
Loin, adv. *far.*
Lointain, e, adj. *remote, distant.*
Long, ue, adj. *long.*
Long-temps, adv. *long, long time.*
Loup, n. m. *wolf.*
Lugubre, adj. *mournful, sad.*
Lui, prn. *to him, to her*
Lumière, n. f. *light.*
Lunettes, n. f. pl. *spectacles.*
Lutte, n. f. *struggle, contest.*
Lutter, v. n. 1. *to contend with, to wrestle.*

M.

Ma, adj. pos. f. *my.*
Machine, n. f. *machine.*
Magnanime, adj. *magnanimous.*
Magnificence, n. f. *magnificence.*
Main, n. f. *hand.*
Maintenir, v. a. ir. 2. (ind. p. je maintiens, p. d. je maintins), *to maintain.*
Mais, conj. *but.*
Maison, n. f. *house.*
Maître, n. m. *master.*
Mal, n. m. *evil,* adv. *badly.*
Malade, n. & adj. *patient, sick.*
Mâle, adj. *manly, dignified.*
Malgré, pre. *in spite of.*
Malice, n. f. *cunning, malice.*
Malin, maligne, adj. *sarcastic, sly.*
Manant, n. m. *peasant, clown.*
Manger, v. a. 1. *to eat.*
Manifester, v. a. 1. *to manifest, to testify, to show.*
Manquer, v. a. & n. 1. *to miss, to fail.*
Marcher, v. n. 1. *to walk, to march.*
Marge, n. f. *margin.*
Marque, n. f. *mark.*
Marseillaise, n. f. *Marseillaise hymn.*
Matelot, n. m. *sailor.*
Matière, n. f. *matter.*
Mauvais, e, adj. *bad.*
Maxime, n. f. *maxim.*
Me, prn. *me, to me.*
Mélodieux, se, adj. *melodious.*
Même, adj. & adv. *same, self, even.*
Menacer, v. a. 1. *to threaten.*
Mendiant, n. m. *beggar.*
Mener, v. a. 1. *to lead, to take*
Mensonge, n. m. *falsehood.*
Mentir, v. n. ir. 2. *to lie, to tell a falsehood.*
Menu, e, adj. *small, short.*
Mépris, n. m. *contempt.*
Mépriser, v. a. 1. *to despise.*
Mer, n. f. *sea.*
Mercenaire, adj. *mercenary.*
Mercure, *Mercury.*
Mère, n. f. *mother.*
Mérite, n. m. *merit.*
Mériter, v. a. 1. *to merit, to deserve.*
Mes, adj. pos. pl. *my.*
Mesurer, v. a. 1. *to measure.*
Métier, n. m. *trade, occupation.*
Mettre, v. a. ir. 4. (ind. p. je mets, p. d. je mis, p. mis), *to put, to set.*
Meubler, v. a. 1. *to furnish.*
Midi, n. m. *south, noon.*
Mignon, ne, adj. *delicate, pretty.*
Milieu, n. m. *middle.*
Mille, adj. num. *thousand.*
Ministre, n. m. *minister.*
Mobile, adj. *movable, light.*
Modeste, adj. *modest.*
Mœurs, n. f. pl. *morals, manners.*
Moi, prn. *me.*
Moindre, adj. *lesser, less.*
Moins, adv. *less,* (au) *least.*
Mois, n. m. *month.*
Moissonneur, n. m. *harvest-man, reaper.*
Moment, n. m. *moment.*
Monde, n. m. *world, people,* (tout le) *every body.*
Monnaie, n. f. *money, change.*
Monstre, n. m. *monster.*
Montagnard, n. m. *mountaineer.*
Montagne, n. f. *mountain.*
Monter, v. a. & n. 1. *to ascend, to mount.*
Montrer, v. a. 1. *to show, to point out.*
Monument, n. m. *monument.*
Moquer, (se), v. r. 1. *to laugh at, to mock.*
Morceau, n. m. *piece, morsel.*
Mort, n. f. *death,* n. m. *dead.*
Mosquée, n. f. *mosque.*
Mot, n. m. *word.*
Mouche, n. f. *fly.*
Mourir, v. n. ir. 2. *to die.*

Mouton, n. m. *sheep.*
Mugir, v. n. 2. *to roar.*
Mystérieux, adj. *mysterious.*

N.

Naïf, ve, adj. *artless, unaffected, simple, innocent.*
Naissance, n. f. *birth.*
Naissant, e, adj. v. *rising, growing.*
Naître, v. n. ir. 4. (ind. p. je nais, p. d. je naquis, p. né), *to be born.*
Nation, n. f. *nation.*
Nature, n. f. *nature.*
Navire, n. m. *ship, vessel.*
Ne, adv. *not.*
Né, p. *born.*
Ne—pas, adv. *not.*
Ne—que, adv. *only, but.*
Néant, n. m. *nothingness, nothing.*
Nécessaire, adv. *necessary.*
Nécessaire, n. m. *necessaries of life.*
Ni, conj. *nor, neither.*
Nocturne, adj, *nocturnal, nightly.*
Noisette, n. f. *hazel-nut.*
Nombre, n. m. *number.*
Nommer, v. a. 1. *to name, to call.*
Non, adv. *no.*
Nos, adj. *our.*
Nourrir, v. a. 2. *to feed, to nourish.*
Nous, prn. *we, us.*
Nouveau, nouvel, nouvelle, adj. *new.*
Nouvelle, n. f. *news.*

O.

Obéir, v. n. 2. *to obey.*
Obscur, e, adj. *dark, obscure.*
Observer, v. a. 1. *to observe, to take notice of.*
Obtenir, v. a. ir. 2. (ind. p. d. j'obtiens, p. d. j'obtins), *to obtain.*
Odieux, se, adj. *odious, hateful.*
Oeil, n. m. (pl. yeux), *eyes.*
Oiseau, n. m. *bird.*
Ombrage, n. m. *shade.*
Ombrager, v. a. 1. *to shade, to shelter.*
Ombre, n. f. *shade, shadow.*
On, prn. indefinite, *one, they, we, people;* on dit, *it is said (one says).*
Onde, n. f. *wave, water.*
Opprimé, adj. v. *oppressed.*
Opprobre, n. m. *opprobrium, shame.*
Opulent, e, adj. *rich, wealthy.*
Or, n. m. *gold.*
Orage, n. m. *storm.*
Ordinairement, adv. *commonly.*
Ordre, n. m. *order.*
Oreille, n. f. *ear.*
Orgueil, n. m. *pride.*
Orphelin, e, n. m. & f. *orphan.*
Ôter, v. a. 1. *to take away, to deprive of.*
Ou, conj. *or.*
Où, adv. *where, in which, wherein.*
Oublier, v. a. 1. *to forget, to neglect.*
Outrage, n. m. *outrage, offence, shame.*
Ouverture, n. f. *opening.*
Ouvrage, n. m. *work.*
Ouvrier, n. m. *workman.*

P.

Paître, v. a. & n. 4. *to graze.*
Paix, n. f. *peace.*
Palais, n. m. *palace.*
Palmyre, *Palmyra.*
Par, pre. *by.*
Paraître, v. n. ir. 4. (p. paru), *to appear.*
Parce que, conj. *because.*
Parcourir, v. a. ir. 2. *to travel over, to cross, to look over.*
Pareil, le, adj. *equal, similar, such.*
Parer (se), v. r. 1. *to adorn one's self.*
Paresseux, se, adj. *idle, lazy, indolent.*
Parler, v. n. 1. *to speak.*
Parmi, pre. *among, amongst.*
Parole, n. f. *word.*
Parricide, adj. *parricidal.*
Parti, n. m. *part, party, resolution.*
Partir, v. n. ir. 2. *to set out, to leave, to depart.*
Partout, adv. *everywhere.*
Parvenu, adj. v. (used as a noun), *upstart.*
Pas, adv. *not,* n. m. *step, pace.*
Passer, v. n. 1. *to pass.*
Passereau, n. m. *sparrow.*
Passion, n. f. *passion.*
Pâtre, n. m. *herdsman, shepherd.*
Patrie, n. f. *country, native country.*
Patte, n. f. *paw.*
Pâturage, n. m. *pasture, pasturage.*

Pauvre, adj. *poor.*
Pays, n. m. *country.*
Paysan, n. m. *peasant, countryman.*
Péage, n. m. *toll.*
Peau, n. f. *skin.*
Peindre, v. a. ir. 4. (ind. p. je peins, p. d. je peignis), *to paint, describe.*
Peine, n. f. *trouble, pain.*
Peine, (à), adv. *hardly, scarcely.*
Pénible, adj. *laborious, painful.*
Pendant, pre. *during.*
Pendre, v. a. & n. 4. *to hang.*
Pénétration, n. f. *penetration.*
Pénétrer, v. a. 1. *to penetrate.*
Penser, v. n. 1. *to think.*
Père, n. m. *father.*
Perfide, adj. *perfidious, treacherous.*
Perdre, v. a. 4. *to lose.*
Permettre, v. a. ir. 4. *to permit, allow.*
Perroquet, n. m. *parrot.*
Perse, *Persia.*
Personne, prn. ind. *nobody.*
Pervers, a lj. *perverse.*
Petit, e, adj. *small, little.*
Pesant, adj. v. *heavy.*
Peu, adv. *little.*
Peuple, n. m. *people.*
Peupler, v. a. 1. *to people.*
Phalange, n. m. *phalanx.*
Philosophie, n. f. *philosophy.*
Phrase, n. f. *phrase, sentence.*
Pièce, n. f. *piece.*
Pied, n. m. *foot.*
Piége, n. m. *trap, snare.*
Pis, adv. *worse*, tant pis, *so much the worse.*
Pitié, n. f. *pity.*
Place, n. f. *place, spot.*
Placer, v. a. 1. *to place.*
Plafond, n. m. *ceiling.*
Plage, n. f. *shore, beach.*
Plaindre (se), v. r. ir. 4. (ind. p. je me plains, p. d. je me plaignis), *to complain.*
Plaine, n. f. *plain.*
Plaire, v. n. ir. 4. (p. d. je plus, p. plu), *to please.*
Plaisant, n. m. *wag, joker.*
Planter, v. a. 1. *to plant.*
Plein, e, adj. *full, open.*
Pleurer, v. a. & n. 1. *to weep, to mourn.*
Plier, v. a. 1. *to bow, to bend.*
Pluie, n. f. *rain.*
Plume, n. f. *feather, pen.*
Plupart (la), n. col. *the most, most.*
Plus, adv. *more.*
Plusieurs, adj. *several.*
Pluton, *Pluto.*
Point, n. m. *point*, adv. *not.*
Poisson, n. m. *fish.*
Pôle, n. m. *pole.*
Poli, e, adj. *polite, polished.*
Politesse, n. f. *politeness.*
Porphyre, n. m. *porphyry.*
Port, n. m. *port.*
Porter, v. a. 1. *to carry, to bear.*
Portique, n. m. *portico.*
Poser, v. a. 1. *to lay, to set, to place.*
Posséder, v. a. 1. *to possess.*
Possible, adj. *possible.*
Poteau, n. m. *stake, post.*
Pour, pre. *for.*
Pousser, v. a. 1. *to push, to hasten.*
Pouvoir, v. n. ir. 3. (ind. p. je puis, p. d. je pus, p. pu), *to be able.*
Prairie, n f. *meadow.*
Préalablement, adv. *previously.*
Précipiter, v. a. 1. *to hasten, precipitate.*
Préférer, v. a. 1. *to prefer.*
Préliminaire, n. & adj. *preliminary.*
Premier, e, adj. *first.*
Prendre, v. a. ir. 4. (p. d. je pris. p. pris), *to take;* (s'y) ref. *to commence, to open the matter.*
Préparer, v. a. 1. *to prepare.*
Près de, pre. *near, nearly.*
Président, n. m. *president.*
Présence, n. f. *presence.*
Présent, n. m. *present.*
Présenter (se), v. r. 1. *to present one's self.*
Presque, adv. *almost.*
Presser, v. a. & r. 1. (se), *to hasten, to press.*
Prêt, e, adj. *ready, prepared.*
Prier, v. a. & n. 1. *to pray, to entreat.*
Prière, n. f. *prayer.*
Prince, n. m. *prince.*
Printemps, n. m. *spring.*
Prisonnier, n. m. *prisoner.*
Prix, n. m. *price, prize.*
Produire, v. a. ir. 4. *to produce.*
Proférer, v. a. 1. *to utter, to speak.*
Profession, n. f. *profession.*
Projet, n. m. *project.*
Prolonger, v. a. 1. *to extend, to continue, to lengthen.*

Promener, v. a. 1. *to carry about.*
Prononcer, v. a. 1. *to pronounce.*
Protestation, n. f. *protest, protestation.*
Province, n. f. *province, district.*
Publier, v. a. 1. *to publish.*
Puis, adv. *then.*
Puiser, v. a. 1. *to dip, to find.*
Puisque, conj. *since.*
Puissance, n. f. *power.*
Puissant, e, adj. *powerful.*

Q.

Quand, adv. *when.*
Quatre, adj. num. *four.*
Qu', que, conj. *that,* prn. *which, whom.*
Quel, adj. *what, which.*
Quelque, adj. *some,* adv. *however.*
Quelque chose, n. m. *something.*
Quelquefois, adv. *sometimes.*
Qui, prn. *who, which.*
Quoi, prn. *which, what.*
Quoi ! int. *what !*
Quoique, conj. *although, though.*

R.

Radoteur, se, n. m. & f. *dotard.*
Raison, n. f. *reason, right.*
Ramasser, v. a. 1. *to pick up, to collect.*
Rameau, n. m. *branch.*
Rappeler, v. a. 1. *to recall, to remind,* (se) v. r. *to remember, to recollect.*
Rapporter, v. a. 1. *to bring back, to relate.*
Rapprocher, v. a. 1. *to bring near* or *together.*
Rarement, adv. *rarely, seldom.*
Rassembler, v. a. 1. *to collect, to bring together.*
Rassurer (se), v. r. 1. *to take courage, to cheer up, to settle.*
Recevoir, v. a. 3. *to receive.*
Rechigné, adj. *gruff, awkward, repulsive.*
Récipiendaire, n. m. *candidate, one chosen to a post.*
Reconnaître, v. a. ir. 4. *to recognize, know again.*
Redire, v. a. ir. 4. *to say again, repeat.*
Redouté, adj. v. *dreaded, feared.*
Réduire, v. a. ir. 4. (p. d. je réduisis, (*to reduce, to compel.*
Réellement, adv. *really.*
Réflexion, n. f. *reflection.*
Refuge, n. m. *refuge, asylum.*
Refuser, v. a. 1. *to refuse.*
Regard, n. m. *look.*
Registre, n. m. *register, book.*
Règle, n. f. *rule, regulation.*
Régner, v. n. 1. *to reign, to prevail.*
Regret, n. m. *regret.*
Reine, n. f. *queen.*
Religion, n. f. *religion.*
Relever, v. a. 1. *to raise again.*
Relief, n. m. en relief, *raised, embossed.*
Remercîment, n. m. *thank.*
Remettre, v. a. ir. 4. (p. d. je remis, p. remis), *to replace, to give, to hand, to deliver.*
Remplir, v. a. 2. *to fill, to fulfill.*
Remuer, v. a. 1. *to move, to stir.*
Rencontrer, v. a. 1. *to meet.*
Rendre, v. a. 4. *to render, to return, to give back.*
Renfermer, v. a. 1. *to inclose, to contain.*
Renommée, n. f. *fame, report.*
Renvoyer, v. a. ir. 1. *to send back, to send again.*
Répandre, v. a. 4. *to spread, spill, shed.*
Repas, n. m. *repast, meal.*
Repentir, (se), v. r. 2. *to repent.*
Répéter, v. a. 1. *to repeat.*
Répliquer, v. a. 1. *to reply.*
Replonger, v. a. 1. *to plunge,* or *cast again.*
Répondre, v. a. 4. *to answer, reply.*
Réponse, n. f. *reply.*
Reproduire, v. a. ir. 4. *to reproduce.*
Reptile, n. m. *reptile.*
Républicain, n. & adj. *republican.*
Réserver, v. a. 1. *to reserve, to keep.*
Résister, v. n. 1. *to resist.*
Résoudre, v. a. & n. ir. 4. (p. d. je résolus, p. résolu), *to resolve, to decide.*
Ressemblance, n. f. *resemblance, likeness.*
Reste, n. m. *rest, remainder, remnant.*

Reste, (de), adv. *sufficiently, fully, besides.*
Rester, v. n. 1. *to remain, to dwell.*
Retentir, v. n. 2. *to resound.*
Retentissant, adj. v. *resounding.*
Retirer (se), v. r. 1. *to retire, withdraw.*
Retour, n. m. *return.*
Retourner, v. n. 1. *to return, to go back.*
Réussir, v. n. 1. *to succeed.*
Réveil, n. m. *act of awaking.*
Réveiller (se), v. r. 1. *to awake.*
Revenir, v. n. ir. 2. *to return, come back.*
Rêver, v. n. 1. *to dream, to think.*
Revers, n. m. *reverse, wrong side.*
Revêtir, v. a. ir. 2. (ind. p. je revêts), *to clothe, invest.*
Revoir, v. a. ir. 3. (p. revu), *to see again.*
Riant, adj. v. *laughing, smiling, pleasant, cheerful.*
Riche, adj. *rich, wealthy.*
Ridicule, n. m. *ridicule,* adj. *ridiculous.*
Ridiculement, adv. *ridiculously.*
Rien, adv. *nothing.*
Rite, n. m. *rite.*
Rivage, n. m. *bank, shore.*
Rive, n. f. *bank, shore.*
Rire, v. n. ir. 4. (ind. p. je ris, ri), *to laugh.*
Rocher, n. m. *rock.*
Roi, n. m. *king.*
Rose, n. f. *rose.*
Roseau, n. m. *reed.*
Rosée, n. f. *dew.*
Route, n. f. *road, way, path.*
Roulement, n. m. *rolling.*
Rouler, v. a. & n. 1. *to roll.*
Royal, e, adj. *royal, kingly.*
Rumeur, n. f. *rumor, report, noise.*

S.

Sa, adj. poss. f. *his, her, its.*
Sable, n. m. *sand.*
Sac, n. m. *sack, bag.*
Sacré, e, adj. *sacred, holy.*
Sage, adj. *wise, good.*
Sagesse, n. f. *wisdom.*
Sain, e, adj. *healthy, wholesome.*
Saint, e, adj. *holy.*
Saison, n. f. *season.*
Salle, n. f. *hall, parlor, room.*
Salut! int. *Hail! good luck!*
Sang, n. m. *blood.*
Sanguinaire, adj. *bloodthirsty, sanguinary.*
Sanglant, e adj. *bleeding, bloody.*
Sans, pre. *without.*
Santé, n. f. *health.*
Sauvage, adj. *wild, savage.*
Savant, adj. & n. m. *learned, learned man.*
Savoir, v. a. ir. 3. (ind. p. je sais, p. d. je sus, p. su), *to know.*
Science, n. f. *knowledge, science.*
Scier, v. a. 1. *to saw.*
Se, prn. *him, her, himself, herself.*
Seigneur, n. m. *Lord.*
Sein, n. m. *bosom.*
Selon, pre. *according to.*
Sembler. v. n. & unip. 1. *to seem, to appear.*
Semence, n. f. *seed.*
Semer, v. a. 1. *to sow, to scatter.*
Sensément, adv. *sensibly.*
Sentiment, n. m. *sentiment, thought.*
Sentinelle, n. f. *sentinel.*
Sentir, v. a. ir. 2. (ind. p. je sens), *to feel, smell.*
Séraphin, n. m. *seraphim.*
Serpolet, n. m. *wild thyme.*
Servage, n. m. *bondage.*
Servir, v. a. & n. 2. (ind. p. je sers), *to serve, to be used.*
Servitude, n. f. *servitude, slavery.*
Ses, adj. pos. pl. *his, her, its.*
Seul, e, adj. *alone, only.*
Seuil, n. m. *threshold, door-step, sill.*
Si, conj. *if,* adv. *so.*
Siècle, n. m. *age, time, century.*
Signe, n. m. *sign.*
Signer, v. a. 1. *to sign.*
Silence, n. m. *silence.*
Silencieux, se, adj. *silent, not loquacious.*
Sillon, n. m. *furrow.*
Simple, adj. *simple.*
Singe, n. m. *ape, monkey.*
Sinueux, se, adj. *sinuous, winding.*
Situation, n. f. *situation.*
Soigneux, se, adj. *careful.*
Soi-même, prn. *himself, one's self.*
Soin, n. m. *care.*
Soir, n. m. *evening.*
Soldat, n. m. *soldier.*

Soleil, n. m. *sun.*
Solide, adj. *strong, solid.*
Solitude, n. f. *solitude.*
Sombre, adj. *dark, gloomy, sad.*
Sommeil, n. m. *sleep.*
Sommet, n. m. *summit, top, pinnacle.*
Son, n. m. *sound.*
Son, adj. pos. m. s. *his, her, its.*
Songer, v. n. 1. *to dream, to think.*
Sonner, v. n. 1. *to ring.*
Sort, n. m. *lot, fate.*
Sorte, n. f. *kind;* de sorte, adv. *so that.*
Sortir, v. n. ir. 2. (ind. p. je sors), *to go out.*
Sot, sotte, n. & adj. *fool, foolish.*
Sottise, n. f. *nonsense.*
Soudain, e, adj. *sudden, unexpected,* adv. *suddenly.*
Souffle, n. m. *breath, wind.*
Souffrir, v. a. ir. 1. *to suffer, to bear.*
Souhaiter, v. a. 1. *to wish, to desire.*
Soulier, n. m. *shoe.*
Soupçonner, v. a. 1. *to suspect.*
Souplesse, n. f. *suppleness, docility.*
Sourd, e, adj. *deaf.*
Sous, pre. *under.*
Soutenir, v. a. ir. 3. (ind. je soutiens), *to sustain, to support, to bear, to maintain.*
Soutien, n. m. *support.*
Souvenance, n. f. *remembrance, recollection.*
Souvenir, n. m. *remembrance, recollection.*
Souvenir (se), v. r. ir. 2. (ind. p. je me souviens), *to remember, recollect.*
Souvent, adv. *often.*
Spirale (en), *winding.*
Splendeur, n. f. *brilliancy, splendor.*
Stance, n. f. *stanza.*
Statut, n. m. *statute.*
Stratagème, n. m. *stratagem, trick.*
Stupide, adj. *stupid, silly.*
Succomber, v. n. 1. *to fall.*
Suivre, v. a. ir. 4. (ind. p. je suis), *to follow.*
Sujet, adj. & n. *subject.*
Superbe, adj. *proud, superb, magnificent.*
Sûr, e, adj. *sure, certain, safe.*
Sur, pre. *on, upon.*
Sur-le-champ, adv. *immediately.*
Surface, n. f. *surface.*
Surnuméraire, adj. *supernumerary.*
Surpasser, v. a. 1. *to surpass.*
Surprendre, v. a. ir. 4. (p. d. je surpris, p. surpris), *to surprise.*
Surpris, e, adj. v. *surprised.*
Surtout, adv. *above all.*
Surveillance, n. f. *watch, care.*
Symbol, n. m. *symbol.*
Sycomore, n. m. *sycamore.*
Sympathie, n. f. *sympathy.*
Syrie, *Syria.*

T.

Tableau, n. m. *table, picture.*
Tâcher, v. n. 1. *to endeavor, to try.*
Tailler, v. a. 1. *to cut, to shape.*
Talent, n. m. *talent.*
Tandis, adv. *while.*
Tanner, v. a. 1. *to tan.*
Tant, adv. *so much.*
Tant mieux, adv. *so much the better.*
Tant pis, adv. *so much the worse.*
Tard, adv. *late.*
Te, prn. *thee.*
Tell, telle, adj. *such.*
Tempéré, e, adj. *temperate.*
Tempête, n. f. *tempest.*
Temps, n. m. *time, weather.*
Tendre, adj. *tender, kind.*
Tenir, v. a. ir. 2. (ind. p. je tiens, p. d. je tins, p. tenu), *to hold.*
Tenter, v. a. 1. *to tempt, to attempt, to try.*
Terme, n. m. *term, end, expression.*
Terrasser, v. a. 1. *to throw down.*
Terre, n. f. *land, earth.*
Terreur, n. f. *fear, terror.*
Terrible, adj. *terrible.*
Tête, n. f. *head.*
Thym, n. m. *thyme.*
Tige, n. f. *stalk, stem.*
Tigre, n. m. *tiger.*
Tirer, v. a. 1. *to draw to extract, to fire, to shoot.*
Toi, prn. *thee, thou.*
Toison, n. f. *fleece.*
Toit, n. m. *roof.*
Tomber, v. n. 1. *to fall.*
Ton, adj. *thy.*
Tonnerre, n. m. *thunder.*
Tort, n. m. *wrong.*
Toucher, v. a. 1. *to touch.*
Toujours, adv. *always.*
Tour, n. f. *tower.*

Tour, n. m. *trick, turn.*
Tourmenter, v. a. 1. *to torment, to tease.*
Tourner, v. a. 1. *to turn.*
Tout, e, adj. *all, every.*
Tout, adv. *entirely, quite.*
Tracer, v. a. 1. *to trace, to mark.*
Trahir, v. a. 2. *to betray.*
Trait, n. m. *feature, trait, arrow.*
Traitement, n. m. *treatment,*
Traître, n. m. & adj. *traitor, treacherous.*
Trame, n. f. *woof, plot.*
Tranquille, adj. *quiet, tranquil.*
Tranquillement, adv. *quietly, tranquilly.*
Transport, n. m. *transport, carriage.*
Travail, n. m. *work, labor.*
Travers (à), pre. *through, across.*
Trembler, v. n. 1. *to tremble, to shudder.*
Très, adv. *very.*
Trésor, n. m. *treasure.*
Tribu, n. f. *tribe.*
Triomphe, n. m. *triumph.*
Triste, adj. *sad, sorrowful.*
Trois, adj. num. *three.*
Trône, n. m. *throne.*
Trop, adv. *too much, too many.*
Trouble, n. m. *trouble, vexation, disturbance.*
Troupeau, n. m. *flock, herd.*
Trouver, v. a. 1. *to find;* (se), v. r. *to happen to be, to be present, to appear.*
Tu, prn. *thou.*
Tuer, v. a. 1. *to kill, slay.*
Tyrannie, n. f. *tyranny.*

U.

Un, une, adj. num. *one, a, an.*
Unir, v. a. 2. *to unite.*
Univers, n. m. *universe.*
Usage, n. m. *custom, use.*
Usurper, v. a. 1. *to usurp.*
Utile, adj. *useful.*

V.

Vacant, e, adj. *vacant, unoccupied.*
Vache, n. f. *cow.*
Vague, n. f. *wave, billow.*
Vain, e, adj. *vain.*
Vaincre, v. a. ir. 4. (ind. p. je vaincs, p. d. je vainquis, p. vaincu), *to vanquish, to conquer, to overcome.*
Vaisseau, n. m. *vessel, ship.*
Vallon, n. m. *valley, vale.*
Valoir, v. n. ir. 3. (ind. je vaux, p. d. je valus), *to be worth.*
Vanité, n. f. *vanity.*
Vanneur, n. m. *winnower.*
Vanter (se), v. r. 1. *to boast.*
Vaquer, v. unip. & n. 1. *to be vacant.*
Vase, n. m. *vase, vessel.*
Vaste, adj. *vast.*
Vengeur, n. m. *avenger.*
Venir, v. n. ir. 2. (ind, p. je viens, p. d. je vins), *to come.*
Vent, n. m. *wind.*
Verger, n. m. *orchard.*
Vérité, n. f. *truth.*
Vermeil, n. m. *silver gilded.*
Vers, pre. *towards.*
Vert, adj. *green.*
Vertu, n. f. *virtue.*
Vertueux, se, adj. *virtuous.*
Vêtement, n. m. *garment.*
Vêtir, v. a. ir. 2. *to clothe.*
Vice, n. m. *vice.*
Victime, n. f. *victim.*
Vide, adj. *empty,* n. m. *empty space.*
Vie, n. f. *life.*
Vieux, vieil, vieille, adj. *old, antiquated.*
Vif, ve, adj. *lively, quick.*
Vigilance, n. f. *vigilance.*
Vil, e, adj. *vile, mean, low.*
Village, n. m. *village.*
Ville, n. f. *town, city.*
Virilement, adv. *manfully, courageously.*
Visir, n. m. *vizier.*
Visiter, v. a. 1. *to visit.*
Vivacité, n. f. *vivacity.*
Vivant, e, adj. v. *living.*
Vivre, v. n. ir. 4. (ind. p. je vis, p. d. je vécus, p. vécu), *to live.*
Vœu, n. m. *vow, wish.*
Voici, pre. *here is, this is.*
Voilà, pre. *there is, that is.*
Voler, v. n. 1. *to fly,* v. a. *to steal.*
Voie, n. f. *way, path, road.*
Voir, v. a. ir. 3. (p. d. je vis, p. vu), *to see, to perceive.*
Voisin, n. m. *neighbor.*
Voix, n. f. *voice.*

Vorace, adj. *greedy, voracious.*
Vos, adj. pos. pl. *your.*
Votre, adj. p. *your.*
Vouloir, v. a. & n. ir. 3. (ind. p. je veux, p. d. je voulus, p. voulu), *to wish, to be willing.*
Vous, prn. *you.*
Voûte, n. f. *vault, arch.*
Voyager, v. n. 1. *to travel.*
Vrai, e, adj. *true.*
Vraiment, adv. *truly.*
Vue, n. f. *view, sight.*

Y.

Y, adv. *there.*
Y, prn. *to it, to them, at it, at them, in it, in them.*
Y avoir, v. unip. 3. il y a, *there is, there are;* il y a un an, *a year ago.*
Yeux, n. m. p. (plural of œil), *eyes.*

Z.

Zénobie, *Zenobia.*
Zéphyr, n. m. *light wind, zephyr.*
Zéro, n. m. *zero, naught.*

PUBLISHED BY IVISON, PHINNEY & CO., NEW YORK.

FASQUELLE'S
FRENCH SERIES.

By LOUIS FASQUELLE, LL.D.,
Professor of Modern Languages in the University of Michigan.

CHARACTERISTIC FEATURES.

1. The plan of this popular Series embraces a combination of the two rival systems; the *Oral*, adopted by OLLENDORFF, ROBERTSON, MANESCA, and others, with the old Classical, or *Grammatical System.* One of its principal features is a *constant comparison of the construction of the French and English Languages.*

2. Another important feature consists in the facility with which the instructor or student can elect in the course of study *the practice and theory combined*, or as *much* or as *little of either* as *he deems proper.*

3. The "Course" commences with a complete though short treatise on pronunciation, presenting the power of each letter as initial, medial, or final, and also its sound when final and carried to the next word, in reading or speaking.

4. The changes in the words are presented in the most simple manner, and copiously exemplified by conversational phrases.

5. The rules of composition, grammatical and idiomatical, are introduced gradually, so as not to offer too many difficulties at one time.

6. The verbs are grouped by tenses, and comparisons instituted, showing their resemblance or difference of termination in the different conjugations.

7. The second, or theoretical part, offers, in a condensed form, a solution of the principal difficulties of the language.

8. The Rules are deduced from the best authorities, and illustraded by *short extracts* from the *best French writers.*

9. A treatise on gender is given, containing rules for determining gender by the meaning of words, and also by the termination.

10. The Irregular, Defective, and Peculiar verbs are presented in an *Alphabetical Table*, producing a *Complete Dictionary* of these verbs.

PUBLISHED BY IVISON, PHINNEY & CO., NEW YORK.

FASQUELLE'S FRENCH SERIES.

I. FASQUELLE'S FRENCH COURSE:

OR, NEW METHOD OF LEARNING THE FRENCH LANGUAGE.
Revised and enlarged.

Embracing both the Analytic and Synthetic modes of Instruction. By Louis Fasquelle, LL.D., Professor of Modern Languages in the University of Michigan.

This work is on the plan of "Woodbury's Method with German." It pursues the same gradual course, and comprehends the same wide scope of instruction. It is the leading book in the best literary institutions in the United States, and has also been reprinted in England, where it has an extended sale.

II. A KEY TO THE EXERCISES IN FASQUELLE'S FRENCH COURSE.

III. FASQUELLE'S COLLOQUIAL FRENCH READER.

260 *Pages. Duodecimo.*

Containing Interesting Narratives from the best French writers, for translation into English, accompanied by Conversational Exercises. With Grammatical References to Fasquelle's New French Method; explanation of the most difficult passages, and a copious Vocabulary.

IV. FASQUELLE'S TÉLÉMAQUE.

12*mo.*

Les Aventures de Télémaque. Par M. Fenélon. A New Edition, with notes. The Text carefully prepared from the most approved French Editions.

The splendid production of Fenélon is here presented in a beautiful mechanical dress, with copious references to Fasquelle's Grammar, full notes explanatory of difficulties in the text, and a full vocabulary.

V. NAPOLEON. BY ALEXANDER DUMAS.

Arranged for the use of Colleges and Schools; with Conversational Exercises on the plan of Fasquelle's Colloquial French Reader, Explanatory Notes, and Idiomatical and Grammatical References to the "New French Method." By Louis Fasquelle, LL.D.

VI. FASQUELLE'S CHEFS D'ŒUVRE DE RACINE.

332 *Pages*, 12-*mo.*

For Colleges and Schools. With Explanatory Notes and Grammatical References to the "New French Method."

This Edition contains five of Racine's best plays: LES PLAIDEURS, ANDROMAQUE, IPHIGENIE, ESTHER, and ATHALIE. The Notes will be found, in all the plays, sufficiently full, without being diffuse; in Les Plaideurs, the only comedy written by Racine, the explanations, however, are much fuller than the others.

VII. FASQUELLE'S INTRODUCTORY FRENCH COURSE.

18*mo.*

A new work, on the plan of the larger "Course," adapted to Beginners.

VIII. FASQUELLE'S MANUAL OF FRENCH CONVERSATION.

12*mo.*

A Complete Manual of Conversation, Idioms, etc., with references to Fasquelle's Course.

Testimonials of Teachers and Professors.

Fasquelle's French Series has been recommended by STATE SUPERINTENDENTS and BOARDS OF EDUCATION, by hundreds of distinguished PROFESSORS and TEACHERS, whose testimonials ould fill a volume. The following are specimens:

JOSEPH WM. JENKS, Professor of Languages in the University of Urbana, O., says:—"I have taught many classes in the French language, and d not hesitate to say, that 'Fasquelle's French Course' is superior to any other Frenc Grammar I have met with, for teaching French to those whose mother-tongue English. It combines, in an admirable manner, the excellences of the old, or classic and the new, or Ollendorffian methods, avoiding the faults of both."

Messrs. GUILLAUME H. TALBOT, T. A. PELLETIER, E. H. VIAN, H. SEBT, and N. B. DE MONTBARCHU, well known to the community as among the most eminent teachers in BOSTON, unite in a testimonial in which they "heartily and unanimously testify, that the work is held in high esteem and approbation among us, and that we consider it the very best heretofore published on the subject of which it treats. For the true interest of all engaged in the study of the spoken French, we would advise its universal adoption."

GRAY'S
BOTANICAL SERIES.

The most full, scholarly, and attractive apparatus for the study of Botany to be found in the language. The books have recently been warmly endorsed by Profs. AGASSIZ, SILLIMAN, TORREY, HITCHCOCK, HENRY, and nearly every scientist of eminence in this country, and by Drs. LINDLEY, HOOKER, and other distinguished Botanists in Europe. They are used in hundreds of Colleges, Academies, and Institutes in this country, and in the UNIVERSITY OF CAMBRIDGE, *England;* UNIVERSITY OF EDINBURG, *Scotland;* TRINITY COLLEGE, *Dublin*, &c.

GRAY'S "HOW PLANTS GROW." For Young People. 500 cuts.....
GRAY'S LESSONS IN BOTANY. 362 drawings.....
GRAY'S MANUAL OF BOTANY. (*School Edition.*).....
GRAY'S MANUAL AND LESSONS, in 1 vol.....
GRAY'S MANUAL WITH MOSSES, ETC. Illustrated.....
GRAY'S STRUCTURAL AND SYSTEMATIC BOTANY. (*Revised and improved Edition of "Botanical Text-Book"*).....

WELLS'
SCIENTIFIC SERIES.

By DAVID A. WELLS, A.M., Editor of "Annual of Scientific Discovery," "Knowledge is Power," &c. Embodying the latest researches in physical science, and excelling in their lucid style, numerous facts, copious illustrations (over 700), and practical applications of science to the arts of every-day life, and endorsed by hundreds of eminent and successful practical Educators in all parts of the country and the Press.

Mr. Wells' scientific qualifications have been approved by the most eminent scholars in the country—among them Profs. BACHE, AGASSIZ, HENRY, HORSFORD WYMAN, Lieutenant MAURY, and others.

WELLS' SCIENCE OF COMMON THINGS. With cuts.....
WELLS' NATURAL PHILOSOPHY. 372 cuts. Revised. (25,000 sold)....
WELLS' PRINCIPLES OF CHEMISTRY. 242 cuts.....
WELLS' FIRST PRINCIPLES OF GEOLOGY. 250 cuts.....

COLTON AND FITCH'S
GEOGRAPHIES.

This series is the most full, practical, accurate, and satisfactory, ever published. They are all beautifully illustrated, and the maps drawn on a uniform system of scales, so as to present the relative sizes of the different countries at a glance. They are the leading geographical series in the country, and have been *officially recommended* by several STATE SUPERINTENDENTS, *Boards of Education*, &c.

THE PRIMER OF GEOGRAPHY.....
INTRODUCTORY GEOGRAPHY. 24 Maps.....
MODERN SCHOOL GEOGRAPHY. 48 Maps.....
AMERICAN SCHOOL GEOGRAPHY AND ATLAS.....
PHYSICAL GEOGRAPHY.....

WILLSON'S
SCHOOL HISTORIES.

Discriminating and cordial testimonials have been given by several State Superintendents, by upwards of SEVENTY Presidents and Professors of Colleges in different parts of the United States, by over FIVE HUNDRED Principals of Academies, Institutes, &c.

WILLSON'S PRIMARY AMERICAN HISTORY.....
WILLSON'S HISTORY OF THE UNITED STATES. (*New, enlarged, and illustrated edition*).....
WILLSON'S AMERICAN HISTORY. (*School Edition*).....
WILLSON'S AMERICAN HISTORY. (*Library Edition*).....
WILLSON'S OUTLINES OF HISTORY. (*School Edition*).....
WILLSON'S OUTLINES OF HISTORY. (*University Edition*).....
WILLSON'S CHART OF AMERICAN HISTORY. (Rollers).....

THE NEW YORK PUBLIC LIBRARY
REFERENCE DEPARTMENT

This book is under no circumstances to be taken from the Building

SEP 18 19

